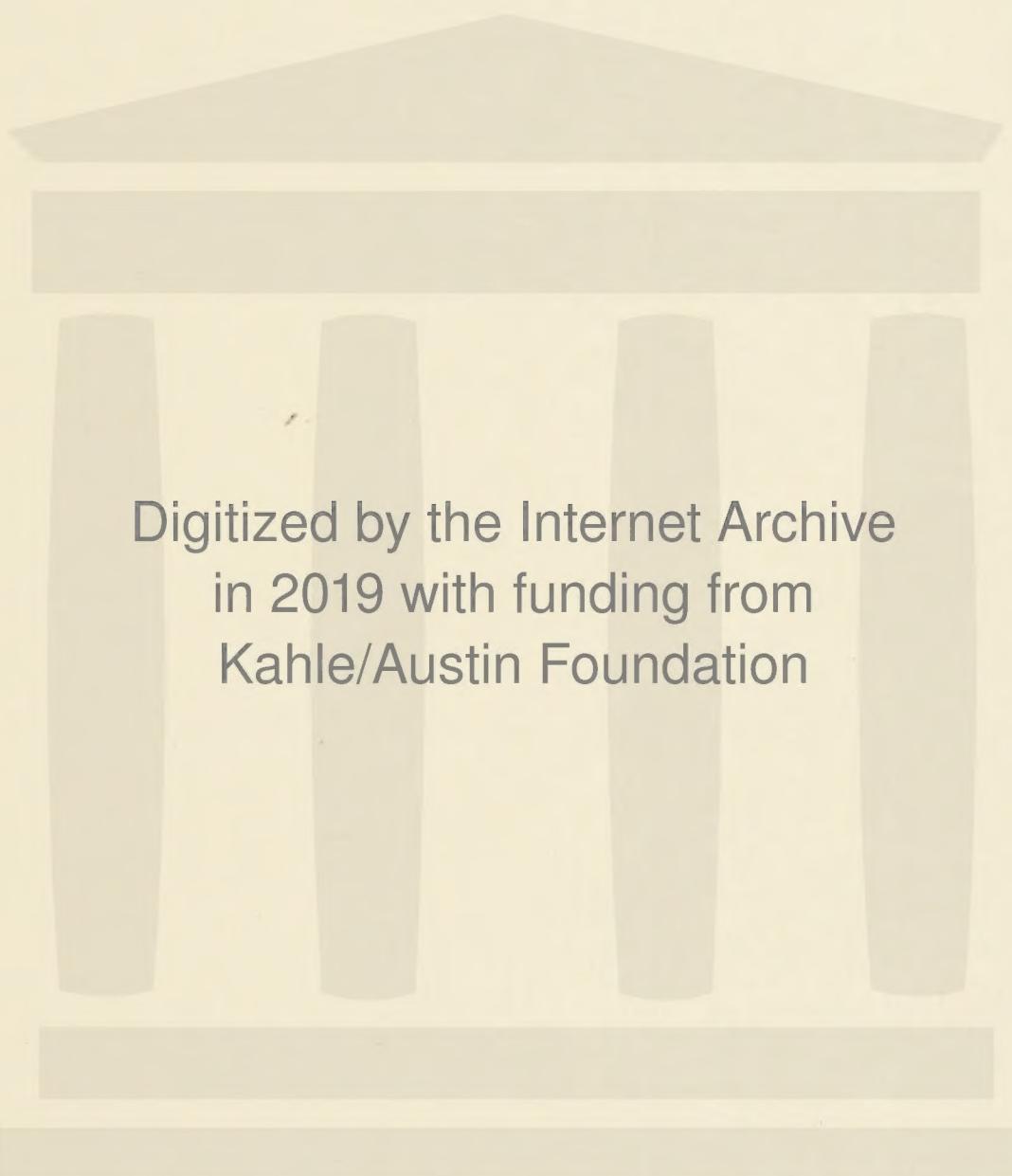




NUNC COGNOSCO EX PARTE



THOMAS J. BATA LIBRARY  
TRENT UNIVERSITY



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2019 with funding from  
Kahle/Austin Foundation

<https://archive.org/details/englishrogue0000head>







THE ENGLISH ROGUE





PLATE I



ILLUSTRATION FROM THE ORIGINAL EDITION

[ front

THE ENGLISH ROGUE  
DESCRIBED IN THE  
LIFE OF  
MERITON LATROON  
A WITTY EXTRAVAGANT

Being a Complete History of the  
Most Eminent Cheats of Both Sexes

By  
RICHARD HEAD & FRANCIS KIRKMAN

WITH TWELVE PLATES

*Read, but don't practise : for the Author finds  
They which live honest have most quiet minds.*

LONDON  
GEORGE ROUTLEDGE & SONS, LTD.

1928

Pt. 2000. 1928L

Printed in Great Britain at  
*The Mayflower Press, Plymouth.* William Brendon & Son, Ltd.

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

PLATE	
I	<i>Frontispiece</i>
II	PAGE 112
III	192
IV	240
V	288
VI	320
VII	368
VIII	400
IX	448
X	480
XI	545
XII	624

257129



## BIBLIOGRAPHICAL NOTE

UPON its first appearance *The English Rogue* was a forbidden book, copies being printed secretly and sold furtively at alehouses and such places ; for when the original manuscript was submitted to the Censors of the Press they refused license to publish on account of its gross indecency. What that degree of indecency can have been may best be judged by reading what they did license. Head 'was fain to refine it, and then it passed stamp,' and in this, its final form, the book was first published in 1665, by Henry Marsh, at the sign of the Prince's Arms, Chancery Lane. The following year the rights were acquired by Francis Kirkman, a bookseller at the John Fletcher's Head, St. Clement Danes, Strand, who reissued it and endeavoured to persuade the author to write a second part.

Head refused to do this, principally on the ground that his book had been taken as autobiographical, and that in consequence his reputation had suffered from the imputation of his being the hero of such scandalous adventures. Kirkman then, though without success, applied to 'a professed author, and one who hath been happy enough in the sale of many of his writings.' Who this was is not known. Thereupon he set himself to the task and wrote the remaining volumes, publishing them in 1671. Some years later, Head indignantly repudiated Kirkman's suggestion that he had collaborated in the succeeding parts of *The English Rogue*. In his *Proteus Redivivus ; or the Art of Wheedling or Insinuation* (1675) he observes that he had intended to complete *The Rogue*, but 'seeing the continuator . . . never, as far as I can see, will make an end of pestering the world with more volumes and large editions, I diverted my attention to the art of wheedling.'

The present edition contains Head's original volume and two of Kirkman's added volumes. The text has been left untouched except for certain necessary typographical corrections, and such repunctuation as was essential to make it intelligible.

There is little to be said of Richard Head himself. The early chapters of *The Rogue* are largely descriptive of his own young days. He was born in Ireland, probably in 1637, where his father was chaplain to a nobleman. In the Rebellion of 1641 the elder Head was murdered by the Irish peasantry at Knockfergus (Carrickfergus), and his widow and child barely escaped with their lives, making their way to Belfast and thence to

England. Richard was put to school at Bridport, and in due time went to Oxford. He does not appear to have graduated, but he drifted up to London where he became a bookseller's apprentice and wrote '*Venus' Cabinet Unveiled*', a poem of which no copy is now known to exist. When his time was expired he set up for himself in Little Britain, but gambled away his small means and was forced to flee to Dublin. In 1663 he returned to London, and started business in Queen's Head Alley, Paternoster Row; but again he threw his money away, and to earn a meagre living joined the band of hack writers who scribbled for the booksellers just that brand of indecency which then, as now, ensured a good buying public. Wine, women and dice kept him ever hungry, ill, and poor, and he never produced anything worth surviving. He was only fifty when he met his death by drowning while crossing over to the Isle of Wight.

# THE ENGLISH ROGUE AND OTHER EXTRAVAGANTS

## PART ONE

### THE EPISTLE TO THE READER

Gentlemen,

*I*t hath been too much the humour of late for men rather to adventure on the foreign crazy stilts of other men's inventions than securely walk on the groundwork of their own homespun fancies. What I here present ye with is an original in your own mother-tongue ; and yet I may not improperly call it a translation, drawn from the black copy of men's wicked actions ; such who spared the Devil the pains of courting them, by listing themselves volunteers to serve under his Hellish banners. With some thereof I have heretofore been unhappily acquainted, and am not ashamed to confess that I have been somewhat soiled by their vicious practices, but now I hope am cleansed in a great measure from those impurities. Every man hath his peculiar guilt, proper to his constitution and age ; and most have had (or will have) their exorbitant exiliencies, erroneous excursions, which are least dangerous when attended by youthfulness.

This good use I hope the Reader will make with me of those follies that are so generally and too frequently committed every where, by declining the commission of them (if not for the love of virtue, yet to avoid the dismal effects of the most dangerous consequences that continually accompany them). And how shall any be able to do this, unless they make an introspection into Vice ? This they may do with little danger ; for it is possible to enjoy the theory, without making use of the practice.

To save my countrymen the vast expense and charge of such experimental observations, I have here given an accompt of my readings, not in books, but men ; which should have been buried in silence (fearing lest its title might reflect on my name and reputation), had not a public good interceded for its publication, far beyond any private interest or respect.

When I undertook this subject, I was destitute of all those tools (books, I mean) which divers pretended artists make use of to form some ill-contrived design. By which ye may understand that as necessity forced me, so a

## THE ENGLISH ROGUE

*generous resolution commanded me to scorn a Lithuanian humour or custom,  
to admit of Adjutores tori, helpers in a marriage bed, there to engender little  
better than a spurious issue. It is a legitimate offspring, I'll assure ye,  
begot by one singly and solely, and a person that dares in spite of cankered  
malice subscribe himself*

*A well-willer to his Country's welfare,*

RICHARD HEAD

## CHAPTER I

*What his parents were : the place of his own nativity : his miraculous escape from the hands of Irish rebels : his brother being at that very time murdered by the merciless hands of those bloody butchers*

AFTER a long and strict inquisition after my father's pedigree, I could not find any of his ancestors bearing a coat ; surely length of time had worn it out. But if the Gentle Craft will any ways ennoble his family, I believe I could deduce several of his name, professors of that lasting art, even from Crispin. My father's father had, by his continual labour in husbandry, arrived to the height of a farmer, then the head of his kindred. Standing upon one of his own mole-hills, ambition so swelled him that he swore by his plough-share, that his eldest son (my father) should be a *Scholhard*, and should learn so long, till he could read any printed or written hand ; nay, and if occasion should serve, write a bill or bond.

It was never known that any of the family could distinguish one letter from another, neither could they speak above the reach of their horses' understandings. Talk to them in any other dialect but that of a bag-pudding, of a peck, or a piece of beef (in which their teeth might step wet-shod), and a man were as good to have discoursed with them in Arabic. But let me not abuse them, for some understood something else, that is to say, the art of whistling, driving their team and to shoe themselves as well as their horses ; how to lean methodically upon a staff and through the holes of their hat tell what it is o'clock by the sun.

The symmetrical proportion, sweetness of features and acuteness of my father's wit were such (though extracted out of this lump of red and white marl) that he was beloved of all. As the loveliness of his person gained always an interest in female hearts, so the quickness of apprehension and invention, and the acquired quaintness of his expressions procured him the friendship of such as conversed with him. A gentleman at length taking notice of more than ordinary natural parts in him, at his own charge sent him to school contrary to the desire of his father, who was able enough to maintain him at school. And to say the truth, this gentleman offered not my father his patronage upon any charitable account, but that he might hereafter glory in being the chief instrument of bringing up such a fair promising wit, which he questioned not, with

good cultivation would bring forth such lovely fruit as would answer cost and fully satisfy his expectation. Being admitted into the Grammar School, by the strength of his memory, to his masters' great amazement, in a very short time he had Lily's *Rules* by heart, outstripping many that for years had been entered before him. His master perceiving what a stupendous proficiency he had made, was very glad that this fair opportunity offered itself that he might be idle, and in order thereunto would frequently appoint my father to be his usher or deputy, when he intended to turn Bacchanalian, to drink, hunt, or whore, to which vices he was over much addicted. My father having now conquered, in a manner, the difficulties of that school's learning began now to lay aside his book, and follow the steps of his vicious learned master, the examples of a superior proving oftentimes guides to inferior actions,

*Regis ad exemplum*—

Besides, his springing age (wherein the blood is hot and fervent) spurred him on, and the natural disposition of his mind gave him wings to fly whither his unbounded, licentious, self-pleasing will would direct. His youth introduced him into all sorts of vanity, and his constitution of body was the mother of all his unlawful pleasures. His temperament gave sense pre-eminence above reason. Thus, you see (as experience can more fully demonstrate) how the heat of youth gives fuel to the fire of voluptuous enjoyments. But without a supply of what may purchase those delights, invention must be tenter-hooked, which ever proves dangerous, most commonly fatal. My grandfather, too indulgent to his son, supplied him continually with money; which he did the more freely since he was exempted from such charges which necessity required for my father's maintenance.

He having now more than a bare competence, not only consents to the commission of evil but tempts others to perpetrate the like; and now, following his own natural proneness to irregular liberty, diurnally suggests matters of innovation, not only to his own, but others' reasons, *Lectum non citius relinquens quam in Deum delinquens, non citius surgens quam insurgens*. No sooner relinquishing his bed, but delinquishing his Creator, No sooner rising than rising against his God. In short, I know not whether he prevailed more on others or others on him, for he was facile; the best nature is most quickly depraved, as the purest flesh corrupts soonest, and is most noisome when corrupted. Yet, notwithstanding these blooming debaucheries, he neglected not his study so much but that he capacitated himself for the University, and by approbation was sent thither by his patron. He applied himself close to his book for a while, till he had adapted himself a companion for the most

absolute critic that could be selected out of any of the colleges. In the assured confidence of his own parts he ventured among them, and left such remarks of his cutting wit in all companies he came into that the gallants and most notable wits of Oxford coveted so much his company that he had not time to apply himself to his study, but giving way to their solicitations (being prompted thereunto by his own powerful inclinations) plunged himself over head and ears in all manner of sensuality. For his lewd carriage, inimitably wicked practices, and detestable behaviour, he was at last expelled the college.

Now was he forced to return to his father, who with much joy received him. But he would not tell him the true cause of his coming down ; but to palliate his villainies, he informed his father that he had learned as much as he could be instructed in ; and now and then would sprinkle his discourse with a Greek or Latin sentence when talking with the poor ignorant old man, who took wonderful delight in the mere sound thereof. When my father spake at any time they were all as silent as midnight, and then would my grandfather, with much admiration, beckon to the standers by to give their greatest attention to what the speaker as little understood as his auditors, not caring what nonsense he uttered, if wrapped up in unintelligible hard words, purposely to abuse those brutish plough-jobbers. In ostentation he was carried to the parson of the parish, to discourse with him ; who by good fortune understood no other tongue but what his mother taught him. My father, perceiving that, made 'Shoulderamutton' and 'Kapathumpton' serve for very good Greek ; which the parson confirmed, telling my grandfather, further, that his son was an excellent scholar ; protesting that he was so deeply learned that he spake things he understood not. This, I have heard him say, made him as good sport as ever he received in the most ingenious society.

He had not been long in the country before a gentlewoman taking notice of his external and internal qualifications fell deeply in love with him ; and preferring her own pleasure before the displeasure of her wealthy relations, she *incontinently* was married to him. I shall waive how it was brought about in every particular, but only instance what is therein remarkable. Doubtless the gestures he used in his preaching (when she was present) might something avail in the conquest of her affections ; beginning with a 'dearly beloved' passionately extended, looking full in her face all the while. And being, in the time of the kingdom's alteration and confusion,<sup>1</sup> a temporizing minister, he had learned all those tricks by which those of his sect and coat used to bewitch a female ear. But that which chiefly effected his desires, was the assurance of an old matron that lived near my mother, who for profit scrupled

<sup>1</sup> That is, at the time of the Commonwealth.

not to officiate as bawd. This good old gentlewoman contrived ways to bring them together, unsuspected by any, by which means they obtained the opportunity to perform Hymen's rites, *sans* ceremonies of the Church.

My mother finding impregnation, acquainted my father therewith, who (glad to hear how fast he had tied her to him) urged her to the speedy consummation of a legal marriage, which she more longed for than he did himself, but knew not how to bring it to pass, by reason of those many obstacles which they saw obvious, and thwarting their intentions. As first the vast disproportion between their estates ; next, the antipathy her parents bore to his function. Joining these to many other obstructions, which fancy and knowledge presented to them, they concluded to steal a wedding and accordingly did put it in execution. Much troubled her parents were at first, to hear how their daughter had shipwrecked her fortune (as they judged it) in the unfortunate losing her maidenhead ; but time, with the intercession of friends, procured a reconciliation between them, and all parties well pleased. The old people took great delight in the fortune, hopeful thoughts and expectations of their son-in-law, but he more in the reception of a large sum of money they paid him, and my mother most of all (as she thought) in the continual conversation and enjoyment of my father, which she equally ranked with what might be esteemed the best of things.

His eminent parts natural (and what he attained unto by his country studies, being ashamed to have lost so much time), introduced him as a chaplain to a nobleman, with whom he travelled into Ireland. He took shipping at Minehead, and from thence sailed to Knockfergus, where he lived both creditably and comfortably. Experience had then reformed his life to so strict a religious course that his observers gained more by his example than his hearers by precepts. Thus, by his piety in the purity of his practice, he soon regained his lost credit.

By this time my mother drew near her time, having conceived me in England, but not conceiving she thus should drop me in an Irish bog. There is no fear that England and Ireland will, after my decease, contend about my nativity, as several countries did about Homer ; striving to have the honour of first giving him breath. Neither shall I much thank my native country for bestowing on me such principles as I and most of my countrymen drew from that very air. The place, I think, made me appear a bastard in disposition to my father. It is strange the climate should have more prevalency over the nature of the native than the disposition of the parent ; for though father and mother could neither flatter, deceive, revenge, equivocate, &c., yet the son (as the consequence hath since made it appear) can (according to the common custom of his countrymen) dissemble and sooth up his adversary with

expressions extracted from celestial manna, taking his advantage thereby to ruin him. For to speak the truth, I could never yet love any but for some by-respect, neither could I ever be persuaded into a pacification with that man who had any way injured me, never resting satisfied till I had accomplished a plenary revenge, which I commonly effected under the pretence of great love and kindness. Cheat all I dealt withal, though the matter were ever so inconsiderable ; lie so naturally that a miracle may be as soon wrought as a truth proceed from my mouth. And then for equivocations, or mental reservations, they were ever in me innate properties. It was always my resolution rather to die by the hand of a common executioner than want my revenge, though ever so slightly grounded. But I shall desist here to characterize myself further, reserving that for another place.

Four years after my birth the Rebellion began so unexpectedly that we were forced to flee in the night ; the light of our flaming houses, ricks of hay, and stacks of corn guided us out of the town, and our fears soon conveyed us to the mountains. But the rebels, wandering to and fro, intending either to meet with their friends (who flocked from all parts to get into a body), or else any English, which they designed as sacrifices to their implacable malice, or inbred antipathy to that nation, met with my mother, attended by two scullagues, her menial servants, the one carrying me, the other my brother. The Fates had decreed my brother's untimely death, and therefore unavoidable, the faithful infidel being butchered with him. The surviving servant, who carried me, declared that he was a Roman Catholic, and imploring their mercy with his howling *Chram a Cress*, or *St. Patrick a gra*, procured my mother's, his own, and my safety.

Thus was I preserved, but I hope not reserved as a subject for Divine Vengeance to work on. Had I then died, no other guilt could have rendered me culpable before God's tribunal but what was derivative from Adam. But since, the concatenation of sins hath encompassed the whole series of my life. Now, to the intent I may deter others from perpetrating the like, and receive to myself absolution (according as it is promised) upon unfeigned repentance and ingenuous confession of my nefarious facts, I shall give the readers a summary relation of my life, from my nonage to the meridian of my days, hoping that my extravagancies and youthful exiliences have, in that state of life, their declination and period.

## CHAPTER II

*A short account of the general insurrections of the Irish, Anno 1641*

BUT though the mercy of these inhuman villains extended to the saving of our lives, yet they had so little consideration and commiseration as to expose our bodies by stripping us stark naked to the extremity of a cold winter night, not so much as sparing my tender age. Thus, without shoes or stockings, or the least rag to cover our nakedness, with the help of our guide, we travelled all night through woods as obscure as that black darkness that then environed our horizon. By break of day we were at Belfast. About entering the skirts of the town, this honest and grateful servant (which is much in an Irishman), being then assured of our safety, took his leave of us, and returned to the rebels.

Here were we received with much pity of all, and entertained, and clothed and fed by some charitable minded persons. To gratify their souls for what they had done for my mother's body, and those that belonged to her, my father frequently preached, which gave general satisfaction, and continued thus in instructing his hearers till the sark or surplice was adjudged by a Scottish faction, to be the absolute smock of the Whore of Babylon. Then was he constrained to flee again to Linsegarvy taking his charge with him.

Before I proceed, give me leave to digress a little in giving you a brief account of the Irish Rebellion. Not two years before it broke out, all those ancient animosities, grudges, and hatred which the Irish had ever been observed to bare unto the English seemed to be deposited and buried in a firm conglutination of their affections, and national obligations, which passed between them; for these two had lived together forty years in peace, with such great security and comfort that it had, in a manner, consolidated them into one body, knit and compacted together with all those ligatures of friendship, alliance, and consanguinity as might make up a constant and everlasting union betwixt them there. Their intermarriages were near upon as frequent as their gossipings and fosterings (relations of much dearness among the Irish), together with all tenancies, neighbourhoods and services interchangeably passed among them. Nay, they had made, as it were, a mutual transmigration into each others' manners, many English being strongly degenerated into Irish affections and customs, and many of the better sort of Irish studying as well the language of the English as delighting to be apparelled like them. Nay, so great an advantage did they find by the English commerce and cohabitation, in the profits and high improvements of

their lands, that Sir Phelim O'Neal, that rebellious ringleader, with divers others eminent in that bloody insurrection, had not long before turned off their lands their Irish tenants, admitting English in their rooms; who are able to give far greater rents, and more certainly pay the same. So, as all those circumstances duly weighed and considered with the great increase of trade, and many other evident symptoms of a flourishing commonwealth, it was believed, even by the wisest and most experienced in the affairs of Ireland, that the peace and tranquillity of that Kingdom was fully settled, and most likely, in all human probability, to continue, especially under the government of such a King as Charles the First, whom after ages may admire, but never match. Such was the serenity and security of this Kingdom that there appeared not anywhere any martial preparations, nor relics of any kind of disorders, no nor so much as the least noise of war whisperingly carried to any ear in all this land.

Now, whilst in this great calm, the British continued in the deepest security, whilst all men sat pleasantly enjoying the fruits of their own labours, sitting under their own vines, without the least thoughts or apprehension of tumults, troubles, or massacres, there brake out on October the twenty-third, in the year of our Lord, sixteen hundred forty and one, a most desperate, direful, and formidable Rebellion, a universal defection and revolt, wherein not only the mere native Irish, but almost all those English that profess the name of Roman Catholics, were totally involved.

Now, since it is resolved by me to give you a particular account of the most remarkable transactions and passages of my life, it will be also necessary to acquaint you with the beginning and first motions. Neither shall I omit to trace the progress of this Rebellion, since therein I shall relate summarily my suffering and what others underwent, the horrid cruelties of the Irish, and the abominable murders committed, as well without number as without mercy, upon the English inhabitants of both sexes, and all ages.

It was carried with such secrecy that none understood the conspiracy till the very evening that immediately preceded the night of its general execution. I must confess there was some such thing more than suspected by one Sir William Cole, who sent away letters to the Lord Chief Justices, but miscarried by the way. Owen O'Conally (though Irish, yet notwithstanding a Protestant) was the first discoverer of this general insurrection giving in the names of some of the chief conspirators. Hereupon the lords convened and sat in Council, whose care and prudence at that time was such that some of the ringleaders were instantly seized, and upon examination, confessed that on that very day of their

surprizal all the ports and places of strength in Ireland, would be taken ; that a considerable number of gentlemen and others, twenty out of each county, were come up expressly to surprize the Castle of Dublin ; adding further, that what was to be done in the country could neither by the wit of man or by letter be prevented. Hereupon a strict search was made for all strangers lately come to town, and all horses were seized on whose owners could not give a good account of them. And notwithstanding, there was a proclamation dispersed through all Ireland giving notice of a horrid plot designed by Irish Papists, against English Protestants, intending thereby a discouragement to such of the conspirators as yet had not openly declared themselves. Yet did they assemble in great number, principally in the North, in the Province of Ulster, taking many towns, as Newry, Drummoor, &c., burning, spoiling, and committing horrible murders everywhere. These things wrought such a general consternation and astonishment in the minds of the English that they thought themselves nowhere secure, flying from one danger into another.

In a very short time, the Irish Northern Papists by closely pursuing on their first plot, had gotten into their possession most of the towns, forts, castles, and gentlemen's houses within the counties of Tyrone, Donegal, Fermanagh, Armagh, Cavan, &c. The chief that appeared in the execution of this plot, within the Province of Ulster, were Sir Phelim O'Neal, Tourlough his brother, Rore Mac Guire, Phillip O'Rely, Sir Conne Mac Dennis, Mac Brian, and Mac Mahan. These combining with their accomplices dividing their Forces, and according to a general assignation, surprized the Forts of Dongannon and Montjoy, Carlemant, with other places of considerable strength. Now began a deep tragedy. The English having few other than Irish landlords, tenants, servants, neighbours, or familiar friends, as soon as this fire brake out, and the whole country was in a general conflagration, made their recourse to some of these, relying upon them for protection and preservation, and with great confidence trusted their lives and all their concerns in their power. But many of these in short time after, either betrayed them to others, or destroyed them with their own hands. The Popish priests had so charged and laid such bloody impressions on them, as it was held according to the Doctrine they had received, a deadly sin to give an English Protestant any relief.

All bonds of faith and friendship now fractured, Irish landlords now preyed on their English tenants ; Irish tenants and servants made a sacrifice of their English landlords and masters, one neighbour murdering another ; nay, 'twas looked on as an act meritorious in him that could either subvert or supplant an Englishman. The very children imitated the cruelty of their parents, of which I shall carry a mark with me to my

grave, given me with a skene by one of my Irish playfellows. It was now high time to fly, although we knew not whither ; every place we arrived at we thought least secure, wherefore our motion was continual ; and that which heightened our misery was our frequent stripping thrice a day, and in such a dismal stormy tempestuous season as the memory of man had never observed to continue so long together. The terror of the Irish and Scotch incomparably prevailed beyond the rage of the sea, so that we were resolved to use all possible means to get on ship-board. At Belfast we accomplished our desires, committing ourselves to the more merciful waves.

This relation being so short, cannot but be very imperfect, if I dare credit my mother it is not stained with falsehood. Many horrid things, I confess, I purposely omitted, as desiring to waive any thing of aggravation, or which might occasion the least animosity between two nations, though of several languages, yet I hope both united in the demonstration of their constant loyalty to their sovereign, Charles the Second.

### CHAPTER III

*After his arrival in Devonshire, he briefly recounts what wagggeries he committed, being but a child*

B  
EING about five years of age, report rendered me a very beautiful child, neither did it (as most commonly) prove a liar ; being enriched with all the good properties of an handsome face, had not pride in my tender age deprived me of those graces and choice ornaments which complete both form and feature. Thus it happened my father kept commonly many turkeys ; one amongst the rest could not endure the sight of a red coat, which I usually wore. But that which most of all exasperated my budding passion was his assaulting my bread and butter, and instead thereof, sometimes my hands. Which caused my bloomy revenge to use this stratagem : I enticed him with a piece of custard (which I temptingly shewed him, not without some suspicion of danger which fear suggested might attend my treachery) and so led him to the orchard gate, which was made to shut with a pulley. He reaching in his head after me, I immediately clapped fast the gate, and so surprised my mortal foe. Then did I use that little strength I had to beat his brains out with my cat-stick ; which being done, I deplumed his tail, sticking those feathers in my bonnet as the insulting trophies of my first and latest conquest. Such, then, was my pride, that I nothing but

gazed up at them, which so tried the weakness of mine eyes and so strained the optic nerves that they ran atilt at one another, as if they contended to share with me in my victory. This accident was no small trouble to my mother, that so doted on me that I have often heard her say she forgot to eat (when I sate at table) for admiring the sweetness of my complexion. After she had much grieved herself to little purpose, she consulted with patience, and applied herself to skilful occulists, to repair the loss this face-blemishing had done so sweet a countenance, though for the present it eclipsed my mother's glory and pride. Yet time and art reduced my eyes to their proper station, so that within six years their oblique aspects were hardly discernible. When I was about ten years old, I have heard some say that this cast of my eyes was so far from being a detriment that it became my ornament. Experience confirmed me in this belief ; for they proved as powerful as the persuasive arguments of my deluding tongue, both which conjoined were sufficient (I speak it not vaingloriously) to prevail even over the Goddess of Chastity, especially when they were backed with ardent desires and an undaunted resolution.

But to my purpose. Being driven out of Ireland, there being at that time no place of safety in that Kingdom, my mother taking me with her (being compelled to leave my father behind, barbarously murdered by the Rebels for being a Protestant preacher), adventured to sea not caring whither she went. Foulness of weather drove us upon the coast of France, where we were forced to land, to repair what damage the ship had sustained in stress of weather. From hence we set sail, and landed in the West of England, at a place called Barnstable in the County of Devon. Here we were joyfully received and well entertained by some of my mother's kindred, at first. But lying upon them, they at length grew weary, so that we were forced to go from thence to Plymouth, so called from the River Plym, unto which the town adjoineth. At that time it was strongly fortified by new raised works, a line being cast about it, besides places of strength anciently built, as the Castle, the Fort, of an hundred pieces of ordnance, that commands Cat-water, and overlooks the Sound ; Mount Batten, and the islands in the Sound, well furnished with men and great guns impregnable. Had they been never built or demolished as soon as raised on their basis, it had been much better than to have proved the fomenters of rebellion in the late wars for a whole year, daily thundering treason against their lawful sovereign.

We being here altogether unacquainted both with the people and their profession, my mother having an active brain, cast about with herself how she should provide for her charge, but found no way more expedient than the pretention of Religion. Zeal and piety were the only

things she seemed to prosecute, taking the literal sense of the text ; Without doubt Godliness is great gain : but she erred much in the profession and seasonable practice thereof, hers being according to the true Church, the Church of England, whereas the Plymotheans were at that time heterodox thereunto and led away, as the rest of their brethren called Roundheads, by the spirit of delusion. Finding how much she was mistaken, she changed quickly her note and coat ; being a rigid Presbyterian at first, but that proving not so profitable, instantly transformed herself into a strict Independent. This took well, which made her stick close to the brethren, which raised their spirits to make frequent contribution in private to supply her want. Here we had borrowed so much of the sisterhood, who vilely suspected my mother to be too dearly beloved by the brotherhood, that it was high time to rub off to another place, lest staying longer, the holy mask of dissimulation should fall off ; and she being detected be shamefully excluded their congregation, and so delivered up to be buffeted by Satan. Before I leave the town, give me leave to take a short view thereof. Formerly it was a poor small fishing village, but now so large and thronged with inhabitants (many whereof very wealthy merchants) that as it may be compared with, so may it put in its claim for the name of a city. Havens there are many so commodious, that without striking sail, they admit into the bosom thereof the tallest ships that be, harbouring them very safely, and excellently well fortified against hostility. It is situate alike for profit and pleasure ; in brief, it wants little that the heart of man would enjoy, from the various productions of the whole universe.

Now farewell Plymouth. No matter whither we went, for where ever we came we found still some or other that gave us entertainment for those good parts they found in my mother, she being very well read both in divinity and history ; and having an eloquent tongue, she commonly applied herself to the minister of the town, who, wondering to see so much learning and perfection in a woman, either took us to his own house for a while or gathered some contributions to supply our present necessities, with which we travelled to the next town. And in this manner we strolled or wandered up and down, being little better than mendicant itinerants. Staying so little time in a place, and my mother being more careful to get a subsistence than to season my tender years with the knowledge of letters, I was ten years old before I could read. Travelling through many towns unfit for our purpose, we at last took our seat for a while at Bridport in Dorsetshire. Here being ashamed to go to school in this ignorance, I applied myself to my mother, who taught me to apprehend the alphabet in less hours than there are letters ; so that in a short time, I could read distinctly, and was immediately

introduced into the Grammar School, where I had not been long before I became a book-worm, securing as many as lay in my way, if convenient privacy served. And to the intent that my thefts might pass undiscovered before I would vend what book I had stolen, I usually metamorphosed them. If new, I would gash their skin, and if the leaves were red, I would make them look pale with the wounds they received ; if much used, tear out all the remarks, and paint their old faces, and having so done, make sale of them. This course I followed a long time undiscovered, which cost many a boy a whipping at home by their parents, as well as master. I had various uses for the money I made thereof (you must think) but principally to bribe some of the upper form to make my exercises, which were so well liked by my master that I still came off with applause ; and in a short time so advanced that I was next to the highest form, when I understood not the lowest author we read.

I was forced to employ my wits in the management of my hands, to keep touch with my pensioners, lest they failing me for want of encouragement, my master should discover how much my dunceship was abused. Frequent were my truantings, which were always attended with some notorious act, besides small faults as robbing of orchards, pulling the first and seconds of forty or fifty geese at a time, milking the cows or goats into my hat, and so drink the milk. And then for poultry, there was seldom a day escaped wherein I had not more or less. Usually I took them thus : at night I haunted the hen-roosts, taking them off so quietly from what they stood on, that their keckling noise seldom alarmed the rest. If I could not conveniently carry them off, I made their eggs compound for their heads. If I met with any geese at any time, then out came my short stick with a string fastened to a bullet, and tied to the end thereof ; with this would I fetch in my game by the neck, the weight of the bullet twirling the string so many times about the neck that they could not disengage themselves from inevitable destruction. I used to fish for ducks, baiting my hook with a gut or some such trash, and laying it on a piece of cork, that swimming it might be the sooner perceived ; I could catch in a short time as many as I pleased. Nay, I have not only thus deceived the tame fowl, but the same way, with a longer time, I have caught gulls and other sea-birds.

What I had gotten by these cunning and so much to be approved tricks, I carried to a house that encouraged me in my roguery, participating of the cheer, and so feasting me for my pains. If I had stolen anything, I had my recourse to them, who would give me twopence for what was worth a shilling, and render me good content. I knew my punishment for my rambling and valued it not ; therefore little hope of reformation from thence. Nay, for very small faults I wished to be whipped, knowing

the rod would then be laid on gently, which carried with it a tickling pleasure. As for my thefts and rogueries abroad, I was careful they should not be discovered. If any boy had injured me whose strength exceeded mine, so that I durst not cope with him, I would exercise my revenge upon him privately, concealing the resentment of the injury he did me. For to grin and not bite doth but persuade an adversary to knock out those teeth that may prove some time or other injurious. One common trick I had, was to stick a pin on the board whereon he was to sit ; in this manner did I serve several, in which fact I was at last taken. The punishment my master inflicted on me was to sit by his desk alone and complete a copy of verses ; there was great likelihood I should perform my task, when I knew not how many feet an hexameter required, and yet I then read Virgil. However, some thing I must attempt, and thinking Sapphics and Iambics too difficult, I ventured upon Heroics, supposing them the easier composition. But Lord, into what an access of laughter did my master fall, when he perused my hobbling strains. ‘Surely,’ said he, ‘these verses are running a race altogether ; the first did not start fairly, or else is a very nimble gentleman, for he hath outrun all his fellows four feet, the second comes two foot short of him, yet too forward for a true pace. Here is another lame in a foot, and halts most scurvily ; here is another whose quantity is short, and hath gotten upon stilts to seem long, and one (in contradiction to him) which is long, because he will be short hath cut his own legs off.’

With these and the like speeches did he please himself in his own wit (which I understood but little), and after he had tired himself and me too, with prodigal talk he then spake to me in a harder dialect, making me understand how ignorant I was, and how much precious time irrecoverably I had lost, which so much seized on my spirits that I was much grieved and troubled, so that he made vermillion tears run down my cheeks. After he had bestowed so much correction as he thought might work in me penitence for my egregious truanting he degraded me, and made me begin anew. The shame whereof and reproach I daily received from my schoolfellows, I could not bear ; wherefore I prevailed on my mother’s indulgence to let me regain at home what I had lost, which she consented to. But perceiving my lecherous inclinations by my night practices with her maid, she resolved to send me to a boarding school. For our family being but small, I lay with the maid ; being so young my mother did not in the least suspect me ; but my too forward lechery would not let me lie quiet, putting her frequently to the squeak.

In fine, I was sent away a great distance to a very severe and rigid master. I no sooner commenced scholar to this tyrant pedagogue but

I was kept close to my book, and lest my wit should be any ways dulled, my stomach was always kept sharp ; which quickened my invention to supply what was deficient. There is no complaint so insufferable as the grumbling of empty and dissatisfied guts. My greatest care was to insinuate myself into the favour of the servant maids, knowing they loved to play at a small game rather than stick out. I performed my business so well that my stomach was always satiated when the rest of the boarders were dissatisfied, often going to bed, in a manner, supperless. Here I was deprived of my old pilfering way, because I had no convenience for the disposal of what I stole, it being but a very small village. However, to keep my hand in use, I daily practised on fruit. Sometimes with a spar sharpened at one end, I picked apples out of baskets ; other times I took with me a comrade, and then thus would we do. I would go to the fruiterer and bargain with him for a pennyworth or more of apples, receiving them into my hat, pretending to draw my money out, I did clap my hat between my legs my partner perceiving that (as we had afore plotted it would be) behind, snatched it through my legs and ran away with it, I thereupon did use to roar out as if I had been undone, and pretending to run after him to regain my hat, we got out of sight and then shared the booty.

One time, coming along the market, I saw a small basket of cherries. I demanded of the woman that sold them what she would have for as many as I could take up in my hand ; she looking upon it and seeing it was but a very small one ; proportionable to my stature, ' twopence,' said she. With that I laid her down her price, and took up basket and all the cherries therein contained, and at a sober pace carried them away. The woman, amazed that she should be thus surprized by such a younker, followed me, and making a great noise, gathered a conflux of people about us, and among the rest a gentleman of quality, who was very earnest to know what the matter was. Holding my purchase fast in my hands (for nothing could persuade me to let go that booty I had so fair obtained) I desired the gentleman that he would be judge of my cause ; whereupon I related to him in what manner I bargained with the woman, and that I had done nothing unjustly, but what was according to our contract. The gentleman wondering at the pregnancy of wit in so tender an age, laughed heartily, and condemned the cherries for my own proper use, but withal paid the woman for them. I was naturally so prone to please my senses that I cared not what course I took that I might obtain my desires. I applied myself more to my wit and invention than I should have done had I had anything allowed me from a friend for a moderate expense.

But my mother thought otherwise, knowing by infallible symptoms

the extravagantness of my inclinations, and therefore debarred me, as much as she could, the very sight of money. A river confined within some made bank, deterring its natural course, will (when that is overthrown which impeded its progress) flow with the greater impetuosity. Youth may for a while be circumscribed as to its desires, but if his inclination prompt him to the enjoyment of sensual delights, sooner or later he will taste their relish, and better early than late. Before the noon of his days approach experience may reform his life and conversation though from the dawning morning thereof till the meridian his actions have been nothing else but the extract of all manner of debauchery. But as is commonly observed, that man which in the declination of his age tracks the bypaths of vice and licentiousness seldom desists till death cuts off his passage ; never leaving off doting on such false and imaginary pleasures, till the grim pale-faced messenger takes him napping. Thus much by way of digression.

Our master was very ancient, however resolved that his age should not hinder his teaching ; for if he found himself indisposed, he would send for us all into his bed-chamber, instructing us there. A man of so strange a temper, he delighted to invert the course of nature, lying in bed by day, and walking in the night, the rain seldom deterring him. On a time above the rest, a gentleman had sent his son five pieces of gold to give his master for diet, &c. Our master receiving them, called for a small cabinet that stood in the room, which I (more officious than the rest) brought him. Having put in the gold, he commanded me to carry it from whence I had it : which I did, well considering the weight thereof, being, though small, very heavy. The Devil presently became my tutor, suggesting to my thoughts various ways for the gaining this money. At last I resolved to take the impression of the key in wax : which with much difficulty I obtained, and carried it to a smith four miles distant. The old fellow immediately upon my proposal suspected me (doubtless he was acquainted with such kind of devices), and questioning me what I intended thereby, I was forced to betake myself to my legs for safety, not knowing what answer to make him. The smith seeing me run, thinking to benefit himself by apprehending me, pursued after, with a red hot iron in his hand which his haste had made him forget to lay aside. One standing by me (just as the smith had almost overtaken me), seeing him come running with a hot iron in his hand, and fearing lest his blind passion might prompt him to mischief me, struck up his heels. In the fall he gave himself a burnt mark in the hand which no doubt he had long ago deserved ; my unknown friend would not suffer him to rise till I was out of sight.

My first stratagem not suiting with my purpose, I tried a picklock

of mine own invention, but that would not effect my design neither ; so that I concluded to take cabinet and all. And in order thereunto watched my opportunity when he should walk abroad according to his custom at night. It was not long ere I enjoyed my wishes. My master's custom was to walk abroad at nights, and sleep in the daytime, inverting the course of Nature. Foreknowing his intention, I got into the chamber and concealed myself under the bed ; so finding my way clear, I conveyed myself and purchase<sup>1</sup> out of the house ; and travelled all night. In the morning I found myself near a small town, about sixteen miles distant from the place whence I came. Thinking myself now secure, I thought it very requisite here to repose my wearied limbs and solace myself with the sight of what I had gotten ; but it was not long after that I was so laced for it that, comparatively to my punishment, Bridewell whipping is but a pastime. The first bush [inn] I came at I went in and called for sack, having never tasted any, and hearing much talk thereof. The people of the house much admired that so small an urchin as I should call for such costly liquor ; they viewed me very attentively, but more especially the cabinet, which caused them to suspect me. The master of the house was acquainted herewith, who, as the Devil would have it, was a Puritan, and a constable too, officious and severe. Without craving pardon for his bold intrusion, he desired me I would admit him into my boyship's society. I confess his gray hairs and sour countenance made me at first sight very much fear what the event of his visit would prove. However, with a seeming undauntedness, I drank to him, but what a difference of taste there was in that and the first glass I drank *solus* ! At length he came to ask me divers questions, Whence I came ? Whither I was going ? What was contained within that cascanet ? and the like. Before I could give the resolution of what they demanded, the Hue and Cry overtook me ; I was laid hold on, and my treasure taken from me. That which vexed me as much as my surprizal was, I had no further time to try what kind of taste the sack had. Various were the talk of the people, every one spending his verdict on me. ‘ This is a prime young rogue indeed, to begin thus soon,’ said one, ‘ could he have seen, when in his mother's belly, surely he would have stolen something thence ! ’ Another said, Forward fruit was soon rotten, and since I began to steal whilst a child, I should be hanged before I should write Man. Ready to die with fear, I was sent back to the place whence I came and from thence to the place of execution, had not the tenderness of my age, and fewness of years procured pity from my injured master. Confined I was within his house, locked up close prisoner in a chamber till that he

<sup>1</sup> The word ‘ purchase ’ is here used with its signification of booty or plunder ; *pour chasser*, chase for.

could acquaint my mother with what had passed. In this time I was not debarred of my sustenance though my commons were epitomized, neither was I altogether deprived of society, for I was daily visited by my master, attended with a cat-of-nine-tails (as he called it), being so many small cords, with which he flayed my buttocks ; and when he found me stubborn, or not penitent enough as he thought, after he had skinned my podex, he would wash it with vinegar, or water and salt.

Within a week my mother arrived, who hearing of my rogueries, was so impatient that she would needs take me to task herself. But when she had untrussed me, and saw me in so woeful a plight, my shirt being as stiff as buckram with blood and my tender breech ploughed and harrowed, she fell down as if she had been about to expire. Recovering, my master endeavoured to satisfy her, by telling her that great offences required great punishments, and the way to bend an oak is to do it whilst it is young. ‘ I had once when young,’ said he, ‘ a spaniel which would find out the hens’ nest, and breaking the eggs suck them, so that we could never have any chickens. At last discovering who was the malefactor ; I bethought myself of this punishment which should hinder him for ever doing the like. I got an egg roasted so hard till the shell was ready to burn, then did I first shew the egg to the dog, and then clapt it hot into his mouth holding his jaws close. This so tormented him by burning, that ever after he could not endure the sight thereof, but if shown, ran away crying as if he had been beaten. Thus, for the notorious fact your son must be so sharply chastised that when he thinks of stealing he shall remember those torments he once endured for it, and so frighten him from executing any such crime.’

Many more arguments he alleged to that purpose, which had satisfied her well in his severity, had not natural affection interposed. What to do with me she knew not ; wherefore she consulted with my master, who told her, he durst not keep me longer, the country people bringing in daily complaints against me. And to aggravate my mother the more, he briefly summed up my faults in this manner ; having had justly various accusers who drew up my indictment, Thus.

*Imprimis*, That one of his maids having crossed me, to be revenged of her (knowing she was a drowsy wench, when asleep, not easily waked) as she slept by the fire I took my opportunity to melt some glue, and gently touched the closure of both her eyelids with a pencil, which well I knew would lock up her sight. Against the time I intended to wake her I placed all about her chairs and stools. The plot being ripe, I pretended her mistress called. The wench starting up running and rubbing of her eyes turned topsy turvy over the chairs, getting up she engaged herself with the stools and so entangled herself therein that, endeavouring

to free herself, her coats acted the parts of traitors in discovering the hidden secrets and arcanas belonging to her sex, and that with much satisfaction I had seen the execution of my revenge. That this wench could not be persuaded but that as a judgment she was stricken blind for some sin she had committed privately, which then her conscience did whisper in her ear ; and undoubtedly had turned lunatic had she not been speedily restored to her sight by taking off the glue, which was done with much difficulty. That he, going about to correct me for this unlucky and mischievous fact, was by me shown a very shitten trick, which put him into a stinking condition, for having made myself laxative on purpose I squirted into his face upon the first lash given. That being upon boys' backs, ready to be whipped, I had often bit holes in their ears. That another time sirreverencing in a paper, and running to the window with it, which looked out into the yard, my aged mistress looking up to see who opened the casement, I had like to have thrown it into her mouth ; however for a time deprived her of that little sight she had left. That another time I had watched some lusty young girls, that used in summer nights about twelve o'clock to wash themselves in a small brook near adjacent, and that I had concealed myself behind a bush, and when they were stripped, took away their clothes, making them dance home after me stark naked to the view of their sweethearts whom I had planted in a place appointed for that purpose, having given them before notice of my design.

A great many more such tricks he recounted which he knew, but not the tenth of what he knew not. As for example, on Christmas Day, we had a pot of plum-broth. I asked the maid to give me a taste to see how I liked them, ‘Ay that I should,’ she said (this was the maid I had so served before with glue) and with that takes up a ladle full and bid me sup, she holding the ladle in her own hand. I imprudently opening my mouth somewhat larger than I should she poured down the scalding pottage through my throat : at present I could not tell the jade (that laughed till she held her sides) how I liked them ; but I verily believed I had swallowed the Gunpowder Plot, expecting every moment to be blown up. I took as little notice of this passage as possibly I could, resolving to retaliate her kindness when she least thought on’t. I observed the maid to carry this plum-pottage pot into the yard, and taking notice that the weight of the jack was in the same yard, wound up a great height under a small pent-house, the jack being down I suddenly removed the weight, and fastened the pot to the line, so going into the kitchin, wound it up to the top, and then stopped it, for the meat was taken up. The house was all in an uproar instantly about the pot, every one wondering what should become of it. The maid averred that she saw it even

now, and none could remove it but the Devil. Others asserted (which were infected with Puritanism) that it was a judgment shown for the superstitious observation of that festival day. But the next day, roasting meat, this seeming miracle vanished by the descending of the pot fastened to the jack-line. Another time my master had reserved in his garden some choice apricots, not above an half-score ; which he purposed for some friends that intended to visit him shortly. The daily sight of this delicate fruit, being forbidden, tempted me more strongly to attempt their rape ; but I made choice of an impropitious hour to accomplish my design in ; for my master looked out of his window and saw me gather them, though he knew not absolutely whether it was I or no. Whereupon he instantly summoned us together, being met, I quickly understood his intention : therefore I conveyed the apricots into the next boy's pocket. I had no sooner done it, but we were commanded to be searched ; I was very forward to be the first, though I was most suspected, but none was found about me, so that I was acquitted. But to see with what amazement the poor boy gazed, when they were discovered about him, how strangely he looked, distorting his face into several forms, produced laughter even from my incensed master, but real pity from me, for he was severely whipped for that crime I myself committed. I could recite many more suchlike childish rogueries, did I not fear I should be tedious in their relation, and burden the reader with juvenile follies ; wherefore I shall return where I left off. Whilst my mother was in a serious consultation with her reason how she should dispose of me, I had not patience to wait the result, but gave her the slip, resolved to run the risk of Fortune, and try whether mine own endeavours would supply my necessities.

## CHAPTER IV

*How he ran from his mother, and what courses he steered in one whole year's ramble*

IT was in August when I undertook this my knight-errantry ; the fairness of the season much favoured my enterprize. Thinking I should always enjoy such weather, and never be pinched with necessity, I went on very courageously. The first dinner I made was on blackberries and nuts, esteemed by me very delicious fare at first, which delighted me so much the more having not my liberty controlled. When night approached it seemed very uncouth and strange finding instead of

a featherbed no other thing to lie on but a haycock, and no other coverlid but the canopy of heaven. But considering with myself that I had no task to con over-night, nor fear of over-sleeping myself next morning, and so be fetched to school by a guard of my fellow scholars with a lanthorn and candle, though the Sun appeared at that time in his full lustre, I laid myself down and slept profoundly, not without some affrighting dreams. The last was of the cat-of-nine-tails, which my master laid so home methought that the smart thereof made me cry out, and so I awaked. As then the early lark, the winged herald of the morning, had not with her pretty warbling notes summoned the bright watchmen of the night to prepare for a retreat, neither had Aurora opened the vermillion Oriental gate to make room for Sol's radiant beams, to dissipate that gloomy darkness that had muffled up our hemisphere in obscurity. In the morning I went on in my progress as the day before ; then began a shower of tears to fall from my eyes, considering how I had left my disconsolate, and almost heart-broken mother, lamenting my loss, and fearing what fatal courses I might take. It was no less trouble to me to think that I was travelling I knew not whither, moneyless, having nothing but hazel and brambles to address myself for the appeasing of hunger's approaching gripes. Now, methought I began to loath my aforenamed manna, blackberries, nuts, crabs, bullies, &c., and longed to taste of the flesh-pots again ; but the Devil a bit could I get but what the hedges afforded me.

All day I thus wandered about, not daring to come near any town, having had such bad success in the last when I first rambled ; and now night came on, which put me in mind of procuring a lodging somewhat warmer than the other. A barn presently offered itself to my sight, which I accosted, and without delay or fear, entered into the enchanted castle, where I found accommodation for the most faithful and valiant knight that ere strode saddle for ladies' sake. Here might I take my choice of variety of fresh straw, but my weariness would not permit to complement my good fortune one jot, and I so tumbled over head and ears. I had not lain there above an hour before I heard a noise, and peeping out of the straw, being in a great fear, I saw a many strange creatures come into the barn, for the day was not yet shut in. My thoughts presently reminded me that I had heard talk of hobgoblins, fairies and the like, and judged these no other ; and that which confirmed me in this belief was their garb and talking to one another in a language I understood not (but since, I understand it to be Canting), I lay still as long as my fear would permit me, but they surrounding me, I was not able to contain myself longer, but cried out aloud, 'Great God, have mercy on me, and let not these Devils devour me,' and with

that, started out from among them. They, amazed as much as I, ran for it too, leaving their children behind them, every one esteeming him the happiest man which was the foremost. I looking behind me, seeing them following me, imagined these Devils ran upon all four, and having started their game were resolved to hunt a sinful leveret to death. Concluding them long-winded hellhounds, I judged praying a safer way than flying, and so fell instantly on my knees.

The Gypsies quickly overtook me, and finding me in that posture, soon understood whence their fear proceeded. They then spoke to me in a language I understood, bidding me not be afraid ; but I had heard the Devil was a liar from the beginning, therefore I would not believe them. They would have raised me from my devotion, telling me it was enough, and that made me suspect them the more ; thinking they designed to get me out of a praying posture, that they might have the more power of me. Nothing prevailing with me, they vowed and protested they would not injure me in the least, and if I would go along with them, I should share as deliciously as they did. This was a potent argument to persuasion, and so I agreed to go along with them back again. All their cry was now for Rum-booz (i.e. for good liquor). Their Captain, not enduring to hear so sad a complaint, and not endeavour the supplying the want complained of, immediately commanded out four able maunders (beggars), ordering them to stroll (wander) to the next town, every one going apart. Some countrymen gave them drink, fearing they might fire the houses in the night, out of revenge, others (of the more ignorant sort) thought they could command infernal spirits, and so harm them that way, or else bewitch their cattle, and therefore would not deny them : insomuch that in a short time these four returned laden with bub and food. It was placed in the middle of us, who sat circularly ; then out came the wooden dishes, everyone provided but myself, but I was soon supplied by a young Rum-Mort that sat next me, intended for my sporting mate. A health went round to the Prince of Maunders, another to the Great Duke of Clapperdogeons, a third to the Marquess of Doxy Dells, and Rum Morts, a fourth to the Earl of Clymes ; neither did we forget Haly, Abbas, Albumazar, Arcandam, with the rest of the waggoners that strive who shall be principal in driving Charles his Wain.

Most part of the night we spent in boozing, pecking rumly or wapping, that is drinking, eating, or whoring, according to those terms they use among themselves. Jealousy was a thing they never would admit of in their society, and to make appear how little they were tainted therewith, the males and females lay promiscuously together, it being free for any of the Fraternity to make choice of what doxy he liked best, changing

when he pleased. They plied me so oft with their Rum-booz (as they called it) and pleased me so well in giving me a young girl to dally with. Though she was in rags, and with a skin artificially discoloured tawny, yet I was not so ignorant as not to understand good flesh, and what properties went to the completing a votaress for *Venus's* service. I was so tickled in my fancy with this pretty little wanton companion, that for her sake I was very well content to list myself one of that ragged regiment. And that which added to the inducing me to this resolution was my want of money, and what I suffered in those two foregoing hard days' fare among the nut trees. I first acquainted my doxy with my intent, who, glad to hear thereof, gave it vent, and broached it to the rest, who unanimously with joy embraced me; and to gratify my inauguration tipped to each other a gage of booz, and so went round. The fumes of drink had now ascended into their brain, wherefore they couched a hogshead, and went to sleep.

## CHAPTER V

*Wherein he relates what manner of people they were in whose society he entered himself: division of their tribes, manners, customs, and language*

AS soon as I had resolved to travel the country with them, they fitted me for their company by stripping me, and selling my proper garments, and clothing me in rags, which they pinned about me, giving a stitch here and there, according as necessity required. We used not when we entered our 'Libkin' or lodging to pull off our clothes; which had I been forced to do, I could never have put them on again, nor any, but such who were accustomed to produce order out of a Babel of rags. Being now *a le mode Tatterdemallion*, to complete me for their purpose, with green walnuts they so discoloured my face that everyone that saw me would have sworn I was the true son of an Egyptian. Before we marched on, let me give you an account of our leaders, and the ranks we were disposed in. Our chief commander was called by the name of *Ruffler*, the next to him *Upright-man*, the rest in order thus:

Hookers, (alias) Anglero  
Priggers of Prancers  
Pallyards  
Fraters  
Swigmen

Priggs  
Swaddlers  
Curtals  
Irish toyle  
Dommerars

Jarkemen	Glymmerers
Patri-Coes	Bawdy-Baskets
Kitchin-Coes	Autem-Morts
Abram men	Doxies
Whip-Jacks	Dells
Counterfeit-Crankes	Kitchin-Morts

We mustered above threescore, old and young, and because we were too great a company to march together, we were divided into three squadrons. The first squadron, that led the van, was ordered by our commander to stick up small boughs all the way they went, that we might know what course they steered. For, like wild fowl, we fly one after another, and though we are scattered like the quarters of a traitor, yet like water when cut with a sword, we easily came together again. As the Switzer hath his wench and his cock with him when he goes to wars : or like a Scotch Army, where every soldier almost hath the geud wife and the bears following him ; so we had every one his doxy or wench, who carried at her back a Lullaby-cheat, and at may be another in her arms. When they are weary of carrying them, they take their turns to put them in a pair of panniers, like green geese going to market, or like fish in dossers coming from Rye. Where note, that each division hath a small horse or two, or else asses to ease them of their burdens.

Some of us were clad anticly with bells and other toys, merely to allure the country people unto us, which most commonly produced their desired effects. In some places they would flock unto us in great quantities, and then was our time to make our markets. We pretended an acquaintance with the stars (as having an alliance to the Egyptian Magi, the founders of astrologic art) and that the ministers of Fate were our familiars, and so possessing these poor ignorant people with a belief that we could tell their fortunes by inspection into either hands or faces. Whilst we were seriously looking thereon, one of our diving comrades picked their pockets, or with a short sharp knife, and a horn on the thumb 'nipped their bungs.' By asking the silly milkmaids questions, we gathered from their own mouths the properest resolutions ; then they would admire, and in their admiration tremble to hear the truth proceed from the mouth of such as were strangers to their actions, by which means, among some we gained a great respect, accompanied with fear. Did not astrologers make use of such stratagems, they could never acquire so much repute among the judicious, as well as vulgar capacities.

And because it falls in so pat to my present purpose, I shall beg so much patience from the reader as to give him a brief account of some fallacies some star-gazing impostors use to work their own ends, and delude credulous people. One I knew who raised his credit (and since

a considerable estate) upon the basis of good intelligence. He kept a servant who constantly attended below for the reception of such who came for satisfaction in the astrological resolution of questions. This man's office was to tell the querent that his master was busy above, about some grand concern, but if the person would be pleased to wait a little while, till that business was dispatched he questioned not but that his master would render him a satisfactory account of what he demanded, adding farther (to infuse into him faith, to credit what he said) that though report had spoken largely, (and yet nothing but what this artist hath merited), yet all came far short of his real desert ; having done such stupendous things that must needs, without injustice, be commemorized to eternity, and admired by future ages. In the meantime, this servant endeavoured to pump out of the proponent what he came about, which being understood, he gave information to his master by so many times ringing of a bell. This item being given, the querent is called up, and before ever he can frame his mouth to propound his question, this profound artist prevents him, saying, ' I know what you come about, Sir ; therefore save yourself the labour to tell me that which I know already. You have lost a watch, a horse ; or you would know how you shall prosper in such a business, whether marriage or an employment ' ; or any such like common question. This makes the artist to be wondered at ; and then erecting a scheme, positively and surely tells him what he must expect, and that he may give answers more exactly concerning stolen goods, he was in constant fee with thief-takers, who from time to time made him a report of what persons were robbed, what the things were, and many times gave him a description of the felon. By these practices men believed every word he delivered to be an oracle ; so that his chamber was daily so thronged with the report of people that in a short time his ambition pricked him on to purchases with the money he had gained thus fallaciously.

One story, very remarkable, I shall add, and then crave your pardon for this my digression. One day a young gentleman (but of a mean estate) who was more credulous than wise, and more inquisitive than prudent, came to him, and having not that wealth which his prodigality required, desired instructions what course he was best to steer to arrive at the port of his wishes and hopes. Viewing him narrowly, he perceived him to be a man of a sweet complexion, and a body well proportioned ; and therefore judged him a fit subject for female fancies to work upon. ' Sir,' said he, ' I shall give you my best advice, but I shall crave your patience for a little while ; for a matter of this weight must not precipitately be undertaken : wherefore, if you please to see me to-morrow, what lies in me shall be at your service.' Being just gone it happened

that a stale maid, who had more money than beauty, and less discretion than lechery, came to be resolved of him, when she should be married : for it seems by the sequel she could tarry no longer. Viewing her well (though she knew not him), he knew her to be wealthy, and nearly related to persons of quality. ‘ Madam,’ said he, ‘ I shall endeavour your satisfaction ’ ; and so withdrew into his closet. Having stayed a while bringing out his figure, and with much gravity looking thereupon, he thus unriddled the mysterious meaning of the celestial bodies : ‘ Madam, you never was much troubled with the importunate suits of amorous visitants (this he gathered from the deformity of her physiognomy), they all knowing your indifference to change your condition, but upon considerable grounds ; by which means you have almost frustrated what the stars have designed for you.’ ‘ I hope it is but almost,’ said she, ‘ not altogether ’ (for it troubled her very much to hear she should leave the world without tasting the sweets of a married life). ‘ No,’ he replied. ‘ For if to-morrow by four of the clock in the afternoon, you go into Moorfields, and take a turn or two in the usurers-walk, you shall there meet with a person rich and handsome, that at first sight shall fall extremely in love with you. Slight him not, neither deny him his conjugal proposal ; if you do, it will be too late to hope for an husband. You shall distinguish him from others by these signs : His complexion is fair, his eye sharp and piercing, his hair flaxen, and a middle stature.’ Her joy had like to have transported her beyond the bounds of modesty, which she could not conceal, but made it appear in a pecuniary expression of her gratitude for such welcome tidings ; and so promising him to follow his counsel, she took her leave.

The next morning the young gallant came, who had his lesson given him : but before he went, he made him give a bond of 200*l.* to be paid upon the day of his marriage with that gentlewoman ; which he gladly consented to, and paid that very sum within ten days after, for according to the directions was given him, he met with that gentlewoman described to him, as he had been before to her, who at the first sight of each other was incapable of containing themselves, but mutually embraced (after three or four words passed) as if he had been her *quondam* dearly beloved, returned from some long voyage, and went not to their respective lodgings till their marriage was consummated. But to return where I left off.

Thus we rambled up and down the country ; and where the people demeaned themselves not civil to us by voluntary contributions, their geese, hens, pigs, or any such mandible thing we met with made us satisfaction for their hide-bound injuries. Our revenge most commonly was very bloody, and so merciless that whatever fell into our hands never

escaped alive, and in our murders so cruel that nothing would satisfy us but the very hearts-blood, of what we killed. The usual sacrifices of our implacable revenge were innocent lambs, sheep, calves, &c., all which we handled more severely than prisoners are by serjeants, when they are not paid their unjust demands ; fees, I should have said, but that by experience I have found they walk not according to the rules of ancient constitutions, but are guided by the dictates of their insatiate wills, which is their law which poor prisoners must indulge (though they rack their slender credits, or pawn their clothes), or else they must expect less kindness from them than a condemned person about to be tied up by the hangman, who will stay till he is ready to be turned off. A goose coming among us, we have a trick to make him so wise as never to be a goose again. But let the wisest use what tricks they can, they never shall make some serjeants honest men. We seize the prey, and leave the tragical part to our ‘morts’ or women to act. The stage on which they perform their parts, is either some large heath, or *furzebush-common*, far from any house. This being done, and night approaching, we repair to our dormitories, or houses of rest, which are most usually out-barns of farmers and husbandmen, which we make choice of in some poor straggling village who dare not deny us, for fear ere the morning they find their thatched houses too hot to hold them. These barns serve us instead of cook rooms, supping parlours, and bedchambers : having supped (most commonly in a plentiful manner), we cannot ‘Couch a Hogshead,’ that is to say, sleep, without good store of ‘Rum-booz,’ that is, drink ; and having sufficiently warmed our brains with humming liquor, which our ‘Lower’ (Silver) shall procure ; if our deceitful ‘Maunding’ (Begging) cannot, we then sing a catch or two in our own language, of which we had good store ; which for their bawdry I omit. However, give me leave to instance one canting song, and I shall waive the rest, being loth to tire you too much with one thing.

**B**ING out bien Morts, and toure, and toure,  
 Bing out bien Morts, and toure ;  
 For all your Duds are bing’d awast  
 The bien Cove hath the loure.  
 I met a Dell, I view’d her well,  
 She was benship to my watch ;  
 So she and I did stall, and cloy,  
 Whatever we could catch.  
 This Doxy Dell can cut bien whids,  
 And wap fell for a win ;  
 And prig and cloy so benshiply,  
 All the Deusea-vile within.

The boyle was up, we had good luck,  
 In frost for and in Snow :  
 When they did seek, then did we creep,  
 And plant in Ruffe-mans low.  
 To strawling Ken the Mort bings then,  
 To fetch loure for her cheats ;  
 Duds & Ruffe-peck, Rombold by Harman beck,  
 And won by Maunders feats.  
 Ye Maunders all, stow what you stall,  
 To Rome Coves what so quire,  
 And wapping Dell, that niggles well,  
 And takes loure for her hire.  
 And Jybe well jerckt, teck rome confect,  
 For back by glymmar to Maund ;  
 To mill each ken, let Cove bing then,  
 Through Ruff-mans, jague, or Laund,  
 Till Crampings quire tip Cove his hire ;  
 And Quire Ken do them catch,  
 A Canniken, mill quire Cuffin,  
 So quire to ben Coves watch.  
 Bien Darkmans then, Bouse Mort and Ken,  
 The bien Coves bings awast,  
 On Chates to trine by Rome Coves dine,  
 For his long lib at last.  
 Bing out bien Morts and toure, and toure,  
 Bing out of the Rome vile bine,  
 And toure the Cove that cloyd your duds,  
 Vpon the Chates to trine.

Having even wearied ourselves with drinking and singing, we tumbled promiscuously together, male and female in straw, not confining ourselves to one constant consort, we made use of the first that came to hand ; by which means incests and adulteries became our pastimes. By this means I grew weary of their practices, and therefore resolved to desert them as soon as the first opportunity should offer itself, which was in a short time ; wherefore at the present I shall say no more of them, only give me leave to give some small account of their language.

The first inventor of canting, as I am informed, was hanged about four-score years since : such gibberish was never heard of before ; since which time there hath not been wanting such who have taken pains in the polishing, refining, and augmenting that language of the Devil's imps. It is a confused invention of words ; for its dialect I cannot find to be grounded on any certain rules ; and no wonder since the founders and practicers thereof are the chief fathers and nourishers of disorder. Yet even out of that irregularity a man may observe some kind of form,

and some words do retain something of scholarship, as ‘*Togeman*,’ a gown, from *Toga*; ‘*Pannam*,’ from *Panis*, bread; ‘*Cosan*,’ *Caseus*, cheese. The monosyllable ‘*Cheat*’; we use as a relative, as *Nab*, a head; ‘*Nab-cheat*,’ a hat, &c. ‘*Cove*’ or ‘*Cuffin*’ is in general terms a man; but by adding ‘*bien*,’ which signifies good or well, or ‘*Quire*,’ which is wicked or knavish, you make the word ‘*Cove*’ signify an honest man, or a justice of peace. Pardon the expression, for they call a justice ‘*Quier Cuffin*'; that is to say, as before mentioned, a wicked, knavish, or foolish man. To conclude, I shall here insert this little Canting Vocabulary alphabetically,

**A UTEM Mort**

*Abram*

*Abram Cove*

*Autem*

*Bughar*

*Bouse*

*Bousing Ken*

*Borde*

*Boung*

*Bien*

*Benshiply*

*Benar*

*Bing*

*Bing a waste*

*Bube*

*Bufe*

*Bleating cheat*

*Belly cheat*

*Betty*

*Bite the Peter or Roger*

*Budge*

*Bulk and File*

*Cokir*

*Cove*

*Cuffin*

*Cuffin-Quire*

*Cramprings*

*Chats*

*Canke*

*Crackmans*

*Calle*

*Togeman*

*Joseph*

*Couch*

**A MARRIED woman**

*Naked*

*A tatterdemallion*

*A church*

*A cur*

*Drink*

*An ale-house*

*A shilling*

*A purse*

*Good or well*

*Very well*

*Better*

*To go*

*To go away*

*The pox*

*A dog*

*A sheep*

*An apron*

*An instrument to break a door*

*Steal the portmantle or cloak-bag*

*One that steals cloaks*

*The Pickpocket and his mate*

*A liar*

*A man*

*A justice of peace*

*Bolt or shackles*

*The gallows*

*Dumb*

*Hedges*

*A cloak*

*To lie or sleep*

<i>Couch a Hogshead</i>	To go to sleep
<i>Commission</i> }	A shirt
<i>Mish</i> }	A chicken
<i>Cackling cheat</i>	Cheese
<i>Cassan</i>	To kill
<i>Crash</i>	Teeth
<i>Crashing cheats</i>	To steal
<i>Cloy</i>	To speak
<i>Cut</i>	To speak well
<i>Cut bien whids</i>	To speak evilly
<i>Cut quire whids</i>	Counterfeit
<i>Confeck</i>	The plague
<i>Cannakin</i>	To be whipped
<i>Cly the Jerk</i>	A beggar born
<i>Clapperdogeon</i>	A sap-headed fellow
<i>Culle</i>	Pretty
<i>Dimber</i>	Rascal
<i>Damber</i>	Stockings
<i>Drawers</i>	Goods
<i>Duds</i>	The country
<i>Deusea-vile</i>	A madman
<i>Dommerar</i>	Night or evening
<i>Darkmans</i>	A wench
<i>Doxy</i> }	To — [lie with]
<i>Dell</i> }	Twopence
<i>Dock</i> }	To enter
<i>Wap</i> }	A part
<i>Deuswins</i>	Give me my part or share
<i>Dup</i>	Choked
<i>Earnest</i>	A staff
<i>Tip me my Earnest</i>	A hole
<i>Frummagem</i>	Hands
<i>Filch</i>	Rings or gloves
<i>Ferme</i>	To beat
<i>Fambles</i>	A groat
<i>Famble chears</i>	Tobacco or smoke
<i>Fib</i>	One that receives stolen goods
<i>Flag</i>	Fire
<i>Fogus</i>	Eyes
<i>Fencing Cully</i>	Corn
<i>Glymmer</i>	A gallant wench
<i>Glaziers</i>	A lip
<i>Grannam</i>	A pot or pipe
<i>Gentry-Mort</i>	
<i>Gan</i>	
<i>Gage</i>	

<i>Grunting cheat</i>	A sucking-pig
<i>Giger</i>	A door
<i>Gybe</i>	Any writing or pass
<i>Glazyer</i>	One that goes in at the windows
<i>Gilt</i>	A pick-lock
<i>Harmanback</i>	A constable
<i>Harmans</i>	The stocks
<i>Heave a Booth</i>	To rob an house
<i>Half bord</i>	Sixpence
<i>Hearts ease</i>	A twenty shilling piece
<i>Jocky</i>	A flail, or man's privities
<i>Jague</i>	A ditch
<i>Jarke</i>	A seal
<i>Ken</i>	An house
<i>Kinchin</i>	Little
<i>Knapper of Knappers</i>	A sheep-stealer
<i>Kinchin Cove</i>	A little man
<i>Kate</i>	A pick-lock
<i>Loure</i>	Money
<i>Lightmans</i>	Morning or day
<i>Lib</i>	To tumble
<i>Libben</i>	An house to lie in
<i>Lage</i>	Water
<i>Libedge</i>	A bed
<i>Lullaby-cheat</i>	A child
<i>Lap</i>	Pottage
<i>Lurries</i>	All manner of clothes
<i>Maunder</i>	To beg
<i>Maunders</i>	Beggars
<i>Margery Prater</i>	A hen
<i>Mill</i>	To steal
<i>Make</i>	A halfpenny
<i>Mynt</i>	Gold
<i>Muffling cheat</i>	A napkin
<i>Mumpers</i>	Genteel beggars
<i>Milken</i>	One that breaks houses
<i>Munns</i>	The face
<i>Nab</i>	A head
<i>Nab-cheat</i>	A hat
<i>Nab</i>	{ To take Or cheat
<i>Palliard</i>	One whose father is a beggar born
<i>Paplar</i>	Milk-pottage
<i>Prats</i>	Thighs
<i>Prigg</i>	To ride
<i>Peckidge</i>	Meat

<i>Pannam</i>	Bread
<i>Plant</i>	To lay or hide
<i>Prigging</i>	Riding
<i>Prancer</i>	A horse
<i>Pratting cheat</i>	A tongue
<i>Peake</i>	Any lace
<i>Pike on the Leen</i>	Run as fast as you can
<i>Perry</i>	Fearful
<i>Peter</i>	A portmantua
<i>Prigger of Prancers</i>	A horse-stealer
<i>Pad</i>	The highwayman
<i>Plant your whids</i>	Have a care what you say
<i>Quarron</i>	A body
<i>Quacking cheat</i>	A duck
<i>Quier</i>	Wicked or roguish
<i>Quier-Ken</i>	A prison
<i>Quier-Mort</i>	A pocky jade
<i>Quier-Cove</i>	A rogue
<i>Romboyle</i>	A ward or watch
<i>Rome</i>	Gallant
<i>Rome-vile</i>	London
<i>Rome-Mort</i>	A gallant girl
<i>Ruffin</i>	The devil
<i>Roger</i>	A cloak-bag
<i>Ridge-cully</i>	A goldsmith
<i>Ruffler</i>	An over-grown rogue
<i>Ruffe peck</i>	Bacon
<i>Rod-shanke</i>	A mallard
<i>Rom-pad</i>	The highway
<i>Rome-padders</i>	Highwaymen
<i>Rome-Culle</i>	A rich coxcomb
<i>Swagg</i>	A shop
<i>Sundge</i>	One that lies under the bed to rob the house
<i>Shop-lift</i>	One that steals out of shops
<i>Stampers</i>	Shoes
<i>Stock-drawers</i>	Stockings
<i>Stamps</i>	Legs
<i>Scoure</i>	To wear
<i>Skew</i>	A dish
<i>Slate</i>	A sheet
<i>Strommel</i>	Straw or hair
<i>Skepper</i>	Barn
<i>Stow your whids</i>	Be wary
<i>Stalling-Ken</i>	{ Broker's house, or an house to receive stolen goods

<i>Smelling cheat</i>	A garden
<i>Solomon</i>	The Mass
<i>Tour</i>	To look out
<i>Tout his muns</i>	Look in his face
<i>Track up the Dancers</i>	Go up the stairs
<i>The Cul Snyches</i>	The man eyes you
<i>Tip the Cole to Adam Tyler</i>	Give what money you pocket-picked to the next party, presently
<i>Tip the Mish</i>	Give the shirt
<i>Tib o' th' Buttery</i>	Goose
<i>Tip</i>	To give
<i>The Mort tipped me a wink</i>	The whore gave me a wink
<i>Trine</i>	Tyburn
<i>Trining</i>	Hanging
<i>Tick-Rome</i>	A licence
<i>Tres wins</i>	Threepence
<i>Win</i>	A penny
<i>Wicher Cully</i>	A silver-smith
<i>Yarum</i>	Milk

This much for a taste. I think it not worth my pains to insert all those canting words which are used ; it is enough that I have here divulged what words are most in use.

Having now deserted this tawny crew, I resolved to betake myself to a new trade, which you shall understand in the following discourse.

## CHAPTER VI

*How he went a-begging : what rules he observed therein: what villainies he committed whilst he professed that mysterious art*

NECESSITY is a thing better known by the effects than its character, and of all things the most insufferable ; to prevent which, it puts a man on to venture upon all manner of dishonest and dangerous actions, suggesting strange imaginations, and desperate resolutions, soliciting things infamous, and attempting things impossible ; the product of which is only disorder, confusion, shame, and in the end ruin. But when necessity shall conjoin with an evil disposition, a depraved nature, what horrid and nefarious facts will it not instigate that man to perpetrate ? And though he seeth monthly examples of persons condemned and executed for the like crimes he daily practiseth, will not

forbear nor desist from such irregular and life-destroying courses, till they have brought him to the like miserable catastrophe. Necessity had now deeply fallen in love with me, and the young virgin shame-facedness (once my mistress) had forsaken me ; for as soon as I had pulled but one thread out of her garment, all the rest unravelled, and she, not brooking her nakedness, changed her master, and so totally left me.

Having now obtained more than a convenient boldness I travelled and begged with very good success. But methought my life was somewhat uncomfortable without a companion (all creatures coveting society, but more especially man), at length, according to my desires, I met with one whose long practice in this art, besides the observations of his predecessors, deriving his pedigree in a direct line from Prince Prig, endued him with so much skill as to furnish me with the knowledge of anything that belonged to the liberal art of begging. We straight betook ourselves to the '*boozing ken*' ; and having '*bubbed rumly*', we concluded an everlasting friendship. Then did he recount to me the most material things observable in our profession. First, he tuned my voice to that pitch which might most of all raise compassion ; next what form of prayer I was to use upon such an occasion, what upon such, varying according to the humour of those persons that I begged of, gathered from their habit or gesture ; then he told me when we came to London he would acquaint me what places were most fit for our purpose, and what times ; that I ought not to be too importunate to some, always wishing well, and loudly praying for the health and safety of estate and limbs of such as denied me alms ; but more especially pronounce a '*God bless you Master, and let Heaven reward what you have here done on earth*', if anything is bestowed upon me ; if any should pity my nakedness, and clothe me in garments without holes in them, I should wear them no longer than in the donor's sight, reserving my rags to re-invest myself, and sell the other, as unfit and scandalous to our occupation ; that we should never beg far from one another, and at nights faithfully share the gains. Moreover, he informed me the way to make all sorts of seeming sores and lameness ; that within the tattered rags, there be places provided for private conveyance.

Some of maturer age, if they have no children, rent them of such as have ; but we had no occasion for this fallacy. That if I saw a door open, I should go in boldly ; if I met any in the way, I should then in a very submissive manner implore their help in the assistance of my wants, never desiring any thing but what was of small value, one half-penny, farthing, or some broken crust (if at a door), pretending the not eating of a bit in two days. If the passage was clear, whip away what was nearest to hand. That the time of rising in the morning be very early,

shewing myself in the streets ; for then will those that pass by judge I have no other lodging but what a stall affords, that way procuring relief from pitiful-minded persons, and so continue begging till the evening ; when it beginneth to be duskish, if any then walks singly, accost him in a begging form ; coming up so close, as that you may knock him down with a truncheon, still carried about for that purpose ; which is done securely, and many times with a good booty.

Being full fraught with these, and many more precepts he delivered, we set forth on our progress. We had not gone far before we were surprized by the constable as two sturdy vagrants, and as 'handsail' to my new trade, we were both soundly whipped out of town. To avoid this danger for the time to come, we missed all the towns of any considerable note in our way, and only frequented villages ; nay at last we were forced not only to avoid them but the highways too ; for travellers observing our garb, countenances, and weapon, which was a baton, suspecting us, would before they came near us, set spurs to their horses and ride as if the devil drove them. Many petty rogueries we performed by the way, not worthy the commemoration, and therefore I shall pass them over ; only this I shall insert.

Travelling the field-way, we stumbled on a tinker and his trull lying by an hedge-side. I knew not what to think at first, they lay so still ; with much pulling and stirring then they awakened. I asked them what they lay there for ? They answered me, that they were lately bitten by a serpent near adjacent, a potent creature, mighty in strength, and of a vast proportion, who had lately stung several as well as they. It seemed very strange to us, especially having heard not the least report hereof. To be short, I desired them to shew us the place of his residence, which they readily consented to. Instead of this venomous animal, they only brought us to its representation in a sign, where a cup of double-brewed beer was sold, notable humming gear. The people liked the tinker and his female comrade well enough, but would not admit of us, till we shewed them money ; for our vestments looked like the gleanings of a rag-merchants yard. We drank stiffly till we laid the woman asleep again ; still the tinker bore up stiffly. She had not slept long but up she started, pulled up her coats, and in our presence pissed in the middle of the room and so sat her self down, yet awaked not ; which action could not but produce much laughter from me and my comrade. At last the tinker fell asleep too, having added so much to his former burden that he was no longer able to stand under it. Now had my wits enough to work on ; but finding myself very drowsy, for the strength of the drink had almost overpowered me, I was forced to advise with my friend what course I were best take to make me a little more sober. He was so well

known in such matters (being an old experienced pitcher-man), that he quickly counselled me what to do, he himself being not in the least disturbed. This was his advice which he did put in practice, he got a pailful of water, and so taking me up by the heels, he clapped my head thereinto ; holding me in that manner so long that the pail had like to have proved the ferry-boat that should waft me over the Stygian Lake ; this so qualified the heat my head had contracted by my excessive drinking of that strong stupifying liquor, that I found it had wrought its desired effects.

After this, we ransacked their pockets, but found little in the man's ; but searching the woman in a private place between her pocket and placket, we discovered something considerable, which we took. Having so done, we thought it high time to be gone, but first we resolved to make some sport as well as take their moneys, which was thus. I tied to each of their girdles, behind, a flagon-pot, and to each a label affixed, or a paper of verses, and so immediately tripped off. The host seeing us go out of doors with more than ordinary speed, ran into the room where the tinker and his lady were ; he suddenly awaked them, telling them we were gone. Hearing this, they hastily started up, and reeling ran to overtake us. The master of the house seeing his pots dangling at their breech, ran after the tinker, crying, 'Stop' em, stop' em, Stop the thievish tinker, stop the whore with my pot.' We were wiser than to stay to hear how the tinker and his trull came off, or to hear the laughter that we undoubtedly raised by this waggish contrivance, but directed our course for London directly, where we arrived soon enough, nay too soon for some. This out-cry soon alarmed the ears of his neighbours, who with the host seizing on them, and carrying them back, gave us an opportunity for our escape. The lines that were about the tinker's pot, were these, to my best remembrance :

Serpents but sting, or only bite so deep,  
To numb the sense, so lay men fast asleep.  
Wit acts far greater things. I'll say no more :  
Pay first for sleeping, then the Pots restore.

Those that were fastened to the woman's pot, were these :

'Twas not the serpent, but strong beer that stung :  
The *vent* being *stopt*, the drink wrought through the *bung*.

I had like to have forgot to give you an account of a merry passage that happened upon the road we travelled on. Beating the hoof we overtook a cart, but in the name of Rabbi Abraham, what think you was in it ? In troth even a Squadron of the Tatterdemallion regiment. Some

pretendedly blind, others their legs tied up in a string ; a third sort having a dead palsy over all one side ; a fourth so lame as if he never had been strung with sinews. We fell into discourse, asking them whither they were bound thus carted ? They answered us : ‘ Every one for his own country. We have been already jibbed,’ said one, that is jerked at the whipping-post, ‘ and now enjoy the benefit of a pass.’ The surly rogue, the carter, observing our familiar talk made a stand, speaking to us after this manner. ‘ Why, how now, gentlemen, how dropped you out of the cart’s arse ? what, you go on foot and your brethren ride ? It shall not be ; ease your legs, come I’ll lend you an hand.’ I was about to reply when a fellow came along who knew this carter, and asked him what he would do, or whither he was going with them cripples. ‘ Introth’ said he, ‘ to tell you the truth, I am going to Killum’ (a town it seems on the borders of Oxford-Shire). Hearing this, I knew not what to think on’t but consulted with the aspect of the carted crew. Their faces discovered nothing but sense of danger, so that now I perceived their thoughts were solely employed about their escape, which they did soon put in execution. For forthwith the strings were cut that tied up their legs, who silently slid out of the cart one after another for fear of discovery. The blind could see their way down too, the paralytic could run as swift as a stag. The fellow drove on still, not missing his company, presently looking about he saw one running this way, another that way, a third contrary to either, a fourth was hiding himself in a bush, thus they were all dispersed. ‘ D’ee here, d’ee here,’ cried the carter, ‘ restore the legs and eyes you borrowed, and then run to the devil if you can.’ I heard one of them distinctly answer him, ‘ I’ll see you hanged first, you murdering rogue ere I will come near you ; don’t you remember that you said even now that you were going to Killum.’ Could you but imagine the various postures their causeless fear put them in you would be a great sharer with me in laughter I could not retain myself from. This story put me in mind of the like mistake, whose effects proved more fatal in the time of the intestine wars in Ireland. A trooper met with a scullogue or country-fellow, and demanding of him whence he came, he answered from Killwanium. ‘ Whither art a-going ? ’ ‘ To Killmore,’ said he (these are two towns), with that the soldier sware he should not kill more, and so pistolled him.

## CHAPTER VII

*Coming to London, he enters himself into the society of Beggars, distinguished by these titles, Ben seakers, Dommerars, Clapperdogeons, &c. : with a short description of their manners and customs : as also a relation of a piece of theft he committed*

COMING up to London, we straightway betook our selves to Newington Butts ; but by the way my friend could not forbear calling on his friends in Kent Street, there they gave me a nick-name ; and my comrade immediately fell to work to put himself into an equipage fit for the employment we had undertaken. He needed not to alter his habit ; but his chief aim was to make counterfeit sores or ' clymes,' according to the term of art that is given them. With the assistance of some of the fraternity, he had in an hour's time such a leg that I could hardly look upon it without even dropping down ; and thus they made it. They took unslaked lime and soap, mingled with the rust of old iron : these being well tempered together, they did spread it thick on two pieces of leather, which they applied to his leg, binding it thereunto very hard, which in a short time did fret off the skin, the flesh appearing all raw. Then did they take blood and rubbed it all over his leg ; which being fully dried, made the leg appear all black, the sore they did only let peep out of the holes of five or six matterish clouts. He soon got us a doxy too, with a couple of children (the fitter for our purpose), the one to carry in her arms, and the other to lead. Providing himself and me with a good lusty filch or stick, with a hole at the end thereof, to put in a hook if occasion should serve, to filch anything off hedges, &c., away we went into Moor-fields. He would have made me a clyme too, or an artificial sore ; but my stomach would no ways accept of his kindness.

Coming into the fields, he planted me in a convenient place, the doxy with her ' Lullaby-cheats ' in another ; and himself in a third, not far distant from one another, that one might catch the others ' Maunding ' at the rebound. I observed my friend and rogue diligently, what he did, for my own information. One would have sworn he had been absolutely lame, for (about to lie down) he slid to the earth by his staff ; being on the ground, the first thing I took notice of was the piteous distorting of his face into various forms, to stir up compassion in such as passed by him ; to which he added a most doleful noise to this effect ; ' For God's sake some tender hearted Christians, cast through your merciful eyes one pitiful look upon a sore, lame, and miserable wretch. Bestow one penny or half-penny upon him that is ready to perish, &c.'

I knew not how to tune my voice for hearkening to him ; which he observing (when all the people were passed by) he held up his stick at me, a strong argument of his great displeasure, which lest I might farther incur, I was forced to tone it out to some purpose. Night approaching, we left off begging, resolving to recreate ourselves with what we had got. In the way home I saw a very fine piece of beef lying on a butcher's-stall ; the woman that kept the shop was telling a gossips' tale to her neighbour so intently, as I thought I might seize on my prey, and she never the wiser. With that I boldly snatched it up ; which an opposite neighbour perceiving, ran after me, and soon took me. I was brought back before the woman, who was so wise (forsooth) that she would not receive stolen goods, though they were her own ; and so enraged she was, that nothing would serve her turn, but I must go before a justice ; and to add to my punishment, she made me carry the stolen beef openly. Coming before his worship, my accusation was read, aggravated by many feigned circumstances. The pitiful and sad casts of my eyes, were all the rhetoric I used in my own vindication ; which the merciful justice perceiving, they were so prevalent as to gain some favour from him. Whereupon he asked the woman what she valued her beef at ? ' Why,' said she, ' I would not have abated a penny of five shillings.' ' Take heed what you say, good woman,' said he ; ' for should you swear this it is enough to hang him.' ' O Lord, Sir,' said she ; ' I would not hang him for a world.' Then said his worship, ' You must price it under thirteen pence half-penny ; ' whereupon the butcher's wife was content to value it at eight pence. The price being set, the beef was conveyed into the justice's kitchin, and the woman put to her oath ; having sworn, my *Mittimus* was made, and therewith was sent to prison.

The woman now thought she should have her beef surely, and without any danger in the reception, and therefore demanded it ; but the justice told her he would buy it of her, and so asked her what she would have for it : ' Sir,' said she, ' five shillings ; I cannot afford it one farthing under.' ' How, how ! ' said he ; ' did you not swear but even now, it was worth but eight pence, and do you now talk of five shillings ? A mere cheat, extortioner, &c. Make her *Mittimus*' (speaking to his clerk), which so terrified the woman, that she cried out most piteously ; ' good your Worship, do not send me to prison, and do with me what you please.' The justice at this looked stedfastly upon her (who was not so old but that he could discern a handsome woman when he saw her and indeed generally your butchers have jolly handsome wives ; otherwise they may be ashamed to serve seven years in handling and choosing good flesh for others, and at last know not how to make choice of a fine young plump juicy bit for themselves). I say, the justice looking upon

her, smiled, yet seemed to reprove her sharply, and at last pretended he had something to tell her he would not have everyone hear, carried her into a withdrawing-room, where they stayed not long but out she came and declared openly that she would never desire more justice done her than that good and just justice (as she called him) had shown her. And as I understood afterwards, he did her so much right, that she sent him in an half dozen of bottles of canary, and supped with him on her own flesh. I, in the meantime wished them both choked in the eating thereof ; for never did Roman Catholic endure greater and severer penance for eating flesh on Good-Friday than I for coveting this. I have loved a capon the better for it ever since ; for I was no sooner gotten out into the street, but I had a hundred people about me, crying ‘ Which is the young rogue ? ’ ‘ This, this is he,’ said the butcher, pretending to lay his hand upon my shoulder, but gave me a terrible nip by the ear, which made me roar out so loud and so suddenly unexpected that my gentleman usher, that was leading me by the arm to the White Lyon, starting, let go his hold. There was no dallying with so fair an opportunity, fear and love of sweet liberty so winged my feet that running instantly hereupon, I was gotten presently a great way before them. The harmanbeck, huntsman or constable seeing this, unable to run himself by reason of that great load of flesh he constantly carried about him, set a pack of young yelping curs to track the scent, but they were soon all at a loss ; and so I escape their clutches.

## CHAPTER VIII

*Whilst a beggar what cunning tricks he invented to steal undiscovered, and how at last served, being caught ipso facto*

THE next day I went into Lincolns-Inn-Fields, where I saw a company of rogues, cheats, pickpockets, &c., playing at pigeon holes (a game much practised there and in Moor-fields, by such mischievous and lazy rascals). Growing very hungry, I singled out two or three of the fittest for my purpose in assisting or contriving roguery ; a little rising grass-plat was our council-table, where we consulted what stratagems would best take and were least known. ‘ Come gentlemen,’ said I (for the liberal science or ancient profession they studied was enough to gentelize them) ‘ what money have ye ? *Sine Cerere & Baccho friget ingenium*, we must have good liquor that shall warm our bloods, enliven and unthaw our congealed spirits and make our inventions and

fancies as nimble as lightning.' 'Faith,' said one, 'I have but three pence; yet that you may see how well qualified I am for your company, I'll have money for you presently.' He was not gone much above an half-hour but merrily he came to us. Sitting down he desired me to put my hand down his neck between his waistcoat and shirt, which accordingly I did, but admired to grope out three rashers of bacon, which I produced to the company. Very importunate I was with him to know what it meant, and how they came there. 'Give me attention,' said he, 'and I will unravel this riddle thus. Walking along the streets leisurely, strictly eyeing anything on which I might seize securely and advantageously, at length I saw a good pitiful old woman (for so she seemed to me by her countenance) selling bacon, who I observed did put what money she took into a pocket made in her apron.'

'Upon this sight fancy, methought, suggested to me that her money was already as surely mine as if I had already confined it close prisoner in my leathern dungeon. And thus I wrought my design. "Good woman," said I (speaking in a whining tone), "how do you sell your bacon a pound?" "Seven pence," said she, whereupon I began a lamentable oration, telling her that I would willingly have half a pound but that I had but three pence; that my master was a very cruel man, half starving his servants. "Come give me your money, sirrah," she said, "for once you shall have it so." Weighing it, I desired her to cut it into slices and thrust it down my back. She asked my reason for it, I told her that my master usually searched me, and should he find any such thing in my pockets, he would half murder me. "Alas, poor boy," quoth the good old woman, "lean down thy head towards me, surely I will do thee that small kindness." Whilst she was larding my back, I got my hands underneath her apron, and with this short knife nipped off the bottom of her pocket; and thus have I done my part to procure ye both food and money.'

As I looked on this as base ingratitude, so I could not but tacitly within myself, both condemn and abhor such society, remembering the words of Juvenal:

*Ingratos ante omnia pone sodales.*

Of all persons we should shun most the ungrateful. Neither could I forbear (though I was joyful of the purchase) to read him a public lecture on his ingratitude. 'What,' said I, 'shall we find gratitude in beasts (as in the lion that was healed by Andronicus in the wood, which afterwards saved his life in the theatre) and yet shall we be unthankful! I have read a story of an asp that was kept and nourished by an husbandman at his own table, feeding him there daily; at last she brought forth

two young ones, one whereof poisoned the husbandman's son, the old one (as my author tells me) in the sight of the father killed the offender and as if ashamed of his ingratitude departed the house with the other and was not seen after.' I would have proceeded, but that they told me if I did, they would have no men of morals in their company, and so away we went to Beggars' Hall, hard by, where we called lustily. Fearing we should spend all the money, I desired the company that some small portion might be left in my hands as a stock to trade on, which they consented to.

Having feasted ourselves well, before we departed the next day's meeting was appointed, when and where. Against the time I had made a quantity of serpents, crackers, &c., and brought them with me. When first I showed them they all fell out a-laughing to think I could improve our stock by such devices. 'Have but the patience to hear me,' said I, 'and then condemn me if you see cause. Ever since I parted from you I have been racking my invention to find out some way whereby I might render myself both deserving of, and acceptable to your company, and I think this my first discovery will do it. I would have you Jack, Tom and Will, take an equal quantity of crackers and serpents, and anon at night let us go into the market, where each of you shall observe each of us. Wherever we make a stand be sure you throw a serpent, &c. at that very place; and then will we take the opportunity of the people's confusion and fright, and so march off with what we can lay hands on.' This plot was very well liked of by all. The evening approaching (it being near November) we went to put what I had contrived to execution. The first that was thrown was where I stood, which fell into the basket on which a market woman sat. The woman starting up to extinguish it, suddenly it bounced in her face, the smoke whereof and powder for a little time so blinded her that she could not see me walk off with a shoulder of mutton; my comrades had the like success with a pig and a goose. Having done enough as we thought for that time, we went to a place of our acquaintance, where we had the mutton, pig, and goose roasted, giving the landlord the pig for dressing, bread and drink. We were so successful for the first, that we made several trials afterwards not ineffectual.

But in fine, I found the proverb verified, The pitcher goes not so often to the well, but that it comes home cracked at last. One time I went, and having ordered them to do as they had done before, a serpent came flying on the woman's stall where I stood and fell into her lap, which being brushed off, fell underneath her coats, and there burst. In the meanwhile I had gotten a loin of veal and was trooping off with it. The woman missing it suspected me by my great haste, followed me and laying hands on me found her meat under my coat. 'O have I

caught you, Mr Thief?' 'Mistake not, good woman,' said I, 'it is no such matter. For as I stood by your stall, the wildfire which some unhappy knaves threw, so scared me that having your meat in my hand at that time cheapening it, I was so frighted that I ran away with your veal to shun the danger, forgetting to lay it down, wherefore pray take it again.' Taking her meat, 'Here is a pure excuse, indeed,' said she, 'but this shall not serve your turn,' and with that, gave me two or three such blows on my chops that I verily thought she had made me swallow half my teeth. Another that had heard our discourse takes me to task after this; 'Come, sirrah, you love the flesh well, but 'tis fit you should pay for it. And it is but just if you will have my flesh, I should have some of yours.' Up straight he snatched his knife, and holding me by the ear I verily thought he would have marked me as he used to do his calves. My crying and praying so far prevailed that he only kicked me to his next neighbour and so from one to another, so that though it cannot be said I ran the Gauntlet, yet between the panniers on both sides, I was kicked the Gauntlet from the Standard in Cheapside to the Conduit at the lower end thereof. This unhappy adventure made me betake myself to my old course of begging, resolving as yet not to deal in that trade I had little experience in.

## CHAPTER IX

*A merchant seeing him begging, took a fancy to him, conducts him to his house, and entertains him as his servant*

ONE day, I was begging more fervently than formerly, having gotten not one penny that day, so that I found a civil war between my guts and stomach, yet knew not how to salve up the difference, neither would they hearken to anything but a bill of fare. In the midst of this combustion, a tradesman of no mean quality passing by, took a strong fancy to me, being extraordinarily pleased with the form of my face and body. He asked me whence I came? what my parents were? and what I intended? I answered him with well contrived forgeries that seemed to give him good satisfaction. Liking well both my speech and understanding, he bid me follow him, which accordingly I did. Having conducted me to his house, he presented me to his wife, my intended mistress, telling her his resolutions of receiving me into his service. At which she blessed herself, saying, 'Prithee, Sweetheart, from what dunghill didst thou pick up this *Shakerag*, this squire of the body? This thing dressed up in sippits? This scarecrow, what shall I call him?'

(For I am sure I had but few clothes on, but what were rather fit to dung ground than to be sent to the paper-mill). Said my master, ' Rest yourself satisfied, since it is my pleasure, this shall be so : neither can I give you any reason for my fancy.' Whereupon he commanded me to be stripped, and well washed ; in the meantime clothes were provided for me, a suit of one of his apprentices. A great vessel like Cornelius his tub was filled with water to bath me, but so cunningly set by the maids (though privately), that they might see me all over naked. It was my good fortune to observe my mistress standing in a private place on purpose to see me dismantled ; and after I was washed she commended the whiteness of my skin and well-proportioned limbs ; and by the consequent approved within herself of something else, for I was then a stubbed lad. Being new clothed, and raised to this unexpected fortune, how strangely did this vain blast puff up my empty pate ! However, I was resolved to carry myself discreetly, lest I should overthrow the state I was then in, not yet well settled. Wherefore I behaved myself very respectfully towards my master, and served him as punctually as I could, endeavouring that my service should requite his kindness in as great measure as my abilities could perform.

My endeavour was not only to please my master, but my mistress too, even in the meanest services, so officious to her, that I was ready to perform the office of a chambermaid. The maidservants I obliged also, by doing their duty, as making the fires, washing the kitchin, nimbly and willingly doing anything they would have me ; by which I so ingratiated myself among them that I always had their good estimation among themselves, and good word to my master and mistress when occasion served. Very careful I was not to report what I heard, lest I by that means involved myself in the affairs of others, without advantage to myself ; for by meddling in others' matters, I should breed animosity among them, and reap just hatred to myself, when discovered to be the too busy intelligencer. This I looked on as an undeniable maxim, That nothing more recommends a man than a silent tongue (unless necessity required the contrary), a fair complacential carriage, and a faithful heart. My master, in a humour, would sometimes find fault with me, but then it was my chiefest care not to reply, knowing that what should be alleged as to my just vindication, would but aggravate his spirits (being passionate) always punctually performing what was commanded me. To try my fidelity he would lay a sixpence on the counter, or in the window, as if it had been left there forgotten. I was wiser than to be caught so, and therefore would instantly carry him the money. One time sending me out to buy something, instead of a shilling he gave me among other money a piece of gold. I took no notice of it then, but being gone

a little way, I came running back out of breath to restore him the piece. This and the like made my master stand amazed at my seeming honesty. A strange alteration, you will say ; but all this was only to get a good esteem, whereby I might gain fast footing. What though I underwent a great deal of pains, and had my patience tried to the height ? Yet I gained much in the end, had God given me grace rightly to use it, and the baseness of my nature not persuaded me to abuse it.

So much credit I had gotten with my master by my civil behaviour, that he raised me *gradatim*, step by step. Being ignorant of arithmetic, he caused a master to come to his house to instruct me, which I soon apprehended, and by that means was capacitated to keep his accompts, which was the thing I aimed at ; intending thereby the prosecution of mine own ends, notwithstanding my pretended fidelity, and his real kindness to me undeserved. Which puts me in mind of the conclusion of an epitaph I have read on a tomb, which the master erected for the perpetual commemoration of his servant's cordial respect and honesty :

View oft his tomb-stone, since we seldom find,  
A servant faithful, and his master kind.

Now, to the intent I might complete my conquest of his heart, I pretended myself an Independent, not omitting any opportunity of going to their meetings ; and upon all occasions would rail against steeple-houses (as we called them) and tear the bishops' holland sleeves to pieces, calling them the impure rags of the Babylonish Whore's smock, &c. I would pray mornings and evenings so loud, so late, and so early, that my neighbours could hardly sleep for me, much less those of our own family. Notwithstanding all this piety, not a day passed wherein I cheated not my master. Thus did I delude his eyes with pretended sanctity, yet concluded with the poet :

*Da mihi fallere, da justum Sanctumque videri,  
Noctem peccatis & fraudibus objice nubem.*

Let me seem just ; to cheat the better shrow'd,  
Let my deceits be hidden in a cloud.

How much did I, silly fool, deceive myself, thinking myself secure because no mortal eye saw me. Be not thus cheated as I was, for assure yourself there is no darkness so thick and obscure, which the All-over-seeing and Eternal piercing eye cannot penetrate—

*Cernit Deus omnia vindex.*

A passage remarkable in Erasmus I read to this purpose, concerning a young gentleman, whom a wanton lady tempted, who used this expression

as his last and best refuge. ‘Art not thou ashamed to do that in the sight of thy Maker, and the Holy Angels, which thou art ashamed to do in the sight of men?’ We are afraid of disgrace with men, not caring for the Grace of God.

## CHAPTER X

*How he came acquainted with lewd and vicious apprentices : what trade they drove together : what places and times of meeting*

I WAS as officious at home, as reserved from all company, never stirring forth unless called out by my master’s business, till my next neighbour’s man intruded himself into my acquaintance ; who so far insinuated himself into my affections that I was in a manner wholly ruled by him. He and I met on a time abroad, and would not be denied but he must needs fasten a glass of wine, conducting me to a tavern where the drawer (as he said) was his friend. After several congratulations passed, order was given for a pint of canary. Being gone to draw it, this young man began to tell me what an honest fellow this Ralph the drawer was ; which words he had no sooner uttered, but I heard him cry at the bar, ‘A pint of white-wine in the Rose score’ ; and immediately in he brings it, and in formality a glass, but we made no use of it, for he was fearful his master would discover the cheat, and therefore desired us to be speedy in the dispatch, and so we made but two draughts thereof. Away he goes again, and brings in another, not after the same manner, but crying it ‘Right,’ bringing withal a quart bottle in his codpiece : ‘Now, Gentleman,’ said he, ‘using your discretion, you may sit and talk freely, without either fear or suspicion, using your glass and when your pint is empty fill him again, you shall not want for liquor, lads.’ This something amazed me at first, till my neighbour Thomas told me that this was frequent, and that he and two or three friends at any time could be drunk for sixpence a piece. ‘Come, come, you are but a novice,’ said he ; ‘but if you will be ruled by me, I’ll shew you the way to soften the cord of bondage, to make the long time of a seven years apprenticeship seem short, by living as merry, nay more jovially than our masters. They may be distracted with cares how to procure necessaries, pay rent, satisfy creditors, whilst we have none of these pressures and disturbances on our spirits. What though we have an harsh word or a smart blow, it may be a broken pate ? We will make his till spring a leak for it, or his goods go to pot, and break him at last, too. It may be his provision is neither dainty nor plentiful, nay, restrained, from our

liberty too : 'tis only by day, then ; we will be masters of our own at night, not wanting anything that may conduce to mirth, or the delectation of our insatiate senses.'

I asked him how could this be done ? He answered, if I would swear to be secret and faithful, and become a brother of the society, he would not only tell me how all this (afore recited) might be performed, but would likewise introduce me into the place where these jolly blades used to congregate. I soon consented, rejoicing exceedingly at this blessed opportunity (as I thought it), wherein I might sail in the ocean of delight, bound for no other port but that of pleasure or profit, never considering the inevitable quicksands which such meet withal, steering that course, having no other compass to sail by than their own fancy. Very eager I was to have him inform my judgment with what at present I understood not, but doubted not in a little time to be as forward as the foremost in any moral wickedness.

First, he informed me, I must insinuate myself into the maid's favour, so that when the occasion should require, she may let you have the key of the street-door, or else sit up for your return, making her sensible that she doth not so break her sleep for nothing. That I must never fail, coming home, to gratify her kindness. If she be modest and continent, only kiss her, and that my behaviour should not be either rude or lascivious, that all my expressions should savour of Platonic, or chaste love, often repeating this to her ; 'O that I was out of my time, if it were for nothing else but to repay thee thy love ! So great an acknowledgment I have of thy civilities, that I hope a time will come wherein I shall make full satisfaction for all, &c.' If she be buxom, or wantonly given, she will never be content with hopes, promises, and protestations, vows, and such like windy stuff ; wherefore you must kiss, hug, and embrace her, telling how dearly you love her ; and then fall to somewhat else. She may put you off at first with a *Pish*, a *Fie*, or *Pray be civil* ; yet be so far from denying, that if you proceed not on vigorously, she will prompt you herself, to try what mettle you are made of ; if dull, she will make you the subject of her private nay and public laughter and scorn. But be very cautious of procreation, which you may prevent several ways. Now to tell you what manner of persons we are that are confederates. There are few among us but what are of several Trades selected, as linen-drapers, mercers, woollen-drapers, silkmen, hosiers, haberdashers, merchants, grocers, goldsmiths, jewellers, ribband-sellers, exchange-men, to which add a drawer and an oil-man, the one to furnish us with good liquor, and the other to prepare our palates for it. A great many trades there are which signify nothing in our commonwealth as pewterers, braziers, plumbers, &c., we are only for such as will

profit the body, please the palate and fill the pocket. Every one brings his several commodities at the place of meeting, then do we exchange or barter one with another for what each respective person wants ; either to supply his own occasion, or his mistress : for it is to be supposed such a thing must be had, when procured, must be maintained, though to the destruction of our master's estates, and ruin of our bodily health. Further,' he added, 'that our masters might not detect us in the purloining his goods, you must not,' said he, 'take too much of one sort of commodity.'

All this I liked wonderfully well, and promised to meet that day seven-night at the place appointed ; and so we parted. Coming home, I immediately put these prescriptions into practice. First, taking notice of what goods we had greatest quantity ; and whatsoever commodity my master forgot he had, I always secured it as mine own ; nay, sometimes I would try him ; 'There was such a person enquiring for such a thing to-day when you were abroad, but I could not find it.' It may be he would say, 'We had it not,' suiting my design according to desire. Having taken a thorough view of the shop and warehouse, I saw so many ways of advantage, if assisted by a cleanly conveyance, that I could snip as well as the most forward of them all.

The next thing I had to do was to endear myself to the chief maid, who was one of those that lay covertly to see me wash myself in the tub, and as she confessed since, took an affection to me from that hour. It required no long time to court her into a compliance, her complexion or temperament, forcing her acceptance of anything amorously inclined. The colour of her hair inclined to red, which colour (though I know not for what reason) I love above any. This may be partly the reason, because as that complexion hath always the concomitant of a very white skin, so it hath two inseparable companions, plumpness and buxomness. Her skin, as the usual attendant of red or flaxenish hair (as I said) was as white as whiteness itself ; her cheeks naturally painted with vermillion ; plump were her cheeks and lips, with a mole thereon, and a dimple in her chin, as the infallible marks of one that is willing to dedicate herself to the service of Venus.

Having a fit opportunity, after some amorous discourse, I desired her she would grant me leave that night to talk with her in private, having business of importance to impart to her. She condescended to my proposition. As soon as our master and mistress were gone to take their rest, her impatience to hear what I would say, made her soon send the rest to bed. The house being thus cleared, and all things silent as the air, when winds into their hollow grots repair, I acquainted her with the greatness of my affection, which I delivered with all the rhetoric I could

invent, still touching that string which produced love's harmonious concord. So fervent I was in my expressions, and so ardent and hot in my desires, that I soon melted the congealed iceness of her chastity. But first there were mutual articles reciprocally drawn and agreed unto, *viz.*

That if she proved with child, I should marry her.

That I should devote myself to her service, and none's else.

That we should both endeavour to make use of all opportunities for the enjoyment of each other.

That to prevent discovery, we should often fall out before people, that without suspicion in private we might agree the better ; she throwing oftentimes bones at my head when sitting at dinner, because suspicion should not deprive her of the grissel.

So great was our seeming feud sometimes, that our master was called in to part us.

After this I gave her plenary instructions as to my affairs, which she faithfully and punctually promised to observe. Then did I put my hand to the instrument, and sealed the articles with two witnesses.

The night was come wherein I was to meet according to promise. I acquainted my Amoretta with my intention of going out at twelve o'clock ; and that my master might not in the least suspect me, I went to bed, but arose again at the hour promised. The first time I would not carry any commodities with me, resolving to see first what they did. Being come to the house, I was introduced by my neighbour Thomas into a private back-room, among the associated brethren. I was much amazed to see such variety of wares lie upon a long table, as silks, stuffs, cloth, linen and woollen, stockings, ribbands, muffs, hoods, scarfs, and the like. Some of them came to me, and welcomed me as a brother, drinking to me in a beer-bowl of sack and sugar.

Most of the company being met, they trucked with each other according to their convenience, furnishing themselves with what they either stood in need of themselves or their friends. Several things were offered me ; I told them I had brought nothing to retaliate in lieu. They told me my credit was good, which is the soul of commerce ; telling me they should have occasion to make use of me in the like nature another time. I took with me only such things as might be proper to bestow at home, on whom I had lately engaged my affections ; which I presented her with, accompanied with many expressions and protestations of a never-dying affection. She accepted of my kindness with much gratitude, but thought she could not fully remunerate me without a re-admission into her private and then particular favours ; I could easily discern her inclinations by

griping of my hand, kissing as if she would devour me, the palpitation of her heart, and her inflamed eyes. I ran parallel with her in the same desires, so that with much facility we two clapped up a bargain. After which I would have betaken myself to my rest in my own bed, but that was displeasing to her, I perceived nothing would content her, but that we should be bed-fellows. I soon assented to it, though to the hazard of both our credits and fortunes. I desired her to go up first, telling her I would follow instantly after. By that time I thought she was in bed, up marched I the stairs, which creaked as if they had conspired a discovery. Coming up to the highest stair, I raised my foot (being fearful of making any noise) thinking there had been another, it descended with such precipitation, that I made the house echo.

The chamber wherein my master and mistress lay (the maid lying in a trundle bed underneath them), was right against this stair-head. My master had taken a dose more than ordinary of sack, so that this noise awaked him not. My mistress at the first hearing thereof, imagined thieves had broken into the house; she endeavoured to wake her husband by stirring him, but could not, therefore thought it the best way to lie still, expecting the event. In the meantime I lay *perdue*, stirring not till I imagined my mistress asleep again. The maid, concluding I durst not adventure further by reason of this unfortunate accident, fell immediately into a profound sleep. Finding (after a considerable time) all things still and quiet, I entered the chamber, dark as Hell, and in a low voice, groping the contrary way, I cried, 'Where art?' 'Here, here,' said my mistress, in a whispering tone. Minding from whence the sound came as near as I could, I directed my footsteps to that place. The same words being repeated, conveyed me exactly to that side of the bed whereon my mistress lay. Taking her about the neck, I kissed her a thousand times: using then all the alluring and loving expressions I could invent. Not perceiving my mistake, I made all the haste I could (and all too little) to undress myself; which was done in an instant. Opening the clothes to come to bed, 'Hold,' said my mistress, 'I have a bedfellow already; what I have suffered you to do was only as a trial to understand what you intended. Get you gone to your own bed for this night, and I shall talk with you farther to-morrow.' I durst not reply, not daring to stay longer, but betook myself to my own chamber, possessed with fear and shame, I nothing but tossed and tumbled all that night, taking not the least rest.

In the morning early I was up, shewing myself more than ordinary diligent. But, Lord, what a confusion I was in when I saw my mistress come into the shop? I made an hundred pretences to stoop behind the counter, and rectify disordered wares. So busy I was with my back

towards her that she could not have so much as a sight of me. At length she comes up close to me, and turning me about, said, 'Indeed you take too much pains, you are too laborious ; fair and softly ; there is a great while to-night yet : desist a little, I must have a word with you.' Hearing this, I presumed to look in her face, and was overjoyed ; for from thence I received a most alluring smile, instead of a killing frown. This re-armed me with confidence, compelling from me these expressions :

' Most respectful Mistress, I do with shame confess myself in a great error : but if you will consider that the cause thereof was irresistible ; I hope you will in some measure mitigate my crime. My very youthfulness speaks my apology. You cannot be ignorant of the fervent heat of young blood, which sometimes boils beyond its bounds. Besides the temperature of my body (being of a sanguine complexion), did add much fuel to that fire.'

She admired to hear me speak in such a dialect ; but laying aside her wonder, she bid me tell her the whole truth, and what contract we had concluded. I equivocated in my relation, intending to excuse the maid's forwardness, and that I only designed to surprize her unawares. This sophistry of mine did not in the least prevent my mistress's prying wit and quick understanding from searching out the truth, tracing every meander, finding it out at last, though involved in a labyrinth of obscurities. She told me plainly she knew all, though I endeavoured to conceal it, and *desired* me, instead of commands, to withdraw my affectionate thoughts from her, since her resolution was to divorce our persons. Adding moreover, that if I was so amorously inclined as not content without a female object to exercise my passion on, I should elect such a one whose merit grounded on beauty, birth, wealth, and power, should command my love, and finally eternize my terrestrial happiness, and so vanished from me, leaving my cogitations to their operations.

Forty-five years had not totally destroyed her beauty, but there was still remaining the ruins of a good face. Her birth, though from a high extraction, had little influence over me, had not her wealth (which she had at her own disposal) whispered in my ear more than a common felicity. Her last words left a deep impression on my imagination, which were not so enigmatically delivered but that I could easily interpret them advantageously enough to my purpose. I resolved within myself to acquiesce, leaving this affair to time to bring it to perfection.

## CHAPTER XI

*What devices he found out to cheat his master ; and what ways he had to spend it lavishly, at unseasonable hours, on wine, wenches, &c.*

THE time being come again for the meeting my snipping brethren, I went prepared with what I could conveniently carry with me. Seeing me come well fraught, my merchants clapped me aboard, resolving not to let my commodities lie long on my hands ; our truck was soon agreed on to our mutual contents. Then, like true sons of Bacchus, we trolled the full bowls about, wishing him that pledged not his fellow, in a dark rainy night on a tired jade bare ridged in a dirty lane, with a pocky whore behind him, and his own bones rotten, nine miles from a house, not knowing one step of his way, nor having one penny in his pocket. This, or the like dreadful execration, made us tumble off whole bowls like so many thimbles full. Half a dozen of these a piece were a *preludium* to our supper, which usually was composed of the choicest viands. Neither could we eat, without our female consorts, whom wine and music waited on. After supper, we fell again to our old Bacchanalian sport, drinking, dancing, or privately treating our mistresses at a venereal banquet. When we had drank ourselves to ebriety, and satiated our lustful appetites, we betook ourselves to our respective habitations, our masters not dreaming of our night revellings. Our own expenses were neither valuable nor comparable to what our mad-dames put us to, which were so great (though they made me rack my invention to supply their pretended necessities) that all my various endeavours could not answer their expectations.

I had taken my gentlewoman a chamber, for which I paid three shillings a week, and upon the bare promise of a whore that she would prove constant to me, I allowed her a weekly pension besides. I never came to receive a private favour but I must return her for it some special and particular courtesy ; as a scarf, a hood, a ring, a whisk, or rich lace for her smock. If I failed at any time of paying my promised tribute I should be severely checked, nay, sometimes threatened that I had undone her ; at the least denied my accustomed familiarity. Then she would pretend that she had refused many eminent matches for my sake, that now she saw herself deluded, and would endure it no longer ; and would tell my master our whole proceedings. If I had performed the man, and not presented her when I came with some other gratuity, as a work of supererogation, she would deride my courtship, telling me, I was an empty fellow, that I bestowed my favours on others and that made me

so sparing to her. And that she scorned to be a copartner in my heart. When she thought she had sufficiently nettled me (fearing to strain my passion too high), then a little clapping me on the cheeks, calling me smock-face rogue ; ‘ Come hither sirrah, I know what you would have, I’ll save your longing.’ Such sweetened words soon overpowered my sourness : and notwithstanding my intended hardness, I could not forbear melting in her arms. We durst not take much time in dalliance, my duty calling me home ; but I regarded not that so much as to preserve my master’s good opinion of me.

Now since opportunity offereth itself so appositely, give me leave to lay open this subtle female, on whom a strong ascendancy of Mercury and Venus had bestowed so liberal a talent for whoring and cheating that few escaped her circumvention that came into her company. The relation I shall give of this miracle of female subtlety will be much advantageous to all sorts of persons. By this those that are viciously inclined may be advised into a reformation before they have occasion for repentance : and they who, defying all admonishment, are resolved to be wicked in spite, may out of an apprehension of the ensuing danger and punishment, be deterred into caution, &c.

#### A SHORT SURVEY OF A CUNNING WHORE

When first I made myself acquainted with her, I thought my happiness not inferior to the Grand Seignor’s ; for although he had in his seraglio the enjoyment of an hundred or more of the most select beauties of the universe, yet did I fancy all those external glories contracted into one, and possessed by my matchless mistress. She was fair, well featured, sprightly and young, four dangerous advantages, when they are accompanied with wit, dissimulation, craft and impudence, with a covetous desire of enjoying of what others are possessed. She could not be ignorant of her trade, since her mother was a professed bawd from the time she brought her into the world. Taking notice of her extraordinary handsomeness, even from the cradle, she resolved to dedicate her to the service of Venus, not doubting but the bent of her nature would render her very capable of that employ. Being about thirteen years of age, her beauty was so much taken notice of that her lovers swarmed about her. The old bawd, her mother, was overjoyed to see so large and goodly a troop of Cupid’s lancers, her daughter’s life-guard, and doubted not now but that she should obtain the plenary fruition of her hopes, and therefore entertained them all, yet watching them so narrowly that none should taste her fruit unless they bought the tree at a dear rate. She so well observed her daughter’s natural policy that she was well assured

her insinuations would in a little time command both the hearts and purses of those who courted her. Her design proved as fortunate as she could wish, inasmuch as among the many that languished for her there was one so wealthy as that he never knew the want of a thousand pound, whose heart was inflamed by her eyes.

She had now assumed the title of madam, which one should think belonged to none but who are nobly extracted ; however, why should she baulk it, since it is an honour costs little or nothing, and as soon conferred as spoken. This gentleman was so ensnared by the witchcraft of a lovely face that though he knew the profession and practice of the mother, and the daughter's want of honour, honesty and wealth, yet he resolved upon a marriage within a few days, without the tediousness of treaties. When there was a firm contract concluded between them before witnesses, the charitable bawd, his intended mother-in-law, came to him and told him that if his stomach was raw and could not stay so long till the meat was served up with the usual ceremonies he should have a bit for a stay, and taste beforehand. The proposition was not unwelcome to him, wherefore he instantly took earnest of the happiness he vainly believed would bear him company *durante vita*. Not long after, they had their nuptials celebrated, and that he might not disparage himself in the world's eye as to his inconsiderable choice, he bought his wife at his proper charge, new clothes, splendid enough you may guess, with the appendixes of gallantry, rings, jewels, &c. and so brought her home to his house in much state. She had not long lived with him but she followed the dictates of a luxurious disposition, and a libertine, hating to have her liberty circumscribed or bounded, especially by one so remote to her nature and unsuitable in years ; wherefore, under pretence of visiting this friend and that cousin, she so blinded her old husband by this plausible excuse that she made her frequent sallies abroad pimp for her desires.

Her husband observing her gaddings and profuse expenses could do no less than suspect more than he was willing to understand, and therefore not only abridged the liberty she took, but divested her of those ornaments he had bestowed upon her ; which so animated her to revenge that she resolved not to let slip the first opportunity. She soon got acquainted with one suitable to her purpose, a person as much engaged in debauchery as his credit was in the world, yet so pleasant he appeared in her eyes that a little courting made her wholly at his devotion. Hence we may observe the dangerous consequences of disproportion of age in matching. Surely there can be no agreement between fire and water, between freezing winter, and scorching summer. Besides, when a woman comes once to have mean thoughts of her husband (upon any account

whatever) she is then in the way to affect anybody else. She now not only slighted but hated him, which made her launch out into all the excesses that exasperated and vicious womankind can imagine or contrive, from whence she may either derive satisfaction or advantage; neither could she want assistance or counsel as long as the old experienced bawd, her mother, lived.

This good old dotard finding himself so abused that the whole world must needs call his reason in question if he suffered any longer his loose wife to career thus in luxury and wantonness, resolved within himself to call her to a severe accompt, intending withal to reduce her by kindness, as well as sharpness, and so equally to temper his frowns with smiles that she should not tell which of those two ingredients were most powerful in effecting the cure of his lust-sick wanton.

Returning one evening from her revels abroad, the old cuckold took her to task; sharply reproving her for her gaddings, her tavern meetings with debauched and licentious persons, her lavish expense in paying the reckonings wherever she came, but especially her supplying the necessities of lusty younger brothers, which resupplied hers. The old man had so spent his spirits and breath in schooling his lecherous truant that he was forced to conclude his wormwood lecture in an excessive cough; the inseparable companion of him and age. My buxom madam fearing he was straining for more of that unpleasing stuff which had so lately offended her ears, left him half strangled with a cough.

In this interval a female neighbour of his came in, a gentlewoman of such worth that virtue and gentility contended in her for priority. ‘How is it I pray Sir,’ said she, ‘I am much troubled to see you in this condition?’ ‘You lie, you lie, you whore,’ said he, his ears being so furred by time that he could not distinguish this gentlewoman’s voice from his wife’s, neither could he see, his violent coughing having forced down such a torrent of moisture into his eyes that his sight was totally drowned. Continuing his railing, ‘See me in this condition? I believe you would be glad to see me out of it, you strumpet, lump of lechery, cheat, she-devil, what shall I call thee; there is no name too bad.’ And then coughed again so violently that it was in vain to speak to him. But when this violent fit abated, she resolved to say something, though her amazement to hear what she neither deserved nor expected would hardly give her permission. At last she spake to him, and reasoned with him why he should thus stain her honour which was hitherto spotless, undefiled; that her actions had ever been so far from rendering her what he unworthily represented, that they made her famous, and looked on as a good example for her neighbours to follow and imitate. ‘Infamous you mean,’ said

he, ' and let me alone to make you such an example that you shall have followers enough to see you carted, you bitch whore.' ' Why, who am I,' said the gentlewoman, ' that you thus abuse me ? ' ' Am I,' said he ; ' you are touch-wood, tinder, saltpetre, gunpowder, wildfire, nay, worse than all this, my wife.'

By this the gentlewoman verily concluded him to be mad, and fearing lest his frenzy might be converted into fury, was thinking to slip from him just as his cough left him, and his eyes again restored to him with the insight of his mistake ; which made him much condemn his fallacious age, that had put this trick on him.

Apologies (as many as this old man's sterile invention could frame) were not wanting to excuse this absurdity and error ; neither was his wife without the height of mirth behind the hangings, to hear how much her doting fool was mistaken ; who had not patience any longer to discourse with his visitant, but abruptly left her in quest of his abused wife as he now supposed, imagining from this grand mistake that whatever before he had either seen or heard of his wife, was nothing but the genuine product of his own idle and jealous brain. After he had made a strict enquiry through the whole house for his wife, he at length found her cloistered in a garret, into which she had conveyed herself coming softly behind the hangings wherein she had hid herself ; and the better to colour her intended villainy, hearing her husband ascend the stairs, she put herself into a praying posture.

The old man seeing her on her knees had like to have broke his neck for haste, not minding so much the disturbance he would give her (pretended) devotion as the satisfaction he enjoyed to see his mistake confirmed. Being out of breath, his discourse was abrupt and broken, neither did he know which was most expedient, either first to question her, or crave her pardon. At length he threw himself at her feet (for indeed he could hardly stand upon his feeble legs), and hanging down his head (I know not whether he cried) a salt rheum gushed through the port-holes of his head, which looked like scalding tears, and so they might be, for by their burning heat any might conclude the loss of the hair of his eyelids, and that thereby the shrivelled skin of his countenance was parched. It was a long time ere he could speak, and no wonder, since this was the second time of his infancy ; but at length with much ado, with a look as pitiful as his rhetoric, he asked forgiveness. She seemed strangely surprized and not only wondered at, but taxed him for the irrationality of his petition. The pretence of her ignorance in what had passed, made him the more eager to discover his ridiculous folly. In short, he gave her to understand that since he was mistaken in a thing so palpable, he might very well question whether all former reports, and his

own evil opinion of her might not be posited on the same basis of falsehood. That for the time to come he would never admit of jealousy within his breast ; and to give a full confirmation to what he protested, he instantly delivered her his keys, committing to her trust what he had of greatest value. This cunning quean would not accept this kind proffer, but with much pressing, and then sealing his pardon with a kiss, an everlasting affection was seemingly agreed upon. For two or three months she behaved herself so well that had her husband had Argus his hundred eyes, he could not perceive anything that might blemish her reputation, or trouble his head.

Her cue being come to enter and act her part on the stage of deceit, she appeared and managed her business to the purpose. For having given her mother a catalogue of those rich things she had in her possession, she never left her daughter till they had conveyed all away which might be carried in the day time without any notice taken. And at an appointed night, getting the servants to bed and delivering the key of the street-door to the old bawd, her mother, she played the part of a woman in general, by lulling her husband in bed by dissimulation and flattery, into a fond opinion of her cordiality to him, whilst her agents then were leaving him as naked of goods as he was at that time of apparel. In the morning she arose betimes, before the old man was stirring, and went instantly to her mother, who had provided her lodgings. Then did she change her name to hinder detection ; and that she might add to her security, she never went abroad but with her vizard mask, and in as many varieties of suits as there are months in the year, which though but thirteen, yet did she make them ring as many changes as Bow Bells.

Not long after she had played this exploit, it was my unhappiness to be acquainted with her, by her coming accidentally to our shop, where, buying some wares, it was so ordered that I must bring them to her chamber. According to the time appointed I waited on her, but found myself extremely mistaken in my chapwoman. For instead of paying me for my commodity, she would have trucked with me ware for ware ; which I would no ways assent to. Finding me no fit person for her purpose, she dismissed me by discharging the debt. This passage did so run in my mind that I could not be at quiet till I had purposed a time to visit her, and indeed I was forcibly pricked on thereunto by those matchless features I saw in her incomparable face. My master riding out of town I found a very fit opportunity to make my address to her, which I thought would be the more welcome by bringing a present with me.

Her memory was so good that she knew me again and shrewdly

guessed at my errand, and indeed I was not long in the discovery thereof. There were but two words to a bargain, and so we struck up the business. So much delight I took in her at that time, and she in me that we interchangeably promised each other constancy of affection.

Mine and my female's extravagancies made me invent as many ways to cheat as we had ways to spend what was this way gotten. If I had heard any friend say they must buy a gown, I had my mercer ready for that purpose ; if a suit and cloak, my draper, and the like ; sometimes telling my friend that I was acquainted with one that would sell me a far cheaper pennyworth than any one else : other times, that such an one owed me some moneys, and that this way I could both pleasure my friend, and hedge in mine own debt. Though I drove a great trade this way, receiving still ready cash, yet this would not do alone. As an assistance, I gelded the money-box every day, receiving my part first, before my master should take his, which usually he did every night, putting it into his till. I could not sleep for thinking how I might be intimately acquainted with the inwards of this same till. Several projects I made trial of, but none suited my purpose so well as a barber's pair of curling irons. I got a file from a smith, and to work I went with my curling irons, filing them to slip in easily, and to turn round.

The first essay I made thereof had like to have put me into an extasy for joy. I laid them upon their edge, opened them wide, and pinched the money below ; holding fast, I turned them on their side, and so drew up the money to the mouth of the scotch. Now because there was many times so much that it would not come through, with a knife I would slide away piece after piece till I had fitted the money to the narrowness of the passage. I seldom brought up at a time less than three shillings, a good draught, not ceasing till I had gotten twenty or thirty shillings at a time, or more, according to the quantity of the stock. Finding my engine act according to my desires, I could not be content without congratulating my success. My master was seldom at home, wherefore I asked my mistress to go out for an hour, promising her not to stay beyond my limited time. She consented, and I overjoyed, picked up a rambler or two, and away we went to honest Ralph. Being glad to see us, he planted us in a convenient room fit for his purpose. There was never a pint he scored at the bar but he had a quart-bottle in his breeches for it. They all wondered to see me so frolic, but I thought it wisdom to conceal the depth of my practice from them.

After we had drank very smartly, I came home, transgressing but a little beyond my time. My mistress was very well pleased, telling me, I should have leave another time, since I was so punctual. Those

bottles of sack we drank ran perpetually in my mind, for it was the very flower of wine. In the commemoration of my friend's courtesy, and the goodness of that liquor, I gave my contemplative fancy leave to characterize a bottle of canary, thus.

#### THE CHARACTER OF A BOTTLE OF CANARY

He is a gentleman, I assure you, well extracted, which once lived like a salamander in the midst of the flames ; and had he not been burnt, he have never proved sound. He seems a prodigy ; for that which we live by, decays him ; hating air, as Bacchus hates small beer. He will lie still if you smother him, and is never so well as when his breath is stopped. Bury him, and you make him quicker. As for his habit, it is ever plain, yet neat. Though nobly born he scorns not to wear a green coat with a badge on it ; and you cannot injure him worse than to pick a hole in his coat. Though he wears for the most part one sort of garb, yet he is never out of fashion, acceptable to the best of company, not regarding his outward dress, but valuing his inward worth. However, his suit is made of admirable stuff, for his outside never grows barer, and his linings are the fresher for wearing. So choice he is in his clothing that he rather choseth to have his brains knocked out than to have a rent in his garment. He wears an *à la mode* hat, as light (and almost as little) as a shuttlecock, which he puts off to none ; but like the quaker when brought before a magistrate, hath it taken off for him.

As for his pedigree, I know not how to derive it ; for he hath had in him the best and purest of the French blood, but will now acknowledge his race only from the Spaniard, whom he imitates, being stately, and standing always upright ; treads for the most part on carpets, and never stirs abroad but when he is carried, yet full of activity. If he runs fast and long, the more wind he gets. If he chance to fall, which is seldom, for many look to him, he will be extremely moved, yet (contrary to all men) the fuller his belly is the less hurt he receives : his credit is large, never paying for what he wears, running on the score perpetually ; his conditions are a riddle, there is in him pure virtue, and notorious vice ; the quintessence of love, and the venom of hatred. He is the beginning and the end of a thousand quarrels in a year, yet a very coward ; for he suffers any to take him by the ear, and never broke any one's pate but when company was by.

He is very facetious in society, and will spend himself freely to the last drop, if a lady's soft and warm hand will raise him. He is a brisk spark, and therefore courtiers adore him ; he is smooth in his expression, and therefore ladies delight in him ; he is filled with nimble fancies,

therefore the wits frequent him, exhausting his radical moisture, to distil it into poetical raptures ; for conceits never run faster from the alembic of their brains, than when this gentleman adds fuel to the furnace. He whets wit, yet dulls it ; creates new fancies, and stupifies ; gives the orator a fluent tongue, and makes him speechless ; gives a poet feet till he cannot go ; and as he helps ministers to preach, so he likewise silenceth more than the Spanish Inquisition. He hath a great many tricks in him ; he will make a falconer fly high within doors ; make a huntsman catch a fox by the fire-side. Whatever he holds is made good ; and unless you mind him well, much good matter that falls from him may be lost : for he is often fluent beyond measure. All tongues court him ; and those that look narrowly unto him shall find him no dry fellow. The truth is, he is too profound for shallow brains to meddle with him. He will pour out quaint expressions and hard words so thick that the best scholars are glad at last to give him something to stop his mouth. Yet hold him up fairly, and you may get all he hath out of him. He is excessively beloved, and relishes all company, being pleasant and full of admirable humours.

He is inwardly acquainted with the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and incorporateth with their wives daily. His kisses are so sweet that they lick their lips after him ; and though his breath be strong, yet it is not offensive. He is a true good fellow, drinking till he hath no eyes to see with. Good liquor is his life and soul, and he is never musty but for want of it. He will drink till he be filled up to the very throat, and gape whilst others put it in. He will bear as much sack as any man in England of his bulk ; yet he will be soon drunk in company. But if you will give him leave to vomit, he will take his liquor and drink fresh till all the company be forced to leave him. Drinking is his hourly exercise, seldom lying out of a tavern. He is the main upholder of club-meetings, without fear of being broke. He picks men's pockets, yet is never made more reckoning of than by such persons. As for his estate, I can only say this, that all he hath he carries about him ; yet generally he is reputed rich. What he hath, he holds upon courtesy ; but what he gives others, is held *in capite*. What he possesseth is commonly upon sale ; yet more for plenty, than for want ; and if you can purchase him you purchase all.

I could never endure idleness, I was ever in action ; either writing, or contriving, or putting in execution my contrivances. I thought it better *male agere quam nihil agere* ; my brains or hands were continually working, and very seldom but effectually. My pen was generally so happy in discoveries that my wit was much applauded by the most

censorious. Much respected I was, and my company much importuned by the tankard-bearers of Helicon, by which means I so swelled with pride, that I thought myself little inferior to Apollo. I called Mercury pimp, the Nine Sisters whores, whom I had frequently lain with, and might when I pleased : the best title I could bestow on Pegasus was Hackney-Jade.

In the height of this my opinionativeness, my cooler (our master's maid) came to me where I was alone ; and after many heartfetched sighs, told me she found herself with child ; which news had like to have deprived me of my understanding. But knowing that vexation never remedies but rather adds to trouble, I was resolved to bear it patiently, and study some means to preserve her and my credit. I framed a letter as from her father, desiring her to come down into the country speedily, if she intended to see him alive ; and according as we had laid the plot, she shews it her mistress, desiring her leave to shew her duty to her dying father.

Our mistress most willingly consented thereunto, as knowing that there was more than ordinary love between us. The maid had stayed as long as possibly she might without discovery. Lacing herself very strait, and keeping down her belly with three busks ; but now she made haste to rub off. I had provided a midwife that should be her bawd too ; but this could not be done without extraordinary cost. After her delivery, I found the keeping of her and the child very expensive ; then did I begin to consider what a vast charge, and how many various troubles this momentary lecherous pleasure draws upon a man ; how furiously he is upon the onset, and how quickly satisfied, loathing that object he a little before longed for. Well, I bethought myself how to be rid both of cow and calf. I told her I would get together what money I could, and so marry her, upon condition she would be willing to travel with me whither I went, which I knew was her only desire. I informed her of my intention to go for Virginia, and the reasons that induced me thereunto.

First, her disgrace would not be known there : Next, my master could have no power over me, insisting further on the pleasantness of that continent, and the plenty of every thing, &c.

She assented to all I propounded, relying herself solely on me to dispose of her as I pleased. To palliate my design, I went with her to Gravesend, pretending as if I was then going with her beyond sea, for no other end but to clear myself from her there, knowing that after she had passed examination or search of the block-house, she would meet with no more. Being aboard, I suddenly seemed to have forgot something ashore ; having well laid my plot upon the basis of a good sum of money I had distributed among the seamen, with a considerable present

to the master, and telling my Lindabrides I would return to her instantly, I got into the boat, and immediately after, the ship weighed anchor, and quickly was under sail. I confess, notwithstanding the devil had at that time the total possession of me, yet I was much troubled at what I had done so hard-heartedly and cruelly. A flood of tears so overwhelmed my sight that I could not discern the ship in which she was. So sensible I was of the wickedness of this fact, that Dido-like, I could have thrown myself into the sea after her, had not a good woman, whose husband was in the same ship, prevented me. Observing my tears, 'Tis probable, young man,' said she, 'you have lately taken your leave of some dearly beloved friend; and I guess, by your earnest looking after yon ship under sail, the person was in her.' I told her it was truth. 'My husband is in the same vessel,' said she, 'and therefore I have as much cause to grieve as you. Come, be of good comfort, man; friends must part; and it is better to part here than at the gallows. Go along with me, and we will wash down sorrow; and with a glass of neat canary, antidote our hearts against anything that may disturb them.'

With that I looked intently in her face, and found it correspondent with a jolly temper, an eye black and piercing; and eye-brows black also, and each as big as a man's thumb comparatively; a sign that never fails to denote that woman capable of giving a man the greatest delectation. She was every way completely handsome and suitable to the desires of the most curious critic in love-affairs. I thought it a shame to deny so kind a proffer, and a crime in youth unpardonable not to embrace that opportunity that shall lead him by the hand into Venus her bed-chamber. With that I address myself to her (and afterwards undress together), declaring that the force of her rhetoric, assisted by her external beautiful, and altogether lovely form, had forced me to forget my only dearly beloved she-friend, and to become her proselyte, her absolutely devoted convert, and would prostrate my will to be guided by hers and her command. With that we concluded to solace ourselves at the next tavern. I applied myself to my old way of insinuation; which soon melted her so that I saw I might when I pleased stamp love's impression on her.

Returning to Gravesend we soon lodged ourselves conveniently for our intended purpose. Having so done, I so ordered the matter that there was not anything wanting that might please our senses. Yet fearing lest her love should cool again, there was no art forgotten that might serve to entertain it. Delays in love-affairs are dangerous; women love not to be too long tantalized; there is a certain critical time to know their inclination; which if you punctually observe, you shall assuredly reap the fruits of your desires; if not, you may perpetually wait but never

enjoy the like opportunity. Wherefore the iron glowing hot, I thought good to strike : to enliven my spirits, she sent for a noise of music, ordering them to play in the next room. And in the end we began to think of some repose, agreeing before to lie in two chambers contiguous to each other ; which were accordingly provided. As soon as I thought all the household were in bed, I repaired to my mistress, who eagerly awaited my coming ; approaching the bedside, she clasped me in her arms. As soon as day broke I arose, bespeaking a fat capon swaddled with sassages, and a quart of buttered sack. I got all ready by the time of her rising : she was extraordinarily well pleased in my double diligence of serving her. Having applauded my industry and care of her, we fell to it, interlining every bit with a glass of canary. She told me she would never part whilst she had a penny left, having about her some thirty pieces of gold. ‘ Well,’ said I, ‘ my dear, since it is thy resolution, a match ; but let me be steward.’ Which she agreed unto, delivering into my hands what gold she had. For two or three hours I shewed myself very officious in my place ; but considering that when this money was spent we should not know what to do, I thought it was better for one to want than two ; besides, I had lately surfeited on a medlar, and therefore my stomach nauseated the very thoughts thereof.

I had feed the drawer to bring me word just as the Gravesend barge was going off ; which accordingly he did, by a private sign concluded betwixt us. I then pretended an excuse to go down, under the notion of providing something novel which should be conducible to our mirth and jollity. I had just so much time below to write her these lines instead of a solemn leave-taking, leaving them with the drawer to present her, and so went aboard the barge for London :

Madam, I'm gone, no wonder, for you know,  
Lovers encounters are but touch and go.

Arriving at Billingsgate, I went straight to a tavern where I had an interest with the drawer, resolving there to consult seriously with myself what course to follow, being as yet unresolved what to do. After I had raised my dulled spirits with a glass or two, I concluded to hazard my master’s good opinion, nay, and my mistress’s affection too ; which though at that present it only smoked, I might easily divine that in process of time it would burst forth into a flame. Being before confined to my master’s time, I began to consider what an excellent thing liberty was, equally estimable with health ; which two, though they are the greatest and most precious gifts (next our redemption) the creator of the world hath bestowed on mankind ; yet we poor mortals value them not till we are sensible of their want, by being deprived of them.

This is an infallible maxim, That the deprivation of a thing shall be so much the more evil, as the possession thereof is good. Now if liberty be such an excellent and delectable thing when enjoyed, how miserable are those that want it ?

Having money in my pocket, I concluded to experiment the enjoyment thereof, and to participate in such delights the nature of young men is most inclinable to. Now man being a sociable creature, I thought I should reap but little satisfaction to myself in the expense of my money, without an associate. Wherefore I sent to an apprentice of my intimate acquaintance contemporary with me, and who had often prompted me to ramble with him. This lad was his master's cashier, which I knew would much assist my design. I made him acquainted with my intention of trying the world. Though it had been formerly his own motion, yet he seemed at the first something startled ; but all his doubts I resolved ; adding moreover, that to have our wills enslaved to other men's, was a thing insupportable, since that we were, as well as they, created free denizens of this world ; That since our great-grandfather was emperor of the whole world, we could not style ourselves less than princes, and therefore debased our birth by a voluntary submission to service and slavery. I had no great occasion to make use of many arguments to this purpose ; for his own inclination was sufficient to perusade him. The result of our discourse was a firm resolution to become two knights-errant. I advised him forthwith to go home and bring with him what cash he had in his possession ; which he readily performed, and indeed more then I could expect, being 200l., the fates having so decreed to favour this our first bold exploit, as a trial of what we durst attempt.

## CHAPTER XII

*How he frequented bawdy-houses : what exploits he committed in them : the character of a bawd, a whore, a pimp, and a trapan : their manner of living : with a detection of their wicked lives and conversations*

BEING full fraught with money, we undertook our progress, promising to ourselves all delight imaginable, but not considering what the effect would be. We frequented all places of pleasure, but among the chief we ranked brothel-houses, which were our repositories. We seldom were seen in the streets by day, for fear of discovery ; confining ourselves close prisoners to some 'Bubbing-house' ; at night (like such as closely delighted in deeds of darkness) we would sometimes

flutter abroad. Our pastime was to hire coaches to any pretended place, and when we came near it, to make our escape. One time leaping out of the boot, my cloak chanced to tangle in the spokes of the wheel. The coachman not perceiving we were got out, drove on ; by the wheels continually turning, my garment was so engaged that I verily believed my sins had now conferred upon me the just punishment of being executed on the wheel, which I could hardly have avoided, had I not speedily unbuttoned my cloak. I was loth to bid the coachman stop, thinking I should have it at last. I ran lacquey-like a long way, but all my endeavours to shift it, proved ineffectual ; so that at length I was forced to cry out, ‘ Hold, coachman.’ The coachman coming out of his box, soon perceived the fallacy, and straightways demanded his money for his hire before he would untangle my cloak, which I was compelled to give him. Delivering me my cloak, he told me, I had paid him, but he had not paid me for my attendance on him. And said moreover, that my cloak would not look like a livery, unless it were laced ; and with that, with his whip, lashed me well-favouredly. Another sort of pastime we used, was to kick the old watchmen’s lanthorns about the street ; and it may be, sometimes confer a blow or two on their sleepy noddles, and then fly for it, but we had worse success with this than the former.

We practised this foolery so often, till at length we were met with and rightly served. It was thus : In Paternoster Row we found a fellow at noddie upon a stall, with his lanthorn and candle by him ; having first seized on that, and thrown it into the kennel, we prosecuted our abuse by falling upon him, and beating him. As soon as we had done this manful act, we betook ourselves to flight ; but here we mistook our mark, thinking him to be an old decrepit watchman, and one that had little use of his eyes, without those in his pocket ; whereas to our cost, we found him as nimble and as light footed as a stag, who overtaking us, surprized us ; and as he was carrying us before the constable, we met with the Grand Round, who, without much examination committed us as rats to the Compter. The chiefest thing that troubled us was the apprehension of our master’s knowing where we were. But we resolved to drown that care : we had not been there long, before other rats, male and female were brought in to bear us company. Some of the men were all bloody, and their mobs’ scarfs and hoods all rent, and none of them sober. Damning and sinking were the constant flourishes of their discourse ; calling for drink was the argument they held, and roaring in distracted notes was their harmony. Though I was myself comparatively wicked, yet I blessed my God I had not arrived to that height these superlative villains had attained to. Being in their company,

I thought myself in the suburbs, or on the confines of Hell. Sin, if it be dressed up in specious pretences, may be entertained as a companion ; but when it appears in its own shape it cannot but strike horror into the soul of any, though desperate, if not stupified. Wherefore methought I was so far from associating myself with them, that I protest the lewdness of their actions were so represented to me with such deformity that I knew not which I loathed most, them or the prison.

I cannot make appear to the world what they were, nor my resentments, unless I should stuff a page or two with all manner of horrid oaths, execrations, blasphemies and such like soul-infecting and destroying plague-sores ; wherefore I shall only take leave to anatomize the place that detained us from our freedom. Then look upon a prison as in itself, and it may be fitly termed a temporary Hell. For as the other is a receptacle for damned souls, the gates thereof standing always wide open ; so this refuseth the reception of none, though never so wicked a miscreant. Though my durance in this place was but short, yet I could not but take some observations, employing from thence the faculties of my soul to draw up the definition of a prison. Hell is a very proper denomination for it, since it is a place composed of nothing but disorder and confusion ; a land of darkness, inhabited by calamity, horror, misery, and confusion ; a bottomless pit of fraud, violence and stench. A prison is the banishment of courtesy, the centre of infamy and disparagement, the destruction of good wits, the treasure of despair, the fining-pot of friendship, a den of deceivers, a forest of ravenous beasts. Here you may see one weeping, another singing ; one sleeping, another swearing ; every one variously employed ; one eating in a corner, and another pissing just by him ; another lousing himself between both ; it may be heretofore a military man, and therefore loth to forget his art, but rather exercising it in the killing of his bodily enemies, bearing the blood on his nail, as the trophies of his victory.

It is, to speak most properly, a living tomb or grave to bury men alive in, wherein a man for half a year's experience may learn more law than he can in three terms for an hundred pound.

It is a little wood of woe, a map of misery, a place that will learn a young man more villainy if he be apt to take it in six months, than at twenty gaming ordinaries, bowling-alleys, or bawdy-houses ; and an old man more policy, than if he had been pupil to Machiavel.

This place hath more diseases predominant in it than the pest-house in a plague-time ; and stinks worse than my Lord Mayor's dog-house.

It is a little commonwealth, although little wealth common there ; it is a desert, where desert lies hood-winked.

The place is as intricate as Rosamond's labyrinth, and is so full of

meanders and crooked turnings that it is impossible to find the way out, except he be directed by a silver clue ; and can never overcome the Minotaur without a golden ball to work his own safety. The next day, paying our fees, and receiving some checks, with good admonitions from the justice, we were discharged.

This misfortune made us not a jot more cautious, but as soon as we were at liberty we went upon the scent to Mother Cr.<sup>1</sup> formerly famous for the good citizens' wives that frequented her house ; who still rides admiral of all the rest of her function about the Town. I hope the next time I go to visit her, she will not get me clapped for the pains I take in praising her. The truth of it is, of all the bawds I know, she merits most, having an house fit for the accommodation of the best. As for her working utensils, they are composed of refined metal, always neatly kept ; which, because they are not used upon all slight occasions, they appear the more delectable to the eye. As soon as we had entered the door, I could hear a rustling of silks in sundry places ; I conceive it was their policy, by seeming modesty to set a sharper edge on our appetites. We were conducted into a large handsome room ; bottles of wine were brought up, both Spanish and French, with salt meats to relish the palate, though we gave no order for them ; but it seems it was the custom of the house, an expensive one ; but without a piece spending, you shall know little of their practices.

At length, up came the old matron ; after the performance of our devoir, she seats herself by me, and began to be impudently acquainted, chucking me under the chin, calling me her Son Smock-face. Having well warmed ourselves with wine, and the good gentlewoman perceiving that our bloods began to heat, ' Well,' said she, ' I guess at the intent of your coming hither, neither shall you go away unsatisfied. Nature will have its course ; and if in youth it be stopped, it will but, torrent-like, flow with the greater impetuosity. Come, I see by your countenances that ye were born sons of mirth and pleasure ; shew then what stock ye came of. If you want subjects to exercise your parts on, we'll have more wine ; and when ye are inflamed, ye shall have the benefit of a cooler.' With that she leaves us ; but another of the same sex, though three degrees different in age, supplied her place. At first view I seemed very well pleased : handsome she was, and very proportionable ; but withal so impudent, that I was antidoted against lechery. *Ista fæmina quæ limites verecundiæ semel excesserit, oportet illam esse graviter impudentem.* If once a woman pass the bounds of shamefacedness, she will seldom stop till she hath arrived to the height of impudence. I must needs deal ingenuously, at the beginning the needle of my microcosm

<sup>1</sup> Mother Cresswell was a famous bawd of the time.

was touched by Love's loadstone ; but upon further acquaintance, if I might have had a hundred pounds, I could not have meddled with her.

Though she had baited her desires with a million of prostitute countenances and enticements, yet I looked upon her rather a companion for an hospital, and stood more in need of a chirurgeon's acquaintance than mine. My friend had nibbled at the bait ; but when I heard them capitulating about the price, I thought she wanted a fee for the doctor. Well, had she not over-traded, she had not broke so soon ; for her trade is opposite to all others : for she did set up without credit, and her too much custom undid her ; and so let her go, without either shame, or hope of repentance.

We desired to see another. 'Tis variety that man chiefly takes delight in. One constant sort of food, without participating of any other, though manna, will cause the stomach to long for the flesh-pots. Neither can the crime be greater in the enjoyment of diverse persons then one alone, provided matrimony make not the act legitimate. I do not approve of these consequent lines tending to this purpose ; yet give me leave to insert them, that you may understand how viciously minded some are in this frothy age :

Born under some ill planet, or accurst,  
Is he that loves one single whore ;  
Who with one draught can always quench his thirst,  
Ty'd to one mistress, and no more.

This nauseating thing being removed, up came one of Venus her chief darlings. Excellent flesh ! and she herself the cook that dressed it, spending most of her day-time about it, that she might with the better appetite be tasted at night. Finding no exceptions in this, I was impatient till I had consummated my desires. Withdrawing into another room, to heighten my thoughts, she declared to me her birth and education ; that as the one was well extracted, the other had occasioned much cost and expense ; that for her part, she associated with none but persons of quality, whose long patience and entreatments first procured a familiarity, and in fine, freedom in the exercise of love-affairs : and so would have (seemingly) put me off upon this score, that it was not usual for her to admit of any to her embraces but such whose long acquaintance had gained her affection. I offered her a crown, which she refused with indignation ; telling me, that she was not yet reduced to so low a condition as to become so poor a mercenary prostitute. At last, with much persuasion, I fastened on her an half piece ; and so striving with her (she only seeming averse), I accomplished my ends.

And presently in came a fellow whose very face would have enlightened

the room, though in the darkest night ; for indeed it appeared to me a blazing comet, and his nose (for miraculously he had preserved it) was the brushy tail. Laying his hand on his sword, he looked fiercer than a Spanish Don insulting over an Indian slave. The bulk of his body began to heave like an earth-quake, whilst his mouth, *Ætna*-like, belched out all manner of sulphurous oaths, which roared so loud as if his belly had contained a barrel of gunpowder, and the linstock of his nose had fired it. His courteous salutation to me, was, ‘ How darest thou, son of a whore, presume in this nature to dishonour me, in the abusing of my wife, without the expectation of an immediate annihilation or dissipation into atoms ? But I have something here shall tame thy insolence ; and now I am resolved to set thy blood abroach.’ With that he seemed to make a pass at me. Now I, imagining that he really intended to do what he pretended, for the safeguard of my life, took up a joint-stool, and received his point in the seat ; and following it home, tumbled him down the stairs ; and not being able to recover myself, fell with him. My comrade came running down at the noise to assist me ; but he seeing me rather make use of my heels then hands, followed my example, and so built a sconce, leaving the old bawd to condole her great loss ; for the reckoning was very considerable.

Now, because I have often met with these Hectors or trappanning villains, I think it will not be unsuitable to this present discourse, to insert their character.

#### THE CHARACTER OF A HECTOR OR TRAPAN

A bawdy-house is his cloister, where he constantly says his matins. He is a whore’s protector, pretending himself more valiant than any of the ancient heroes, thereby thinking to take off the suspicion of a coward from himself ; for the opinion of valour is a good protection to those that dare not use it. His frequent drawing his sword upon any slight occasion makes the ignorant suppose him valiant ; whereas he durst not do it but when he is confident no danger will ensue thereon. He never strikes any but such he is sure will not return his blows. In company he is wonderful exceptious and choleric, thinking in the fray some booty may be obtained : but his wrath never swells higher than when men are loth to give him any occasion ; the only way to pacify him is to beat him soundly. The hotter you grow, the milder he is, protesting he always honoured you. The more you abuse him the more he seems to love you ; if he chance to be quarrelsome, you may threaten him into a quiet temper. Every man is his master that dares beat him ; and everyone dares that knows him ; and he that dares do this, is the only man can

do much with him. Yet if he knows a coward, he will purposely fall out with him, to get courtesies from him, and so be bribed into a reconciliation. Yet I cannot say but that he may fight (if with great advantage), being so accustomed to the sight of drawn swords, which probably may infuse something of a conceit into him ; which he so magnifies by his own good opinion that he would have people believe that the mole-hill of his prowess is no less than a mountain. This little he hath, he is no niggard in displaying ; resembling some apothecaries' shops, full of pots, though little contained in them.

His estate lies in contrivances ; and though other landlords have but four quarter-days, he hath three hundred sixty and odd to receive the fruits of his stratagems. He is well skilled in cards and dice, which help him to cheat young gulls newly come to town ; and the reason he usually gives for it, is, A woodcock must be plucked ere he be dressed. If that will not do, he carries him to one of his mistresses, and so both join to plume this fowl. If there be not ready money to answer expectation, a bond of considerable value shall serve turn, attested by two who shall swear anything for half-a-crown. No man puts his brain to more use than he ; for his life is a daily invention, and each meal a stratagem. He hath an excellent memory for his acquaintance ; if there ever passed but an ' How do you ? ' between him and another it shall serve seven years hence for an embrace, and that for money. Out of his abundance of joy to see you he offers a pottle of wine ; and in requital of his kindness can do no less than make you pay for it. Whilst you are drawing money, he fumbles in his pockets (as schoolboys with their points, being about to be whipped), till the reckoning be paid, and says, ' It must not be so,' yet is easily persuaded to it ; and then cries, ' Gentlemen, you force me to incivility.' When his whores cannot supply him, he borrows of any that will lend him aught ; of this man a shilling, and of another as much ; which some lend him, not out of hope to be repaid, but that he will never trouble them again. If he finds a good look from any, he will haunt him so long till he force a good nature to the necessity of a quarrel.

He loves his friend as one doth his cloak that hath but one, and knows not how to get another ; he will be sure to wear him threadbare ere he forsake him. Men shun him at last as infection ; nay, his old companions, his clothes that have hung upon him so long, at length fall off too. His prayer in the morning is, that his cheats may take effect that day ; if not, that he may be drunk before night. He sleeps with a tobacco-pipe in his mouth, and he dreams of nothing but villainy. If any mischief escapes him, it was not his fault, for he lay as fair for it as he could. He dares not enter into a serious thought, lest he hang himself ; but if such melancholy seize him, drink is his refuge, and drunkenness cures him.

Lastly, he commonly dies like a malefactor on the gallows, or like Hercules with fire in his bones. When hanged, if begged for an anatomy, it would serve to convert tobacco-smokers from delighting in the excess thereof : for they will find the funnel of his body, I mean his throat, furred and choked up.

Being freed from danger, we rejoiced exceedingly that we thus so narrowly escaped, resolving to house ourselves in the next bubbling-place we came to, that we might talk freely of this renounter. A place (pointed out to us by the devil's finger) soon presented itself to our eyes, which we with more than good speed entered ; and coming into the kitchin, I was not a little amazed at the sight of a thing sitting in a chair by the fire-side, with a pipe of tobacco in its mouth, and a quartern of strong waters by its side. This tun of flesh resembled an elephant for the bigness of her waist, had there been the least appearance of a tooth. A nose she had (which with all wonder be it spoken that she had any) so long that it was a fit resemblance of the elephant's proboscis or trunk. But, as I said before, her teeth were fallen out, and as loving neighbours to reconcile them, her chin and nose resolved to meet about it. She bid us welcome as well as she could speak. Go, I think she could not ; but opening her mouth, Lord, what strong imaginations my fancy suggested to me ! Methought I saw Hell gaping to devour me ; and within that bottomless concave I could discern infinite numbers of souls whose damnation she was accessory to ; and coming somewhat too near her, I imagined her breath was bituminous, and smelt of brimstone. She might fitly be compared to old coal that hath been well burnt, that with the least spark will re-kindled, and fire anything near it. But her fittest likeness is the devil, her envy running parallel with his. All that the devil endeavours is to bring mankind into the same state with himself ; and a bawd's aim is to make all fair women like her. Now because their youth perhaps will not admit of it so soon, she hurries them on to it by degrees, by drinking, smoking, painting, and daily excess in venery. I looked about her house very inquisitively, but I could not judge her moveables (setting aside her quick cattle) to be worth an inventory. Her bedding I doubt me, too, is infectious, few coming near it but they are taken with a fit of the falling-sickness.

This old beldam being loth to put her throat to the trouble of calling her white devils about her, had got a whistle, on which she used several notes ; which musical language her girls understood very well. We called for drink ; the old bawd replied she would send for some, though she had it not in the house : this was to be sure of our money. Herein I

observed their temperance, not suffering us to have too much measure. Wenches we had plentifully ; one more especially I took notice of, to have the swarthiest skin I have seen English born, on whom an ordinary fellow was very sweet. When I saw my opportunity, I asked him (craving his excuse) what trade he was ? Pat as I would have it, he answered me, that he was a tanner. ‘ I concluded so, Sir,’ said I, ‘ by your dressing of that calf’s-skin there.’ This dull-headed fool apprehended me not, but began to be angry, telling me his trade was a good trade, and I need not undervalue it. I told him, I did not, since there was some analogy between my trade and his. ‘ Why what trade are you ?’ said he, ‘ I may ask you a question, as well as you me.’ I replied, ‘ that I was a cuckold-maker.’ ‘ How can that be like my profession ?’ quoth he. ‘ In this,’ said I, ‘ You dress the skins, and I trim the horns.’ The bawd at this fell into such an extreme fit of laughter that down fell her pipe, and up came the strong-waters that she had swallowed. But that was not all, for having not her retentive faculty, she let fly. Surely she was overcharged, which made her recoil, and so blew out her breech-pin. She was forced to leave us, and about an hour after returned ; how sweet, I cannot tell you. We fell into discourse again. I asked her how long she had lived in this house ? ‘ Two years,’ said she, ‘ a longer time then any house I have lived in this twenty years.’ With that I concluded she was in fee with the justices’ clerk.

My stomach being waterish, I would needs have some eggs and bacon : but Lord, what an agony the hearing thereof put the bawd in ! desiring me to desist, for she should die at the sight of them. I asked her the reason : ‘ O,’ said she, ‘ it puts me in mind of one Shrove-Tuesday especially, on which the apprentices pulled down my house ; and sick, sick as I was, pulled me away violently from a caudle I had prepared to comfort me. But they gave me one with a pox to them, and the Devil’s dam take the rotten eggs in it, with which I thought they would have pelted out my brains. After they had dragged me sufficiently, and worried me (as a mastiff would a cat) till they were weary of the sport ; fearing I should catch cold, they out of pity covered me warm in a bog-house. But the worst was, after this kind usage, I was to go through a long street before I could come to an acquaintance of mine wherein I could safely secure myself from the out-rage of these hell-hounds. All along as I went, a thousand dogs barked at me, the street was filled with people looking and laughing at my sad disaster, but none daring to come near me. They say I left so strong a scent behind me that several of the inhabitants left their dwellings upon it, and that the strong savour remained in that place above six days.’ I seemed to pity her much, promising to visit her often ; and so we left her.

## CHAPTER XIII

*What a trick he served his comrade : how himself was trapand : his own clothes taken from him : the bawd out of pretended pity invested him with an old petticoat and waistcoat : his admittance into a boarding-school : his getting many of the gentlewomen with child : his discovery, and his flight*

FROM one bawdy-house to another, was our daily travel, still finding out some variety that might please us. About twilight, coming along by a well-built house, I saw a gentlewoman richly attired standing by the door, who, as I passed by, very civilly saluted me, and so withdrew herself. I followed her in, as very well understanding how to interpret such actions. She brought us into a spacious inner room, and then with much civility and good carriage, invited us to sit down. She called to her servant to bring some bottles of wine, resolving to make us pay dearly for her extraordinary favours. By our habits she took us for no less than persons of quality ; for we had gallantly accoutréed ourselves ; and I thought that Fortune now had designed me her chiefest favourite, in throwing this unexpected blessing upon me. She caused her lute to be brought her, to which she sung so harmonically, that the music of the spheres are no more to be compared to it than a Scotch bagpipe to an organ. This so intoxicated my comrade, with the wine together (not but that they had a great operation on myself), that he fell fast asleep (*alias* dead drunk). Glad I was to my very heart of this accident, fearing he might be a rival in my intention : and to the intent I might remove all impediments that might hinder my sole enjoyment of this lady, I consulted with myself what to do with him. I was not long about it, but straight found out this cunning plot ; which was to send him home to his master. Love to a woman is so forcible that what will it not do ? to sum up all, make a man betray his friend. I made an apology to the gentlewoman for his incivility, and requested the favour to have her servant procure me a porter ; whilst she was gone to execute my desires, I searched his pockets, and took away all his gold ; for we had converted all our money into that metal, which we always made our *Vade mecum*. To ingratiate myself with this gentlewoman, I acquainted her with my design ; which she heartily laughed at. I farther desired of her, that I might have a card and a piece of paper. On the card I wrote a superscription, and pinned it on his back, directing the thing to his master, living in such a place. With the paper, I wrote a letter to him to this effect.

SIR,

Lately I found your goose upon the way,  
I took him up, as one that went astray.  
To recompence my pains, I pull'd his feathers ;  
Such precious down will warm me in all weathers.  
His flesh I love not ; it belongs to you :  
The giblets though I keep ; and so adieu.

I gave the porter instructions that he should but just put him within the doors, and leave the letter, and so with all speed come away, to prevent examination. He brought me word he had performed my order ; what discants were made hereon I shall leave the reader to imagine.

By this time I had gained my mistress with a shower of gold, which had so far prevailed on her that she protested she was wholly and solely at my devotion. I would have had her to have gone immediately to bed ; but she told me, there would be time enough before morning to sport in, and that we should be both tired if we went to bed so soon. Wherefore, to divert ourselves, we drank and sung together in parts, I myself having indifferent good judgment. Having spun out the time so long till it was time to go to bed, she then conducted me to the chamber where she intended we should lie. Though she made what haste she could to undress herself, yet methought she was purposely tedious. I commended before her vocal and instrumental music ; but then I esteemed no other music sweeter than what the tag made against her bodice when she was unlacing herself. About two o'clock in the morning three or four fellows rushed into our room ; at which I awakened, but made as little noise as a *Perdue*. My mistress leaping out of the bed, they seized on her, gagged and bound her ; and then opening the two leaves of the window that was the entrance into the balcony, they came in all haste to the bed, and in a trice, had rolled up the bed so close, that they had like to have stifled me in the middle on't. Though they dragged me in the bed from off the bedsted, rudely letting me fall on the ground, yet I felt no harm ; every part of me was so well guarded, that in that condition, I might have bid defiance to a cannon-bullet. But when I heard them talk of flinging the bed over the balcony to their companions, I thought I should have died instantly for fear, knowing I must of necessity go with it. Whereupon I cried out as loud as I could, and struggling, I got a little place open, and then I roared like Phalaris his bull. They seeming to be surprized with my unexpected noise, fled, fastening a rope to the balcony, and so slid down into the street.

Perceiving they were all gone, I groped about the room (for it was very dark) speaking very slowly, 'Where are you Madam ?' repeating it often ; but much wondering I could not hear her answer me. As I was

feeling round the room, stretching forth my hands, I chanced to run one of my hands against her, and one of my fingers into her mouth. I thought my finger had strayed at first, mistaking the place ; but searching farther, and finding teeth, I knew then whereabout I was, and discovered withal a stick in her mouth, keeping it wide open, as butchers do their sheep with a gambrel. But having removed this obstacle of her speech, she begged me to untie her hands ; which having done, she herself untied her feet ; and with that, she would have clasped me in her arms ; but I hung an arse, being sensible of the stinking condition that the fear had put me in. She was very inquisitive after my welfare, asking me again and again, whether I had received any harm from the rogues. I told her no : ‘ Nay, then I care not for my own sufferings, or what loss I have sustained by them,’ said she, and so speedily went for a candle. As I was thinking to apologize for my nastiness, up she came with a light. Viewing me, and perceiving what a condition I was in, she kept at a distance; ‘ Sir,’ said she, ‘ my fancy suggests to me that you now resemble Nebuchadnezzar when metamorphosed into a beast, and lying in his own dung. When you shall have reassumed your humanity, I shall presume to approach nearer to you.’ I made my sirreverence to her, wishing they had gagged her breech so wide that her guts might have a passage through her posteriors. For I plainly perceived, notwithstanding all her specious pretences, she was the foundress of this plot.

Well, she caused water to be brought up, with which I cleansed myself ; and because my shirt had too strong a scent of *Stercus humanum*, she lent me a smock, which presaged ere long I should wear coats too. Having shifted myself, I looked for my clothes, but there was a *Non est inventus* out against them ; all my search could afford me not the least comfort. My mistress seemed much disturbed at my loss, but when I told her I had lost such a considerable quantity of gold, her sorrow seemed to be redoubled, and I am sure her inward joy was increased. She comforted me with a great many friendly loving expressions, desiring me to be patient, and indeed necessity forced me to it. I asked her advice what I should do in this naked condition. ‘ There is no remedy,’ she replied. ‘ You must be content to clothe yourself in woman’s apparel, as for man’s I have none to furnish you withal.’ I consented to it, and presently she dressed me up in one of her gowns, with all the appurtenances thereunto belonging. The slenderness of my body, whiteness of skin, beauty, and smoothness of face (having no hairs thereon) added a suitableness to my garb. I must ingeniously confess, when I consulted with a looking-glass, I thought the transmutation of sexes had been verified in me ; but when I walked, I found something pendulous, which easily

persuaded me to the contrary belief of myself. I thought it folly to tax her for my misfortune, knowing how little it would advantage me.

The time was come I was to take my leave of her. Going to salute her, I committed a foul mistake, endeavouring to pull off my hood instead of my hat, and making a leg (as the vulgar term is) instead of a curtsy ; but she advising me to rectify that mistake for the time to come, we bid each other adieu. In this disguise I traversed the streets, it being almost impossible for any to discover me, my voice being so effeminate that I was confident that would never betray me. As I walked, I consulted with reason what was most expedient. My invention (as at all times) was now ready to assist me ; and thus it was. Finding a bill on a door, I knocked, desiring to see what lodgings they had. I was very civilly entreated to come in, and was shewn several rooms with much respect, for my female habit was very gallant, and so it had need, for it cost me dearer than so much cloth of gold. I pitched at last upon a chamber extraordinary well furnished. I never scrupled the price (because they should look on me as a person of quality), but agreed to my landlord's own terms. I told him I was lately come out of the country, and that my trunks were not yet arrived, with a great many more fictions to prevent suspicion. At first I intended to take for no longer time than I could contrive a way to dispose of myself, and procure man's apparel ; but perceiving how agreeable my feature, stature and gesture were to my female weeds, I resolved to try some projects in them.

There was a young gentleman that lay in the house, and took special notice of me as soon as I entered it, and as he told me next day, was overjoyed that I had determined to be a lodger there. This young bravo (who had more money than wit) had prepared a banquet for me, and requested the favour of me that it and himself might be received into my chamber. I alleged I could not do it in point of honour, and therefore desired to be excused ; but he pressed me so far (getting also his landlady to intercede for him), that at last (though with much seeming unwillingness) I condescended thereunto. Very merry they were, but I thought it prudence to be reserved. My amorist so gazed on me that I thought he would have devoured me with his eyes, kissing me sometimes, which had like to have made me disgorge my stomach in his face ; for in my opinion, it is very unnatural, nay loathsome, for one man to kiss another, though of late too customary I know it is. Yet I look on such as use it, inclining to sodomy, and have had the unhappiness to be acquainted with several who using that unnatural action, found it only the preludium to a more beastly intention. In three days' time we grew so intimately acquainted that at last he became impudent. One time as I passed by him, he catched at me, endeavouring to intrude his hand where

he had no interest ; but he did it so rudely that I verily thought he had spoiled me. I believe he imagined that he had caught me by the busk, which some ladies wear very long to hide their rising bellies. I shewed myself much displeased at him for so doing, expressing my resentment in imbibited words for so great a crime.

Next morning, he courted me to a reconciliation with a gold watch. By that he should have been well skilled in gaining female affections, for there is nothing prevails on them more than presents, and nothing gains sooner over them a total conquest than the hopes of enjoying a fair promising fortune. With much importunity I accepted his peace-offering, conditionally that he should never attempt the like offence. Nothing troubled me more, than how to dress myself, when my clothes were off. I durst not lay two things together, for fear I should mistake ; there were so many baubles, I wished for a pen and ink, to write on them what places they properly belonged to. Viewing them on the table together, they represented to my thoughts babel, or a great confusion, and nothing but a miracle could produce order out of them. I had so improved myself by hourly practice, when none was with me, and observation of others, that I had now the knack on't. I new modelled my steps, my former being too large by three quarters ; I could advantageously cast my eye, set my face in a plat-form, and dissect my words ; my feet were my only traitors, and therefore I always kept them close prisoners, for their greatness (like the Devil's cloven-foot) proclaimed me the contrary sex I imitated.

Well, I thought it high time to be gone, not without plucking my widgeon. Having a fit opportunity, there being none present but himself and I, I pretended disappointment of money, and that my rents were not yet due, and therefore desired him to lend me 10*l.* for eight days ; at the termination of which time, I should not fail to return it him with gratitude. He was much joyed that I would favour him so far as to accept his service ; and with that flew like lightning, fearing he would have fractured his leg-bone for haste to bring me the money, which I received from him thankfully. I caused a coach to be called, pretending I had business in the City. My cully would have waited on me, which I utterly refused, telling him that without privacy my affairs would prove ineffectual ; whereupon he desisted.

Coming into Burchin Lane, I went to a salesman, and bought (pretendedly for my maid) an ordinary yet handsome petticoat and waist-coat, furnishing myself with all the appurtenances requisite for a servant-maid.

Instead of returning to my lodging, I caused the coachman to drive me to one of the principal nurseries of Venus, Whetstone Park. For I looked upon it as a matter of small import to take my leave either of my

young gallant at home, or my landlord, since I had not left the least mortgage behind me for sleeping.

Mother Cunny (to tell the truth) was the nickname of that corpulent matron that with much demonstrations of joy received me into her house ; neither could she forbear expressing her great satisfaction in that her civil and honest deportment was so generally taken notice of as that it should be an inducement to strangers to shelter themselves under her tutelage, preferring her as a guardian or tutress, before so many thoroughly tried and long experienced ancient gentlewomen, both in City and suburbs. She highly applauded both the features and complexion of my face, not forgetting the right colour of my hair, which was flaxen : the stature of my person infinitely pleased her, which was somewhat of the tallest. In short, nothing disliked her but that she said I looked as if I had a greater mind to beat, than buss ; and to fight than delight my amorettes with smiling insinuations.

I had not been long in her house before a roaring Damme entered the house (a constant visitant), who meeting with my guardian, was informed that there was a rich treasure discovered in her house, and that none should attempt to spring the mine till he had made entrance by the first stroke. In short, he was brought into the chamber where I was, who at first behaved himself indifferently civil, and treated me nobly. But O Heavens ! how great was my confusion and distraction when strength of arguments and force of hands would not repel the fury of his lust, and that nothing would serve his turn but lying with m.. I defended myself manfully a long time ; but seeing it was impossible to hold out any longer, and that I must be discovered the next assault he made, forced me to cry out. This so alarmed my gentleman (concluding this outcry proceeded not from modesty and chastity, but out of some trapanning design) that he drew his sword, and made toward the stair-case, and running down with more haste than good speed, overturned my kind governess (that was puffing up the stairs to my relief) and so both tumbled down together. Fear had so dispossessed this huffing fellow of his senses that he mistook my old matron for the bravo he thought did usually attend me, and so without once looking behind him, made his escape into the street, leaving the piece of antiquity not so much defaced by time, as by this dismal accident so near extinguishing, that she was half undone in the vast expense of her strong-waters, to bring her tongue to one single motion.

Coming to herself, you may imagine how I was treated by her. But to be brief, I told her I could not brook such a course of life, wherein all enjoyments were attended by ruin and destruction, although habited and clothed in the seeming ornaments of real pleasure ; adding moreover,

that I would speedily leave her house, investing myself with a meaner garb, bestowing those I wore on her in part satisfaction for what she suffered through my means. This proposition so well pleased her that I had free liberty to do as I thought most convenient herein.

Exchanging my fine Madamship for plain Joanship, my equipage being suitable for service, I resolved to apply myself to a boarding school ; and the rather, having observed it to be more thronged with beauties, than any other. My address proved as successful as I could desire, for instantly upon my motion, I was received in as a menial of the house. But when I came to use the tools of the kitchin, I handled them so scurvily, it made those teething gigglers, my fellow servants, even split with laughter. To add to my misfortune, those varlets one time when we had some meat to roast, on purpose got out of the way for a while, to see how I could behave myself ; and then I did spit the meat so monstrously strange, that coming into the kitchin, they could not tell at first sight what those joints were called at fire. My actions had proclaimed my ignorance in all domestic affairs, so that my mistress could not but take notice of me ; and told me, that I was altogether unfit for her service, and that she could do no less than discharge me.

Fearing that my design was now frustrated and my fair hopes of delight annihilated, I could not contain my tears from bedewing my face. My blubbered eyes wrought so powerfully with my mistress that I judged it now the fittest time in broken accents to mollify her anger, and still reserve my place in her service. Whereupon I told her a great many formal and plausible lies, well methodized ; that I had all my lifetime lived in an obscure village amongst rude and ill-bred people, and therefore knew nothing ; that it was my desire to learn, not so much valuing wages as experience, and that it was for that intent I had tendered my service. The good old gentlewoman being much pleased with my freedom, ordered the maids that without their grinning and giggling, they should shew me anything I understood not.

By diligent observing, I gained shortly an indifferent knowledge. Though I lay with one of my fellow-servants every night, yet I judged it no prudence to discover to her my sex (though much against the hair) till I had by external kindnesses endeared her to me. I went through my business pretty handily, giving a general satisfaction, gaining daily an interest upon the loves of the young gentlewomen.

O the fine inexpressible petulances that daily, nay, hourly passed between me and some other of them ; and so crafty I was grown that I perfectly did counterfeit a modest maiden. Sometimes we would retire three or four of us into a private corner, yet not so obscure but that we intended to be seen by some man or other we had afore discovered ;

and then, as if affrighted by an unexpected surprize, squeak out, and then with strange haste endeavour to hide our pretended shamefacedness. Thus concurring and suiting myself to their humours, I had all the freedom I could desire.

And now I thought it high time to handle the matter for which I came about ; for indeed flesh and blood could hold out no longer. One night I perceived my bedfellow could not in the least close her eyes, continually sighing and tumbling to and fro, sometimes laying her leg over me, and at other times hugging me within her arms, as if I had been in a press. At first I thought this commotion of perturbation proceeded from sympathy, as questionless in part it did ; for I found experimentally by myself that my heart did beat as if it would have forced its passage through my breast.

I thought I could do no less than ask her what she ailed that she was thus restless. At first, sighs were her only answers, till at last (I pressing her much) poor thing she melted into tears. As soon as her eyes had given over deluging, and that her heart would give her leave to speak ; ‘Joan,’ said she, for so I called myself, ‘if thou wilt keep my secrets, I will tell thee my whole heart.’ Having promised to do that, whereupon she began thus to relate her story. ‘Our coachman for several years hath shown me more than common respect, and indeed, though I have concealed that affection I ever bore him, yet I could not but now and then give him slight occasions of hope. As the months wherein we lived together added to our age, so did it add true life and vigour to our loves, which increased so much and fast, that I could hide mine no longer. But herein consists my misery, that our affections aim at different ends. I fain would marry him ; he is only for present enjoyment ; and finding me obstinate, and not in the least yielding to his amorous solicitations, begins to slight me, and toys with such before my face that I know will surrender their maiden forts upon the first summons. Now, dear Joan, let me tell thee, I can hold out no longer, but am resolved to give him all the opportunity of privacy I can invent, upon the least motion offered, I will entertain it.’

I dissuaded her from this rash resolution with as much reason as I could utter ; inculcating the danger of being gotten with child, with all its aggravations ; that having obtained his ends, his love would be converted into loathing ; and he having rejected her as his object, none that knew her would choose her as an object that may make an honest wife ; for who would marry a whore, but to entail the pox on his progeny ? Whatever I alleged, she valued not. Seeing she was fully bent, I thought this the critical hour to discover myself to her, ‘Come, come,’ said I. ‘I will quickly put you out of conceit with *John*, and cure this

love that so much troubles you ; ' and so I did, after which I enjoined her silence ; which I thought she would have done, for her own interest sake ; as she did for a while.

I came at length to be very much beloved in general. It was the custom almost every night for the young gentlewomen to run skittishly up and down into one another's chambers ; and I was so pestered with them that they would not let me sleep. But I had an excellent guardian in bed with me, that would not let any of them come in to us, resolving to monopolize all the sport to herself. It was good sport to observe how this maid always followed me as my shadow, and whatever I was doing of, she would have a hand in it with me. What an endless work we made in making the beds ! Our mistress saw her work very much neglected, laying all the blame upon my bedfellow ; and indeed not without cause : for her mind was so employed about thinking on night, that she did little all day ; which my mistress perceiving, turned her away ; which was no small joy to me, if for no other consideration than her extreme fondness, which I knew would betray us both in the end.

After the departure of my bedfellow, the young ladies pitying my loneliness in the night, redressed that solitude by their welcome presence. The first that came had like to have spoiled all, by her squeaking ; but some of her associates running to know what was the matter, she readily told them she *thought* there was a mouse in the bed. Thus satisfied, they departed ; and I enjoined her as I did the other, silence. But alas ! all injunctions on women to keep a secret are but as so many persuasions to divulge it. Notwithstanding I had so enjoined her secrecy, yet she made it known to some that she entertained a peculiar respect for, intending they should participate with her in the pleasure she enjoyed. This discovery did put me to an extreme hard task. I should never have undergone it, had not variety of such sweet smelling rose-buds encouraged me.

Thus frequently each night did I repeat  
My uncontrolled passions ; and for heat,  
And active liveliness, I thought that none  
Could stand with me in competition.  
Twas then, forgetful wretch, that I a kiss  
Did oft prefer before a greater bliss.  
What did I care ! my carnal joys did swell ;  
So slighted Heaven, and ne'er feared Hell.  
But let me henceforth learn to slight those toys,  
And set my heart upon celestial joys.

In the very height of these my jollities, I could not forbear thinking sometimes on my eternal condition ; but custom and opportunity had

so absolutely enslaved me that good thoughts, which were but seldom, wrought little good effects upon me. But if my soul's welfare would not deter me from these foul and wicked acts, yet love to my present mortal condition compelled me for a while to desist, and by flying those embraces I lately so hotly pursued, shun those complicated mischiefs which were appropinquant, the undeniable effects of my immoderate and destructive wantonness. My approaching danger was too visible, for I observed that some of the gentlewomen began to find strange alterations in their bodies, with frequent qualms coming over their stomachs, which made me sick to be gone; and in this manner I did plot my escape. My mistress having a son much about my stature, and one time finding a fit opportunity, I got a suit of clothes of his, with other perquisites, which I put on, reassuming my proper shape and habit, and so with flying colours marched off, insulting over the conquest of so many maidenheads, leaving the *quondam* possessors thereof to deplore their ensuing misery, and condemn their own rash folly.

#### CHAPTER XIV

*What a trick he served a young man of his acquaintance, whom he met withal accidentally: how he was pinched with hunger, and what ways he invented to kill it*

I MADE all the speed I could to London, knowing the largeness of that vast city would afford conveniency for my concealment. But then my clothes much troubled me, knowing nothing would betray me sooner than they. Whilst I was studying all imaginable ways for my preservation, such an opportunity presented itself that therein it was plainly seen the Fates had decreed of old to favour my enterprizes. As I said, walking the streets, and ruminating what was best to be done, I met with a young man of my acquaintance, who seeing me, ran and caught me in his arms, and with very much joy we congratulated each other, and so as is usual when friends meet, we must drink together. Over our cups, I began to enquire after his condition. He shook his head, and so related to me a sad story, which in effect was to this purpose in his own words.

Dearest Friend, since last I saw you, never was young man so unfortunate as myself. The cause thereof I can impute to nothing more than self-conceit, and over-much credulity; which by the sequel you will plainly understand. For perceiving that my mistress shewed me

more than a common respect, I concluded that she had entertained some private favour for me within her breast, so that I began to be puffed up with conceit ; neglecting my duty, and now despising the chamber-maid, who was before the only saint I made nightly my orizons too. Withal, I carried myself so imperiously, that my master was not very well assured whether he durst command or no. My mistress would sometimes heartily laugh, to see how ridiculous I carried myself ; which I looked upon as a singular favour, mistaking her smiles for tokens of her love, when they were no other than the apparent symptoms of her derision. Observing how affable and pleasing she was, I never considered the generality of it, so that my self-flattering noddle supposed this carriage particular to me, and thereupon interpreted this her complacency strong affection ; and by reason she was frequently merry and jocose, I concluded her salacious or lecherous. Thus by the false lights of misconstruction and easy belief, I was led into love's labyrinth. My master's affairs was less regarded than my mistress's supposed affection. In fine, I judged it absolutely necessary to make her acquainted with my amorous passion, and no expedient better than by letter. My mistress (as it is customary with citizens' wives to light the candle of their husband's estates at both ends) had her country-house, to which I was sent by my master, with some bottles of wine, preparatory for a feast intended for the accommodation of some special friends. Arriving, I found my mistress had sent her maid to London about some business, at which I blessed my propitious stars, to direct me thither in such a fortunate and most desired hour.

After I had delivered my message, I began to talk very familiar with my mistress. She with a smiling countenance, asked me, what I meant ? not in the least checking my presumption, which made me more arrogant and bold ; telling her, I was her eternally devoted servant. She answered me, I was bound to be her servant for a time, and that I must, when commanded, obey her pleasure : to which last word, I added in my thoughts the epithet 'Venereal,' supposing she meant not to have left it out. With that I replied, 'Mistress, I should not deem myself worthy to be your servant, if my resolution had not engaged me to be so perpetually ; as for my affection, it shall daily anticipate your desires ; you shall not need to lay your commands on me, since my thoughts shall be solely employed in contriving ways how we may enjoy each other, to the mutual satisfaction of us both.' At which words, she fell into an excess of laughter (which I judged the effects of joy), and then asked me whether I was mad ? I answered, No, unless too much love had made me so ; 'Dearest Mistress, read but this paper, and I hope that will better inform you.'

## DEAREST MISTRESS,

Frequently revolving in my thoughts the condition I now am in, despair stands ready to seize me. But the consideration and knowledge of your commiserating nature draws me out of its ruining jaws. When I reflect again on the disparity of our fortunes, and that it is your indentured vassal that thus prostrates his affection at your feet, I fear one blast of your just indignation will suddenly shipwreck all my hopes. I confess my error is overmuch confidence, for which I may expect ruin which commonly attends rash attempts ; especially daring to sail in the narrow seas, without any other pilot than blind Love ; and if I should arrive at my desired port, I cannot deliver my goods without stealing custom. But waiving all difficulties of this nature, consider that love must needs be quintessential, that is not drawn from any other interest than reciprocal enjoyment ; and it must needs be exceeding strong and eminent too, that will force its way through the greatest hazards. Signify my pardon by one gracious smile, for what I have so boldly (yet forcibly) discovered, and I shall esteem my condition little inferior to what is celestial ; which is no happiness to me, without the auspicious beams of your favour shine on me. And so subscribe my self according as your sentence shall be, either the

Most happy, or most miserable.

The verses that were annexed to the letter, I got a rhymer to compose, which afterwards I found stolen out of several authors ; a line out of one, and a half out of another, and so with the coarse thread of his brain botched together ; which were these :

Cupid did wound my heart ; I hid the grief  
Long time, but durst not seek for your relief ;  
I found the smart increased on that score,  
For wounds, if not well search'd, but rankle more.  
O cure me quickly then, or else I die ;  
Deny not, since there's none but you and I.

I withdrew as soon as I had delivered my paper, giving her leave to read in private what my love had dictated. About a quarter of an hour after she called me to her, assuring me in a day or two I should receive an answer to the purpose ; and so absconding her displeasure, she sent me with all expedition home again. After the expiration of three days she came home to her City-house. At night she pretended some indisposition of body, and desired to lie by herself ; which hearing, I thought my joy would prove a traitor to my supposed happiness. She takes an occasion to tell me, About twelve at night I might come to her bed-chamber, the door whereof she would leave open for me on purpose. In the meantime, she shewed my master the letter, acquainting him with the whole business. According to the time appointed, I entered the

chamber in my shirt. Approaching the bed, I began to pour out my amorous expressions ; and I had one leg upon the bed-side, ready to enter the bed, where I thought my mistress had attended my pleasure, when I thought the Devil had waited on my posteriors, correcting me for not making more haste. The first lash was seconded with three or four more in an instant, which made me caper up and down so nimbly about the room, that for my life I could not find the door. At last I did ; speed was now the only guardian I had left, and so without pausing long upon it, I made but one step of the first pair of stairs from top to the bottom, which had liked to have lamed me. Before I could recover myself, my master was with me again, which put fresh expedition into me ; and so starting up, I leapt down half the next pair, and tumbled down the rest. By this time he had lost the cord of his whip, and fearing lest he might spoil me with the stick, desisted, bidding me go to bed lest I should catch cold after so great a heat.

So with two or three parting blows I got into my chamber, where I fell into a deep consultation with myself. The result of it was this. I took my curtains and sheets and tied them together, and then fastened one end thereof to the window ; after this I went out of the window, and so slid. By the time I was within an half-story of the ground, the knot of one of the curtains slipped, so that falling from that height, I thought that every bone in my body had been absolutely broken. Knowing it was no ways safe to lie there and cry God help me, I raised myself as well as I could. But I had not walked far before I found myself in no condition of going, wherefore I resolved to lie under the next stall. As the Devil would have it, I found a cobbler's stall newly broke open that very night. Never questioning the place, I crept in, and notwithstanding my bruise by the fall, and whipping besides, I fell fast asleep, so soundly, that I awaked not till I was forced to it with an horse-pox. For the cobbler coming to work early in the morning (according to his custom) found his door broken open. With that, he made an hideous noise, crying out he was undone ; for the day before he had laid out three shillings four pence, which was all his stock in leather ; all which was stolen, with many old shoes, nay his very working implements. Doubtless it was done by one of his own fraternity, that had informed himself of his late great purchase. The cobbler entering his stall, found me in one corner fast asleep. He took no other course to awake me, than dragging me by the heels out of my den, into the street, crying out that he had got one of the rogues ; and without any more ado, fell upon me, buffeting me with his fist, and treading me underneath his feet, making himself both my Judge and Executioner. Thus you see one mischief attends the other's heels. I begged him in a pitiful manner to let me

alone, and I would confess to him all I knew, desiring him to go with me to the next ale-house, which accordingly we did. I vowed to him I was no ways accessory to his wrong, informing him as much as I thought convenient of my sufferings, shewing him what a woeful plight I was in ; relating, it was my master's cruelty that was the cause of all this, and no other fault of mine than staying the last night out a little too long. The cobbler seemed to commiserate my misery, asking me forgiveness for what he had done, and so we parted. Since, by the kindness of a good-natured widow where I lie I have recovered my hurts and strength, and now am overjoyed we should so happily meet.

After this we drank very smartly, but I forgot not all this while my design on him. After that I had pitied him, and lamented his sad misfortune, I thought it high time to put my plot in execution. In order thereunto I demanded what difference he would take between my hat and his, his cloak and mine. There being small matter of advantage in the exchange, we agreed to go to handicap. In fine, there was not anything about us of wearing clothes but we interchanged. Scarce had I uncased myself, and put on my friend's clothes, but in came one that had dogged me, attended by the constable, with a warrant to seize me, who they knew by no other token but my boarding-mistress's son's garments I had stolen for my escape. They forthwith laid hold on my companion, (finding them on him), telling him he should severely suffer for the wrong he did his mistress, in the abuse of her house. Full of horror and amazement, he beseeched them not to carry him before his mistress, knowing how much he had offended her, she would have no mercy on him ; this confirmed their belief that they had found out the offender. The more he entreated the more deaf and inexorable were they ; and whilst they were busied about their mistaken criminal-prisoner, I took an occasion to give them the slip, knowing that a little further discourse would rectify their error. What they did with him I know not, neither durst I be so inquisitive to understand. Wherefore, leaving him to the mercy of such as would shew but little to him, I shall proceed forwards in my own story.

My stock was now very small, how to increase it I knew not. My invention was daily on the rack to find out expedient ways to supply my necessary expense. But my money being all spent, my belly began to grumble out insufferable complaints against me, seeming to charge me with want of ingenuity and industry, since I enjoyed my liberty ; for want that man cannot, which wants not that. Alas, what should I do ? I used what means I could, having no better experience. There was not a billiard table, boards end, or nine-pin-yard that I did not daily visit,

frequenting such as had the greatest resort. In a short time I learned the art of spunging so perfectly that I had the title of *Spunge-Master General* conferred upon me. In those places I learned to take tobacco, which was the chiefest part of my food, living in a manner by smoke as the camelion by air. I fed so lightly that I durst not stir abroad in a high wind ; neither durst I fight, lest one single stroke should have hazarded my dissolution. Continued drinking had so washed me that my body was transparent, you might have seen within me (without dissection) the motion of the heart ; you could have observed but little as to my liver, it long since had lost its use in the conveyance of the blood, for my stomach had nothing therein contained to supply it ; like an Inns-of-Court kitchin out of Term-time. In short, I appeared like a walking skeleton.

I had several suggestions within me to proffer myself again to my master ; but the shame to be seen in that condition, deterred me ; wherefore, I resolved to weather it out a little longer, and try whether Fortune would once more be favourable to me. My clothes were indifferent good, which could not but procure me credit, if I would make experiment. By means thereof I got an handsome lodging chamber. It was a public house of entertainment, so that here I thought I should have meat, drink and lodging for chalk, and chalk for nothing. I called freely for what was in the house, which was readily brought me ; but when the servants beheld with what celerity (Hocus like), and cleanly conveyance I had disposed of what was before me, they verily believed in one week I would cause a dearth in the house if I stayed. Wherefore, one of the servants acquainted her mistress with what she had observed, alleging further invectively against me, that I looked like one of those lean beasts which have nothing given them to feed on but virtuous and honest women ; that she believed I was the genius of some hunger-starved wretch, or a shadow without a substance (which was very true as to my pocket).

When I thought it was time to go to bed, I called for a candle, not mattering whether I called for a reckoning. But my landlady did, for, said she, ‘ Sir, it is our custom to reckon with our lodgers every night what they have that day, and once a week to discharge their lodging.’ In truth I did intend to have discharged myself of it before the week had been out. I knew not what at present to answer her, but I was seldom to seek in such cases. I desired her to be content for that night, on the morrow I would have my trunks brought to her house, making it my quarters for some time. And that she should find me a boon companion, drinking freely. ‘ I believe,’ she said, ‘ you will be here for some time, or maybe you will make this your refuge or sanctuary for one night ; and

then you say you will drink freely too ; give me leave to tell you, you meant at free cost. Sir, give me my reckoning now, or you shall have no lodging here this night.' 'Do you suspect me, Landlady,' said I ? 'Respect you,' said she (mistaking the word). 'For what grounds, unless I knew you better ? And yet I doubt I shall know you too well. That's a good one indeed, respect a skinful of bones ; a bag of chessmen ; a bundle of small faggot-sticks. Why, thou haberdasher of small wares, dost thou think I will respect thee otherways than for thy money, unless I should be so mad as to fall in love with Famine ? Come, give me my reckoning first, and I shall talk with you in another dialect ; if not, I shall set my curs at thee (the tapster and hostler) that shall worry thy gibbed catship.' Hearing her say so, and thinking the passage had been clear, I betook my self to flight ; but running through the entry, I ran my belly directly against the tapster's leg, that lay over the bench on which he slept. I ran so fiercely that I shoved his head so violently against the board raised at the end of the bench that I made his neck double ; the knock likewise had like to have turned what little brains he had within his head. As for my own part, I thought that his foot had run quite into my belly, and that pulling it out he had left his shoe behind.

Before I could rise, I had three or four about me, which I thought would have limbed me, as boys falling out do their cocks on Shrove Tuesday. At that time I would have spared them one limb, provided that would have contented them. But there was no mercy to be had at their hands, especially the shrill note of their mistress's perpetually moving tongue sounding a charge in their ears. Being tired with me, they would be revenged of my clothes. They would have stripped me, I think, stark naked for my reckoning, but that one said, 'Let his cloak suffice ;' at which another pulled so furiously at it that miraculously, without rending that thin transparent garment, he got it all but the cape. In this condition I was brought before my new landlady. I asked her what was to pay ? 'Sirrah,' said she, 'more than thou hast in thy pocket, two shillings and fourpence.' As well as I could speak, I demanded how it came to be so much. 'Why,' said she, 'there is for beef 1s. for bread 4d. six pipes of tobacco, and three pots of ale ; all this thou hadst in less than half an hour.' I would not contradict her, though I knew it was near an hour ; I desired her to keep my cloak for the reckoning, but durst not threaten her for her abuse.

Being about hay-making time, I walked out into the fields, resolving to spend that night in contemplation. I had now time to consider the damage I sustained in this skirmish. They had carried away all my ribbands with their fingers, otherwise my clothes received the least harm. My nose resembled a black pudding before it is boiled, and my

eyes were fled into my head for fear of such melancholy meat. My cheeks were so puffed up with swelling pride that they were resolved to close up the portals of my optics, that they might not be eye-witnesses of the height of their ambition. My ears were so mauled with their fleshy hammers that I heard a peal within my head for joy, I suppose, that my eyes had taken up their residence within my brains. At last I felt something about my shoulders ; at first I thought it had been the weight of the blows, but feeling, found it a part of my friend that still hung about my neck, and would not leave me ; which put me in mind of that faithful cloak that would never leave its master, although his master had attempted all ways imaginable to leave it. I must needs say, I loved my cloak so well that it grieved me much to be compelled to part with it. It had been a servant to servants, ever since the setting up of the first billiard-table, whence it derived its pedigree. Being deprived of its employment, and dispossessed of its ancient habitation, its heart-strings were ready to break, and being not able to take a nap for grief, turned changeling. The young man I had it of told me that from the fifteenth successively, it was descended to him : but they were unworthy to him that having had his best days, would turn him off in his extreme old age. I have him so fresh in my memory, that I cannot but condole his loss.

Cloak, if I may so call thee, though thou art  
Thus ravished from me, don't abruptly part.  
Thou didst not take distaste, and so art gone,  
Cause once I called thee a mere hanger on.  
'Twas but in jest ; for had I now my will,  
I'd have thee for to hang about me still.  
Now I may tax thee justly, for I see  
That now th'art nothing else but levity ;  
Nay when I had thee, scarcely did I know  
Sometimes whether I had thee on or no.  
Thou wert so thin, and light, that some have thought  
Thee made of that same web *Arachne* wrought,  
And say th'art useless now, unless men put  
Thee like a cobweb to a finger cut.  
I love thee still, for better and for worse ;  
He that divorced us, let him have my curse.  
Sure 'twas a red-nosed fellow, for I know,  
He coming near, it was but touch and go.  
But let him keep thee, for thou'l<sup>t</sup>t useless be  
To him ; thick clothes suit best with knavery.

Day appearing, I got me a stick out of a hedge, and so walked into the City. I walked up and down, but met with none of my acquaintance

on whom I might fasten on as a bur. Noon approaching, my belly began to chime ; I thought all the meat in Eastcheap would not lay the spirit hunger had raised within me. Coming by a baker's shop, I pretended to be ignorant of the city, and as I was asking him the way to such a place, not caring what, I happily secured a penny loaf, which I carried off undiscovered. I thought it not good to cumber my pocket with it, wherefore at two bits I gave it my belly to carry. Surely at that time I had an ostrich's stomach ; every thing I put into my mouth passed through me like quicksilver. Going a little farther, I came to an ordinary, where I saw two sitting in a lower room expecting their meat. I sat me down in the next little box to them. Immediately there was brought to them powdered beef and turnips. The young man that served them, came to me, demanding what I would have ; I bid him let me alone, and not speak too loud, for those two which were next me were my very good friends, and I would startle them by and by with my unexpected appearance ; at which he left me. Finding my opportunity, I slipped my hands through a hole in the form of an heart, which was in the partition that divided us, and laying hold on the turnips, I spake aloud, ' You hogs, are ye at the roots ? I will make one among you instantly,' and so brought out my handful. Having devoured them in a trice, I presented myself to their view, and sat down with them. ' Gentlemen,' said I, ' excuse my frolic ; I am in a merry humour to-day.' They concluded what I said to be a truth, and bade me welcome. ' Nay,' said I, ' meat will come instantly as a supply ;' and so it had need, for we made a clear board immediately. Seeing this, they called the boy, taxing him for sloth that he did not bring my meat. ' Sir,' said he, ' the gentleman did not order me to bring any ;' at which they frowned, and began to charge me with incivility. ' What, are ye angry ?' said I. To which they replied affirmatively. ' If so,' I answered (laying my hand upon a full pot of ale), ' I value your anger no more than the drinking this pot,' which I swallowed at two gulps, and so bid them farewell, leaving them to call for another ordinary.

## CHAPTER XV

*How he had like to have been transported, being taken up by kidnapper,  
vulgarly called a spirit*

HAVING satisfied my stomach, I walked along with much more courage than before ; which had been to little purpose, had I not had a stick in my hand. For there was hardly a dog in the street

which I went through that gave me not his grinning salutation and would, when my back was turned (knowing else I would never have suffered their humility), have kissed my very heels, had not my stick prevented their sneering dogships' mouths. I have wondered often why dogs will bark so incessantly at the sight of a tinker, pedlar, Tom-a-Bedlam, nay, any suspicious fellow, till I found it myself by experience, that by natural instinct they know and hate the scent of a rogue. My course of life appeared so idle (by my lazy stalking and gaping this way and that, sometimes standing still and seriously viewing what deserved not a minute's observance) that the beadle took hold on me, telling me it was great pity that such a lusty young man should want employment, and therefore would help me to some. But understanding from him that it must be in Bridewell, my legs failed me, shewing thereby how unwilling they were to be accessory to the punishment which would be inflicted on my back. At length, by pitiful looks, and many entreaties, I got clear of him, but fell immediately foul with an evil spirit or a seducer of persons to the Indies. Well may he be called a spirit, since his nature is like the devil's, to seduce any he meets withal, whom he can persuade with allurements and deluding falsities to his purpose.

After he had asked me many impertinent questions, he invited me to drink with him. I ingenuously told him I had not a penny, otherwise his motion would be acceptable to me. At which he cast up his eyes to heaven, and laying his hands on his breast, 'alas poor young man,' said he, 'what pity it is such a fellow as thou art shouldst want money; which argues thou art both destitute of friends, and an employment also. Well, I'll say no more for the present, but before we part I'll study some way or other for thy advantage, which I shall do merely out of commiseration to the miserableness of thy condition, as also out of respect to thy father, whom I am confident I have heretofore known, by the resemblance thou bearest him in thy countenance.' I could but smile to myself to hear how this rascal dissembled. Not discovering my thoughts, I willingly went with him to drink, resolving to see what the event would be. After he had paused a while, 'Well,' said he, 'I have found it. There is a merchant an intimate friend of mine, that wants a store-house-keeper. Now if you can cast accompts ever so indifferently, you shall find entertainment from him, and 40*l. per annum* for encouragement.' I told him that I joyfully accepted his kind proffer, and that I should refer myself to be disposed of as he should think fit. With that he embraced me, saying, 'within two days I should go aboard the ship where the merchant was, who would go along with me to Virginia (where he pretended the merchant's plantation lay). 'In the meantime you shall

go along with me to my house, where you shall receive from me what your necessities require.'

I had heard before how several had been served in this kind, so that being forewarned, I was forearmed : *premonitus, premunitus*. He carried me away presently to Wapping, and housed me. To the intent he might oblige me to be his, he behaved himself extraordinary friendly ; and that he might let me see that he made no distinction between me and his other friends, he brought me into a room where half a score were all taking tobacco. The place was so narrow wherein they were that they had no more space left than what was for the standing of a small table. Methought their mouths together resembled a stack of chimneys, being in a manner totally obscured by the smoke that came from them ; for there was little discernible but smoke and the glowing coals of their pipes. Certainly the smell of this room would have out-done assa-fœtida, or burned feathers in the cure of ladies troubled with the fits of the mother. As to the sight, the place resembled hell, so did it likewise as to its scent, compounded of the perfume of stinking tobacco and tarpaulin. So that I concluded the resemblance most proper.

In Hell damn'd souls, fire, smoke, and stink appear.  
Then this is Hell, for those four things were here.

I was seated between two, lest I should give them the slip.

After I had been there awhile, the cloud of their smoke was somewhat dissipated, so that I could discern two more in my own condemnation. But alas, poor sheep, they ne'er considered where they were going, it was enough for them to be freed from a seven years' apprenticeship, under the tyranny of a rigid master (as they judged it, coming but lately from sucking the breasts of a too indulgent mother) and not weighing (as I know not how they should) the slavery they must undergo for five years, amongst brutes in foreign parts, little inferior to that which they suffer who are gally-slaves. There was little discourse amongst them, but the pleasantness of the soil of that continent we were designed for (out of a design to make us swallow their gilded pills of ruin), and the temperature of the air, the plenty of fowl and fish of all sorts ; the little labour that is performed or expected having so little trouble in it, that it rather may be accounted a pastime than anything of punishment. And then to sweeten us on the farther, they insisted on the pliant loving natures of the women there ; all which they used as baits to catch us silly gudgeons.

As for my own part, I said but little but what tended to the approbation of what they said. For all my aim (as I related before) was to understand the drift of this rogue, and then endeavour to get what I

could from him. By this time supper was talked of by our masters ; so choice they were in their diet, that they could not agree what to have. At last, one stands up and proclaiming silence, said that a dish of bruise<sup>1</sup> was the most princely dish of any. And to tell you truly, by his looks, I thought he had been begot just as his mother had put a sop into her mouth of that stomach-murdering stuff, the grease running about her chops, which pleasing her fancy, struck so deep an impression in the imagination upon her conception that the face of that thing she brought forth, looked much like a toast soaking in a cook's dripping-pan.

That he might persuade the rest this way to indulge his appetite he added, farther, that it was a dish would not be expensive, and soon ready. My landlady, to back him on, said she had some skimmings of the pot which she had been collecting these three months, some whereof she questioned not but to procure, and let her alone to order it so that we should say we never had a better dish aboard in our lives.

Another contradicting him, preferred a bowl of pease-pottage before the chiefest meat whatever, that he could never look into the pot and see them boil round but that his heart leapt within him, and kept time with their motion. My master (that was their senior) scorned to be controlled in his fancy ; and therefore positively determined to have some Poor John,<sup>2</sup> swearing that the Great Mogul did eat nothing else thrice a week, and that Atabalipa (that Indian king whom Cortez conquered) caused a sacrifice every day to be made of them to his idol, commanding them to be laid on an altar made of some coals of fire, then the fat of some beast rubbed thereon (because they had no butter), and so presented to the idol, afterwards to the king, which he did eat with inexpressible satisfaction. Order was given that this delicate fare should be provided. Though they did beat it most unmercifully, yet it would not yield, resolving rather to be broken in pieces, than to become unlike its master's heart, or shew anything of a tender nature. There was one allotted me for my proportion, which I used as they had done, laying it on the coals a little while, and so committing it to my teeth's disposal. I never found till now that my teeth could be thus shamefully baffled. They made several assaults upon it to little purpose. My teeth at length fearing a total conquest, desperately and enragedly seized on the thinnest and weakest part, and holding it as fast as a vice, at last in the conflict overpowered one small flake. But not being able to stay the swift backward motion of my head, the hinder part thereof (the seat of memory) flew so violently against the wall that I instantly forgot what I was doing and where I was, and all but the pain I sustained by the knock.

<sup>1</sup> Slices of bread soaked in boiling fat pottage from salt meat.

<sup>2</sup> Salted and dried hake—a very coarse dish.

Strong water they poured down my throat to revive me, but there was nothing did sooner fetch me than a small flake of the Poor John, which sticking in my throat had wellnigh choked me, which caused a struggling, and summoned the spirits together to oppose what might be destructive to nature.

Now did I really imagine myself at sea, where, for want of provision, I was forced to feed on cordage, or the ship sides. Had this poor creature been ground small, I might have made as hard a shift to have swallowed it as those seamen did the saw-dust of deal boards coming from Norway, and destitute of other food. That night I slept but little, neither could I, had I swallowed opium for that purpose, for the innumerable quantity of bugs (as some call them) that had invaded my body, being weary (I suppose) of inhabiting any longer the dry mansion of that old rotten bedsted on which I lay. In the morning I found the ruins of a looking-glass in the window, which I took up to discover what knots or nodes those were I felt o'erspreading my face. The sight whereof struck into me a panic fear, verily believing I had been infected with a spotted fever.

I began to curse the bed and sheets, imagining the contagion proceeded from them. To be satisfied herein, I drew aside at the bed's feet the curtain (that is to say, part of a tilt) pinned there to keep the wind off, which otherwise would have fanned us to death, coming in so furiously through the portcullis of the window (for glass there was little). At first sight I questioned whether I was not lately risen from the dead, since there was visibly before my eyes the black cloth that covered my hearse. Had not we gone to bed without a candle over-night I should sooner have chosen a bulk than this bed to lie on. It might have been a good quære, whether those sheets had ever been washed since weaving, and continually since employed by whores and bawds, successively, to sweat out their contagious humours, and matter proceeding from their ulcerated bodies.

My pretended friend perceiving my amazement, bid me be of good courage, for those marks in my face were only occasioned by a stinging sort of vermin, who seldom meddle with such as are accustomed to them, only giving their welcome to such as were new-comers. I took these sufferings as patiently as I could ; thinking it was an ill coming for me to either of them ; and it should not be long before I would take my farewell. We had scarce breakfasted, before a messenger came into the room, and with much seeming respect pretended to deliver a message to my friend. I guessed it was to inform him how the tide served, and so it proved. My friend told me we must be gone instantly, for the merchant attended my coming. Wherfore we went down to the stairs to take boat. By the way he told me that he would go with me in the same ship,

and take as much care of me as he would of his own son, whom I understood afterwards he had too sure, above a year since, stolen away and sold as a slave. One while I thought to have ran for it, another time I thought to have cried out, '*spirit, a spirit,*' but that the thought of the watermen being his accomplices, deterred me.

I was at my wits' end, not knowing what to do. Coming into the boat, being now destitute of all relief, I asked him according to his former pretence, whether he resolved to go to sea with me? 'Yes,' replied he, 'I question, Sir,' said I, 'whether you ever told a truth in your life, but I am resolved you shall now;' and with that I flung myself with him overboard. Those which were in the boat immediately endeavoured at our rising to pull us up into the boat; but I, clapping my hands unfortunately on the side of the boat on which they within leaned, overturned it upon me. The first thought this accident produced in me was that a whale had swallowed me, and that I was in the dark concave of his belly; or that death had arrested me, and clapped me up a close prisoner for my sins, in Hell's deep and black dungeon. But by the industry and expedition of many watermen, eye-witnesses of this passage (which had like to have proved tragical), the boat was recovered, and I the first person taken up and set on shore.

*Multorum manibus grande levatur onus.*

Many hands make light work. I ne'er stayed to see what was become of my good friend (a pox take him), but with what speed I could, attended with a great number of little hooping owlets (I mean the young fry of scullers) I secured myself from this *Anthropopola*, or man-seller. A charitable woman seeing me in this pickle (for it was salt water, which my soured guts may testify, if they please, in their grumbling manner of speaking), told me that she would entertain me till to-morrow. This was the greatest cordial could be applied to this cross; and without many compliments, I thanked her for her great love. Now because she saw what condition I was in, she immediately put me to bed.

## CHAPTER XVI

*How under the pretence of begging, he stole a cloak, and with that went to a gaming ordinary: what a bold adventure he made there, and the success thereof*

PARTING from this good woman, I began to think that the art of stealing might be reckoned amongst the liberal sciences; for though it may be called an handicraft, yet it cannot be looked on as

mechanic. This is the art, the right practice whereof is the true philosopher's stone, the elixir of life ; with which many turn poison into medicine, coarse cloth into cloth of gold, hunger into fulness and satiety, convert rags into satins, and all this done by a quick wit, and slight of hand.

The antiquity and dignity of this profession I shall relate elsewhere, and shall proceed in my adventures.

The evening of twilight being come, I chanced to look in at a door ; and perceiving none at hand, I went in boldly, resolving if I met any to beg an alms of them, having before premeditated what I had to say, *viz.*, that I was a poor distressed young gentleman, my father, mother, nay, all my relations I knew, being dead ; and that not knowing what to do, was forced (under cover of the night) to beseech the assistance of charitable-minded persons. But in my way I found none that should occasion my using this form.

I found in the parlour a good camlet cloak, which I made bold to put on, and so very gravely walked out of the house ; but coming to the door, you must think there was wild-fire in my breech, that hastened me out of the street. Being gotten a bow-shot off I thought myself indifferent secure, so that I slackened my pace, but could not (if my life lay on it) forbear looking this way, that way, sometimes over one shoulder, sometimes over the other. Thinking of what dangerous consequence this might prove, I resolved to walk more confidently, and not let my eyes discover anything of fear, by reason of guilt. This loose garment had so of a sudden metamorphosed those thoughts I had of myself but a little before, my eye being continually on my cloak, I could not conceit myself less than the best of the young Templars that walk the streets to shew themselves. Coming into Bell Yard, I observed several gallants go into an house, and others to come out, which put me to the curiosity of enquiring what or whose house it was. One told me it was a gaming ordinary. Nay, then, thought I, it is as free for me to enter as others, and so went in.

I looked on a while, but my fingers Itched to be at it. Why, thought I, have I not adventured a gaol, a whipping, or an hanging, and shall I now fear a kicking, a pumping, or a bog-house ? These considerations made me resolutely take up the box, and I threw a main, which was 7. A great deal of money was set me ; I knew it was but to little purpose to baulk them, so that confidently I threw at all, which I nicked with eleven, and so continued holding seven hands together. Perceiving I had got a considerable quantity of money, and fearing I might lose that which I had so boldly adventured for, I thanked my propitious stars and the gentlemen, who had rather lose their money than suspect any that

hath the garb of one well extracted ; and so bade them good night. A privilege too many skarking ubiquitarians use without interruption, being most commonly in fee with the waiters and box-keepers, who will be sure to speak in the behalf of such confident cheats. If they lose, pretending great knowledge of them, that they are men of repute, civil and responsible ; which frequently so prevails upon a mouth, that he hath not a word to say more. Questionless, ordinaries were first impartially founded, interdicting all play but which was upon the square ; but since, by the connivance of the box-keepers, when the table grows thin and few at it, let the stranger beware : for the box-keeper shall walk off, pretending some speedy dispatch of a business concerning the house of office, &c. whilst your antagonist shall put the change upon you, or make use of his own Jack-in-a-box. And then had you 500*l.* (would you set like a gamester) he will have it to a penny in a short while : with whom the waiter goes snips. If at any time such they know want an high flier, &c. they know how and when to supply him.

Full fraught with this good fortune, and so laden I was ready to sink, I resolved to moor my vessel in the next harbour. The landlord whence I came, was very loth to entertain me, his lodger having served him a scurvy trick the night before, conveying out of the window the furniture of a room that cost him 40*l.* besides a great silver tankard which the gentleman would have filled with stale beer and sugar, to stand by his bed-side all night, pretending it was his custom. But I desiring him to lay up a parcel of money for me till the next morning, quite put out the eye of his jealousy. I shewed myself that night very exceeding noble, concealing my success at play that he might conclude the greatness of my expense proceeded from the nobleness of my nature, having a good estate to back it. I was conducted to bed with many ceremonies, and abundance of respect. Sleep I could not, for thinking how to dispose of myself.

I had experimented the various exigences and extremities an unsettled condition is accompanied withal ; and knowing how securely I could purloin from my master, if I would moderate my theft, I concluded to supplicate my master by a letter for my reception into his service, not forgetting my mistress's *quondam* kindnesses. If my master should refuse to re-entertain me, I had by me what might supply my necessities, till I had re-considered how to improve my stock, or bestow myself. Not to delay time, the next day I wrote him this letter.

SIR,

Having seriously considered the greatness of my folly in running from so good a master, (whom I may more rightly entitle father) with tears I beg mercy from Heaven, and forgiveness from you. Mitigate my offence by revolving

in your mind the fewness of my years, which makes me (as it doth most others) prone to rambling fancies ; look then favourably on my long absence from you, as a mere exiliency, a youthful lapse, which maturity of age may rectify. If you can forgive my follies, I will study to forget them, and daily endeavour the propagation of my fidelity in the remainder of my time. By the bearer hereof you may signify your pleasure.

Sir, I am  
Your cordially penitent Servant, &c.

With much joy my master read this letter, and hastened the bearer away to bring me to him. Having converted my silver into gold, sewing it in my collar and waistband, and putting myself into a garb convenient for his sight, I went to him.

## CHAPTER XVII

*His master sheweth him more kindness than formerly : the ill requital he made him by cuckolding him : an accident that fell out thereupon, which produced two remarkable stories, deduced from the strength of imagination*

MY master, upon my reception, told me he had freely forgiven me, and if that I would henceforward endeavour the prosecution of a more regular course of life he would forget too my past follies. I promised him more than the strictest zealot ever yet did, and begged him pardon beforehand, if he found a defect in performance.

As my expressions gave my master much content, so my return (I perceived by my mistress's eyes) gave her the greatest satisfaction. My master began to dote on me again, seeing I daily trebled my diligence, and so active was I in everything that concerned his affairs, that it was hard for any to anticipate me in my intention.

This gained so much upon his facile good nature, that I had liberty to wear my hat, and sit at table with him, neither would he command me anything servile. I had (as formerly) the same solicitations from my brother snippers ; but fearing lest one time or another I might be snapped by the timorous nature of some, who, if once taxed, will confess, not only as to themselves, but likewise detect the whole knot of a brother-hood, I resolved to have no more to do with them, but would snip securely by myself, knowing, that in any secret design, if many are concerned, their business cannot be long kept private. Wherein, by the way, I cannot but commend the craft and policy (though I absolutely disclaim

the actions) of modern padders, whose providence instructed them to rob singly, by which means their booty came to them entire without distribution, or if apprehended (as it was very rare) they knew how to make a better plea for themselves in a court of judicature. I now kept close to my business, not harbouring the least temptation to any extravagancy, and had sequestered myself from what might render me publicly notorious and only studied by what means I might raise my fortune, intending to build my future estate upon the ruin of other men. Having nothing of mine own but my late purchase at play, my only way was (as I thought by some success therein) to make the world believe I was really reformed, and so create to myself a credit, whereas I was only a devil converted to an angel of light, or a wolf in sheep's clothes.

Now did I begin to cant religiously, and not omit one Sabbath wherein I did not take sermon notes, judging this religious cloak to be the best expedient, to screw myself farther into my mistress's favour, who doted on Morning Exercises, and monthly Fasts. If my master had forgot to do the duty of the day I would with much respect put him in mind of the neglect, desiring that I might repeat what had been delivered. As they looked upon my conversion more miraculous than that of St. Paul, so they gave me the greatest encouragement lest like weak women, I might prove a back-slider. There were few private meetings my mistress heard of but, by the leave of my master, I must conduct her to them, which were as many portents of our private meetings afterwards, where Venus should appoint.

I am sorry that I am so uncharitable as to say that the zeal of her spirit was not so hot as that of her flesh. Every day I had some remark of her love, which I received with much submissive respects, pretending I understood not her meaning, which added but fuel to the blazing flame of love within her. I could not be ignorant that since she began to court me she would prosecute it to the end. Her courtship, methought, was very preposterous ; she might have first received the charge from me, and by that means she would have found me prepared, whereas otherwise she might have been deceived in her expectation.

My mistress gave me so many opportunities, and signified her desires by so many tokens and dumb expressions that I began to condemn my fears, which rendered me unworthy of her favours. The besieger deserves not the honour of possessing that city whose gates are freely opened to him, yet dares not enter. Whilst I was thus ruminating, my mistress came to the counting-house where I was writing ; and leaning upon my shoulder asked me what I was doing. I told her nothing but writing. 'Nothing, I believe,' said she, 'nor never will do anything, but draw up blanks,' and so abruptly left me. She knew the quickness

of my apprehension, and so left the interpretation hereof to my own construction.

Not long after, thinking her words had left a deep impression, as they did, and withal concluding I would give her the sense of them when I had an opportunity, she informs my master that she had a great desire to visit a gentlewoman she had not seen a long time, and requested that her man Thomas (for that was my name) might wait on her ; to which he assented. Though I led her, yet I wondered were she led me, through one street into another till we arrived at the water-side. She bid me call for a pair of oars, which I accordingly did. The watermen were very inquisitive, according to their custom, to know whither we intended. ' Well, well,' said she, ' put off and then it will be time enough for you to understand.' Said she, ' Row us up to Fox-hall.' I, for my part, was somewhat amazed, yet I partly guessed what she drove at. I kept at a distance, shewing her the respect of a servant ; which she taking notice of, laughed, saying, ' Come Cuz, why dost not sit nearer ? ' To which I replied as familiarly (for by this time I had much improved the stock of my confidence) ' I were best to sit a little nearer you, since I shall be the best expedient to balance the boat even, or trim it, for you are but light on your side.' This expression I doubt nettled her, for presently thereupon she shot a piercing dart from her eye (which I fancied to have penetrated my very soul). ' How now Cuz,' said she, ' I thought you had a better opinion of me. I understand the riddle. Your expressions may be very dark to some, however I have too much light in it.' I would have made an apology for myself but that she hindered me by whispering me in the ear, to this effect, that if she was light, there was no other cause but myself, and that if I abused her love any longer, she would sit the heavier on my skirts. Landing, we went straight to Spring Garden. By the way she told me I must lay aside all formality, and for the better carrying on the design we went upon she would have me as afore assume the title of Cuz. We were conducted into an obscure bower where, without a clue, it would be hard for any to find us. There was not anything wanting that might delight the appetite, which with much freedom we enjoyed together.

' Now,' said my mistress, ' I shall take off the veil of my modesty, and discover to thee the very naked secrets of my heart. The first time that ever I saw thee, I had more than a common respect to thee, and there was not a time since wherein I had the sight of thee, but that it added new fuel to the flame of my affection. I used all possible means to smother or blast it in the bud, but could not ; I summoned my reason to confute my passion, and notwithstanding I alleged that there was a disproportion in our age, and unsuitableness as to our condition, and lastly how great

a strain it would be to my religious profession ; yet love got the victory over these, and would have been too strong for ten times as many ; the rest she supplied with kisses, which were infinite.

Having gained a little breath, and she again having lent me the use and disposal of my own mouth, I returned to this her amorous oration, something suitable to it by way of retaliation ; protesting with invocations that since she had so completed my happiness by her love, I would perish before I would be guilty of the least abuse therein. That had it not been for the sense of my unworthiness, and fear of hazarding her love, and so gained her displeasure, no other difficulty should have deterred me from declaring and discovering what she had prevented me in ; adding, that were the quintessence of all loves contracted into one body, it could not equalize mine.

'Come,' said she, 'let us leave off talking in such idle phrases, let future constancy make apparent the reality of our affections, and let us not lose any time wherein we may mutually enjoy each other. It is but a folly for me now to mince the matter, or by my coldness endeavour to recongeal that water where the ice is too visibly broken and thawed. Yet let not your prudence be questioned, or reason forfeited, in making any unhandsome advantage of this my freedom. But above all, blast not my reputation by the unsavoury breath of any ostentatious boasting of a gentlewoman's favours, nor let not my love cause any slighting or disrespect in you to your master ; neither let it so puff you up with pride as to contemn your fellow-servants. In company, shew much more reverence to me than formerly. In private, when none sees us but ourselves, be as familiar and free as actions can demonstrate. Be constant to me alone, for true love will not admit of plurality. Be secret and silent, and follow not the common practice of vain-glorious fools that in requital of those favours they have received in private of some credulous female, will make their brag of them in public ; as if it were not enough for them to rob them of their chastity but must likewise murder their reputations. Have a special care you slight me not (as some squeamish or curious stomachs use feeding too long on one sort of food, though never so delicious), for a woman's love despised will turn into extreme hatred, and will be ever restless till malice and revenge have consulted with invention how to be more than even with the slighting injurer.' She propounded more articles, which I have forgot now, but I remember I sealed them without a witness. We made an end of our business for that time, with much expedition, to the intent the tediousness of our staying might not be suspected by the ignorant cuckold at home. I have reason now for so calling him.

Coming home, I applied myself to the business of the shop as before,

enjoining my eyes a severe penance not so much as to look towards that object they so dearly loved. According to my usual time I went to bed, but sleep I could not, for thinking on what I had done. About one o'clock I was much startled to hear something come into my chamber ; but before I could give my eyes the liberty for a discovery my mistress had gotten within the sheets, not daring to speak, because my master lay in the next room, most commonly by himself, and her chamber was the next to that (and in a trundle-bed underneath my mistress's bed lay the maid). Near upon day-break my sweet bedfellow left me ; at an unhappy time, for then was my master awake, which might have ruined us both, which had so fallen out had he been resolute or courageous. But on the contrary, he was exceeding timorous, but more especially, childishly afraid of the supposed walking of spirits. For hearing the boards crack twice or thrice, with the weight of her body ; besides, by the help of starlight, perceiving something to move all in white, he shrunk underneath the clothes, not daring to put out his head. Now did his imagination work as strongly almost as his breech, suggesting strange and ridiculous things to his fancy. But I shall give him leave to tell his own story.

A little after it was day, being almost stifled for want of fresh air, and choked with the stink that was in the bed, he boldly and valiantly put his head out of the coverlid, and after he had thrice exorcised the devil, or the supposed evil spirit, with ' avoid Satan,' repeating as often that Scriptural Sentence, '*Resist the Devil and he will fly from thee,*' he called out as loud as he might for me to come to him. I leapt out of bed, and ran to him, asking him what was the matter. ' O Thomas,' said he, ' light a candle quickly.' I running in haste to light the candle, fell (by mistaking the first step) down the stairs, which made a terrible noise. My master hearing me, cried out, ' O God, what will become of me ? ' thinking the Devil indeed had mistook me for himself, and that he was horsing me on his back to carry me away. With that he fell to prayer so fervently loud that up starts the mistress and the maids, running to know what was the matter. Fear had so possessed him that he could not be persuaded but that they were some of the devilish crew.

At first they thought him to be fallen mad ; but finding out the cause of this distraction, with much ado my mistress made him sensible of his mistake. Being fully assured, that they were not damned spirits, he related what he had seen, in this manner. My mistress afterwards told me that had it not been for laughing, which so busied her that her sense of smelling for that time had left her, she could never have endured to hear him out, for that notorious stink which came from the bed, when he stirred ever so little.

' I wondered,' said he, ' that contrary to my usual custom I awaked

about four o'clock, whereas I used to sleep soundly, thou knowest, till eight. I hearkened ; at first I perceived only the boards to crack, but presently after I heard chains rattle, and the stools flung about the room, the bed, and I in it, danced up and down, as if a Scotch bag-pipe had been played upon by a Northern witch, and the Devil the while had danced with me and the bed a morrice (supplying the bellows with wind). Sometimes they pulled me out of bed, and laid me on the cold floor, and then tossed me in again like a dog in a blanket.

' Hearing no noise, I attempted to peep out ; but scarcely had mine eyes recovered the top of the bedclothes, when I saw standing by me, a composition of mere bones, with a shroud thrown over his shoulders, like an Irish brachin, or a Scotch plaid, with a light taper in one hand (I knew not what use he could make of it, for there were only holes in his head instead of eyes) and an hour-glass in the other. He grinned at me with his teeth (for he had no lips), and shaking his chains left me, which sight so terrified me that I had like to have shot out (like a pudding in a bag) all that was within me.' My mistress had like to have broken out into extreme laughter, had not the consideration of danger that might have ensued thereon hindered her.

After this, it was a long time before he would be persuaded to lie in that chamber again, which made me curse his strong conceit, for by this means he would lie with his wife, which interrupted our sweet venereal pastime. As for my part, I believed he would never have returned to his own chamber again, for he trembled when he passed through it in the day time ; and if alone, he would so thunder down the stairs (fear giving wings to his feet) as if (Vulcan-like) he had been sent by Jupiter head-long in a message.

Another accident happening not long after cured him in part of his ridiculous belief, grounded on nothing else but fancy. In the cellar, on a certain beam that went cross, there were great quantity of tenter-hooks placed there, some to hang meat on, others of a smaller sort for other uses. Our cat being somewhat ravenous, was following the scent, and had gotten upon the beam ; her foremost feet slipping, she was strangely caught by the tail, and not able to recover herself. Being terribly pained by the hook, she made a most hideous noise, which made our dog fall a-howling. This strange din first approached my master's ears, who awaking my mistress, asked her now whether she would believe her own ears. At first she confessed to me she knew not what to think, her conscience being yet tender (which having no long time accustomed herself to sin was not hardened and seared up) put her in mind of what she had lately committed, so that she had like to have concluded that it was Satan was sent to buffet her. But she having a martial spirit, and

not easily daunted, she hearkened further, and then judged that thieves had broken into the house.

My master all this while was breathing his last at both ends, whilst my mistress leaped out of bed, and came to my chamber door, bidding me in all haste to rise, for there were thieves in the house. I confess I had no great mind to be killed, and therefore I was in no great haste to rise, sometimes buttoning my doublet, and anon unbuttoning it again. Perceiving that I delayed, she came again, taxing me with cowardice, and meanness of spirit, which put new life into me, making me to resolve to adventure my life, rather than hazard the loss of her good opinion.

Finding my mistress in her smock, I thought it a shame for me to have any clothes on ; and so naked as I was, we marched on. Coming to the stairhead my fancy troubled me a little too, for the noise had so amazed me that I would fain have my mistress to go first. She could not forbear laughing, to observe how complimentary and ceremonious at that time I was. Having scattered my fear by resolution, ‘ How do I abuse myself,’ said I, and with that boldly went on.

By this time a light was produced, and then those bug-bear thoughts which darkness possesseth the fancy withal, began to vanish. There was not a hole big enough to contain a man, but what I probed. Descending the cellar-stairs, I there plainly saw the original cause of our fear and distraction, hanging by the tail. I called my mistress to the sight, and now the maids too would be spectators, understanding the danger to be overpast.

Well, the general vote was that the cat should be carried upstairs to our master, to shew him the wound in his tail, for evidence to prove his guilt in being seduced by fancy.

He hearing some come up, thought we were all destroyed, and that they were coming up to dispatch him too. Wherefore he cried out, ‘ Save my life, and take all I have.’ His wife (not to increase his perplexity) bid him quiet himself, there was no harm, not any like to be done ; and withal so convinced him of his folly, both past and present, that he had not a word to say in his own defence ; he enjoining us all silence, we were dismissed.

The next night, to shew how much he was altered from his former temper and belief, he did lie in his chamber aforesaid, supposedly haunted, and that same night with much joy, my mistress and I renewed our pleasures.

## CHAPTER XVIII

*How his mistress supplied him with money, even to superfluity : what ways he had to spend it : he is tempted to destruction by correctors, alias clippers, and coiners alias matter-men*

I FOUND my estate to increase abundantly, for I was half sharer myself with my master ; my mistress she put in for one too, which I had likewise ; so that the good man received but the fourth. I had been (since my return) very sparing in my expense, having laid up my money securely. But now finding out another rich mine, I thought I should be too rich, unless I contrived ways to draw out, as well as put in.

In the first place, I thought good to buy a brace of good geldings, for by that means I could meet whom I pleased, though a dozen or sixteen miles distance, and so by the quickness of return come home undiscovered. If occasion should serve, they might very well serve for the High Pad. These I bought, and where they stood I had four or five several suits, either to ride withal (using variety that I might pass *incognito*), or to wear when I did intend to appear splendidly to peculiar friends ; and then the prodigal himself did not spend his money more profusely than myself.

I judge it unnecessary to relate how, and in what manner I disbursed great sums, since there are few that are addicted to pleasure and have money, but know how to lay it out to the satisfaction of their desires, that is, to please all their senses. My mistress seldom saw a piece of gold in her husband's hands, or some large and great piece of silver, but she would be begging it of him, for no other intents but to give it me ; which she took delight in, withal, knowing that frequent presents very much engage the affection.

My master seldom denied her (for like a cuckold he doted on his wife), but if he did, she would take pet, and would not eat, have the forehead bound down with a cross-cloth, look pitifully, and the like. If he asked her what she ailed, or what she was troubled at, she would say, 'At nothing more than your unkindness,' and then weep bitterly. For, like a right hypocrite, she had tears at command. The dotard would melt too, sometimes the great calf crying and sobbing, like a child that hath lost his bread and butter. Then to make his atonement, he must procure her two or three pieces, if he hath them not in the house ; otherwise it shall cost him as much more wealth on the doctor, of whom she would often pretend to take physic, but it should be only

rich cordials, strengthening jellies, with such like provocations to venery.

For my own part, I was not idle in the mean time, laying up like the careful bee for winter. We returned great sums of money every day, which an acquaintance of mine knew very well ; and he being daily in the company of a fellow, who was both coiner and clipper, it seems a decayed goldsmith, undone by the study of chemistry, but now lived by some particular part thereof, as the transmutation of metal, or so forth.

This man he informs that he knew a young cashier that he thought he could work to their purpose, who was very well qualified for it. An appointed time for meeting was agreed upon between them, which was made known to me. I thought of no other design but to be merry. Being met, we drank stiffly, but ever and anon the stranger would beseech me to favour him with my future acquaintance, that he should think himself very happy if I would admit him into a familiarity. I could do no less than promise so much, and so, laying aside ceremonies, we entered into a very familiar discourse. But for that night there was nothing propounded, neither was it thought convenient. Several times we met (not without great expense), so that now we were grown intimately acquainted. Our discourse happened on a time to be about chemistry ; I was forced to be mute, as not understanding anything thereof ; yet I could not but admire to hear my new friend relate what admirable rarities he could perform in that mysterious art, and thereupon shewed me a piece of gold, demanding my opinion what I thought of it. I told him I could judge no less but that it was what it seemed to be. He smilingly replied, ‘ No wonder that this should deceive you, since it will do the like to the most critical goldsmith about the Town. No doubt,’ said he, ‘ you have heard of the Philosopher’s Stone, and what vast estates some have misspent in the search thereof, how ineffectual the labour of such hath been the miserableness of their condition makes apparent. Others, and not a few, have pretended they have obtained the mastery thereof for no other intent than to delude some wealthy credulous person, making some ridiculous experiments to confirm his belief, and at last extract him to the very lees of his estate. I shall not deludingly pretend to anything but what I will perform, which your own eyes shall attest.’

Hereupon he shewed me various pieces, both gold and silver, ‘ which are the effects,’ said he, ‘ of my own labour and pains, employed in an art I have found out by the curious search and industry of my brain, with which I can convert copper into that metal which current money is composed of, either of which, according to the tincture I shall give it. And to be plainer with you ; out of that great love I have borne

ever since I first saw you, and that my actions shall make it apparent, see here this piece. According to the term of art given, it is called a black dog, with Queen Elizabeth's head thereon, which is only pewter double-washed. This here is a George plateroon, being all copper within, and only a thin plate about it. Another called compositum, which is a mixed metal, and will both touch and cut, but will not endure the fiery test.' He gave me the sight, likewise, of pieces-of-eight, half pieces and quarter pieces. 'Then again,' said he, 'our own coin we usually call English cloth, the other Spanish ; the prices whereof are several, according to their goodness and fineness. The best you may have for 15 sh. the yard, *i.e.* five shillings in the pound profit ; the worser for eight, ten, or more. Now to the intent that I may complete your happiness here, if enjoyment of wealth will do it, I would advise you to take some of every sort, and so mingle it with the rest of your good cash, proportionably to the sum. Let me add one thing more ; if any large money comes to your hand, lay it aside for me, which after I have corrected a little (for broad brimmed hats are not now in fashion), I will return it, allowing you 18 pence per pound interest.'

I gave him all this while great attention, without the least interruption ; but he here making a stop, I thought he expected my replication ; which was to this effect, That I thanked him cordially for his respects, which I believed were real, having used that freedom with me ; that I did not in the least question the greatness of profit that would redound by the acceptance of his profer ; but it being a matter of the greatest consequence, and highest concern, I desired I might have some time for consideration. This answer made him look blank, fearing lest I made a demur only to betray him, so that I saw by his countenance he wished he had been more sparing in his expressions. I must needs confess, I trembled all the time I was in his company, wherefore I made all the haste I could to be gone, giving him to understand that after serious consultation with myself, I would send him an answer by my friend, and so I took my leave of him. The whole night following I spent in weighing his proposals in the balance of profit and preservation. I quickly found that life's preservation outweighed all other interest, and that honour, riches, and pleasure would avail little to that man that was riding post to the gallows. Besides, how could I expect to escape better than others, who were frequently made wretched spectacles of rash imprudence and folly, who, having forfeited the king's high and just displeasure, did usually betray their own selves to the severity of the law, which hath as little commiseration on such as on the worst of offenders ? Though I had committed several things that might come within the verge of an indictment, yet I always shunned such actions as

bore the inscription in their front, *Memento mori*. To be as good as my promise, I sent my chemist these consequent lines :

SIR,

You seemingly do proffer fair, but know,  
Hanging attends such kindnesses you shew.  
The hope of profit tempts me ; loss of life  
O'erpow'r's persuasions, and so ends the strife.  
Had I two lives, my deeds should make it known,  
How little I would care to hazard one ;  
But having solely one, I will not try  
Its loss ; *as yet I have no mind to die.*  
Should we proceed then, and be taken in it ;  
Death and damnation seize us in a minute.  
Cease then, and let your fancy's suit with mine,  
We'll plot no *treason*, but to get good *wine* :  
That being had, let each man's *face* declare  
*Th' Indian mines* not so rich as ours are.  
If we want coin, the best way, I suppose,  
Is to transmute the *metal* of my *nose*.

I never received any answer to what I wrote, neither did I ever see my new friend after, which was according to my own desire ; but I heard of his sad destiny, whereof I should have participated had I listed myself in that mettle-simulating regiment. Some were found out operating in the obscurest thickets of woods ; others were detected clipping in dark concaves on Blackheath, and their ringleader discovered in his own house, in a deep vault befitting his purpose ; who, though he had timely notice to remove his tools, yet, by his seizers they were found hid in a chimney-mantletree, hollowed to that intent, with a shutter at the end. After the dismal catastrophe of these hazardous fools, I had like to have been put to a great trouble, though not in the least guilty of the accusation. Thus it was ; an indigent hanger-on, having taken notice of my being once or twice in the company of the chief of those lately executed, came to me one evening, and requested some private discourse. I consented. Being together (laying aside several formalities that ushered in his discourse) he told me that I was taken notice of as a notorious disperser of counterfeit money, and that there was a warrant out to apprehend me, and that out of pure love to a man so young and fairly promising as myself, he thought himself bound in duty to preserve, if he could, by giving timely notice, to shun that which, if neglected, might prove destructive. I immediately saw the rogue peep through the vizard of dissimulation, and therefore instead of giving thanks I gave him a blow over both the eyes, to the intent he should not see how I would beat him, which was in such a manner that he could

not see himself for three days afterward. This fellow, I understood, to be a dun for the prisoners of their confederates abroad ; and if they would not continually let down their milk, impeach them, and were often condemned.

## CHAPTER XIX

*He breaketh his master (by the help of his mistress) and so sets up for himself with that money he had unlawfully gotten in his apprenticeship, and credit besides : what a trick he served his master at last : his master and mistress soon after died*

BUT to proceed ; now I had served my time, and was accordingly made free ; but was solicited by my master to stay some longer time as a journeyman, which I consented to, knowing it could not be long : for we had so purloined from him that it was impossible for him to subsist any longer. His creditors visited him daily, so that now his whole time was taken up in studying fair promising words to satisfy them for the present, and tell them when they should come again. My master perceiving the danger he was in, would neither stir abroad, no, not so much as come into the shop. He now standing upon the brow of a very high hill, and being forced to descend, I resolved to save him the labour, and so threw him down headlong.

By this time I had conveyed away a sufficient quantity of his goods, intending them for my own use ; and stowed them in a warehouse which I had lately taken privately for my purpose. My master one night told me his intended design, that he was resolved to pack up all his goods, and to gather in what moneys he could, and so take his wife with him for Ireland. I thought I should have died at first when I heard him talk of carrying his wife with him, and could not forbear dropping some tears ; which he perceiving, his trickled down his cheeks to bear mine company. ‘ Well now,’ said he, ‘ I see thou lovest me too, as well as thou hast hitherto proved faithful. But the dearest friends must part ’ (and with that he wept again like a child) ‘ however my comfort is, I hope we shall see each other in Heaven.’ I thought with myself, I had rather see him in the Compter. And from that minute I contrived how I might effect it ; for at that time I should never have been able to have brooked a separation between my mistress and self, especially at so great distance.

She and I often consulted what to do. Sometimes we were in the mind to take what money the old fool had, and so run away together, with many stratagems which we propounded ; but were rejected as no

ways expedient nor convenient. At last I resolved on this, that she should acquaint herself of the exact time and way he intended to go, and so inform me thereof. I received information, a short time after, that before break of day, at such a time he would take horse at Islington, and so for Winchester. I immediately sent away word to one of his chiefest creditors, making known to him the sum and substance of everything, and that if ever he expected to receive what was due to him, he must at such a time have officers ready to waylay him, in order to his arrest. This was punctually done according to what instructions I sent him in a letter, without a name subscribed thereunto. He had not been long in custody before I was sent for, to advise with him what was best to be done in this his great extremity and perplexity. I could do no less than seemingly condole his misfortunes, and withal seemed to be very active as to his assistance, running up and down to his creditors to bring them to a compliance ; but he had been better to have sent some person else as solicitor in his business, for by my means I made his wound incurable. Seeing there was no remedy but patiently to endure his inevitable imprisonment, he got an horse (as some men term it) *alias a Duce facies*, and so removed himself to Ludgate, where he had not been long ere he died for grief.

In the meantime my mistress had secured what he had, which I enjoyed. I had now a house and shop of mine own, very well furnished ; but withal I was grown so deboist and profusively lavish that I seldom was at home but at night, and then in bed with my mistress, who was very importunate with me to marry her. I confess I loved her entirely as my mistress or whore, but I hated her as my wife, knowing very well that if she would be an whore to me, and have an husband, she would be so to another when I was in the former's place. She now found herself with child ; whereupon (taking upon her my duty) she daily pressed me to save her credit. But I delayed, putting her off continually with specious pretences, which her love and facileness easily swallowed. The time of her delivery approaching, I went down into the country with her ; and because it was at hand, I stayed to see the event. Within a short while she fell in labour, because we were known for no other than man and wife when her throws came upon her, she would not let me stir out of the room. Her pain growing intolerable, she called me hastily to her, and getting my hand within hers, ' Farewell,' said she, ' I die for thee. Thy last unkindness in not performing thy promise, and not returning love answerable to mine, hath untimely yielded my days.' With that she groaned, and then using her former expressions, cried out, ' Love my memory, however, since I die for thee.' She uttered not one word afterwards, being as good as her word. The good women looked

strangely on me, every one passing their verdict, and all concluding her none of my wife. The first Christians under the great persecution, suffered not in 500 years so many several ways as I did in five hours, by people's tongues. I must needs say, I took it very much to heart that report, which made Richard the Second alive so often after he was dead, should kill me as often whilst alive. Desiring them at last to waive their censures (which they expressed publicly) I entreated them with all the rhetoric I could produce to endeavour the reviving of my wife, which if past recovery, to use means to preserve the child. In a short time they told me that was dead likewise. At first I shewed much grief, which was unfeigned, being not so much afflicted for the loss of her as affected with those words she uttered when she breathed her last. I was too conscious of my own guilt, and therefore they made the deeper impression in my very soul.

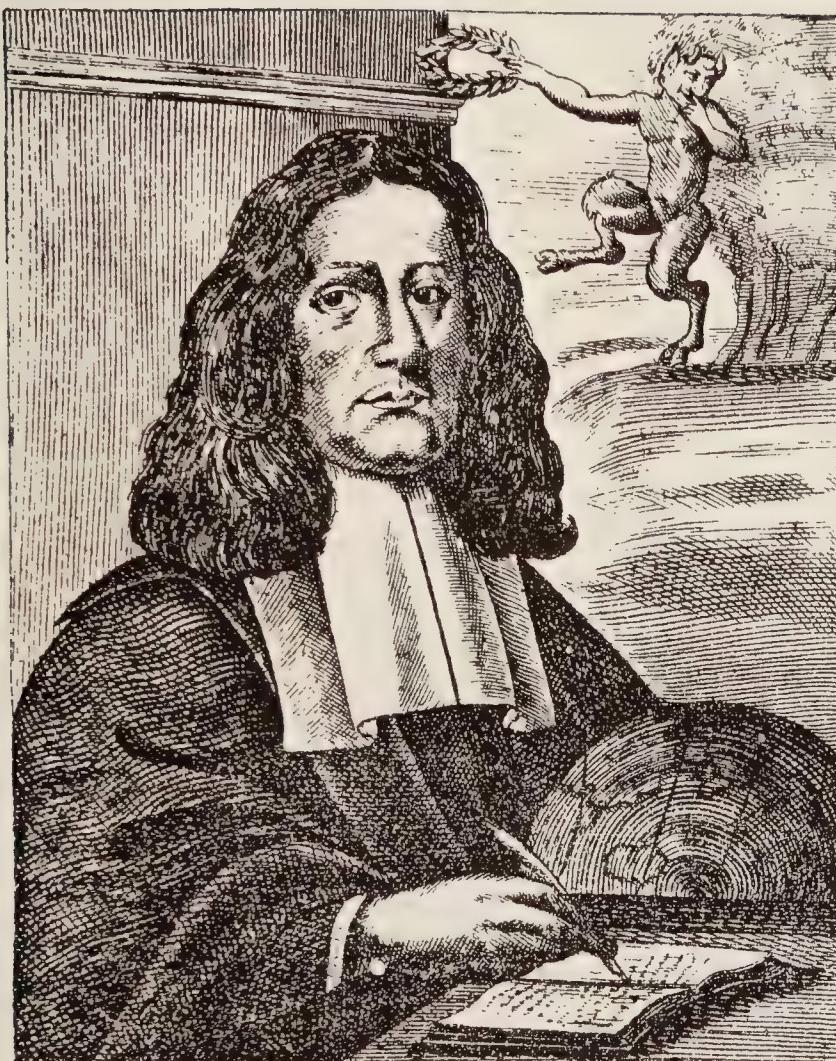
But all these perturbations of mind I dissipated with a glass or two of canary, which was the common antidote I used against care, sorrow, and vexation, &c. I now provided things necessary for her funeral, which were not vulgar ; which I might the better do, having made myself her executor before, taking all she had into my custody. In memorial of her, and her fidelity, I wrote this epitaph on her tombstone.

Women, they say, will *lie*, but now I see  
 'Tis false, to th' last she spake the *truth* to me.  
 'Farewell,' said she, 'I thought my grief t'have hid,  
*I die for love of thee*, . . . and so she did.  
 Here with her lies her child, that strove in vain  
 To untomb itself, to be entomb'd again.  
 But rest my babe, thy cares with life are gone,  
*Thou'l rise again*, though now a setting sun.  
 Though wonders cease, thy mother's death doth prove  
 They may revive, for she did *die for love*.

## CHAPTER XX

*His credit becomes suspected by his exorbitant manner of living in drinking, whoring, gaming, &c. : he thinks to solder up that crack by marriage : he is deceived both in person and portion*

RETURNING to my own habitation, I found that my so long absence had raised a suspicion in my neighbours' breasts that I was run away ; which rested not there, but spread like a canker, so that this flying report came to some of my creditors' ears, which made them



The Globe's thy Studye; for thy boundless mind  
In a less limit cannot be confind.

Gazing, I here admire: thy very lookes  
Show thou art read as well in men, as bookeſ.  
He that ſhall Scann thy face, may judge by it,  
Thou haſt an Head peece that is throngd with  
T. F.



both impatient and importunate with me for their moneys. I wondered whence proceeded their unexpected haste. Some that would not be put off with promises, I was forced to pay ; from others I obtained a little longer forbearance, which gave me but liberty to prosecute my former courses. If I was at the tavern, I was either drunk, engaged in a quarrel, and so involved in blood ; or else at play, if not at a bawdy-house, which places I could not refrain from frequenting, though I kept one of my own at home. For I would not entertain a maid but what was more than ordinarily handsome, whom I commonly vitiated either by presents, or promises if I got them with child. When I was weary of one, I paid her off, with some additions to her wages, and entertained another, who would in a short time be wrought upon as well as her predecessor ; being ambitious to lie with her master, and vainly hoping that to be the first step to her preferment, thinking of nothing but marrying, and so being mistress. In three years that I lived as a master I had nine illegitimates which I knew, four whereof were begotten of my maids, which put me to a vast expense. Two of the mothers would have forced me to have married them, or allowed them competent maintenance (for they were subtle cunning baggages) had I not by a wile got them aboard a vessel bound for Virginia, and never heard of them since. Besides two of three terrible claps, which cost me a considerable sum in their cure. This distemper, as it caused a consumption in my pocket, so it impaired my wonted strength, and almost spoiled my natural talent :

For now it is much like Paul's Steeple turn'd  
A stately thing before the top was burn'd.

I now began to be sensible of my folly, and so resolved to take up in time, and redeem by degrees my lost credit by a temperate sober life. But I found I had wasted myself extremely, by which means I became less capable of reacting what I had before done, and my mind in a manner satiated, I question whether I should have had now such penitent thoughts. For a while I kept my shop diligently and constantly ; I would not drink with any but at home ; my sudden alteration made people admire, and the suddenness of my reformation was the common discourse of all my neighbours. The parson of our parish hearing of my strange alteration, came to me, which I admired at ; for before, he that had the least care or respect of his reputation would avoid all occasions of being seen in my company, lest they might be suspected extravagant and deboist.

*Pares cum paribus facsimile congregantur.*  
Birds of a feather will flock together.

The shortness of his hair declared him a member of the Circumcision, but his triple cap, or three caps on his head, shewed, though he hated the very name of Rome or Babylon, yet he loved formerly a whore in private, though common. His cloak was faced down with zeal before, and his band appeared but as a broad hem, to shew that a hem, with two or three formal spits, or a feigned cough, was the usual supply of his discourse, when he had thrashed himself in his cloak out of breath in the pulpit. His looks resembled the bleer-eyed printing at Geneva and his face like that sort of ragged paper on which they work off their impressions. After he had set his face into a platform, he delivered himself. I shall not relate exactly his canting words, or what he borrowed from Scripture, being sensible, *non est tutum ludere cum sacris*, but give you the substance, which was first a reproof for my extravagancies : secondly, some general instructions (picked out of a common-place book) for my future practice : and lastly, some encouragements drawn from various motives to proceed (without looking back) toward a good life : on which three points he ran divisions strangely till dinner-time, and then his stomach petitioned him to shut his mouth, lest it should be deprived of its appetite by receiving in too much air.

In this seeming strictness of life I lived two or three months, and now some began to have charitable thoughts of my soul : and that I might regain my runnings out by future diligence and industry.

I had several matches offered me, which I saw, but liked them not ; for I had always been a general lover, and could not now come to particulars. At last it was my misfortune to see one whom I was wished to ; and which at first sight robbed me at once, both of myself and good company.

Formerly I was pleasing and affable, desirous and desired of good society, but never lived till now an anchorite on earth. Neither did I ever, till now, tie up mine eyes to one particular face, giving them free liberty to wander. But now at last I fell from my primitive liberty, losing it totally, by dotage on a creature, and that a woman, too : a just judgment on me for my manifold sins, to throw this thing in my way for me to stumble at. And it will appear in its due place that she was a bowed token of my Maker's displeasure sent me, for she was crooked.

## CHAPTER XXI

*How he was married, and what kind of thing was his wife*

I MADE strict enquiry after the condition of my intended wife's parents, and found by report they were very wealthy. In a short time we had conference together about the portion, and my estate, and therein we were all satisfied. My courtship was very noble, yet not prodigal, for fear of giving offence ; and in a little while we were married. By her looks I thought her so modest that an unchaste thought durst not enter into her head, since all immodest expressions she banished from her ears.

The first night I thought to have had the first taste, but my experience told me the Tarriers had been there before. This struck me into an amazement that there should appear such virgin whiteness, and the extract of innocence in her face, yet be guilty of a crime so notorious. Much perplexed I was, but durst not vent myself what was more than bare suspicion. In one half year's time what I intended to conceal could be hid no longer, being brought to bed three months before her time ; and yet the bawd her midwife would make me believe this was usual ; and that children brought forth at six months might live.

Now began our domestic Civil Wars, which was carried on with such fury between us that there was hardly a utensil in the kitchin that could rest in quiet from flying about our ears continually. My wife acted the *Silent Woman* to the life, whilst in a single state ; for before we were married all her answers were very short, comprehended within the two monosyllables of Aye, and No ; and those two must be forcibly extracted from her. But now her tongue wagged in a perpetual motion, and her voice so shrill and loud that it would be heard distinctly, though a piece of ordnance were discharged near her at the same time, or standing at the bell-room door whilst the bells were ringing. Frequent were her complaints to her father and mother, which alienated their affection from me, so that their only study was how to be rid of me. Her forgeries (to excuse her own devilry) had so instigated them that they sought my ruin by all ways imaginable. Besides, they laid an embargo on the rest of my wife's portion unpaid ; advising her withal to secure what she could, for her own self-preservation. She followed their instructions so exactly that in a short time I found myself in a very declining condition, yet knew not the cause, till it was too late, conveying away both my goods and money, some whereof went to supply the necessities of her stallion.

I was all along suspicious of this, though I could not conclude her altogether so culpable. But my doubts and fears which of all are the

sharpest passions, could not turn this distemper into a disease (although they looked through false optics, making things appear like evening shadows, disproportional to the truth, and strangely longer than the true substance) till knowledge hereof (confirmed me by the witnesses of my eyes) had banished bare suspicion.

Which was thus : One night I caused myself to be brought home by a porter as dead drunk ; my wife received me in that condition (I perceived by peeping out of my eyelids) with much satisfaction, and I was immediately carried up to bed. With much difficulty they undressed me, pretending myself asleep all this while, and so they left me. It seems by the story that my wife sent away the maid (which was her pimp) to her friend to come at such an hour. About nine of the clock the maid was posted to bed ; and about ten I heard one small knock at the door. He needed not to knock there any longer, for there was one below that was ready to receive him. When I judged they were encircled in each other's arms (which I understood by hearkening at the bottom of the stairs, and thereby knew whereabout they were), I ran in upon them with my sword (which I had prepared ready) and thinking to have run them through the body, intending to make a passage for their souls' escape, I passed my sword through the fleshy part of both their thighs. At which they made a most hideous outcry, so that the maid came running down : and a watchman that stood just at my door hearing the noise, knocked at the door to know what was the matter. The maid apprehending the danger, let him in, who by the help of his candle never saw so strange a sight ; for I had so pinned them together that they could not stir. As well as they could speak, they both begged their pardon for their lives only, which I granted, as looking on my revenge somewhat satisfied.

My gentleman I dismissed, but as for his mistress I was forced to send for a chirurgeon, whose wound needed no probing, but tenting, for it was through and through. There was no concealing of what was done ; wherefore in the morning early I acquainted her parents with what had happened last night, insisting further, that since she had instead of putting off handsomely the chain of matrimony, rudely broke it, it should be her own damage ; neither would I be at the cost of a visitation to repair the breach. To which I added, that had I denied her things requisite and necessary, or not performed duly my duty, she might have had some pretence for her slighting me, and look upon me only as a false crow set up in a garden to keep others from the fruit it cannot taste itself. But since it was otherwise, and that she had nothing to object against me but only sometimes curbing her inordinate desires ; I wished them to save me the labour of having the law to tear her from me, but that they would remove her elsewhere.

They replied but little, hastening to their daughter ; and fearing worse mischief might ensue, they instantly conveyed her into the country. She had not remained there long before she was cured, and not enduring to be confined to solitariness, repaired again to the city, where now she lives, as such do that keep civet-cats ; but I hear she is very reserved to all but such she knows she may entrust herself with. But let her go with these lines pinned to her back.

There never yet was woman made,  
Nor shall, but to be curst ;  
And oh ! that I (fond I) should first  
Of any lover  
This truth at my own charge to other fools discover.

Ye that have promis'd to yourselves  
Propriety in love ;  
Know women's hearts like straws do move,  
And what we call  
Their sympathy, is but love to men in general.

All mankind are alike to them ;  
And though we iron find  
That never with the loadstone joined,  
'Tis not the iron's fault,  
It is because the loadstone yet was never brought.

If where a gentle bee hath fallen  
And laboured to his power,  
A new succeeds not to that flower,  
But passeth by  
'Tis to be thought the gallant elsewhere loads his thigh.

For still the flowers ready stand ;  
One buzzes round about,  
One lights, one tastes, gets in, gets out.  
All always use them,  
Till all their sweets are gone, and all again refuse them.

However, I must confess my own faults as well as condemn others ; which was, I was too inquisitive after that which the more I knew would the more disturb me. Of all things the less we know, the better. Curiosity in this renders a man as ridiculous a coxcomb, as that cuckold Sir John Suckling mentioneth, who made diligent enquiry whether he was made in a bed, or on a couch, and whether his duty-officiating cavalier pulled off his spurs first or not, &c.

Well, it was my hard fate to marry thus like one doomed to prison, who expecting to lie in a private room, is confined to the hole. Had I married the best, I believe I should have found myself in the stocks. 'Tis strange that I, of all men, should be deceived by this thing that was like a box bearing drugs not suitable to the inscription. Had not my passion hung in my eyes, when I looked into her disposition and carriage, I might have easily understood that her behaviour in the presence of me was only like action on a public stage, and that the evil of her natural inclinations were hid from me under the veil of silence and seeming modesty. And, indeed, my palate was bed-ridden, and so scarce sensible of sauce, much less of meat. But since I have had such ill-luck in marriage, which some vainly and falsely account a merry-age, I shall in the ensuing discourse give you some instruction or advice as landmarks. For having split upon this rock, I may the better be a pilot to another that would sail this way.

## CHAPTER XXII

*Some observations concerning love and women, selected out of the choicest commentators on their nature, together with his own experimental reflections*

LOVE, 'tis confessed is a natural distemper, a kind of small-pox ; most have either had it, or is to expect it, and the sooner the better. Surely I was never well cured on't, or else I had not thus fallen in a relapse. Want of knowledge misguided me at first, and so I fell into a quagmire ; but I knew not what possessed me to ride afterward into another on purpose. Love-seeds, when it grows up to matrimony, is good for nothing, like some fruit-trees which must be transplanted before they will bring forth anything. And when love in this nature doth feed, the increase thereof is dissatisfaction, sorrow and vexation multiplied. This afore-mentioned is not truly love but lust ; for I cannot believe that that noble passion can be the ruin of its subject ; neither would I have it disparaged by so unworthy an object as a woman. If there be love, it should be to Heaven, a male friend, relations, or our country's preservation, and not to a female piece of imperfection. And yet nothing will serve the turn, but monopolizing it by marriage, because we would make it surely our own, and nevertheless our own till then. For if she be young, she is like an hawk upon her wing ; and if she be handsome, she is the more subject to go out at check. Faulkners that can but seldom

spring right game, should still have something to take them down. The lure to which all stoop in this world, is either garnished with profit or pleasure, and when you cannot throw her the one, you must be content to shew out the other.

Consider again that woman (besides the trouble) is a rent-charge, which though the curiosity of man hath often enclosed, yet he cannot for his life stop so well one gap, but it will lie open for any straggler ; by which means it seldom improves or becomes fruitful. And why should a woman be denied the liberty of breaking a pane in her own window, or not admitted the freedom of regress to her own sally-port, letting in whom she esteems as friends ? If you will not give them the permission, you must be forced to wink when they take it, or do worse : cross them, and they will endeavour the not leaving a cross in your pocket. Take it which way you will, marriage is the dearest way of curing love. Faring with such, as it doth with those for the most part that at great charges wall in grounds and plant, who cheaper might have eaten melons elsewhere, than cucumbers in their own garden. Besides, it is a gross piece of ignorance to be bound up to love for an age, when the cause of love may perish for a month, and then the effect will follow. If it be Nature's paint in the face, that doth induce you, those beautiful flowers of red and white, a disease will quickly wither ; if not, ravishing Time will deflower the choicest beauty.

But the ill consequences of marriage are more to be considered, which are commonly drawn from the evil inclinations of that sex. Eve by stumbling at the Serpent's solicitations cast her husband out of paradise ; nor are her daughters surer of foot, being foundered by the heat of lust and pride. It were something if marriage could answer the expectation of all she boasts the cure of ; for instead of quenching the hot coals of concupiscence, it aggravates the simple sin of fornication, making it sprout into adultery. What might be said more as to this subject, I shall refer the reader to the writings of that ingenious gentleman Mr Francis Osborne. If any more (like boys stripped and stand shivering about the brink) are ready to leap into love's whirl-pit, and so endanger the loss of themselves, let them first look upon love to be an idle fancy, and wedlock a dangerous consequence. If I could persuade you from loving, one would think the other then would be disregarded, but some to their cost can speak the contrary.

In the first place, marry none but whom you love : for he that marries where he doth not love, will love where he did not marry. If you are prone to love one particular person, some are of opinion that travel is an excellent remedy ; for absence doth in a kind remove the cause, removing the object. Others think that frequent visits (whereas the rarity of them

endears the affection) may by a surprizal discover some defects, which though they cure not absolutely, yet they qualify the vehement heat of an amorous fever, and as near as can be, let it be unseasonably, either when she is in sickness or disorder, by that a man may know she is but mortal, and but a woman ; the last would be enough to a wise man for an antidote. Enter into discourse with her of things she daily hears not, and it will confirm the cure. Neither will it be amiss to contrive yourself into the company of variety, especially such beauties which are generally cried up ; and if you can, taste them all (but now I think on't, it is no matter, one is sufficient for a surfeit), for this malady is better remedied this way, than by abstinence ; good jovial company will much conduce to the cure.

But I like not the prescription of marriage, since it is the last and most dangerous receipt ; like a kind of live pigeon applied to the soles of the feet, which remedy to say truth, is worse than the disease. Were it possible for a woman to be constant to one, something might be said, but I never yet tried any which did not very much shew their displeasures when offered some kindness, but never found any to refuse them, if opportunity and privacy of place admitted their reception ; which hath made me often in my own thoughts question my mother's honesty and fidelity to my father.

What I now utter is not derived from prejudice to that sex, grounded on my own wife's disloyalty ; but experience tells me this, which most past sixteen very well understand, that there are few women, let them pretend what they please, but will yield to the temptations of the flesh, and so much the sooner by how much she professeth some new light, which is *Ignis fatuus* that leads them into the quagmires of all sorts of erroneous tenets. With this dark lanthorn-light they dazzle the eyes of such as would pry into their actions, while behind in the dark they sensually satisfy themselves undiscovered.

Experience dictates what I here express ; for I have had converse with several of these religious pretenders, that in the very act would very much inveigh against adultery with their tongues, whilst their blood willingly consented to the commission of that sin, and then immediately after seem extremely pensive, using these and such like formal expressions : ' Fie, fie, I wonder how you durst sin thus, even before the face of your Creator. Do you think he saw you not ? yea verily, and you shall answer for what you have now done ; ' whereas it could never have been done without a mutual consent.

They will make it their daily discourse, speaking against such whose natural inclinations have prompted them to unlawful satisfaction of

their lust, and yet they themselves are at the same time studying how they may secretly and securely accomplish the same thing.

To conclude, Woman in general is the very extract of inconstancy, and therefore it is but a vain thing for any to think she can absolutely love one man. Such who are found constant to their husbands, preferring their welfare before the indulging of their own by-respects, ought to be looked on no less than miracles of their sex, by such who are acquainted generally with female dispositions and actions.

### CHAPTER XXIII

*He cheats his creditors by knavish breaking, and runs away from Ireland : he is shipwrecked on the Isle of Man*

WHILST my credit was good I thought good to make use of it, lest that failing, I should want an opportunity to march off with flying colours. To raise my repute amongst my neighbours (whom I knew would spread abroad what they had seen) I caused a porter (whom I could trust) to carry out privately an hundred pound, and a little while after to come with a trusty friend of mine with that, and five or six hundred pound bags more on his back, openly carrying them. Upon receipt hereof, I tumbled the money out of the bag (which had really money in it) on the counter, purposely making a great noise. Having told it over (my friend standing by the while) I put it up ; and pretending to lay that aside and take another, I took up the same again, so doing till I had told it over five or six times ; then writing in public view a receipt, with much civility and respect I dismissed my gentleman. And this did I thrice in a month's time ; so that by this means without suspicion I conveyed away a great quantity of my goods, which people thought I had sold, and therefore thought me to have a great trade. Report hereby rendered me a man of vast dealing, so that now I had goods daily offered me, some whereof I received, promising to them payment at three months, others at six. What wares or moneys I could take up, I did, not mattering at what rate. To some of the more wary sort I confessed a judgment for their security. I needed not to have spoken in the singular number, for I deluded four with my judgments. What commodities I had I converted into money by a Bill of Sale, and so went away, leaving my creditors to sue out a Statute of Bankrupt if they so pleased ; which I valued not, if once out of their reach. To my chiefest

creditor I sent these lines, to the intent he should not tax me with incivility for going away and not sending him word :

Credit doth strengthen such whose trades are weak,  
But too much credit, Sir, did make me break.  
Credit to sinking tradesmen is a prop,  
But had you kept your wares, I'd kept my shop.  
Pray do not blame me, Sir, because I shew  
A way to pay those many debts you owe :  
Which you may do, if you'll advised be,  
Which is in short, prepare to follow me.  
Believe me, faithful Sir, in what I say,  
I went before, but to shew you the way :  
But you will not, don't lament your loss,  
For in your money I do bear the cross.  
Grief will distract you, and destroy your wit ;  
Good Sir, preserve it, for y' ave paid for it.

I rid post for Holyhead night and day, so that I arrived there in a very short time. Going to dismount, I tumbled off, neither could I rise again ; continual and unaccustomed riding had almost dislocated every bone in my body, notwithstanding it was swathed for that purpose. The next day I made a shift to walk abroad to view the rarities of the town, but found nothing rare but handsome women, civility, and good drink. In two days' time we set sail. We had not ran above three leagues before the sky darkened ; the wind blew hard at a South East, and the waves rose mountain high. In an hour's time we were forced to cut our masts by the board, and lightening the ship as much as we could, let her drive. Every man fell to his prayers, expecting every moment when they should be swallowed up by the sea. As for my part, I now thought divine vengeance had overtaken me, and would reckon with me for all my rogueries ; I looked on myself as Jonah, and was much troubled that others should suffer for my iniquities. About three o'clock in the morning we heard a hideous noise occasioned by the beating of the sea against the rocks, which was echoed by the loud and lamentable cries of the seamen, who now knew there was no hope for us. Now could I pray heartily, that had never prayed in my life before ; but my devotion was soon spoiled, for the ship struck in between two rocks. I looked out, and methought the dashing of the waves looked perfectly like flashes of fire. Here she stuck a little while, which gave five of us opportunity to leap out upon a rock. We were no sooner there, before a wave fetched her off, but brought her on again, and split her all to pieces, we five, in the meantime, riding astride on a rock behind one another, like so many criminals on a wooden-horse. Sometimes a wave would strike clear

over us, which endangered our washing off. Sometimes we thought to let go our hold, as looking upon our preservation to be impossible ; and withal imagining that the tide was coming in. At last the hindmost could hold no longer, but crying, 'Lord have mercy on my soul,' committed himself to the merciless sea. Immediately came a tumbling sea and washed off the next ; now did I expect that every wave would prove my executioner. But it was not decreed, I suppose, that I should be drowned. Day broke, so that we could discern we were not a quoit's cast from shore, and that the sea was ebbing. We waited not above an hour before we crawled to shore, for go we could not, our joints were so benumbed by the cold. We got up the beach, and could discern a little way distant a small cottage ; thither we repaired with much difficulty, and were kindly entertained, pitied, and informed where we were. We stayed about a week in this Isle of Man, without one farthing expense. For the inhabitants are generally very civil, and courteous. and especially to strangers. From thence we embarked for Dublin.

## CHAPTER XXIV

*His arrival into Ireland : he changeth his name : what trick he served his first landlady, all his money being spent, and those goods and coin likewise shipwrecked which he expected to follow him*

WE landed at a place called Ringsend about a mile from Dublin. I was asked whether I would have a coach. 'Where are there any,' said I, for I looked about me, and could see nothing like a coach. The fellow looked upon me to be a very ignorant person, because I understood not what he meant, and angerly spake thus : 'By my gossip's hand, thou canst not see very much well, arre look here is one by thine own side.' It was a great while before I could tell what language he spoke, he did so tone his words ; neither could I understand him, till one standing by interpreted him. As for his Ringsend coach, as he called it, it was wheel-barrow fashion, only it had two wheels not much bigger than a large Cheshire cheese. The horse that drew this princely pygmy chariot, I at first mistook for an over-grown mastiff, but viewing him narrowly, found him the extract (by his shape) of a Scotch hobby. Well, up I mounted, but could not invent a name for the manner of my riding, for I was neither coached nor carted, but I fancied myself (and that justly) as I was riding, to be some notorious malefactor drawn on a sledge to the place of execution, which afterwards experimentally

I found Dublin to be. Many of its inhabitants call this city Divlin, *quasi* Divels Inn, and very properly it is by them so termed ; for there is hardly a city in the world that entertains such variety of devil's imps as that doth. If any knavishly break, murder, rob, or are desirous of polygamy, they straightway repair thither, making that place, or the kingdom in general, their asylum, or sanctuary. My first care was to plant myself conveniently ; the next day I sent for a barber to shave all my hair off, ordering him to bring me a periwig of an absolute contrary colour to my own hair, to the intent that if I should meet with any of my former acquaintance, they might not know me, whereby I should prevent their sending notice to any where I was. The truth of it is, in this disguise I hardly knew myself. The greatest difficulty I found, was to make myself familiar with my fictitious name. At first, when my landlady called me by that name, I either stared her in the face, or looked behind me (not answering thereunto), thinking she had spoke to some man else ; but had I not pretended to be thick of hearing, and so that way apologizing for my silence, my design might have been marred. I daily met with several I knew, but would not take the least cognizance of them.

In this manner I spent a month, but all this while no tidings of my goods and money ; that which I had brought with me was all consumed. My landlady (as it is customary there, having as little trust or faith as they have religion) called upon me for what I owed her. For a little while, I stopped her mouth by telling her I had a considerable quantity of goods and money coming, which I expected by every fair wind. A little while after I heard the ship in which they were was cast away. Now did I absolutely conclude God's just judgment attended my fraud and knavery. My loss I did not in the least discover to any, knowing I should reap at first only some pity, and afterwards be undervalued and disrespected. My hostess again was very importunate with me to have her reckoning. I endeavoured to put her off, saying, I expected daily Bills of Exchange ; but she would not believe me, for I perceived that she had been often cheated with such delusions.

Now did I not know what to do. I thought good to try another way ; she being a widow, I fancied I could work upon her female frailty. I used all means possible to get her alone ; which I did but seldom, and then did I make use of all my rhetoric to persuade her into a belief how dearly I loved her. She replied little, but would laugh at me till she held her sides again. I verily believe she understood my drift, which I might argue from her expressions. Sometimes she would say, 'Come, come, away with these love fooleries, and pay me what you owe.' Then would I tell her, all I enjoyed, and myself too were properly hers, and that she

might take them when she pleased into her possession. ‘No, no,’ she would say, ‘my youthful days are past, and it is time for me to look Heavenwards; wherefore let fall your suit,’ &c.

Since words would no ways prevail, I resolved to try something else, knowing how difficult it is for a woman when in bed to refuse a venereal proffer. To that purpose one night I came softly into her chamber, and groping with my hand for her face, I caught a man by the beard: at which he awaked, and thinking the devil was come to trim him, or rob him of his wash-balls, would have cried out aloud, but that fear had so locked up his voice that his highest note was little louder than whispering. I could but just hear him say, ‘In the name of —— what art?’ ‘I am,’ said I, and then she waked too, ‘no ghost, but a living witness of your lechery; to that intent I came hither, to be fully satisfied of what I have a long time suspected. As for you Madam, your youthful days are past, but your lust will endure for ever. If this be your way to Heaven, why were you so uncharitable as not to let me go along with you? As for your part, Sir, I believe that you are travelling that way too; for if I mistake not, you lately came out of purgatory.’

To be short, they both entreated me to be silent and retire to my own lodging, and that in the morning they would treat with me to my full satisfaction. This was what I aimed at, though brought about otherwise than intended. Early they both came to me: the pious gentlewoman being very tender of her credit, would forgive me my debt if I would not blemish her reputation by my report; her gallant gave me ten pieces to bind the bargain. Having gotten a discharge under her hand, I sealed our contract with an oath and faithful promise never to divulge their shame. The gentleman (though his estate much exceeded hers) out of spite, I think, or vexation to be so caught, incontinently married her, though all former solicitations (which I understood were many) proved ineffectual.

## CHAPTER XXV

*He is driven to extreme necessity: he describes what it is to be indigent, by what he suffered in that condition*

**T**HIS ten pound I received from my old lecherous dotard made its exit almost as soon as its entrance into my pocket. By that sum I thought to have purchased mountains in Ireland (and indeed there is too great plenty of them there) by gaming; but experience told me after-

wards that my design was hazardous, and so it proved, for I met with a person that bubbled me at hazard, not leaving me a penny, and engaged besides for my proportion of the reckoning. My gamester dealt too hardly with me ; yet it was but just, for I intended to show him as little favour, if compelled to lie at my mercy, which I verily thought would be, having various utensils about me to that purpose, but I was over-matched.

I thought myself secure, for I could top,  
By which I've forc'd some cits to leave their shop.  
I palm'd, and put the change upon them too ;  
I only studied how I might undo.  
But now I'm met with, 'tis but just I see,  
That he which others cheats, should cheated be.

I returned to my lodging (which was none of the best), with what anxiety and perturbation of mind I shall give any loser leave to imagine, whilst the remembrance thereof enforceth me to speak ; and I hope the reader will give me that liberty, since the proverb entaileth on the loser that privilege. I acquainted my landlord with my misfortune, who seemed very much to condole me for the present, but it was afterwards the occasion of his not crediting me. From hence, I will advise all to speak as little as they can of ills that betide them ; but we cannot discourse too much of the good that happens to us. Perceiving my landlord grew cold, my spirit was too high to be any longer beholding to him but for my lodging ; wherefore I seldom came home till night.

Neither would I make known my condition to any that knew me. Sometimes I should meet with some in the street, who would ask me to drink with them ; my usual answer was, I came from it but even now : insisting farther, that such a gentleman, with two or three more besides myself, had drank so much, and that I admired at myself for being so sober ; whereas to deal ingenuously, I had not drank one drop that day. Another seeing me, would ask me whether I would dine with him at the ordinary ? Then would I pretend that my lord — Gentleman over-persuaded me to dine with him, and that we had such variety that I doubted my stomach had received some detriment thereby ; and therefore begged an excuse ; whereas a dry crust taken out of my leather cupboard, was all the varieties the Gentleman-Usher of my stomach, my throat I mean, had taken cognizance of that day. So hard it was too, that I would look this way and that way, not daring to commit it to the engine of my chops, unless there was none near me within a furlong ; for had there been any near me, they would have sworn I was eating walnuts, shells and all. Now did I learn to drink water, which necessity made me to commend as the most sovereign liquor, and most suitable

to the body of man ; otherwise Adam in Paradise would not have been without a cup of ale.

Every morning I offered up my devotions either to St. Patrick, or St. James, each of which have two excellent wells dedicated to the honour of their saintships. Thither did I repair constantly twice or thrice a day : after I had offered up the fumes of smoke (most commonly of none of the best tobacco) I kneeled, not using the common way of drinking out of the chained iron dish, but with greater adoration sucked it as it came through the conveyance. After a walk to Kilmanum (about a mile from Dublin) or some other place to prepare my stomach, I returned to Christ Church, frequently dining there with Sir Richard Strang-bow. Reflecting on his cheer, and the liquor of those two saints, I cannot but tell you my thoughts of both.

Sir Richard Strang-bow keeps an house where wine  
And bread some sup on, but few seldom dine.  
Ask yet an hungry rambler, and he'll say,  
(Though not one bit came near his mouth that day)  
He plentifully din'd with him, so let him still  
Till he hath found his empty belly fill,  
Where I ne'er could, which made me hate in fine  
Sir Richard Strang-bow's feasts, St. Patrick's wine.

I fasted so long, I had now almost forgot how to eat : for if casually I came where meat was, I often made a proffer to convey something to my mouth, but my lips understood not my meaning ; for having been so long unaccustomed to their duty, knew not how to perform their gaping office. It was impossible at this time for the greatest fright to have made me foul my breeches, because I seldom used anything that might cause excrements. And therefore I wondered to hear any enquire for an house of office, since I had now left off going to stool. Once in five days I thought I stood in need of evacuating ; but I was mistaken, for by discharging a blast of wind (whose fury scattered small stones underneath me) I found it only a fit of the colic. I shall deal plainly, should I have found a propensity, I would have been very unwilling to let anything go out, since so little passed into my belly. Some moveables I had left, which I was forced to dispose of, to keep the passage of my guts open, which would frequently grumble against my stomach for detaining too long what was received, challenging a propriety therein. I thought it good policy not to buy any belly-timber of a quick concoction, because it should stay the longer within me. To this purpose I looked on old cheese to be food convenient ; knowing that though it will digest anything else, yet it cannot digest itself ; and as it closeth up the mouth of the stomach, so by its respective quality it locks up fast the postern

of the microcosm. Flesh again (if I got any) I would swallow by wholesale, fearing lest by chewing it, my stomach would too suddenly give it a passport to my hypo-gastrum ; by which means it would be immediately ready again, nay restless in the craving more. I seldom slept for the gnawing of my stomach and the anguish of my guts, and for want of those fumes which proceeding from meat ascended into the head, and so the causers of sleep. If I chanced to nod at any time, I dreamed of nothing but eating, my fancy feeding that while as voraciously as an hunger-starved hound on a shoulder of mutton. I was driven to that pass, I could not justly tell whether I was alive or not. Sometimes I was of the opinion that I died in our shipwreck on the Isle of Man, and that I was now a soul in Purgatory.

Immediately after my arrival in this place, the itch and bunniah, or flux (the two grand epidemical distempers of Ireland), gave me their welcome into their country, attended by a great number of six-footed gents clad in a gray livery, with one single list down the back ; who all promised to stick to me and be my bosom friends, neither would they forsake me as long as life lasted. But they, like the rest of the best and fairest promising friends, left me when fortune committed me prisoner to the merciless cruel hands of that accursed gaoler, poverty. I was grown so lean that the mongrel Scotch and Irish gentleman the itch, finding not flesh enough to feed on, gave me the French compliment, ‘*Adieu pauvre Gentilhomme.*’ The flux stayed with me as long as anything was left in my belly, but finding no substance from my guts, took his leave also, unkindly carrying away all that was within me. Their retinue perceiving they were like to feed on hard meat, there being little left but bones, whose teeth were incapable of fastening thereon, resolved to follow after ; some making more than ordinary haste, broke their necks off the cape of my cloak, missing their footing, the threads thereof being spun out at times as fine as those of Arachne’s working.

To conclude, I was a mere walking skeleton, my skin only served as a mantle for my bones. But for wind, my belly would have contracted an approved philosophical axiom, proving a vacuum.

One time passing by the castle gate, a soldier fired his musket, and I protest methought my belly sounded like a drum at the report. Should I relate every particular wherein the malevolence of Fortune afflicted me, I should much tire the reader, as well as perplex myself with remembrance ; wherefore I shall desist, and give you leave to imagine the deplorableness of his condition, who hath neither money, friends, nor credit, and in a place where he is neither acquainted with the people nor their language.

## CHAPTER XXVI

*He falling accidentally into a strange house, endeavours to build a sconce, but is frustrated of his intent : the old hostess pities him at first, and relieves him, and continually after feeds him for her own peculiar diet, further insisting on the misery he then endured*

I WAS by this time grown so feeble by fasting, or by the manner of my feeding, which was either cheese or hard eggs (there being great plenty), that I could hardly go ; and so light I was by continual smoking that I questioned often whether I was not a mere fume myself ; fearing still when I walked abroad, to be extracted by the sun for an exhalation. Fortune so favoured me one day that I found a groat, which put me into an extasy of joy. I know not what magical power there was in that vast sum of four pence, for in an instant, not knowing by what means, I found myself in a victualling-house, so speedy was my conveyance, as if I had been riding some Dæmon through the air. I called for some meat, but my voice sounded so hollow as if I had spoken in a vault. Some said it was the echo of some person speaking in the next house : others of the wiser sort believed me to be some spectrum, or apparition ; and that the Devil had assumed a body speaking in that *mortuum cadaver*. The truth of it is, 'twas something hard to determine whether I spake or no, but that they might perceive my lips to open. There was a physician in the house at that time, who looking on me narrowly, openly proclaimed that I was the workmanship of some mortal, who having first gotten the skeleton or bones of a man, had artificially skinned them over, and that German clock-work caused my motion. I would have laughed heartily at their ridiculous apprehensions but that I had forgot how. I had some gall left in me still, which made me start up in as great a rage as my feeble body was able to declare, intending to demonstrate to them how grossly they were mistaken, but perceiving me to approach, they all fled but Mr Doctor, whom shame retained, otherwise by a fit of an ague (which just then possessed him) I knew he would willingly have been gone too. 'Speak,' said he tremblingly, 'what art ?' I was somewhat puzzled at his question, for I knew not well what I was. 'I am a living man,' said I. 'Why then thou wouldest have flesh,' said he.

After several discourses to this purpose, I at length made him partly believe that I was no such thing he imagined, and yet he would be asking me still a many impertinent questions, as whether I could see ; and his reason was, because he could discern no eyes ; whether I was born

without eyes, or lost them since accidentally, &c. I was forced to tell him at last that it was the country disease that had reduced me to this condition. Hearing me say so, he pitied me much, and told me he would fetch instantly something that should do me much good. I thanked him, and away went Mr Doctor. The good woman overhearing our discourse drew near then confidently, and demanded what I would have ? I told her, anything which was eatable, as far as a groat would go. She brought me some hot meat, and setting it before me, went for some drink, but before she could return I had swallowed it all. She fetched me more, which went the same way with as much celerity. But like quick-silver it wrought quite through me, not staying a quarter of an hour.

The manner whereof was thus. About to pay my reckoning, my groat got into a piece of paper ; I fumbled a great while in my pocket, but found it not, which put me even to my wit's ends. At last drawing out some papers and shaking them my groat dropped. Perceiving its fall might be dangerous, there being many holes in the floor, I catched after it ; notwithstanding it fell upon the very brink of an hole. What with haste to recover it, and the fright the danger put me into, I discharged myself of every bit I had eaten. There was nobody could say I had fouled my breeches, or that I stunk ; which I made appear to my land-lady by showing her what I had evacuated, but little differing from what I had eaten a quarter of an hour before. The good old woman persuaded me strongly to eat it again ; 'for,' said she, 'it cannot be much the worse for just passing through you, and I will fry it if you please.' I thought I should now have died with laughter at her strange proposition ; but the woman stared upon me, not knowing whether I grinned or laughed. 'Well, well,' said she at last, 'if you will not eat such good victuals, somebody else shall.' I offered her my groat, which she refused, telling me there was as much more to pay. I told her that was all the money I had about me, and that I would pay her the rest the next day.

But she for her part thought it was unjust,  
To listen to the arguments of trust.

And therefore told me plainly she would have her reckoning. I bid her stay a while ; then as soon as she had turned her back I attempted to march off, but my strength failing me, I wanted swiftness, and so was brought back. I made her acquainted with my condition how miserable it was ; I needed not many arguments to persuade any into that belief, for my person was the true emblem of misery. She gave a serious attention to what I expressed, and at last melted into tears, commiserating my misfortunes. She caused instantly a bed to be warmed, where being

laid, she ordered a caudle to be made, and in fine shewed a world of kindness to me, not imagining what she aimed at. She would not let me stir out of my bed but whilst it was making, for above a week ; at the conclusion of which I began to recover a little colour in my cheeks, and grew indifferent strong. She gave me money in my pocket, and told me I must walk into the fields with her. I blessed myself and that angel that directed my feet to the finding that lost groat which was the occasion of my restitution to a condition of living again. By this time I imagined what my old gentlewoman expected ; wherefore, in the first place I acknowledged how much I was obliged to her matchless civilities, and that it was impossible for me to return her answerable satisfaction. Rolling her pretty pigs-eyes to and fro in her head, ‘I require,’ said she, ‘nothing but your love.’ If it must needs be so, thought I, there is no way better than to let fancy form her beautiful, and so by the force of imagination I shall enjoy as much pleasure as if lying with Venus, though in conjunction with this Succubus. We used not many ceremonies (like puling-whining lovers that are always saying grace, but never fall to), but taking the convenience of a ditch underneath a bushy-topped hedge we conferred notes. Had any seen us in this posture, they would have concluded old winter metamorphosed into an old woman lying in a dike, and that Flora was converted into a young man, and both in an unnatural conjunction ; or that youthful Phœbus had contracted his rays to court a lump of ice, but with shame was forced to desist, finding his powerful endeavours ineffectual in the production of a thaw.

Whenever I wanted a small sum, a kiss or two, or the saying I loved her, extracted so much as supplied my present occasions ; if I wanted a sum considerable, why then a quarter of an hour’s discourse in private effected my desires. Most that knew me wondered what politic strata-gems I used that I so suddenly wound myself out of that labyrinth of all sorts of miseries, and that I appeared both in feature and garb so different to my former condition. I had as many pretences to blind the world as there were various suspicions of pragmatic persons. In short, I was now very well apparelled, well furnished with money, I kept my horse, nay my whore too ; this I made use of for what she was, the other for what she had. So seemingly happy was the present state of my life that I deemed it impossibly unalterable by any decree of fate.

## CHAPTER XXVII

*He makes a ramble into the country ; takes some observations as he travelleth ; and is soundly beaten for attempting to board a small Irish pinnace*

I BEGAN now to be somewhat weary of the city, and therefore resolved to refresh myself with the country air. I acquainted my patroness therewith ; who with much regret condescended, conditionally two days should be the utmost time of my absence.

That morning I set forth there was such solemn leave taken between us as if my voyage had been intended for the Indies. About to mount, she retrieved my intentions, clasping me in her arms ; I should rather have chosen the embraces of a she-bear, as thinking her breath far sweeter ; and truly I have often wondered at my recovery in so impure and unwholesome air. Being on horse-back she so bathed her cheeks with tears (wanting no moisture, derived from an everlasting spring of humours distilling from her head) that you would have sworn she was the representation of the pig-woman in Ben's *Bartholomew Fair*. Had not her watery flood-gates drowned her eyes, I think she would have stood looking after me that way I rid till my return. Well, there is no fool like the old doting fool ; and were I again to love for interest, I would choose such a person. Your young skittish things that only mind their pleasures, think they have done a man a courtesy that merits reward, if they admit him into their private familiarity, because they find fond man so passionate and impatient in the prosecution of his desires. And then again, having variety of courtiers, they are too sensible that if one will not meddle with the bait, a second will nibble at it so long till he is caught with the hook. Whereas a woman stricken in years, and having lost her beautiful allurements is disregarded, and looked on as no fit subject for love to treat on ; not but she may have as youthful desires as any, and if that way inclined, none so prone as she. For knowing she hath nothing but her wealth to attract withal, she will freely part with it for her self-satisfaction ; and that she may not lose her stallion, constantly encourage him even to the exhausting of what she hath. Moreover, finding the man to answer her expectations, she studies all ways imaginable how to please him in everything, that he may please her in that one thing.

But to my purpose. Coming to Balle-more-Eustace, a little beyond the town (which is in the County of Wicklow), there is a small river in the summer-time not above knee-deep. I perceived a young woman

about to cross it ; drawing to the water, she stood not on the niceties of modesty, but pulling up her clothes to the waist. The sight hereof stopped me, and as near as I could opposite to her. She minded me not, but came straight over to me, and at about three yards distance let down her coats. I observed so many excellencies that my blood began to boil, and my flesh was all of a flame. For her hair which naturally curled, and was plaited, was of a bright flaxen, each hair in the sun glittered like a thread of gold.

Here take notice by the way, that the maids for the most part, winter and summer, go without any coverings on their head, which they wash all over every night ; the meaner sort as soon as married wear kerchers. She had an angelical countenance, only somewhat brownish by the sun's frequent kissing of it ; I know not whether I may adjudge that a deformity. The skin of her body might vie with snow for whiteness. I dismounted, and addressed myself to her in English ; she answered me in her own language, she understood me not. Then did I make use of that little Irish I had learned, which were some fragments of lecherous expressions, to which she replied, but I understood her not. To be brief, I so far prevailed that I got her into a small wood, in which the thick and spreading tops of the trees seemed to lay their heads together in conspiracy to keep not only the sun's entry, but also the curious search of any mortal's eye. She permitted me to kiss, dally, lay my hand on her thighs, &c., which were the only preludiums of what should follow. But herein I mistook, for their dispositions are much different from the English. We use to say that where we gain over any woman the liberty to use the hand, we cannot fail of doing what we most desire ; whereas, quite contrary, they will without the least opposition permit the first, but with the greatest difficulty admit of the last. For as soon as she saw me ready to engage, she cried out incessantly, ' Whillallalloo ' ; and I could hear this ululation echoed.

I had just recovered my horse when two or three fellows came running to me, the one with a flail, the rest with long poles. The first salutation I received was from the flail, which failed but little of doing my business. The next my horse's crupper received ; the poor beast being civilly bred, could do no less than return them a congee with his leg, which made one of them fall on his knees to his master, as if he had been monarch of that soil. These two rogues stood stiffly to me, insomuch that I knew not what course to take. The villains were so nimble that one of them was continually before me hindering my flight, whilst the other drubbed me forward. I bethought myself of a pistol I had in my pocket, charged without a bullet. I drew it, presented, and pretended I would fire if they desisted not. These stupid fellows apprehended not the danger ;

perceiving how stupidly senseless they were, I fired it full in the face of him that fronted me, who verily believed he had been shot, and so out of conceit (for they are naturally very timorous) fell down as dead. The other seeing that, ran away as swift as lightning, whereby I had leave to ride on, which I did (you may think) with no ordinary speed. Lovers may talk of their sufferings by their mistress's frowns or obdurateness, but let any one judge of mine by the blows I received ; sighing is nothing to fighting, and a few tears are not to come in competition with dry basting. Pox on them, they made me out of conceit with love for six weeks after. I never thought of enjoying a woman since but the remembrance of those three bog-trotters converted the hot fit of my amorous fever into a cold one.

A little way from Baltinglass I took up my quarters for that night. The inn I lay in was one story high, about the height of an extraordinary pigsty, and there was one chimney in it, too, more than there is to be found in one of an 100 such hovels. The good man welcomed me after his fashion, but I think an *Anthropophagus* or Indian man-eater would have done it as civilly. I bid him set up my horse, by signs (for that was the language we conversed in), but alas, there was no other stable but what was at the end of our kitchin ; our dining-room, bed-chamber, pigsty, pantry and buttery being all one, without distinction or separation. Some few wattles (as they call them) were placed above, that was our hay-loft. The only door of our inn was a large hurdle, much like a sheep-pen. The Bannette, or good wife of the house, could speak a little broken English. I asked her what I should have for supper ? 'Thou shalt have a supper,' said she, 'for St. Patrick a gra.' I stayed an half-hour expecting when she would lay down something to the fire, but instead thereof she brings me, in a wooden platter, a great many leeks, in the bottom whereof was a good quantity of bay-salt, and withal a loaf as black as if the meal had been wetted with ink. 'Seest thou tere, Chreest himself nor St. Patrick did ever eat better ting.' I could not forbear smiling, which put her into a great passion ; for if a man eats not what they set before him, they think themselves highly affronted. Because I would please them (not knowing but that I might find as bad sauce here) I pretended to eat, conveying it into my boots. After supper I asked them for a clean pipe ; the woman brought me one about an inch long, telling me it was very clean, for her husband had not smoked it above ten times. I judged it to be the ruins of the first pipe that was made, which was conveyed from one of that family to another, conditionally they should constantly smoke in it without burning it. They offered me some snuff too ; which is one of the greatest kindnesses they can either shew or be shewn. I called for some drink

(to try whether that corresponded with the rest), and so it did, for there was no swallowing it without chewing.

Finding but little satisfaction I desired to go to bed. That I should instantly, they said, but I wondered where they intended to lay me. In a little while in came a lusty wench with a bundle of rushes on her head (my bed it seemed by the sequel) which she spreading on the ground, covered them with a caddow or rug. Here I must lie or nowhere, patience was my only comfort; wherefore, stripping myself to my drawers and stockings, I laid myself down. About two hours after came in two cows, three or four pigs, some ducks and geese (which they brought not in before, out of civility to me). All their family being within doors, the good man, his wife, and two daughters, stripping themselves stark naked, lay down altogether by my side, which seemed somewhat strange to me. I could hardly forbear the two young ones, but that my late misfortune was so fresh in my memory.

I could not sleep all that night, wherefore very early I discharged my reckoning, and so set forward for Dublin with all the expedition I could, not liking the country entertainment. I would not ride the same way back as I came, to avoid my bone-breakers. But it had been as well, for coming to a river that I must ford, I asked a fellow which was the safest place. He pretended no knowledge of what I said, wherefore making signs to him, he answered me again with his hand, directing me to such a place. At the first step my horse and I plunged over head and ears; and had not my horse been strong, we had both perished. With much difficulty we got up the bank on the other side, and looking behind me, the villain was e'en almost out of sight. Such causeless revenge they frequently exercise towards the English, naturally hating us with a perfect antipathy. I returned at length to my old hostess, resolving when next I undertook such a journey I would steer by the compass of other men's experience.

## CHAPTER XXVIII

*The manner of his stealing an hogshead of French wine from the Custom house*

T RACING the street, I chanced to cast my eye on a fellow, the slowness of whose pace informed me of the idleness of his condition. His garb was so preposterously unsuitable that a man could not

possibly look on him without excessive laughter. To the intent you may participate with me in the same sport, I shall open his wardrobe. In general there was not anything he did wear that had not some time been another's property, and of which one might derive another pedigree. The hat he had on was divested of all royal dignity, having lost its crown, and yet his crime would not be allowed of as capital. But what it wanted in one place was supplied in another, the brims whereof being so large they might have conveniently served as a pent house for another besides himself. But this ingenious squire politicly had pinned up the brims on one side, that he might have some light to discern his way. His hat thus pinned up on the one side looked much like a trap-door pulled up. His band was so torn and dirty as if he had but just come from some fray ; and lest passion should prove obnoxious, time had done him that courtesy to purge away his choler. In what condition his doubtlet was behind, I could plainly discover through the holes of his cloak, which generally was so transparent that the rents and patches of several colours of his clothes were as visible as if you had looked through lawn. The forepart of his doublet and his breeches, I am confident, were the offspring of the furniture of a billiard-table. His cloak proceeded from a boat-tilt, whose grandfather was an horse-cloth ; and I could not look on his breeches but it put me in mind of the Scotch flags that hung up in Westminster. His skirts were so liquored and greased, that in case of extremity they might have served for belly-pieces, not using anything but their own fatness to fry them in.

By his countenance he seemed like a man of courage and ingenuity, and so I could not choose but endeavour his relief. Wherefore I accosted him, pretending I had seen him somewhere, but could not for the present call to mind the place. His necessity made him assent to whatever I said ; and desiring his company to an ale-house, he readily granted my request. By what unhappy accident he became thus miserable, I know not, but the man was well furnished both with natural and acquired parts. Having had various discourses of several matters, and that we began to be familiarly acquainted, I asked him why he wrapped himself up so close in his cloak ? 'O Sir,' said he, 'to be plain, I have a maimed doublet, and I have heard some say, there is nothing more prejudicial to a wound than the intromission of air.' 'Which that network garment of yours,' said I, 'will never be able to keep out.' He replied, "'Tis true, Sir, I find it so, but I wish it were a net, for then I might employ myself by fishing.'

I was so well pleased with my new acquaintance that bidding him stay there till my return (which should be speedy) I went and procured him all things necessary for to cover his nakedness. The last

thing he put on was his shoes ; finding them to have soles, they added new life to him.

But did before in one condition roll,  
And both appear'd as if they had no sole.

Having thus cast (colt-like) his ragged coat, I was not ashamed to walk with him in the streets. Coming to the Custom-house we saw several pipes and hogsheads of wine. Viewing all the places belonging thereunto, said I, ‘ Methinks it is no difficult matter to steal one of these hogsheads, had I but assistance.’ ‘ You shall not want mine, Sir,’ said he, ‘ even to the hazard of my life, which I shall never look on as a sufficient requital for this singular favour you have now conferred on me.’ Having walked there a while, we went down to a place called Lazy Hill, where I found out two or three pure rogues more, one whereof had a boat. I informed them of my design ; they willingly promised their helping hand, and the time appointed for effecting our intentions was that night about twelve. Accordingly we all met, and having procured an empty hogshead, we filled it with water, and away we went in the boat. The tide ebbing had left dry ground underneath the quay, where I planted three of our company, instructing them that as soon as they found the coast clear above, they should with slings (which they had for that purpose) leave the hogshead of water, and exchange it for one of wine ; which done, they should march off immediately. I and my new comrade marched up the Custom-house stairs, where we encountered with two old watchmen. They asked us what our business was, we told them we had no other design but to drink with them, having been a little frolicsome the other side of the water. The old watchmen were very joyful at this news, and so giving one of them money to fetch some drink, the other carried me to the lodge. The drink being come, they minded that so much, they had forgotten their duty ; and I plied them so close with whole ones that they were incapable of holding one more. In the meantime my comrogues were gone. Pretending our boat was adrift, we took our leave, for then we could go along by the shore side ; leaving this paper on one of the hogsheads, I left them.

What Moses did in the Creator's name,  
By art Egyptian magic did the same.  
Since I have read of water turn'd to wine,  
This miracle is opposite to mine.  
For I (though never yet a Rhenish hater)  
Have by my art converted wine to water.

I have often heard these very lines (with some real circumstances

of this our exploit, but more fictitious) repeated to me as a very good jest, which pleased me near upon as much as our purchase.

Being five of us concerned, we scorned to sell our wine, but contracting with some to find sugar, with others Westphalia hams, or such like relishing meats, and with others to be at the expense of music, but every one to be at his own charge for wenches, we never gave over ranting and roaring till we had drained the hogshead dry.

## CHAPTER XXIX

*His landlady dieth, and so he is left again to live by his wits : his comrade is hanged, with some hints of his desperate, irreligious, and atheistical tenets*

**I**N the height of our jollity, word was brought me that my landlady was dangerously sick, and that she desired to speak with me instantly. Thinking it was only a fit of lecherous and salacious itch, I made no great haste, but at length I went. As soon as I entered within her doors, I received the sad tidings of her death. I ran up stairs (not believing this report, because I would not have it so) but found it too true. Viewing her as she lay, I perceived her hand fast clenched. I took it into mine, and wrenching it open, there dropped ten pieces of gold, which I conceive she intended to have bestowed on me whilst living, as her last legacy. I conveyed them privately into my pocket, and presently made enquiry how she had disposed of her estate, but I received little or no satisfaction herein, only to my great vexation, I heard she often to the very last called much upon me.

I stayed not above two or three days in the house, but I was forced to leave it.

I met with my obliged friend, to whom I communicated my late misfortune. He, like an experienced stoic counselled me to bear my loss patiently since it is below a man to repine at any sublunary casualty, much more to sink under the burden of any vexatious cross, or remediless loss. We discoursed what expedient we were best to take, and to increase our small stocks by some witty exploit. We propounded many things which we approved not of. We thought of turning highwaymen, but I dissuaded him from that, by informing him that money was very scarce, and that men of 500*l.* per annum usually travelled 30 or 40 miles with a single cob, or piece of eight, not so much for fear of robbing as for want of coin, and that is the reason that all sorts of provisions are very

cheap, because there is so great a scarcity of them that should purchase them. ‘Why then,’ said he, ‘there is money enough in the Exchequer.’ ‘But,’ said I, ‘it is so difficult to come at, that I will not hazard my life in the attempt.’ Hearing me speak in this manner, he looked upon me in derision, saying that fear was a passion unworthy to be lodged in the soul of man, and that there is nothing here which a man either should or need to fear, *secundem religionem stoici*: And that man deserved not the fruition of the least happiness here that would not, rather than go without it, venture his neck.

We had so hot a contest about this, that we parted in anger, and I never saw him afterwards till I heard of his condemnation, which was occasioned by the prosecution of what he propounded to me. Two or three more besides himself combined to rob the Exchequer, but were apprehended in the enterprize, committed, arraigned at the Bar, convicted and condemned. Hearing hereof, I gave him a visit in prison, expressing much sorrow for what he was to suffer, but he only laughed at me for my pains. I desired him to be more serious, since three days would put a period to his life, and then he must give an account of what he had done on earth, and that though we might sooth up our selves in all manner of debauchery here, yet without cordial repentance we must suffer for it hereafter. ‘Prithee,’ said he, ‘do not trouble thy head with such idle fancies. That there is a God I cannot, nor will not deny, since there are regiments of arguments levied both from the stately fabric of the arched heaven, and from the inimitable embroidery of the flowery earth which are sufficient to conquer that infidelity, and render men tributaries to the all-forming Essence. But that this God should be so unjust (who is all goodness) as to make the intent of my creation damnation, it shall never come within the verge of my belief. If there be any punishment for criminal commissions, it must be annihilation, or nothing. Quote not me the Scriptures for my conviction if I err, since they are full of contradictions, and contain many things incredible.

‘Neither do I know (since we are forbidden murder) why Abraham should kill his son Isaac, and the same person commit adultery with his maid Hagar (which is largely described), and yet we are commanded the contrary. If we borrow or steal, we are enjoined to make restitution, notwithstanding, the Israelites were permitted to borrow the Egyptians’ earrings without giving satisfaction. In this manner I could cavil ad infinitum, and yet this Book is the basis of Christianity. Let me tell you plainly. Religion at first was only the quaint legerdemain of some strong pated statesmen, who to overawe the capriciousness of a giddy multitude, did forge the opinion of a punisher of all human evil actions.

What was Mahomet but an impostor, whose palpable cheats grew up in his successors into a religion, and whose inventions were and are received with as much adoration by the wisest of men, as is the Orthodox Veneration (as they term it) to a Deity, which is the object of Christian worship. The Pope's piety is only pride and ambition, and yet he pronounces damnation against all such as are not of his belief, &c. If you will know the diversity of religions (all oppugning on the other), take a view thereof in Mr Ross his Pansebeia. Now seeing the rational soul hath failed so oft and so absurdly in its discoveries, how or why should we submit ourselves slavishly to its determinations. For that which doth at some times err, can never at any time be concluded infallible.' He would have proceeded, but I desired him to desist.

Now his profane and irreligious discourse did so bore my glowing ears, that notwithstanding the wickedness of my own nature, I could not endure to hear him blaspheme. Wherefore, instead of endeavouring to rectify his erroneous judgment (for to speak the truth, my knowledge at that time was but slender in the doctrine of Christianity), I durst not discourse longer with him, but left him to his own conscience for conviction, which I judged would be powerful with him at the place of execution.

The day being come, I resolved to see the final end of my friend. And there did I enjoy the fruits of my hopes and wishes. For as soon as the halter was about his neck, he roared so loud with his voice, that it could not but awake the most lethargic conscience that ever the Devil lulled asleep. There I might see and know by the urinal of his eyes, and the water standing therein, what convulsion fits his soul suffered, his own mouth confessing how grievously his diseased soul was stretched upon the rack of despair. Then it was that the voluminous registers of his conscience, which did formerly lie clasped in some unsearched corner of his memory, were laid open before him, and the Devil, who hitherto gave him the lessening end of the prospect to survey his licentious courses and damned opinion, now turned the magnifying end to his eye, which made him cry out at last for mercy, and so was turned off.

## CHAPTER XXX

*He passeth for a bachelor : courts several under the pretence of marrying them, by which he persuades some out of their maidenheads, others out of their money, with which he goes for England : at Chester he cheats his landlord, where having all things requisite to complete an highwayman, followeth that trade : he is met with by some of that gang, who intending to rob him, he discovers his intentions, and they admit of him into their society*

BEING left now to shift for myself, having lost the main prop that sustained me in all conditions, husbanding well the advantage of this contrary wind, I presently set the engine of my brain to work, and thus it was I addressed myself to courtship. Beauty was not the mark I aimed, the purchase thereof producing little profit, since itself is most commonly the sole reward. Neither can a man attain to it but by great expense, outvying all therein, lest any interpose. Either wealthy and aged widows, or thrifty maids, who had laid up what they had gotten in service as a bait to procure an husband, such did I daily hunt out and visit by turns. I was not sparing of amorous expressions, shewing therein the height of zeal, by which means I deluded several. Some I was forced to give earnest to for their goods, before they would trust me with what they had. This course I followed till I was generally taken notice of for a grand deceiver. Having now gotten a round sum of money by me, I borrowed wherever I could, so crossing St. George's Channel, in twenty-four hours I landed at Chester. I took up my quarters in a very graceful inn, and gave out immediately that I had an hundred head of cattle coming. The master of the house taking notice of my extraordinary garb, and believing the report which I had caused to be spread abroad, lodged me with much respect in one of the best chambers of his house.

The wind favoured my design as much as I could desire, for it blew east-north-east, by which no shipping could come out of Ireland. One day I came to my landlord, telling him that by reason of the non-arrival of my cattle I was disappointed of money, and therefore I desired him to lend me ten pounds, and he should satisfy himself in the first choice of the best of my beasts when they came, and swore to him I would perform my promise to him upon the word of a gentleman. So that without any scruple he lent me the money. Being market-day, I bought an excellent gelding with furniture thereunto belonging, with sword and pistols, and in this equipage I mounted, taking leave of my credulous

landlord without speaking a word to him. I had not rid far before three well mounted rid by me (I found them afterwards to be the vanguard), having as many more in the rear.

At the bottom of an hill they before faced about, and bidding me stand, those in the rear reinforced the van. One of them clapping a pistol at my breast, commanded me forthwith to deliver, swearing three or four full-mouthed oaths. I saw it was now to little purpose to resist although I was so well armed, and therefore endeavoured a conquest some other way, viz. by smooth expressions. 'Gentlemen,' said I, 'ye are all mistaken. Neither do I greatly wonder thereat, since I verily believe ye are freshmen, men of a day's standing in the study of this noble science, otherwise you might have distinguished me from an honest man. For I think in this garb and posture I look as suspiciously as any of ye. Only I think I take a better course than ye to avoid apprehension, and reap to myself greater satisfaction. For ye rob in companies, and if any one be taken, his just fears frequently betray himself but oftener the rest to destruction, whereas I robbing singly, I rob securely. Now, Sirs, freely examine my pockets,' where finding store of coin, they demanded how I came by it? I invented a lie to their general satisfaction, which was, I had met with a booty a little before I met with them, which was the occasion of my being so well furnished. But that which confirmed them most, was my being so well provided with pistols in my holsters, pockets and boots. Instead of doing what they intended, they were then of another opinion, and all of them caressed me in a very high manner, resolving to be merry at the next inn, and there to admit me as a brother.

Having set up their horses, they went into a room before, whilst I stayed some time after for the benefit of easing nature. Coming in among them I thought myself mistaken in my company, and made a proffer to go out again, but they laughing heartily called me back. I knew not one person, for they had pulled off their false beards, vizards, hoods, patches, wens, mufflers and periwigs, together with those other disguises that obscured the natural proportion of their faces, so that they appeared as other men. 'Come,' said the chief (as I guessed him to be by the sway he bore over the rest) 'you are a freshman, and therefore want some of our instructions which in due time you shall receive from us. In the first place it is fit that you take an oath which every young thief must observe that is admitted into the brotherhood, or at his investation into the honour of one of the knights of the road,' which was to this effect. First, they read a charge of secrecy, that whatever misfortune happened to cloud their freedom by rendering them as an object to justice and the law, they should conceal their complices to the death, or against any

other jeopardy whatsoever, burying in oblivion not only his confederates, but also his manner of entrance into this way.

And further, they proceeded to swear me, that if the judges should press me to a discovery of particulars, that then I must cunningly create some men in my fancy, devising not only names, but to give each man a particular feature, describing their stature, complexion and age, as also their dwelling place, still provided that the place of their abode be far enough off. And then, before enquiry be made the danger of the trial may be over or passed ; and then again this pretended discovery may purchase favour from the Bench.

Further, if I should be examined why and how I fell into these courses, I must then tell them that I was born a gentleman, and well educated, but being a younger brother, I had not wherewithal allowed me for a subsistence, and rather than I would live beneath my birth, or disparage the stock from whence I came (here fetching a deep sigh, and looking very sadly) necessity constraining me to supply my wants, I fell into these wicked courses. ‘ Which will make them think you are some misled young man whom temptations had drawn aside, and so cause them to take pity of your condition, and if their mercy extend to the remission of your guilt, it shall not only rest you from the punishment of the law, but from the persecution of your past evils.

‘ By this means we may have liberty to fall to our old courses, nor must conscience trouble us, but dispense with every impiety, and glory in the greatest iniquities, counting him most honourable who is grown the oldest and most exquisite experienced practitioner of all manner of vice.’ Much more was committed to my memory for future observation, which for brevity sake I shall omit.

### CHAPTER XXXI

#### *Some instructions given me by our grand master thief*

AFTER I was sworn, and full bowls of sack had trolled round, our grand master thief, composing his countenance and looking very gravely. ‘ Come my new and young knight of the road, be ruled by me, whose long experience makes me able to command and my love to you willing to instruct you. Ever lurk or lie in some by-place most advantageous and least suspicious which yields the eye the prospect of the road. So strictly view the booties that other men’s misfortunes may enrich your condition, and the honest man’s loss be your gain, and be

sure you draw every advantage that may promote your cause to the longest extent. For your masks and chincloth, thus must you place them and fit them at a moment to disguise your face, thereby to blind the intellects of such as by constraint pay tribute to your wants. Who then can know and with considerate heed directly swear you are the man, when these artificial vizards are withdrawn, and so the visible tokens vanish that might inform men's knowledge what you are? And that your words may have a different sound, alter your voice, that so as your habit, face, and hair obscure your discovery, your speech (reputed undisguisable) will add to your concealment and security.

' Be sure you ingeniously contrive a watchword to yourselves that may occasion no suspicion. As we are like to have a fair day or a foul, according as the weather is like to prove, which being named, let every man fall to his work. Those that are strongest at the grasp and have hearts accordingly, let them seize first, always duly observing this, to catch the bridle by the left hand, and with the right draw your sword. If he or they resist, the one prevents his flight, the other cuts, and so cools his courage. The weaker sort's charge is to bid stand, and confronting the horses' heads, present a pistol fit for to discharge. If they deny delivering patiently what they have, but contend, you must waive all niceties, but cut them soundly. If that will not qualify their foolish presumption, be sure you fire not without doing execution, and then with all speed fly, after you have with expedition taken the pillage of the field.

' If you are pursued by an Hue and Cry, obscure yourself in some place or other, and let it pass by you, and then to be sure it will never overtake you. If a prize comes by, or in your sight, if up the hill, meet him. If down, follow close at the heels, and having more in company than your self, let each man single out his choice which he likes to deal with. The coast being clear, fall up all to your close order and side, be sure that you jointly seize your prize. But here observe, let not any baseness of spirit unman you. For (speaking to me) Nature hath bestowed on you the full proportion of limbs and thou seemest a man of courage, suitable to the largeness of thy manly size, but be not surprized with fear or cowardice if the assailed boldly assaults thee.'

Full fraught with the documents which I received from my old experienced master, I resolved upon some achievement. Between two and three in the afternoon, I with four more set out. We planted ourselves in a convenient place, only I was sent out for a discoverer. Not rightly understanding my trade, I wandered too far, but in my digression I met with a single person whom I bid stand, which he would have done, and as willingly have surrendered his purse, but that he was mounted on a stone horse, I on a mare. As soon as I had given the word, his stone

horse wheeled off and came in the rear of me. I thinking he intended to crupper me, endeavoured all ways imaginable to prevent him, for there was something it seems under my mare's tail more powerful, which at that time I dreamed not of. I led him round and round several times circularly. The poor harmless gentleman fearing he should provoke me too much by delays, the unruliness of his horse hindering my seizing the booty, cried out, 'Worthy sir, take what I have and spare my life.' At that very instant his horse reared his two fore-feet upon me and my mare, in so much that I thought he said, 'I'll take both life and money too presently,' fear had then rendered me so incapable of performing the office of a thief. With that I put spurs to my mare, and flew through the air for the procuration of my safety.

Notwithstanding I made what speed I could, the other was close at my heels ; striving and kicking with both my legs, one of my pistols went off in my pocket. The apprehension of the present danger had bereft me of the true use of my sense, for I imagined that my back-friend had discharged at me, which made me roar out for quarter. He on the contrary concluded I fought Tartar like, flying, and that I had fired it at him, which made him with much eagerness echo out with repetition this expression, 'As you are a man, shew yourself merciful.'

Sometimes he would say, 'For heaven's sake hold, good sir stop,' which made me ride more furiously, thinking he called to the country, hold him, stop him. At last do what I could, his stone-horse leapt up upon us, at that instant (by what means I know not) we all came headlong to the ground. I expected now that my imaginary adversary would be upon me, and cut my throat before I could recover my legs, wherefore I started up, and found my mortal foe up before me, and upon the run. I could have hanged myself to think I should be reckoned among the number of men, and yet want that spirit and courage which completes a man, but losing no time, I pursued him, and easily made myself possessor of what he had. 'Sirrah,' said I, 'if ere I meet thee again, and find thee so obstinate, or durst resist, as now thou hast done, I will tie thee to a tree in some obscure place, where none can hear thy doleful cries, and there for six days thou shalt have no other food but what I shall bring thee. Once a day during that term I will visit thee, and each day's meat shall be either a piece of thine own sword broken into small bits, or those bullets (which thou intendest for the destruction of honest men) dissolved, and mingled with gunpowder, which shall be conveyed to thy mouth through the muzzle of thine own pistol.' It pleased me exceedingly to see how pitifully and submissively he looked, for verily I durst not have uttered half so much if he had shown an austere countenance.

As I was framing a lie to delude my comrades (when I should meet them) into a belief how valiant I was, and dexterous in prosecution of that design I had newly undertaken, I looked about me and saw them all at my elbow. I now believed (which I easily perceived by their flearing looks) that they were all eye witnesses of my dangerous encounter. ‘Oh brother,’ said one, ‘how is’t, are you well?’ I asked him the reason of his impertinent question. ‘Because,’ said he, ‘we took notice of the great danger you were in even now narrowly escaped of being shot by a pocket inkhorn. Without doubt, brother, you are very hard-hearted to fly (riding full speed) at the very naming of, “Good sir be merciful,” the poor harmless soul making frequent repetition thereof, but you stopping your ears from all entreaties, his stone horse seemed to be his advocate, and to that intent ran after your mare, endeavouring to court her into an intercession for his master.’

I should never have stopped their mouths had I not shewed them what I had gotten, which was not inconsiderable.

It was twilight as we met with another prize, which was of a different temper from the former. For though he and his fellow traveller were (comparatively to any of us) but pygmies, yet of so undaunted resolution and unresistible courage, that neither threats of death, or torture (I am confident) could dull the edges of their courageous spirits, which might be in part understood by their deportment to us. For had we not slashed, carbonadoed, and forcibly bound them, rather than they would have yielded willingly, they would have stooped to death. Our power having subdued them, we withdrew them into a secret place, leaving them not anything valuable. Then did I learn to search with so strict care, that sooner might the Grand Turk turn Roman Catholic than conceal a penny from me. Here was I taught to be deaf when the poor traveller cries he is undone, and to be more flinty than adamant, not to be moved with sighs or tears. Having engaged them by oath not to follow us by Hue and Cry, or by means of a general rising of the towns adjacent, these two fellows robbed, rifled and amazed, we left wrapped up in woes, and hasted away to secure ourselves.

I shall conclude this chapter with a relation how I was quit with my comrades upon the account of fear or timorousness. Neither could they justly tax me with it, since they are things entailed upon the profession. For every crow that flies extracts a fear, and every thing that doth but stir, or make the bushes rush, seemed to our fearful fancy a constable to apprehend us for our theft. I cannot forget how strong a confusion arose amongst us by a trifle. The means were so small, and the occasion so ridiculous, that whenafter I thought thereon (though by myself) I could not forbear laughing excessively, and condemn the temerity of

such minds so meanly spirited. 'Twas thus in short. An owl who to gain shelter from the troubles of a sunshine day, when all the airy tribe (wandering) flock to him, screened himself in the obscure retired residence of an hollow tree. No sooner had he cloistered up himself, but between discontent and something of a pleasing satisfaction he first uttered his amazing screeks, being in a slumber, and dreaming of the assaults were made at him by his feathered enemies of all sorts, and then again awakening, whooped for joy that he was delivered from them. Thus did he whoop and hollow incessantly, which infused such a terror into our distrustful minds, that whips, switches and spurs were all too few to expedite our haste. For we absolutely thought those hollows were the outcries of the country following us for what we had committed. We at length took sanctuary in an inn, where we had some interest and confidence in our security.

Understanding that our day's work had been prosperous, our host calls lustily for sack, which the drawer doubles in the bar. The hostler must be one of our company too, and hail fellow with us, who knowing what courses we take, presume we dare not cavil, lest they betray our practices. *Sic nos non nobis.* So we rob for them, and not for ourselves, for by that time we have profusely frolicked (a bill whereof shall be brought in of twice as much as we called for) and have bestowed our largesses to the servants, and offered up our (expected) sacrifices to our landlady, or her daughter, for some private favour received, we find ourselves to have the least share, and so betake ourselves to our trade till apprehension take from us that liberty, and the law sentenceth us to pay our lives as a just debt we owe to justice.

## CHAPTER XXXII

*Scouring the road, he lights on a farmer's house which he intended to rob, but desists from that resolution, falling in love with his daughter, who was exceeding beautiful : gets her with child, under the pretence of marriage, but afterwards refusing it, she and her parents tax him with the undoing of the young woman : whereupon he leaveth them, giving them no other satisfaction than what they could gather out of a copy of verses he sent them*

RIDING along the road, I met with a young girl with a milk pail on her head, but I was amazed to see such perfection in one mortal face. I rid up to her very near, purposely to entertain some discourse

with her, introductory to a future acquaintance. Considering the ground, you may imagine the questions I propounded to this pretty rural innocent were frivolous enough, as, which was the readiest way to such a place, &c. which with much respect and modest confidence she resolved. She opening a gate to milk her cows, I followed, and tying my horse to an hedge, I begged her an excuse for being so rude, and beseeched her charitable opinion of my present actions, assuring her I would not offer the least injury nor prejudice to her chastity. Being over-persuaded with my protestations and vows to that purpose, she admitted me to sit down and discourse with her whilst she performed the office of a milkmaid. I could hardly contain myself within bounds when I viewed her pretty little hand stroking the dugs, which indeed so heightened my amorous passion that I soon forgot my oaths and promises, but after some dalliance, what by entreaties and love persuasions, and what by corporal strength, I obtained my desires. We then grew somewhat more familiar, but the burden of the song was, I had undone her ; let him that reads judge the truth thereof. We concluded at length that she should go home to her father's house, and that near night I would come thither likewise, according to the time appointed, as if I had never seen her before, and that I casually rid that way for information in the steering of my course regularly in the prosecution of my journey.

She subtly goes in, and acquaints her father and mother that there was a gentleman without whom by his countenance, garb and gesture, shewed himself no less ; that fearing to travel farther, being night, knowing not the way, desired to rest himself there till morning. With much respects from her parents to her own great satisfaction (which I discerned in her eyes) I was kindly entertained, and nobly treated. That night we intended to be better acquainted by the renovation of our late enjoyments, but our unlucky stars were impropositious to our amorous designs. Next morning I seemed to be very ill, that I might have some pretence for my staying, which I acquainted the daughter withal.

The old people were very loving and courteous, so that as soon as they heard thereof with much pity they visited me, and with as much care they provided what was necessary for me. I offered them money, shewing good store of gold, that they might have the better esteem of me. Thus I lay for at least a fortnight, several doctors had been with me, but none knew my distemper. All this while I nightly had the society of my fresh country mistress who deviated from the common customs of her sex, did not coyishly refuse that which was the centre of her hopes, wishes and desires. Fearing lest I might be suspected, I left off counterfeiting, and shewed them some recovery of my strength. When at any

time the good old people would come into my chamber to sit with me, the main subject of my discourse would be the resentments of their favours, and that if I lived I would gratefully repay them. Being restored to my former healthful condition, I one day told them I could never recompence their love and care of me but by marrying their daughter, whom I told them I loved most affectionately. Her parents made many excuses. As that she was but a poor country girl, and the like, but glad I perceived they were to hear such an overprized motion. Enquiries I made in a neighbouring town what this farmer was, whom I understood by all to be very wealthy, and that time was not more careful to furnish him with silver hairs than he industrious to maintain them by the procuration of a plentiful estate. My wanton was his only darling, for whom he furrowed the surface of the earth, and for whom he chose rather to sell than to eat his better sort of provision, that he might add to her portion. It was now he thought he had well bestowed his labour, since he had met with such a blessed opportunity wherein he should add gentility to his daughter's riches. O the slaughter of pigs, geese, capons, which as to some idol were sacrifices diurnally offered to procure my favour ! And as he was liberal in his food, so was not I sparing in the sending for wine, six dozen of bottles at a time. So that the old man was brought to this pass, that he cared not whether he spent his estate on me, or gave it, and that young girl so well pleased with her imaginary paradise here, that I am confident she would never have been induced to have exchanged this for any other on equal terms.

Inexpressible was our satisfaction on all hands, but nothing gave them greater content than to see us together, by which we had as many opportunities as we listed. My main aim was still to know of my young mistress what store of coin her father had, and where it lay, but to my great grief and vexation she told me he had not five pound within doors, having lately bought a purchase. I now thought it was to little purpose to stay longer, since I could not glean from her father's harvest, though I had reaped the crop of her mother's labour, and so resolved to be going, but not without one night's solemn leave-taking of her. The night being come, she purposely stayed up till all the rest were gone to bed. But we being too imprudently hasty in the kitchen, stumbled against two barrels piled one on the other and fell ; and we both were so entangled, that we could not disengage ourselves so soon but that her father came out crying, ' In the name of goodness what is the matter ? ' And groping about caught me by the naked breech. Seeing there was no remedy, I desired him to be silent ; and not spread his daughter's disgrace. If so, I would make her shortly a recompence. The old man was very much perplexed, and could not forbear telling his wife

of what had passed. They both cried out that their daughter was undone : The daughter was in the same tone, unless I would speedily marry her.

I stayed afterwards about some three days to colour the matter, and at last marched off *incognito*, sending her twenty pieces of gold, and a copy of verses, which, although I knew they understood not, yet I could not but express myself by writing, if for nothing else but mine own satisfaction.

Is it not strange thou and thy friends should say,  
 Thou art undone by me ? Let's see which way.  
 Have I not done to my great toil and pain,  
 What all thy friends cannot undo again.  
 Call but to mind the pleasures thou hast tasted,  
 The hours and minutes which with thee I wasted  
 To bring thee to perfection ; and to teach  
 Thee learning, far above the sex's reach.  
 Have I not taught thee oft' astronomy,  
 Within thy mother's garden, shew'd thee all  
 The starry course, and spheres celestial.  
 Did I not teach thee poetry that night  
 And how in tripped da&stys thou shouldst write.  
 I taught thee then *geometry*, the notion  
 Of *length* and *breadth*, *equality*, *proportion*  
 Of *quadrant triangles* ; the way to enter  
*Circles*, or *semi-circles* ; how the *centre*  
 Stands ever *fixt*, how that every *line*  
*Direct*, or *oblique*, *circular*, or *trine*  
 Hath still its *ending* ; how to take the *height*  
 Of any *blazing bearded star* by night.  
 I taught thee *music's harmony* to know,  
 To keep *true time*, where thou shouldst *rest*, and how :  
 Learned thee likewise thy notes, *large*, *long*, & *brief*,  
 Prickt minom, with a crotchet, and the chief  
 Of the lov'd art, good discant for to make  
 Upon a plain-song, *discords* also take  
 With a sweet close, and meltingly to fall  
 Into a treble, ravishing withal.  
 I shew'd thee why artists hold six *cliffs* best,  
 And why 'tis prized far above the rest,  
 Because it keeps the midſt ; the very *heart*  
 And soul of music is the inner part.  
 Yet art undone thou saidſt ? Is to impart  
 The hidden secrets of mysterious art  
 Undoing to thee. Hadſt thou ever spent  
 Thy means upon me, or thy money lent,

And had not paid the int'rest back to thee,  
Thou and thy friends might then have rail'd at me.  
What wert thou before I knew thee, but an ass,  
A rude neglected home-spun country lass,  
Knowing not how to speak, to go or look,  
But hide thy self when seen in every nook.  
And blush, nay tremble if thou wert found out ;  
Strive to be gone again, scratch, cry, and pout  
If one but touch thy apron, and wouldst spit  
In's mouth should come to kiss thee : for thy wit  
It did extend but unto no, and aye,  
Confess this truth, or else in faith you lie.  
This was thy eloquence ; why did I love thee ?  
Young, plump and fair thou wert, and that did move me.  
I took thee and refin'd thee, made thee new,  
Alter'd thy nature, chang'd thy former hue :  
Taught thee to kiss, embrace, and entertain  
A lover with that sp'rit and catching vein,  
The goddess of delight in her own sport  
May strive to equal thee, but must come short.  
Where hadst thou all thy breeding but from me ?  
Who bound thee first, and now have made thee free ?  
Thy petulant discourse, and apish toying,  
A change of humours, now a sullen coying,  
All which I taught thee, which do make thee rare,  
Now are thy attributes as well as fair :  
And what content is in a simpering fool,  
A squeamish thing, she doth man's spirits cool ;  
Beats back the flowing current of his blood,  
And ebbs it in the very spring or flood,  
'Tis harsh to hear a school boy in one tone  
Repeat his lesson like a bagpipe's drone,  
But it doth ravish with delight the ear  
Well worded and sweet languag'd lines to hear,  
Pronounc'd by one hath skill and art to know  
When he should raise his voice, when bring it low.  
For though a poet write good lines, it is  
The speaker that doth make them hit or miss.  
So though a wench be ne'er so fair, so neat,  
Or well proportioned, if she want the *feat*  
Of acting well upon love's theatre,  
It will not make man's loving passion stir.  
She's like one handsome in a splendid suit,  
Only to fit a stage and play the mute  
And shall not go clapt off with frequent kisses,  
The lover's *plaudit*, but distasteful hisses.

And such wert thou, when first I met with thee,  
 Now have I brought thee to thy *excellence*  
 With my excessive toil, and dear *expense*  
 Of my best blood ; and added to thee more  
 Than was in all thy *ancestors* before  
*Gentility.* I have enrich'd thy mind  
 With the chief ornament of woman kind  
 Behaviour : Taught thee to live and spend  
 Of thy own gettings, without help of friend.  
 And have I this ungrateful *girl* for all  
 That I have done to thee. Why dost thou call  
 Me thy *undoer*. How ere I will forgive,  
 For I'm in charity, and do believe  
 The only cause why I am taxed so sore  
 With thy undoing, 'cause I do no more.

## CHAPTER XXXIII

*From this farmer's house he rides he cared not whither : on the road he is strangely surprized by a woman robber in man's apparel : he discovers it by unbuttoning her breeches to search for private pockets within : they two conclude a perpetual friendship*

**A**BRUPTLY taking my leave of the farmer and his loving daughter, I rid a long time, but met with none worthy of my taking cognizance. Being wearied, I struck into an inn, and by that time I had thoroughly refreshed myself, the evening began to approach. Whereupon I mounted, and so put on. Passing by a small coppice in a bottom between two hills, a gentleman (as I then supposed) well armed, and handsomely accoutred, started out upon me, and bid me deliver instantly. Hearing him say so, I told him if he would have but the patience I would, and with that drew out a pocket pistol and fired it at him, without doing any execution. ‘If you are for a little sport,’ said the gentleman, ‘I shall shew you some instantly,’ whereupon drawing a pistol he shot me into the leg. Having so done with his sword (which hung ready at his wrist) neatly at a blow he cut the reins of my bridle, so that I was not able to guide my horse. But he being good at command, and used to the charge, with the winding of my body I gave him to understand what he was to do. ‘Come sir,’ said my adversary, ‘have you enough yet?’ ‘In faith sir,’ said I, ‘I'll exchange but one pistol more, and if that prove unsuccessful I shall submit to your mercy.’ Whereupon I shot, but

missed my mark. However I killed his horse, which instantly fell. My gentleman was so nimble that before I could think what to do, he had sheathed his sword in my horse's belly, which made me come tumbling down too with a horse pox. 'Once more,' said my antagonist, 'we are upon equal terms, and since the obscurity of the place gives us freedom, let us try our courages ; one must fall.' And thereupon with his sword (which was for cut and thrust) he made a full pass at my body, but putting it by I closed in with him, and upon the hug threw him with much facility. I wondered much at it, which I need not have done, since his nature (as afterwards I understood) was so prone to it.

Having him down, 'Now, sir,' said I, 'I shall teach you to be careful on whom you set. You have as imprudently undertaken this enterprize as a pickeroon did once, who seeing a man-of-war high built, and but few men aboard her discoverable, her portholes being likewise fast, clapped her aboard immediately, thinking she had been a merchantman ; but they found the contrary, the deck being instantly filled with men that were below, and running out her guns there could be no wisdom in resistance. Wherefore now sir, yield, or I shall compel you.' With much relunctancy he did. With cords I had ready for that purpose, I tied both his hands and feet, and so fell to rifling him. Unbuttoning his doublet to find whether there was no gold quilted therein, I wondered to see a pair of breasts so unexpectedly greater and whiter than any man's ; but being intent about my business, that amazement vanished from my thoughts. Then did I come to his breeches (which I laid open) my curious search omitted not any place wherein I might suspect the concealment of moneys. At last proffering to remove his shirt from between his legs, he suddenly cried out (and strove to lay his hand there, but could not) 'I beseech you, sir, be civil,' said he. I imagining that some notable treasure lay there obscured, I pulled up his shirt (alias smock) and found myself not much mistaken.

The sight so surprized me as if I had been converted into a statue by the head of a Gorgon, but after a little pause, I hastily unbound her, and taking her in my arms, 'Pardon me, most courageous Amazon,' said I, 'for thus rudely dealing with you ; it was nothing but ignorance that caused this error ; for could my dim-sighted soul have distinguished what you were, the greatness of love and respect I bear your sex would have deterred me from contending with you. But I esteem this my ignorance, my greatest happiness, since knowledge in this case would have deprived me of the benefit of knowing there could be so much prowess in a woman. For your sake I shall ever retain (since you have restored it) a good esteem of the worst of females.' She begged me not to be too tedious in my expressions, nor pump for eloquent phrases,

alleging this was no proper place to make orations in. ‘But if you will enlarge yourself, let us go to a place not far distant from this, better known, but to few besides myself.’ I liked her advice very well, and returning what I had taken from her, I followed it, by following her through divers obscure passages till we came to a wood, where in a place the sun had not seen since the first deluge, stood an house. At our approach the servants were all in a hurry who should first obey Mrs Virago’s commands, for they all knew her, being no way estranged to her disguise, but wondered to see St. George, and his trusty esquire on foot, neither durst they shew themselves inquisitive presently. With much respect we were conducted into a very stately room, where embracing each other, we knit an indissolvable tie of friendship.

### CHAPTER XXXIV

*After supper they enter in discourse, wherein she giveth him a short account of her life, and the cause of her undertaking such an extravagant and dangerous course, relating how notably she revenged herself on her husband for his unworthy and base carriage towards her*

HAVING refreshed ourselves with what the house afforded, and bottles and pipes had supplied the place of dishes, we dialogued as familiarly as if our acquaintance had bore equal date with our nativities. And now it was she laid herself open to me, not concealing anything, having before made myself acquainted with her greatest secret. Frankly she called for bottles of wine, which we smartly drank together out of beer glasses. Had not supper been speedily provided, which required a cessation for some time, I should not have been in a condition to discern the dish, nor him that brought it to the table. Having taken some repast, I began to be refreshed, she not in the least disturbed all this while. I pressed her to tell me what she was, and what manner of life she led.

Sir, said she, I cannot deny your request, wherefore to satisfy you, know that I was the daughter of a sword cutler. In my younger days my mother would have taught me to handle a needle; but my martial spirit gain-said all persuasions to that purpose. I could never endure to be among the utensils of the kitchin, but spent most of my time in my father’s shop, taking wonderful delight in handling those warlike instruments; to take a sword in my hand well mounted and brandish it, was reckoned by me among the chief of my recreations. Being about a dozen years of age, I studied all ways imaginable how I might make

myself acquainted with a fencing master. Time brought my desires to their complement, for such a one as I wished for casually came into our shop to have his blade furnished, and fortune so ordered it, there was none to answer him but myself. Having given him that satisfaction he desired, though not expecting it from me, amongst other talk I demanded of him whether he was not a professor of the noble science? (for I guessed so much by his postures, looks, and expressions.) He told me he was a well-willer thereunto. Being glad of this opportunity, desiring him to conceal my intentions, I requested him the favour as to give me some instructions how I should manage a sword. At first he seemed amazed at my proposal, but perceiving I was in earnest, he granted my petition, allotting me such a time to come to him as was most convenient. I became so expert at back-sword and single-rapier in a short time, that I needed not his assistance any longer, my parents not in the least mistrusting any such thing.

I shall waive what exploits I did by the help of a disguise, and only tell you that when I arrived to fifteen years of age, an inn keeper married me, and carried me into the country. For two years we lived very peaceably and comfortably together, but at length the insolent and imperious temper of my husband made me begin to shew my natural humour. Once a week we seldom missed of a combat between us, which frequently proved so sharp that it was well if my husband came off with a single broken pate, by which means the gaping wounds of our discontents and differences being not presently salved up, they became in a manner incurable.

I never was much inclined to love him, because he was of a mean dastardly spirit, and ever hated that a dunghill cock should tread a hen of the game. Being stinted likewise of money, my life grew altogether comfortless, and I looked on my condition as insupportable. Wherefore as the only remedy or expedient to mitigate my vexatious troubles, I contrived a way how I might sometimes take a purse. I judged this resolution safe enough (if I were not taken in the very fact), for who could suspect me to be a robber, wearing abroad upon such designs man's apparel, but at home only that which was suitable and agreeable to my own sex? Besides, none could have better encouragement and convenience than myself, for, keeping an inn, who is more proper to have in custody what charge my guests brought into my house than myself or if committed to my husband's tutelage, I could not fail to inform myself of the richness of the booty. Moreover, the hostess is the person whose company is most desired, before whom they are no ways scrupulous to relate which way they are going, and frequently what the affair was that led them that way.

Courage I knew I wanted not (be you my impartial judge, sir), what then could hinder me from being successful in such an enterprize? Being thus resolved, I soon procured necessary habiliments for these my contrivances, and never miscarried in any of them till now. Instead of going to market, or riding five or six miles about such a business (the usual pretences with which I blinded my husband), I would when out of sight ride a contrary road to this house (wherein we now are) and here metamorphose myself, and being fitted at all points, pad uncontrollably, coming off always most victoriously. Not long since my husband had about one hundred pounds due to him some twenty miles from his habitation, and designed such a day for its reception. Glad I was to hear of this, resolving now to be revenged of him for all those injuries and churlish outrages he had committed against me. I knew very well which way he went, and knew the time of his coming home, wherefore I way-laid him at his return. And happily as I would have it, he did not make me wait above three hours for him. I let him pass me, knowing that by the swiftness of my horse I could easily overtake him, and so I did, riding with him a mile or two before I could do my intended business.

At last (looking about me) I saw the coast clear on every side. Wherefore riding up close to him, and laying hold of his bridle, I clapped a pistol to his breast, commanding him to deliver, or he was a dead man. My imperious don seeing death before his face, had like to have saved me the labour by dying voluntarily without compulsion, and so amazed at his sudden surprizal, that he looked like an apparition, or one lately risen from the dead. ‘Sirrah,’ said I, ‘be quick.’ But a dead palsy had so seized every part of him, that his eyes were incapable of directing his hands to his pocket. But I soon recalled his lost spirits by two or three smart blows with the flat of my sword, which so wakened him out of that deep lethargy he was in that with much submissiveness he delivered me his money. After I had dismounted him and cut the reins of his bridle and girths, I basted him soundly, till that I had made jelly of his bones, and that his flesh looked like Egyptian mummy. ‘Now, you rogue’ said I, ‘I am even with you; have a care the next time how you strike a woman (your wife I mean) for none but such as dare not fight a man, will lift up his hand against the weaker vessel. Now you see what it is to provoke them, for if irritated too much, they are restless till they have accomplished their satisfactory revenge. I have a good mind to end thy wicked courses with thy life, but that I am loath to be hanged for nothing, such a worthless man. Farewell, this money shall serve me to purchase wine to drink healths to the confusion of such rascally and mean-spirited things.’ And so I left him.

She was about to have proceeded in such agreeable relations of her rencounters, when word was brought her up, two gentlemen below desired to speak with her. Craving my excuse, she went down, and in a little time returned with them. She made an apology to me for so doing, adding that if she had committed a crime herein, my future knowledge of those persons would extenuate it. By their effeminate countenances I could not miss of judging rightly what they were, *viz.*, females. After several discourses we grew so familiar that the longest continued friendship could not boast of more freedom.

Having talked and drank ourselves weary, we concluded to lie all in one chamber, there being two beds. What our nocturnal passages were, I'll give the reader leave to imagine.

### CHAPTER XXXV

*Here he relates (modestly) what satisfaction he received from his new female acquaintance, and what occasioned the two last come Amazons to attempt the hazardous enterprizes of the high pad : with their character and course of life*

THOUGH melancholy night had drawn her sable curtains about her hemisphere, yet the coverlet of our optics was not yet laid down to admit our active senses to their usual rest and repose. Obscured darkness had everywhere proclaimed silence about us on penalty of distracted incomposedness ; yet we feared not the breach of those binding laws, by breaking our minds to each other interchangeably. My conquered foe (now my new friend) first began to relate to her old associates the rise of our late rencounter, and the success, which she expressed with so much life and ingenuity that they knew not which to value most, her wit, or my courage. But when she came to relate the manner of the discovery of her sex, so petulant and facetious was her discourse that it occasioned a great deal of laughter and mirth among us. Having thoroughly discoursed varieties for further diversion one of these late incomers undertook to give us a summary of her comrades (or sisters) being therewith intermixed ; now I must give her leave to tell her own tale.

Sir (for to you I apply my discourse particularly, being wholly ignorant of what these two inseparable companions of mine well understand), I shall not trouble your ear with anything but what is absolutely

necessary. Laying aside therefore superfluous preambles, let me tell you I was the eldest daughter of a vintner in London, a man looked on so wealthy that he was called upon for alderman, having no more children than a son, myself, and this my dear sister, my metamorphosed follower. My brother I think was begot out of degenerate wine, and that made him so degenerate from virtue and a good spirit a hot fiery fellow, always on the fret, till his cask or carcass was pierced, and so I leave him as I found him, an empty hogshead.

This obstacle being removed (the Remora to our fair promising fortune) none were more extolled and courted for wealth and beauty (rarely seen together) than my sister and self. Men of all sizes, both of wit, estate and stature, daily frequented my father's house, pretending they came for the goodness of wine there vended, till they had got an interest in our acquaintance, and then they unmasked their meaning. Several overtures were made to our parents who, like good domestic politicians, seemed to like to encourage them to continue coming for their expense sake. Frequently they bespeak dinners, vying who should exceed in prodigality, thinking thereby to gain esteem, while the old fox did but laugh at them in private for their pains. My mother had her trade at her fingers' ends, for when she would oblige any of them to any treaty, it was but calling him son, or 'sirrah you are a wag, my Benjamin must have the largest portion, &c.' By this means she chained them to the house, and to engage them the more, permitted us to bear them company. But fearing lest we might glut our idolators by too long staying (for we sooner surfeit on delicacies than coarser fare) our mother would call us, pretending business, and would then supply the place herself, then would they charge afresh, till they had blinded one another.

I must needs say, my mother's company was deservedly desirable, for though she had passed her age's *Æquino<sup>x</sup>*, yet her beauty appeared but a very little declining. In her youthful days she was the wonder of her sex, and was so generally talked of among beauty hunters, that our tavern was never empty, and happy was he that could procure the drinking of a glass with her at the bar, but transported, if they could obtain the favour to have her company in a room. Which for profit she sometimes permitted, and something else, which my father winked at gladly, because he could not find the like expedient to enrich himself. She was comely, tall, and of a beauteous blushing brown; her hair proper to her complexion, neatly put into curls and folds by nature. Her face was made up of excellent parts, as a quick eye and full, her circled brows graceful and big, her nose not over Roman with a full mouth; the largeness of the lips commendable, because plump and red, her dimpled chin (which Nature had drawn, with a wanton touch of her pencil) did singularly set

out her looks most comely. Her neck was round, rising, full and fat ; her body well fed, not fat ; an Italian don's delight. When any gentlemen came in, methinks I now see how she leered out of her enticing Italianated eyes, able to confound a saint. In short, her hair was enough to enchant you into those mazes, but that her looks were so near, which hooked yours into her eyeballs, full, black and rolling, and when she had you, she held you there. Neither was she a niggard of those gifts so liberally bestowed on her, but communicated a taste thereof to divers, for as she was naturally prone to whorishness, so she gave her inclinations the reins, and at last became so impudent that she did frequently that in our sights which, though we understood not, being too young, yet forcibly drew a blush into our tender cheeks. Being in her prime, she gave herself so much liberty that she was a shame to her sex ; there was not any vice that was attended either by pleasure or profit, but she would be sharer therein. And now being gulled with shadows and impostures, she drew up the portcullis of her heart, and laid the gates thereof wide open to her own ruin.

Who would imagine, that a pleasing countenance could harbour villainy, or that a smile could sit upon the face of mischief ? But therein she shewed herself a courtezan of the right stamp, that for her own advantage can entertain man's appetite with wanton dalliance, but will never make assurance of settled love. When men think themselves most interested in her, then was it frequently that they were farthest from her. I am somewhat the longer in my mother's character that I might the fuller demonstrate what was the original that I so exactly copied in the actions of my own life. Did parents consider how prevalent their wicked examples are with their issue, they would be less curious to cleanse their houses of dirt and dust against the coming of their friends, and more careful not to see them hung with vices in the presence of their children. You see I know the difference between good and evil, because I talk so well, though I act so ill.

But to proceed. How is it possible the daughter should be chaste that cannot reckon up the adulteries of her mother, though she be ne'er so well in breath, without a dozen stops or intermissions at the least ? Such as are conscious to these faults in others cannot but be capable of them in themselves. The hearing of them told begets a willingness to try them ; the seeing of them done, a wilfulness to do them. She presumed, I believe upon our indiscretions as children, persuading herself we had not wit enough to discern it. But alas ! she erred in her cyphers, and was much mistaken in her accounts : for we coming to years, did not stick to that in her sight, which she before would not forbear in ours. And with what face could she reprove us ?

The crooked wretch must not upbraid the lame,  
Nor must the Moor the tawny Indian blame.

Her house did daily swarm with such as pretended more than common kindness to me. Several my parents approved of as wealthy, and pronounced them to me, whom I only disliked for want of comeliness. One I confess I could have fancied highly for his wit, had not his formation been so extravagant and preposterous. Oh, the innumerable quantity of poetic brats which Pallas-like sprang out of his head, and so pestered my chamber, that I could hardly sleep for the trampling of their feet ; some whereof appeared so fair unto me from a father so foul, that I have carried them in my bosom to converse with them among the solitary shades. I protest civility could scarce keep me from laughing outright every time I saw him, his whole composure appeared to me so ridiculous. For first, his head seemed to sink down into his breast, his eyes staring affrighted at the danger, whilst his mouth continually gaped, as if it intended to cry out for help : his back and breast bunched out, as if a wallet stuffed at both ends had hung over his shoulder behind and before. Though extravagant enough, you could not say he shewed much waste. Had you seen him on a rainy day, by the length of his legs (yet of dwarfish stature) you would have thought him mounted on stilts, and wading through the dirt with a boy at his back. Now let me skip over his person, and only tell you how I served him, and then I have done with him. That day I saw him not, I had his representation sent me, which was good diversion, but his presence was insufferable : to the intent therefore that I might be rid of him, I sent him these lines.

SIR,

You are the son of *Esop*, for I find  
Legitimation by your shape and mind ;  
Deform'd ye are alike, thence 'tis thought fit  
That such defects should be supply'd by wit.  
Your aspect's monstrous foul, yet don't complain,  
Your issues fair, the product of your brain.  
But stay, I must recall myself, for know  
My praises are like to ourself, too low :  
Troth when I view you well, my fancy must  
Imagine you much like a capon trust,  
Or like Sir *Hudibras*, nick-nam'd *All-feather*,  
Or like one ty'd both neck and heels together :  
Nor do not think Pygmean sir that I  
Will fall in love with mere deformity ;  
Then court some Succubus, a fiend will be  
A fitter match : so think no more on me.

These lines so nettled him, that having belched out some execrations against me and our sex, I never heard more of him. To be short, there was none could get any interest in me, but our head-drawer, a neat flaxen-haired dapper fellow. So passionately we loved one the other, that we could not forbear holding some private correspondence at nights. My father at length suspecting us, turned away his man, whose absence I could not brook, and therefore resolved to follow after, which I did, taking with me what ready money my father had in his custody, and finding out my dear comrade. This was the result of our consultation, that I should clothe myself like a man, and so travel together.

It will be too tedious to relate how and whither we went, but let it suffice to tell you, that after we had run through France and Italy, and wearied ourselves in foreign parts, we concluded to return to England. We landed at Dover, having made an end of our voyage and money together, saving so much as would purchase horse and arms, for padding was the way we agreed on to recruit our decayed stock. Many were the robberies we committed, taking such a course that the devil could hardly detect us. Sometimes when we had robbed, and fearing lest we should be taken by the Hue and Cry, it was but turning my horse loose, and then would I put on woman's apparel (which I always carried in my portmante in such expeditions) and getting up behind my dear friend, I passed unsuspected as his wife. This stratagem frequently proved a safeguard to us both. By this means we several times robbed houses, under the pretence of my friend taking lodgings for himself and wife.

To tell you in what manner and how often we played our pranks under a double disguise, would take up more time than is convenient. Wherefore I shall now wind up my story. My comrade, in an unhappy enterprize, received a shot in his shoulder, which proved mortal, for not long after he died. Being then destitute of my dear companion, I had several thoughts of returning home, but that I liked my trade so well, I could not be induced to leave it. However, I went to my father's house frequently with roaring blades, but they knew me not, though sometimes they would stare upon me, as if their eyes would have started out of their heads for joy to see their old acquaintance. At last I took a convenient opportunity under the veil of courtship to discover myself to my sister (here present) who understanding my course of life, and knowing well her own constitution, for my sake resolved to hazard all, and run one risk with me. Having instructed her how she should rob her father, as I had done before her, we met at a place appointed, and so took our journey hitherward. Now if our conversation may be any

ways pleasing, and our service advantageous, we are both your devoted servants.

She uttered these words with such a grace, that I could not forbear embracing her. After we had plighted faiths, and mutually caressed each other, we betook ourselves to rest, which you may imagine was little enough.

### CHAPTER XXXVI

*How he with his new female padding comrade contrived notable subtle and safe ways to rob together ; with a relation of some remarkable stories which were the effects of those consultations*

ANGRY I was when I perceived the appearance of day, which I knew would unavoidably rob me of my present delight and pleasure. But it was only my fear of being deprived of so much bliss made me so grossly to mistake, for I quickly found my happiness enlarged by the approaching light, my sense of seeing being now made co-partner with that of feeling. Love had now his eyes restored him, who before only groped for the naked truth in the dark. Now did we begin afresh to renew our late sweet nocturnal pastime, and could our bodies have any ways answered our boundless desires, our bed would have been the sole concern we should have minded, till that time which must put a period to this transitory life.

But to avoid the censure of sluggishness, we all resolved to rise, and unanimously strive and contend who should make the best proof of the greatest ingenuity in contriving what may give the largest satisfaction both to mind and body. As a præludium to our intended purpose, and a restorative to our decayed strengths, we first resolved upon buttered sack, with other things of like comforting natures, and now finding ourselves by this first essay so much beyond expectation revived and fitted for mirth and pleasure, we straight gave order for a dinner to be speedily prepared, whose composition should be of the choicest viands. And that the time might not seem tedious in the interim, it was put to the vote what pastime we should make choice of for divertisement. Some were for bodily exercise, but I was clearly against that, having so lately tired myself with it : besides my lameness, which was occasioned by the shot I received in my leg from my valiant renconteress. It was at length agreed on by all that we should entertain ourselves with music and discourse. ‘A match,’ said the eldest sister, ‘and to the intent you may see

my freedom and forwardness to propagate your proposition, I shall give my assistance first to heighten your spirits by vocal and instrumental music ; having thus broken the ice, I question not but you will prove ready followers, and swim with me in the same streams of delight.' Whereupon she took up a lute, and having praised that instrument above all other for its sweet ravishing harmony, 'I will now try' said she 'how my voice will agree with it,' and thus sang :

What need we to care !  
W' have enough and to spare,  
What we gain we will drink and spend on't ;  
But when all is gone,  
We will get more anon ;  
Then make it all fly, there's an end on't.

We will rob, we will steal  
For our own common weal.  
Let the miser be damn'd with his treasure :  
Our designs we will shape  
For the juice of the grape,  
Thus spin out our lives in our pleasure.

We think it more fit  
To live by our wit,  
And hazard our lives on adventure ;  
We are sons of the blade  
Never bred to a trade,  
We scorn'd to be bound by indenture.

Not for flattery, but due merit, we could give her no less than applause. Though that word may favour of something of a compliment, yet I will assure you there was no such thing passed between us ; we knew how to improve our time to a far greater advantage, leaving such empty vain expressions to such who have little else to do than to play with a lady's fan, or to consume their times in combing their periwigs, not only in the streets and playhouses, but even (irreverently) in the holy places of divine worship.

The pertinency of this song to the practice of our lives did as much please us all as the sweet harmony of that voice did ravish our delighted ears. And lest our satisfaction should any ways cool or abate, more musical fuel was laid on, to warm our benumbed spirits, if any such unlikely thing should happen.

Whereupon her sister (not making use of any instrument to assist

her voice, being sensible it was good and natural) frankly, and with a becoming freedom, sang to this purpose.

'Tis liberty which we adore,  
It is our wealth and only store ;  
Having her we all are free,  
Who so merry then as we ?  
'Tis she that makes us now to sing,  
And only she can pleasure bring.

*Chorus.*

Since we then such freedom have,  
We'll purchase pleasure, or a grave ;  
'Tis better so, than live a slave.

As I am free, so will be still,  
For no man shall abridge my will :  
I'll pass my life in choicest pleasure,  
On various objects spend my treasure :  
That woman sure no joy can find,  
Who to one man is only join'd.

*Chorus.*

Since we then such freedom have,  
We'll purchase pleasure or a grave :  
'Tis better so, than live a slave.

What pleasure is in full cram'd bags ?  
No more than is in beggar's rags :  
Unless made use of, what is cash ?  
A fine new nothing, glittering trash :  
Being well employ'd, it is a thing  
Which doth delight and honour bring.

*Chorus.*

Since we then such freedom have,  
We'll purchase money, or a grave :  
'Tis better so, than live a slave.

About to have proceeded in this manner round, we were interrupted by dinner coming up, which came as seasonable as our stomachs could require. Waiving all ceremonies, we instantly fell to it without the tediousness of long-winded graces ; neither were we long at it, our hands and appetites being alike nimble and quick to give the body its required satisfaction.

After dinner we had various discourses about the vanity and imbecility of the female sex ; winding up our argument, one said, she would not

be a mere woman for the whole universe, and wondered that man, so noble and rational a soul, should so unman himself in his voluntary enslaving himself to a woman's will. I wonder how they dare boast of conquests, when they must acknowledge they are daily overcome by a weak and feeble creature, woman, a thing which for want of heat sunk into that sex.

With suchlike prattle we entertained ourselves for an hour or two, and now it was put to the vote what course we should steer, and what design we should next put in execution. Different were our opinions for a while, but at last we concluded unanimously about the evening to set out and rob jointly, the manner which we laid down was thus. The youngest sister should ride behind the eldest sister on a pillion in her own proper apparel, and my Virago behind me in the like female garb, and this we judged to be the safest project we could propound, for who could be so senseless to imagine us robbers, riding in that manner double-horsed, and attended with the greatest symptoms of innocence?

Hereupon we fell to work, that is to say, endeavoured to get such necessaries as were most convenient for our enterprize, as pillions, safeguards and short swords for my females, pocket pistols they had already. Having gotten what woman's attire we wanted, and all things ready, we mounted with boots, which we dirtied on purpose, to the intent those which saw us might not suspect but that we had rid many miles that day. It was about six of the clock in the evening when we did set forth; we had not rid above two hours, but there overtook us four horsemen, and demanded whither we were travelling? I answered them, to such a place. Now did our two subtle queans which rid behind us play their parts to the life, pretending a great fear of being robbed, and carried their business so craftily that they gave the gentlemen to understand their pretended fear and jealousy, and the better to cloak our design, 'Pray thee my dear,' said I, in a voice not over-loud, but just so that they might hear me, 'do not be afraid, I am confident they are no other than what they appear, that is, honest civil persons.'

Hereupon, one of the gentlemen over hearing, rode up close to me, and comforted my supposed wife behind, protesting they were no such persons as she imagined, that they were gentlemen of good estates all, and so far they were from offending any, that they would with the hazard of their lives defend the injured on the road. We seemed hereat to be much satisfied, returning them many thanks, and desiring their company, which they kindly granted, saying, 'Come follow, we'll lead the way gently on, and stand between you and danger.' I was glad to hear them say they would ride before, for now I judged our business to be facile,

and easily done. I now whispered behind me, telling her, as soon as ever she saw me give a blow, she should immediately leap off the horse, and make use of what weapons she had. Her sister had the like instructions given her.

My brother, as I called him, riding up close with me, received directions from me that when we came to the bottom of the hill, he should at the same time with me directly discharge his truncheon on the head of his foregoer, with all the force he could sum up together.

When they least suspected us in the rear, we executed what we designed with such exact time and so successfully, that a divided minute did not difference their fall. Our women were as swift as lightning upon them, depriving them of all the advantages of rising, whilst we set spurs to our horses, and overtook the other two afore, who insensible of what was done, were strangely surprized and amazed, to see our swords and pistols ready to dispatch our hellish commands. Fear on a sudden had so chained up their tongues as that they could not utter a word, till we forced them to it by threatening their unavoidable deaths if they did not instantly deliver. Being willing to ransom their lives by their money, they gave us what they had, as not to stand in competition with a matter of eternal concern. Having reaped our desires, we dismounted them, and cutting their girths and bridles, we took their pieces with the saddles, and threw them into an obscure place. The horses were whipped over into a field. Our prisoners we led into a little wood, where we bound them, as the rest of our gang did, who were more expeditious than we in our work. Having finished our business to our hearts' content and security, we mounted, and so rid back again to our old quarters. Our landlord wondered at our speedy dispatch, but had like to have expired for joy when he saw our booty was so considerable, for you are to understand he had a quarter share with us. Here did we carouse and feast for a long time, not so much as thinking on any prize, and the truth on't is, my leg grew so bad by my shot, that I could not ride but in great pain. Wherefore I resolved to lie still till its cure should be effected by my loving and skilful landlady. My wound being healed, I resolved to follow my custom, and rob alone, not so much that my profit would be greater, but I began to be tired with my three former dainties ; nay more, they were so insatiate in those pleasures they enjoyed that my strength could not cope with such excesses. Wherefore pretending business of privacy a little way off, I gave them the slip, knowing how difficult it would be to part from them knowingly.

## CHAPTER XXXVII

*Being now upon the pad alone, he baits at an inn with which he was acquainted, and there by the hostler is informed of a booty, which he pursued, but was soundly banged for his pains, losing both his horse, and what small matter he had left*

VERY loath I was to part with these Amazons, neither should I, had not scarcity of money called me away to look out for more. For no man could ever be better pleased with society than I was in theirs, enjoying such persons whose courage and fidelity might vie with the most approved male friend, and reaping at the same time the choicest favours Venus can confer on her chiefest favourites.

One remarkable passage concerning this female robber I had like to have forgot, which was this. She would frequently pad or rob on foot in woman's apparel, but so disguised, that she could not easily be known. Getting a cushion, or some such thing (by putting it under her clothes to make her seem big with child), she would usually walk abroad, it may be three or four miles at length, near some beaten road. Thus had she the benefit of viewing all that rid by. If she saw any single person by whose equipage she might imagine him to have his pockets well furnished, before he came near her, she used to feign herself both exceeding sick and weary, groaning in a most pitiful manner. What man's heart could be so obdurate as to pass her by neglected, and without taking any notice of her? Who would not proffer a big bellied woman (tired and indisposed) the courtesy of riding behind him for a little way to refresh her? As she told me, she met with very few that did not take her up behind them, seeing her in that deplorable condition. Having rid a pretty way, seeing the coast clear, and coming to a convenient place to execute her design, she would pretend the gentleman's hat that rid before her offended her eyes. Most in point of civility would put it off, though they immediately put it on again. Then would she with a cord with a nooze which she had ready for the purpose, clap it over his head, and so whipping off the horse pull the man after her, oftentimes half strangling him, serving him as the mutes do the Bassas with their black box and silk string therein, when they are designed for death by the Grand Senior's appointment and command. Taking the advantage of their being half suffocated, she could easily first bind their legs, making them so secure, that they were so far from resisting that they were totally at her devotion.

But to return where I left off. Before I took my leave of her,

perceiving the temper of this brave noble spirit, and that it was poetically inclined, out of my true resentment of her due merit, I gave her these lines, which she thankfully received, though modestly denied to concern her in the least.

Stand back ye *muses*, *Mars*, come guide my pen,  
 To rank this female hero 'mongst thy men.  
 So, so, 'tis well. Now let us to the matter,  
 'Tis such a subject that I cannot flatter.  
 The pantalooners strut, and muffetoons ;  
 Taking great pains for to appear buffoons.  
 They do seem men, and like 'em wear their swords :  
 But dare not draw ; such may be kill'd with words :  
 These love a lady, and affect perfumes :  
 Who *lighter* are (than what they wear), their *plumes*.  
 Thou scorn'st such shadows, or *chimæras*, which  
 Are good for nothing, but a woman's itch.  
 Thou lovest that man alone, that dares in spite  
 Of fate, scorn *death* himself in fight.  
 Thy actions speak thee *man*, who dares deny it ?  
 Believe this truth, or if you dare, then try it ;  
 'Twill be a favour to her, for they'll find.  
 That never man enjoy'd so brave a mind.

Bidding this my Minerva and her associates adieu, I rid on in the next road, without meeting any I thought requisite to fasten on. At length I came to an inn where I was very well acquainted, and intended there to have refreshed myself ; but the hostler prevented it, not suffering me to alight, telling me hastily, that there was a gentleman not an hour since baited there, who had in his portmanta a considerable purchase, that he was a poor spirited fellow, whom he knew, and that he ever had an absolute antipathy to a naked sword, and that he was gone such a road, &c. I stayed not so long as to drink, but with all possible expedition made after him. Ascending a small hill, I discovered him who rid an ordinary pace, wherefore I slackened mine to cool my horse ; however I soon overtook him, and rode by him, not without viewing him well. Riding down the hill I did alight, purposely that he might overtake me, which he did ; being past I mounted, and at the very bottom I bid him stand and deliver instantly, or he was a dead man. 'Sis, sis, sir,' said he lisping very much, 'I-I-I-I am going home.' I bid him not make these proposed delays, lest he smarted, and therefore wished him to dispatch and give me his money, for I was informed (I told him) that he had a sum behind him. 'T-t-t 'tis true,' he replied, 'b-b-but it is my father's m-m-money.' 'Hang your father and his

stuttering coxcomb too,' said I, 'I must have what you have.' 'W-wh-why then you shall,' said he, and with that drew out a pocket pistol and fired it at me which made my horse start, and very much surprizing me, expecting not the least resistance from such a seemingly ignorant and cowardly fellow. By that means he had time and liberty to draw his sword (which was almost as broad as a chopping knife) and came upon me so furiously, that I am sure I had not time to defend myself: he so laid about him, that I soon lay at his mercy.

I was forced to beg very hard for my life, which I obtained with very much ado: then he fell to my pockets, not leaving any suspected place for money unsearched: by which I guessed him to have belonged to our profession, and was not mistaken, as you shall understand by and by. He went to my horse, and viewing him, he seemed to like him very well. Wherefore coming to me (for he had cut me off my horse) 'Ha-ha-hark you,' said he, 'you are but a raw thief, a me-me-mere child, and it is but fit that you should be sent to a ma-ma-master to be ta-ta-taught knowledge, and be whipped for your foo-foo-lishness. You said you must have my fa-fa-father's money, but I tell you I must have your hau-hau-horse, and so farewell.' He was so kind as to leave me his, which was a pitiful jade; however, necessity compelled me to mount him, and anger spurred me on to be revenged of the hostler, but I better considered with myself, that probably that horse was known there, and so I should be detected; wherefore I rid a contrary way, and took up my lodging in a place I never had been in before.

As soon as I alighted, abundance of people flocked about me, seeing me all bloody, to know the cause thereof. Whereupon I related in a very doleful manner how this sad accident befell me. That travelling to such a place with about 150 pieces of gold, I was set upon by five or six lusty rogues, who robbed me, and because I made what resistance I could, to save what I had, it being my whole estate, they had thus barbarously mangled me, hacking and hewing me till I grew weary, and at last with much difficulty escaped with my life. There was a general sorrow for me, pitying me so much that the inhabitants strove one with another, who should shew me most kindness. A chirurgeon was presently sent for, who (as he was a barber too) barbarian like, dressed my wounds; some were employed in procuring me cordials, and getting me things necessary; others were sent out to make inquiry after the thieves.

This gentleman that served me this trick, was (as I understood afterwards) an highwayman himself, who being well born and bred, but his father being either at that time unable or unwilling to supply him with what money his lavish expenses required; nature having bestowed on

him a stout resolute heart, and strength answering his courage, betook himself to the pad. In which profession he behaved himself so gallantly that he was styled the father or governor of his tribe. But his attempts proved not always successful, so that there was hardly a county in England, wherein he had not been in prison, being frequently arraigned for his life, but having eminent and potent friends, he still came off. This did his father and kindred so frequent, that they grew weary, and he narrowly escaping with his life one time, and finding that his kindred mattered not much if he were hanged, he submitted himself to his father, making a solemn protestation that he would never follow the like courses again. Whereupon his father settled an annual estate upon him, on which he now liveth very orderly. Thus much briefly of my overcomer.

I had not laid above a night in this place for the cure of my wounds, before I was questioned about my horse by some persons that knew him well, and taken on suspicion for murdering the gentleman, the right owner, which seemed more than probable by various circumstances. First, this gentleman was not to be found, which well might be his late success having conveyed him on the wings of speed to an obscure place, there to revel and congratulate his good fortune by the speedy spending his late purchase. Next, my many and dangerous wounds sufficiently declared the great hazard of the two combatants' lives ; but that which chiefly committed me, was the gentleman's horse, which I like an impudent insipid coxcomb must ride on, which reason must needs say was the ready way to ride post to the gallows. Notwithstanding the miserable condition of my carbonadoed body, I was inclosed between a pair of walls, and had undoubtedly been hanged for being robbed, had not the gentleman appeared again amongst his friends ; then did my accusers slip their necks out of the collar, and none prosecuting me, I was discharged.

Staying a little while in the town for refreshment, an old acquaintance there found me, of whom I cannot but give you a character, since the passages of his life hath been so remarkable and notorious, and from the short relation of which I question not but the reader will reap much benefit and satisfaction. For indeed examples have so great an influence and power upon the actions of man's life, as that we find men are more wrought upon by precedent than precept. To this intent, preceding generations have made it their grand care and labour, not only to communicate to their posterity the lives of good and honest men, that thereby man might fall in love with the smooth and beautiful face of virtue, but have also taken the same pains to recount the actions of criminal and wicked persons, that by the dreadful aspects of vice, they may be deterred from embracing her.

## CHAPTER XXXVIII

*He here reneweth his acquaintance with a cunning fellow, that formerly studied the law, and since made it his sole business to practise the abuse thereof*

A BOUT four days after I was discharged, there came into the same inn where I lay a gentleman, who hearing some of the house dis coursing of the robbery that was lately committed, he desired to be particularly informed, which they did, adding that the robbed gentle man lay wounded in the house ; he enquired of them my name, which they told him, as I had told them, having a name for every month in the year. Very desirous he was, if it might be no disturbance to me, to give me a visit, unto which I condescended, a servant to that intent desiring to know my pleasure. As soon as he entered the room, I verily thought I knew him, though I could not for the present call to mind where I had seen him. I was so muffled about the chops, that it was impossible for him to have any knowledge of me. He sat down by me, and asked me various questions, to which I gave him convenient satisfaction. At last I recalled my memory, and asked him if his name was not so — ; he answered me affirmatively. ‘ Dear friend,’ said I, ‘ I am glad to see you : come, be not amazed ; my right name is so — ’ With that he embraced me, and was overjoyed that he so casually found me out. Laying aside all formal niceties, I unbosomed myself to him, not mincing the truth in the least ; for we know ourselves birds of a feather, rogues together.

He condoled my wounded condition, and comforted me, by telling me that he would not leave me till I was well, and that he would procure me such a plaster for the wounds I had received that should prove very effectual. In short it was this ; by following closely the footsteps of his crafty advice I got of the country the one hundred and fifty pounds I pretended to be robbed of. He stayed with me above a fortnight, enjoying what pleasures the country was capable to afford us. Being by ourselves (for so we designed the major part of every day) we discoursed interchangeably of nothing but our adventures, &c. how we might lay new plots for our advantage. I gave him the epitome of what I had done, since I left him, who took more pleasure in the relation of my rouqueries, than the Quaker did in courting his mistress mare near Rochester. But when he began to relate his villainies, I was struck dumb with admiration ; and what cannot a man do if endued with the strength of his natural parts, sharpness of wit, quickness of apprehension, depth

and solidity of judgment, with a tenacious memory? Now because he ever had a smooth and insinuating tongue, with the command thereof, I shall give him leave to tell his own tale.

## CHAPTER XXXIX

*The life of a law abusing cheat*

Dear friend,

FOR what am I beholding, it is to Nature alone; for as I am ashamed of my birth, so I cannot condemn my father for not bestowing education on me, since his condition was so low. Yet his spirit was so high, that he would not beg himself, though ready to starve, however would permit me, who was the sole support of his and my life. I was ten years old before I could meet with any preferment. One day fortune favouring, she offered to my view a commodity which, with confidence and dexterity I might carry off undiscovered. My hands successfully effected what my mind suggested; it was but of small value, the utmost I could get for it was a link, with which that night I more than trebled what it cost. This course I followed by night, and ran errands by day, so that I had furnished myself both with clothes and money. In process of time I was admitted as a servant into a scrivener's house; my master taking a liking to me, put me to a writing-school, where being capacitated for his business, he put me into the shop, and instructs me in his employment. I had not been there long before I made myself very eminent by studying the law, the rudiments whereof I understood so well, as I knew how to ingross an indenture. This made my master esteem me, and that estimation made me proud, and being not yet bound his apprentice, I thought I knew better things than to be his servant any longer, and so left him. Then was I with an attorney a while, afterwards with a counsellor, till thinking I had law enough, I took an house, resolving to see what I could do with it myself. I solicited several men's businesses, giving a general content, insomuch that my credit and reputation increased daily.

Now did I marry for wealth, having not the least affection, for her face looked much like a gammon of bacon with the skin off. Some time I lived with her, too long for any delight I took in her, and being resolved to be rid of her, this stratagem I used. I shewed her more kindness than formerly, pretending I would do nothing but what I would consult with her about; which so wrought upon her love that she would have been

content to have sacrificed her soul to my interest, and made her withal so opinionative, that she judged every silly and unsavoury expression she uttered was no less than an oracle. Having brought my business thus far to perfection, I came home one evening very melancholy : very inquisitive she was to know the cause. ‘ My dear,’ said I, ‘ I will not conceal anything from thee ; such a gentleman hath injured me, and I cannot rest till I be revenged. Thou knowest my nature, if wronged I am implacable, it is a fault I cannot help.’ ‘ Come, come,’ said my wife, ‘ let us go to bed and there we will consult.’ Being there she asked me how we should bring our revenge about ? I seemed to study awhile,— ‘ I have it now,’ said I, ‘ thou art with child ; he is one tender of his reputation ; tax him for being the father of it, and that will do the work to my full content.’ Very loth she was, because of the talk of the people, but I satisfied this poor silly harmless soul by telling her that as long as I knew her chaste, it was no matter what others said of her. Whereupon she condescended, and had the person before a justice, where she swore positively that she was got with child by that gentleman. I took advantage of her confession, turned her off, leaving them both to the disposal of the spiritual court. This was my first prank.

One of my clients another time, having bought a good handsome tenement, had so much confidence as to put me in possession. My client having purchased an estate in the country, was forced to be there to look after the management of his rural affairs, for some certain time ; I took this opportunity to forge a lease to myself, at an easy rent from him that constituted me his trustee. I soon found a chapman for it, and sold this lease, receiving a good round fine, which had been a penny-worth indeed, had the title been good. Unto this man I delivered possession, who dwelt in it till the return of the right owner, who coming to his said house, wondered to find every thing so contrary to his expectation, and demanding of the tenant by what power he inhabited in that dwelling, the poor man shewed him his forged lease, declaring that he had paid his fine to such a man, nominating me, who at that time was not to be found. The landlord could do no less than eject him his house, but finding him so grossly abused, required nothing for the time he was in it, but left him to the law to require satisfaction of me. The abused being very much troubled he should be thus deceived, made so strict enquiry after me, and so unwearied in his search, that at last he found me out, who said, nothing should serve his turn, but he would for this cheat have the rigour of the law executed upon me. Knowing of what a dangerous consequence it was, I got my adversary arrested in an action of a thousand pounds, who wanting bail was committed to Newgate, where grief released me by his death from ensuing prejudice.

I afterwards forged a deed of sale of an house hard by the former, which would have made more for my advantage, had not this man discovered my design, which made me the more inveterate against him and his. For this was always my temper, though nothing could provoke me to express my anger in company (as having a perfect command over my passions in that nature) yet if any durst prosecute his own or friends' right in opposition to me, I seldom left him till I had either absolutely undone him, or so impoverished him that he should be in no condition to hurt me, or help himself, making him at last confess that he had been better to have sat down with his first loss. And this I effected the easier, having a conscience that scrupled nothing, and instruments that would swear anything. These contrivances of mine made me generally reputed a subtle and knowing man, which brought me in multiplicity of business, with considerable incomes. Neither did I alone solicit for such as were concerned in the law, but I had my concernment with lifters, who did put so great a confidence in me, that what they got was left solely to my disposal, either by sale or pawn, for which I had my brokerage, and something else besides. Now was I grown so famous (my garb adding much to my fame, which was very splendid) that if any intricate controversy, reference, or law suit arose among my neighbours, they knew no person fitter to make their appeal to than myself for arbitration. If any again wanted either money, goods, nay a cooler of concupiscence, I was adjudged the best procurer. By these means I tumbled in money, and to let the world know it, I wore several suits every day, having besides habits suitable to any design.

Now did those that knew me not even adore me ; those that were acquainted with me, out of fear were forced to shew me more than ordinary respect. I confess had I now walked in a medium, this had been the time (as they say there is a time allotted to every man) to have made myself for ever. But knavery was so implanted in my nature, that I could not forbear cheating the dearest friend I had, if he entrusted me, circumvent every man that had more honesty than myself, and though I was sure to damn soul and body, yet I must attempt the destruction of my adversary, and to speak the truth, I did not stick to betray my friend, if any advantage would accrue to me thereby. For one trick I served an ancient widow, I now and then find some internal gripings. I cannot tell whether they proceed from conscience because I never knew what conscience was, and this it is. A gentlewoman of my acquaintance, whose sole dependance was upon lodgers, having taken up a great many goods to a considerable value to furnish her house befitting the reception of any person of quality for which she was indebted, and having too often put off her creditor, came to me, desiring the favour of me to procure her

fifty pounds, telling me, that such a knight, and such a squire would stand bound with her. ‘That will not do,’ said I, ‘for the gentry have so many tricks to keep citizens out of their money that they will have better security.’

Perceiving her present necessities were very urgent, I knew I could do anything with her; wherefore I persuaded her to confess a judgment: she agreed to it. I told her such a day it should be done but I would speak with the party first: according to the day prefixed I came, bringing with me a warrant of attorney, with a friend or two to attest it; she confided so much in me, as to seal before she received the money. That being done, ‘Now come along with me,’ said I, ‘to such a place, where the money lieth ready.’ As we were going, there was a stop in a lane by carts and coaches, and by the help thereof I dodged her seeing me no more till it was too late, for I came with an execution a while after and carried away every pennyworth of goods she had. Yet so civil I was, that I would not let her see it done knowing it could not but be a great trouble to her; to that intent about half an hour before, I sent for her in my name, far enough distant from her own habitation. In this nature with some variations as to the manner, I served several. Knowing I had a plentiful invention, which seldom failed me, I scorned to be so idle as to make use of one trick only to bring about my ends, and as I had several, I never made use of one trick twice, for fear of being smoked. I seldom went abroad, but I had some of my complices at my heels, rarely going together, unless necessity required it. I went into a coffee-house one day, and sat me down at a common table (as the room is to all comers); a little after came in one of my imps, and sits himself down too. I had then a very curious ring upon my finger, which a gentleman opposite to me perceiving, ‘Pray sir,’ said he, ‘do me the favour as to lend me a sight of that ring on your finger.’ I presently delivered it to him; having viewed it and commended it, my rogue must needs desire a sight of it too from this gentleman, who thinking no harm, gave it into his hands; after he had looked on it a while, he fairly marched off with it. I saw him, but would not in the least take notice thereof, knowing where to find him. The gentleman imagined nothing to the contrary, but that the right owner had received it again.

A little while after, I demanded very courteously my ring, excusing his detention thereof upon the account of forgetfulness. The gentleman starting, replied, ‘Sir, I thought you had had it long since.’ I told him I had it not, and as I delivered it unto him, I should require it from no other person. He pished at it, and in the conclusion bad me take my course, and so I did, having first taken witness of the standers by, I sued him, and recovered the value of my ring twice over, producing

two in court that swore point blank, that one of them sold it me for so much—. One thing I confess I frequently made use of, which was this. If any person died, and none durst administer, but leave the deceased's goods to the creditors, then would I be sure to make myself a principal creditor by a forged bond, and thereupon sue out letters of administration, and sweeping all away, I wiped the nose of other creditors.

## CHAPTER XL

*What a notable revengeful trick he served the turnkey of Ludgate*

I WENT on a time to see a prisoner in Ludgate, but thinking to come out again as easily as I went in, I found myself just as the picture I have often seen upon the Exchange, wherein is represented a man plunging himself with much ease into the great end of the horn, but with the greatest difficulty can hardly squeeze his head through the other end. Hell's gates stand ever open to let all souls in, but none are suffered to go out. Here I waited two hours for the return of the turnkey, fretting myself even to death for being detained from my urgent occasions. At length he came : I told him what an injury he did me. Instead of excusing himself, he returned me very scurvy language which provoked my passion so much, that though I said little, yet my invention was presently at work to be revenged. Not long after I got a poor fellow to be arrested for an inconsiderable debt, advising him to turn himself instantly over to Ludgate. In a short time the poorness of this man's condition was generally known, and he himself pretending he was almost starved, got liberty to put in what slender security he could procure for his true imprisonment, and so had leave to go abroad. In the mean time I had got a bond of the prisoner of fourscore pound for the payment of forty, and so went privately and entered an action of debt. I told the prisoner the next time he went out he should run away, which he did, neither was there any security to be found ; then did I bring my action against the keeper, with my Knights of the Post, and so recovered the money.

## CHAPTER XLI

*What a freak he played upon a jeweller*

I WAS intimately acquainted with a jeweller in Foster Lane, whom I often helped to the sale of rings and jewels, so that my credit was very good with him. Being one time above in his workroom, I chanced to spy a very rich jewel, whereupon I told him I could help him to the sale thereof, my lady such a one having lately spoke to me about such a thing. He gladly delivered it to me at such a price to shew it her. But I only carried it to another to have one exactly made like it with counterfeit stones. Before I went, I asked him if the lady dislike it, whether I might leave it with his wife or servant? 'Aye, aye,' said he, 'to either will be sufficient.' I was forced to watch one whole day to see when he went out, and being gone, presently went to the shop and enquired of his wife for her husband. She answered me he was but just gone. 'Well, Madam,' said I, 'you can do my business as well as he; 'tis only to deliver these stones into your custody,' and so went off undiscovered. Not long after I met him in the street, carrying displeasure in his looks. 'Sir,' said he, 'I thought a friend would not have served me so;' but I denied it stiffly. Whereupon he was very angry, and told me he would sue me. I valued not his threats, and so left him. I had not gone many paces before I met with a friend that complained to me he had lost a very valuable locket of his wife's, it being stolen from her.

Glad I was that this should fall out so pat to my purpose; I asked him to give me a description of it, which he did punctually. 'Now,' said I, 'what will you give me, if I tell you where it is?' 'Anything in reason.' 'Then go to such a shop in Foster Lane (the same shop where I cheated the man of his ring) and there ask peremptorily for it, I was there at such a time and saw it, and he would have had me help him to a customer for it. I'll stay at the Star tavern for you.' Away he went and demanded his locket. The jeweller denied he had any such thing (as well he might). Upon this he returned to me (by this I had another with me), and told me what he said. Whereupon I advised him to have a warrant for him to fetch him before a justice of peace, and that I and my friend (which saw as much as I) would swear it. The goldsmith was instantly seized on by a constable, and as soon as he saw who they were that would swear against him, desired the gentleman to drink a glass of wine, and then tendered him satisfaction. But I had ordered the business that it would not be taken unless he would give us all three general releases. He, knowing the danger that might ensue to life and estate if we persisted, consented to the proposal.

## CHAPTER XLII

*He puts a notable cheat upon a gentleman concerning his house*

WALKING one time in the fields with an attendant or two, who would be constantly bare before me, if in company with any persons of quality, but otherwise, ‘ hail fellow well met,’ I was got as far as Hackney, ere I thought where I was ; for my thoughts were busied about designs, and my wit was shaping them into a form. Casting my eye on the one side of me, I saw the prettiest built and well situated house that ever my eyes beheld. I had a covetous desire to be master thereof : I was then, as fortune would have it, in a very genteel garb ; I walked but a little way further and I soon found out a plot to accomplish my desires. And thus it was. I returned and knocked at the gate, and demanded of the servant whether his master was within. I understood he was, and thereupon desired to speak with him. The gentleman came out to me himself, desiring me to walk in. After I had made a general apology, I told him my business, which was only to request the favour of him, that I might have the privilege to bring a workman to supervise his house, and to take the dimensions thereof, because I was so well pleased with the building, that I eagerly desired to have another built exactly after that pattern. The gentleman could do no less than to grant me so small a civility. Coming home, I went to a carpenter, telling him I was about buying an house in Hackney, and that I would have him accompany me to give me (in private) the estimate. Accordingly we went, and found the gentleman at home, who entertained me kindly as a stranger. In the meantime the carpenter took an exact account of the butts and bounds of the house on paper ; which was as much as I desired for that time.

Paying the carpenter well, I dismissed him, and by that paper had a lease drawn with a very great fine (mentioned to have been paid) at a small rent ; witnesses thereunto I could not want. Shortly after I demanded possession. The gentleman thinking me out of my wits, only laughed at me : I commenced my suit against him, and brought my own creatures to swear the sealing and delivering of the lease, the carpenter’s evidence, with many other probable circumstances to strengthen my cause ; whereupon I had a verdict. The gentleman understanding what I was, thought it safer to compound with me, and lose something, rather than lose all.

## CHAPTER XLIII

*How he cheated a scrivener under the pretence of bringing him good security for an hundred pounds which he would borrow*

ATTIRING myself in one of the richest garbs I had I went to a scrivener in Bow Lane, and acquainted him I had an occasion for an hundred pounds. He demanded the names of my security. I told him where they lived, two persons of eminent worth (whom I knew were gone into the country) and desired him to make enquiry, but in it to be private and modest. The scrivener according to my desires went and found them by report to be what they were, real, able, and sufficient men : two or three days after I called upon him to know whether I might have the money upon the security propounded. He told me I might, bringing the persons, and appointed me a day. According to the time, I came with two of my accomplices attired like wealthy grave citizens, who personated such persons so to the life that the scrivener could not entertain the least suspicion. The money being ready, I told it over, and putting it up in a bag, I and my insignificant bondsmen sealed, leaving the scrivener to another enquiry after us, whom, if he did not meet, I was confident he could never find out by reason of our feigned names.

It chanced that my forged and fictitious name shook hands with that of a gentleman in Surrey, who was a great purchaser, which I came to know by being accidentally in his company the next night after I had cheated this credulous scribe, understanding likewise from him the exact place of his abode ; and as the devil would have it, his christian name was the same, as well as his surname, with that of mine I had borrowed. Whereupon I went to the scrivener again, and told him that now I had a fair opportunity to benefit myself very much by a purchase, provided he would assist me with 200 pounds more. ‘But sir,’ said I, ‘take notice (in a careless and generous frankness) that it is out of a particular respect to you, that you might profit by me that I come again, neither will I now give you any other security than my own bond, though I did otherwise before. But if you will desire to be satisfied as to my estate, pray let your servant go to such a place in Surrey, there is a piece of gold to bear his charges, and I will satisfy you further for the loss of your servant’s time.’ He being greedy of gain, very officiously promised me to do what I required, and would speedily give me an answer. Imagining what time his servant would return, I repaired to him again, and understood from him by the sequel that he received as much satisfaction as in reason any man could require. Hereupon I had on my own bond the

money paid me. I cannot but laugh to think how strangely the Surrey gentleman was surprized when the money becoming due was demanded of him, and how like the figure of man in hangings the scrivener looked when he found himself cheated.

## CHAPTER XLIV

*How he was revenged on a broker for arresting him for some goods he had passed his word for upon his friend's account*

**N**O TWITHSTANDING I daily thus, almost, cheated one or other, procuring thereby considerable sums of money, yet, by my drinking, whoring, and defending myself from such as I had wronged, I seldom kept any money by me. One day as I walked the streets securely, as I thought, a fellow fastened his flesh-hooks on my shoulder. Looking about to see what this sudden clap meant, I saw a fellow behind me, whose face looked ten times worse than those Philistines that are pictured on chimney pieces, seizing upon Samson ; his mouth was as largely vaulted as that within Aldersgate ; his visage was almost eaten through with pock-holes, every hole so big that they would have served for children to play at cherry pit. His nose resembled an hand saw ; take both head and face together, and it appeared like the Saracens on Snow Hill ; questionless some Incubus begot him on a witch. Having a little recovered myself from my amazement, I asked him what his business was with me. He spake but little, leaving his errand to his mace (which he shewed me) to relate. Away they carried me to Wood Street at the King's Head, from whence I sent for bail, which speedily came to me : having put in bail to one action, I found another entered : having done the like to that I found another, half a dozen more bearing it company ; wherefore thanking my friends for the trouble I had put them to, I desired them to leave me, resolving to go to Ludgate. The two serjeants that arrested me conducted me thither, having my name entered in the paper house, as horses in Smithfield are in the toll booth. Cerberus turned the key, and set the door as wide open as Westminster Hall gate in the term time to country clients, to receive me from my hell guides, which puts me in mind of that old verse,

*Noctes atque dies patet atri janua ditis.*

I no sooner was entered into this enchanted isle, where some lie wind bound sometimes seven years together, but a fellow (whom at first sight I took to be a gardener, because he had a kind of reddish beard,

and turned up withal) came to me, and understanding I was a prisoner, seemed mighty courteous, proffering me his chamber for my garnish sake. I accepted his kindness, and went with him to view this cobweb hung chamber, for so it proved. I demanded of him who should be my bedfellow. ‘That gentleman there sir,’ said he, ‘that sits by the fire-side :’ I could not forbear smiling, for he was a fat squobby fellow, though his brain seemed to be lean. I believe he was his own barber, and was forced to make use of a knife instead of a razor, for his beard it was cut round like a rubbing brush. Certainly, had all the skin of his body been like that of his face, it would have served excellent well when he was dead to make cloak-bags of. Not content with this lodging, I sought out another, liking it somewhat better than the former, I pitched on it. As soon as they understood my resolution, they worried me presently like angry mastiffs, barking for their garnish. I told them they should have it to-morrow, at which they grumbled like the greatest strings of a base viol. Before I went to bed I must pay for a pair of sheets, that never came nigh Holland by three hundred miles, and out of much civility my bedfellow brought me a candle not so long as his nose to light me to bed.

The next morning I made it my business to get out as soon as I could ; some I paid, others I nonsuited, and so got clear. Being out I resolved not to rest till I had revenged myself on this broker that had thus troubled me. I needed not means, for the devil seldom failed to help my inventions. I pretended to go into the country, and in order to it packed up a trunk of what I had most valuable and portable, and getting a porter, sent it to an inn where a Norwich carrier used to lie, but I knew him to be gone the day before. Going along with the porter, I enquired for such a carrier, but they told me he was gone, and would not return till the next week.

I asked them where I might lay my trunk safe ; they shewed me a room where bidding the porter sit down, I called for some ale, telling the porter, moreover, that I would have him be a witness of what there was in the trunk, lest I should be dishonestly dealt by. Whereupon I unlocked it, desiring him to take notice, which he did, and to be more sure took an inventory in writing. Having paused a little, ‘Now I think upon it,’ said I, ‘porter, it will not be safe to leave this here in a public house, as in a friend’s, wherfore prithee, go buy a cord, and thou shalt carry it elsewhere.’ Whilst he was gone, I took out the chiefest things and put in rubbish, or what I could get, and so locked it again. The porter returning, we corded the trunk, and carried it to this broker, who took it kindly from me, that I would entrust him after our controversy, and received it. The next week I told him I would call for it, in order to

the sending it into the country. The time being come, I took the same porter with me, and demanding the trunk, it was forthwith delivered me. ‘Come, porter,’ said I, ‘you must undock it again, for I have present use for something therein contained’ ; which being done, I seemingly amazed, cried out I was robbed, taxing the broker for so doing, vilifying him for his knavery. He protested that he never looked on it to his knowledge since the receipt thereof. ‘Well sir,’ said I, ‘this shall not serve your turn, this honest porter knows how differently it is fraught from what he saw it at first.’ In a great seeming heat I left him, but before he slept I sent a couple of serjeants to him, who arrested him ; coming to trial by the assistance of two (resolved jurors) and this porter, I overthrew him, and recovered above forty pound, besides cost of suit.

## CHAPTER XLV

*How he cozened a rich usurer, and a young tradesman*

BEING resolved to go and look out some of my consorts to rejoice together for my good success in my advantageous revenge, I met with an old comrade that had lately heaved a booth, Anglice broken open a shop, who told me he had a quantity of good commodities, and desired me to put them off for him, knowing that I dealt in brokerage in goods indirectly come by : I promised him I would. The next day he delivered what he had into my hands, I instantly carried them to an old usurer that would grasp at anything, telling him I only desired to mortgage them for such a time, requesting to lend me fifty pounds thereon. He, looking upon them to be thrice the value of that sum, lent me freely the quantity of money propounded, and in my sight took the goods and laid them in a place next his bedchamber.

The same day I met with this friend, who demanded of me whether I had done his business ? ‘No, not yet,’ said I, ‘it will be to-morrow first : However let us drink a glass of wine,’ which he readily consented to. Having drank pretty smartly, he could not contain himself (so powerful are the operations of wine, as it frequently makes a man divulge that which carrieth in it inevitable ruin) I say he told me whose shop it was he robbed, and at what time. I seemed to take little notice then, though I intended to make good use of it. Parting with him, I went straightway to the person robbed, and told him that accidentally I was informed of his late loss, and that my intent of coming was out of a principle of honesty, to assist him in the recovery of what was stolen

from him. But before I acquainted him with anything, I required of him a bond of 10*l.* if I helped him to his goods, which he granted me. I advised him to get the Lord Chief Justice's warrant, which he did and taking some friends with him, I directed them where they should go, and in what place they should find them. He would have had me go with him, but that I excused myself, alleging it would be inconvenient. Taking a constable with them they went and found what they sought for according to my direction, which they seized, leaving the old man to condole his loss, which had been no great matter, had not his life lain in his purse.

Having thus carried on my mischievous contrivances with continued impunity, the next I fell on was a young merchant, to whom I went genteely habited with a footboy waiting at my heels. I looked out several commodities, and laid them aside, assuring him that I would ere long lay out a considerable parcel of money with him. We discoursed upon the price, and in the conclusion closed. The next day I appointed the goods to be sent home to my house, and in the interim desired him to go along with me, and accept of what poor accommodation my habitation would afford him, under the pretence of being better acquainted, but my design was to raise in him a good opinion of me, for I had one room (especially) very richly hung with costly furniture. My motion was entertained and away we went, where I treated him nobly ; the next day the commodities were sent in with his servant, who expected his money, but I pretended that my cashier was abroad, and so desired him to call the next morning ; he did, but then I was not to be spoken with. Thus he did so often till the young man was weary. At last the master himself came, who met me just as I was going out, who had not the patience to ask for his money, but railed most bitterly, calling me cheat, knave, &c. and that he would not put himself to the trouble of posting me up, but would have a warrant for me instantly.

Being gone, I was as nimble as himself, having a couple of my emissaries ready for him against his return. It was not long before he came strutting with a constable. Perceiving him coming, I sent my two friends out with their warrant, and putting it into the constable's hand, charged him in the King's name to execute it upon such a one, meaning the merchant who dared not deny it, but carried him before a justice, before whom my two rogues swore flat felony, and so was committed. Sending for friends, they advised him to make an end thereof. Whereupon I was much solicited, and upon consideration I consented to cause my friends to forbear prosecution.

As yet I have not fully unbowedled the huge bulk of my villainy, that hath proved so burdensome to the world, and destructive to so many

families. Wherefore give me leave a little farther to anatomize my own vicious nature, and I shall so lay open the ulcers and sores of my impostumed machinations, apparent to the sight of every one, that the most ospray and owl-eyed spectator shall confess there never was a more necessary and commodious discovery revealed.

'Brother,' said I, 'for so I must call you now, your flagitious deeds claiming that title, and must be compelled I see to give you superiority, for I am confident the line of other men's inventions never sounded the sea of a more deep and dreadful mischief. When I consider how powerful and imperious vice is of late grown, and what horrid facts are committed every where by licentious and wicked men that swarm in all places : I admire that the fabric of the earth is not continually palsied by earthquakes, since there is a Creator above that oversees such actions. That the Earth herself (though an indulgent mother) doth not receive into her womb her offspring, and therein for shame hide them : that the air is not choked with frogs, and that black pitchy mists do not perpetually masque the face of Heaven, and leave the world in obscurity ; and that the sun doth not hide his face from seeing such enormous crimes blacker than is the eclipse of his countenance : and lastly, that the sea is not turned to blood to put us in mind of the cruel and remorseless usages of one another ; our kindness being commonly attended with discourtesies of a vermillion hue. Thus brother you see I am sensible of my miscarriages, but want the power to regulate my life.' I would have proceeded, but that I found this discourse grated in his ears ; wherefore I desired him to prosecute his story, which he did in this manner.

## CHAPTER XLVI

*He discovers the subtlety of some citizens he had to do withal by broking for them, relating his own craft and cunning, and what the consequence was, the ruin of young gentlemen*

LIKE an hawk as I told you, I flew at all game, not confining myself to any one thing particularly : where I could abuse the law, I did, and if I had an opportunity to trepan, I seldom failed, &c. Some part of my time I spent in the enquiry of what young heirs were arrived, into whose society I was sure by one means or other to insinuate myself. These country woodcocks I knew how to catch with a city spring ; whom I very well understood would rather be out of the world than out of the fashion, who would be brave for the present time though their gallantry cost them all their future fortunes. I commonly laid my plot

thus : ‘ Sir, you undervalue yourself by the meanness of your habit, it being so unsuitable to your quality. If you want money, you cannot want credit, having a fair promising estate in reversion ; if you are willing, I will find you out a believing mercer.’ Returning me many thanks, it may be he would be in such haste as to send for me presently. He could not be so eager to have his gaudy desires satisfied, as I forward to accomplish them. I knew where to go readily to one, with whom I went snips ; in so saying, I would not have any think I throw dirt upon that noble profession. If I discover the fraud of any particular person, as long as I name him not, I do him no wrong ; but if I detect by what deceitful and sinister means he worketh upon the infirmity of the youth of a green-witted gallant, it may serve for an use of instruction. In the most famous Universities there are some dunces resident, that by disgracing themselves, disgrace also their fellow students. In the most virtuous Courts there will be some parasites. So in the most goodly and glorious city under Heaven’s canopy, there are some asps lurking, that sting the reputation of their brethren by their poisonous and corrupt dealings. There are knaves in all trades but book selling.

But to my purpose : a young gentleman coming out of Norfolk to see the City and finding so many (beneath him in estate) gallant it so much above him, he grew very melancholy. Happening to be in his company, and indifferently well acquainted with him, I asked him the cause of his sadness. After I had pressed him very much, he ingenuously confessed the true origin of his pensiveness. ‘ Pish,’ said I, ‘ is that all ? Let me alone to effect what you desire ; neither shall you wait longer than the morrow.’ Leaving my gentleman, away I went to a person fit for my purpose, and gave him an account of my business : glad he was, thanked me for my pains, promising me a reward, and would needs have me to a tavern to consult this affair. Having concluded every thing, I repaired the next day to my gentleman, who overjoyed to see me was impatient to know whether his wishes were consummated. ‘ Come along with me,’ said I, ‘ and we will try what we can do. I have been very importunate with the mercer, but as yet I cannot mollify him ; it may be your presence may do much.’ Finding him in the shop, I called him aside, and told him this was the gentleman. My young gentleman, that would be a gallant presently, fell aboard him, and (with much fervency and protestations) he wooed the mercer to credit him for 30*l.* worth of commodities.

I called him aside, saying, ‘ What will 30*l.* worth do ? Take up 100*l.* worth ; and what you use not, I’ll dispose by sale, to furnish your pockets with money.’ He thanked me kindly for my advice, and returned to the mercer, who asked him if he should credit him with so much,

what security would he propound ? This struck my young gentleman as mute as a cod's head. The mercer perceiving he had nothing to say, played the rope maker, being extreme backward to trust him. Bonds he refused, judgments he would not hear of, statutes he scorned. ‘For,’ said he, ‘gentlemen of late have found out so many tricks to cozen their creditors (I by the same means having had several collops cut from the body of my estate), that I will not credit any more’: whereas he spake this only to grind the blunt appetite of my commodity taker into a sharper edge, and make him more greedy of his own ruin, imitating in this a cunning and deceitful, though petulant and wanton courtezan, who is nice when a sick brained young gallant importunes her to admit of his amorous kindness, only to make him more fierce upon his own confusion : holding him off like a fencer a month or two, that he may come up the more roundly to her purpose. But to the matter. My gentleman being as it were denied, I seconded him thus : ‘Sir, you know not what you do in refusing to credit this gentleman ; he is his father’s heir, a man of a vast estate, and very aged. This his son is about a very great match, a rich heiress, and though he hath not money for the present, yet let him have an hundred pounds worth of commodities, you need not doubt your payment ; and it will do him at this present a thousand pounds worth of good.’

The mercer began to hearken to this, and protested to my green goose that he would be glad to do any a pleasure, so as not to injure himself ; that if he could but possess him with a belief that he should have his money in six months, he would freely let him have 100*l.* worth of what he pleased. The young gentleman protested it, and I warranted it, and the mercer (though seemingly loth) condescended, upon this proviso still, that he should procure some man else to be bound with him, as good as himself. ‘For,’ said he, ‘we are all mortal, and not having a lease of our lives, we may die before to-morrow ; where then is my 100*l.*?’ Signior Unthrift is once more put to his *non-plus*; but at length he fell to entreat me to do it, who would not by any means, and so we parted. He would not let me rest for two or three days together, so that at last, provided he would give me 10*l.* I agreed ; and so we went again to the mercer, and entering into bonds we had the commodities. Having made my young gentleman an absolute gallant, I went to sell what was left, of which I made 40*l.* but I made my gallant to be contented with 30*l.* alleging that when goods came once to be sold, they will not yield the moiety of what they cost, though new, and out of that 30*l.* I had my 10*l.* for suretyship. Thus I persuaded him to be very well satisfied. He revels about, whilst I was contriving to leave him as bare of means as brains.

Now doth my mercer dream of nothing but his payday, which he hoped would be broken. The time being expired, and my young novice not minding it, the mercer invited him to a dinner in Fish Street. Dinner being almost ended, for a third course came up a couple of serjeants stewed with mace, who arrested him at the suit of the founder of the feast. Not procuring bail, he was carried to the Compter, where he lay some time. His friends hearing of it, endeavoured to get him out, by suing out an *Audita querela*. My mercer hearing of that, advised with me what was best to be done. ‘Agree,’ said I, ‘with some officer in the Exchequer, and turn the debt over to the King, pretending you owe him so much money, for the Chancery will not or cannot allow any thing in such a case against his Majesty.’ He so doing, did his business for the present. Thus have I read, when Jews have bought a red-haired boy, at first they clothe him in silks, ravishing him with all the delights that can be thought on, never have music from his ears, or banquets from his taste, and thus use him, till they see he is plump, fat, and fit for their purpose. But when the poor boy least thinks of his imminent ruin, he is taken by a brace of slaves, and tied up by the heels, so beaten by degrees to death with cudgels, purging the rankest poison out of his mouth, and making mummy of his flesh. I shall leave it to the Reader to make application.

In short, I persuaded the mercer to take a bond of 500*l.* of his prisoner, to be paid after his father’s decease. This widgeon being in the nets, sealed to any thing for his liberty. He was not the first so served, by thousands, and that is the reason there are so many crested citizens : for gentlemen being beggared by their extortion, they have no other means than to fall in with their wives, purchasing from them a supply. This is it that makes the road everywhere so full of highway-men, who will borrow of men when they have little mind to lend, but not without giving them bonds. This makes Tyburn the Metropolitan, and other petty gallows have so many hangers on ; and this is the cause so many such citizens’ sons are plagued after their fathers’ deaths, as their fathers when living have plagued others. These are the boars that plough up whole acres, nay fields of gentlemen’s lands with their snouts : these are the swine that eat up whole orchards ; and these are they, whose fiery consciences drink up whole fishponds at a draught ; and lastly, they are the hurricanes that root up the trees of whole woods together. From such *libera nos Domine*.

To conclude, take this as an infallible maxim, that the worst of creditors are either very rich, or very poor men. The rich man can stay for his money, and so will have all or none ; the poor will have no pity, not indeed can he, since the debt may be all he is worth.

## CHAPTER XLVII

*How he insinuated himself into the acquaintance of all he thought he could prey upon, and what tricks he used to build his interest upon their ruin*

HOW can that tyrant flourish in his commonwealth when the foundation of his reign was built on the sepulchre of the right and lawful heir he murdered? And how can that man prosper whose rise he reared from other men's ruins? Such was I, who having oftentimes been gulled by knaves turned knave myself, and did as greedily hunt after such I could make a prey of (to repair the damages I had sustained by others), as the devil doth after usurers' souls, being on their death beds, resolving to live like a bandit on the spoil. Like an old soldier having been beaten to the world (or indeed more properly beaten by the world), I began to summon up all my senses and my idle brains to a strict account, how to get that up again, my riot and folly had spent; and thinking I had no way to recover myself, but by what ruined me, I did cast about me and fished after this manner. I prepared my lines, provided baits, and made ready my hooks, which had such constant and firm barbs, that after I had struck a gudgeon in the gills, I was sure to hold him, though I suffered him to play a little in the stream. The floods I daily frequented, were either the Temple, ordinaries, playhouses, cockpits, brothels or taverns; leaving no place unsearched, wherein there might be anything worthy of bait. If such I found, like a shadow I was never from his heels, but followed him close, especially if he was a young country gentleman, whom his father had sent up to see fashions in the City: and rather than he should go out as raw as he came in, I failed not to season him in one of the City's powdering tubs.

First, I made it my business to know what his father allowed him; then would I study his natural disposition and inclination, and accordingly suit myself to him, so that by my behaviour towards him, he should look upon me to be his masculine sweetheart, his bosom-friend, and that like Hippocrates' twins we must needs live and die together. Having accordingly by much sweat and industry adapted and fitted him to my humour and purpose, and wrought him to such a soft and waxen temperature that I could make what impression I pleased on him, I brought him acquainted with some of my accomplices, who all vailed bonnet to him, invited him from tavern to tavern, not letting him expend a penny; or if he wanted money, I would supply him with four or five pounds. This innocent (not having yet scented the City air) all this while thinks himself in Elysium, fancying he enjoys more delights than the Turk's

paradise affords, and withal imagineth himself not a little graced, to be entertained among such seeming gallants. For my rogues (give me the liberty to call them so) looked on it as the greatest piece of policy to wear good clothes, though their pockets were worse furnished than a chandler's box, that seldom hath any greater money in it, than twopence, threepence, groats, &c. Sometimes my cully did meet with some that knew me, who would advise him to have a care of me, and not to keep me company, for I was a dangerous person, and in the end would be his ruin. Whereas it was but to little purpose, for when youth is in its full vigour, and height of desire, neither wholesome counsel, nor lamentable examples, will give them warning of their future destruction.

Still I continued my seeming respects and kindnesses to him, which I only intended as the præludium or prologue to that play which was to come after : for my country cock brain being honeyed with these sweet delights, thought that whatever he could return, was not able to give an answerable satisfaction. Watching a fit opportunity (when he was well warmed with wine), then would I persuade him (which was no difficult matter), to be bound with me for so much, &c. which I promised I would repay at the day, without putting him to any inconvenience : but he knew not, that what I borrowed for an hour, I borrowed for an age. When I could squeeze no more juice out of him, then I left him to the mercy of his creditors, to be dealt withal as the popinjay in the fable, who being summoned to appear with the rest of the winged tribe before their king the eagle, borrowed of all the finer sort of birds feathers to adorn him, and make him appear splendid before his sovereign.

After he was dismissed, he proudly fluttered up and down the woods with his borrowed gallantry, which made the little titmouse, wren and hedge sparrow adore him. They to whom he was obliged for his gallantry, hearing thereof, demanded again their own, and so deplumed him, whereby he seemed ten times worse then those small birds that lately did admire him. Such popinjays are they, who borrow of every citizen, to make themselves shew glorious in the world's eye ; but when the creditors shall come and claim their own, and get it, they will seem more foul, than lately they did fair. So various and villainous were the pranks I committed every day, that I was forced now, like an owl, to appear only by night in the City. If I did at any time transgress that custom, I did then like the dogs of Egypt, which when they come to drink of the river Nilus, lap here and there, not daring to stay long in one place, for fear the crocodiles that lie lurking within the banks, should pull them into the current : so did I, skulking here and there, first to one tavern, and then, not daring to stay longer there, shifting to another. But to proceed.

## CHAPTER XLVIII

*How he could make ink that would disappear from the paper, accordingly as he pleased, by the strength or weakness of the composition : his imitating exactly both hand and seal : a remarkable story thereupon*

READING one time a book that an Italian writ, I found therein a description of several sorts of ink, and how to make them ; but more especially, an ink that should last a week, a month, or two, according to the composition. I made an experiment, and found it hit indifferently well. Perceiving how beneficial this would be to me, I resolved not to rest till I had found out the true recipe ; which I did at last, by much study and industry. Having obtained it, I so highly valued it, that methought I would not have parted with it for the Philosopher's Stone. Not to be tedious, I did abuse therewith many persons with bonds, leases, deeds, acquittances, &c. there appearing in such a time nothing but the bare seal, the paper remaining as white as if never writ on. By the help of graving, I could counterfeit seals exactly, insomuch that I have often cheated the grand cheater, Oliver, the late hypocritical and bloody tyrant, and by an exact imitation of an handwriting his council was too sensible of what cheats I put upon them. That I was no bungler at it, I shall give you this instance.

Accidentally coming acquainted with a gentlewoman, very beautiful and well featured, her sparkling eyes set me all in a flame, so that I resolved to attempt the enjoyment of her. Oftentimes I visited her, and by the modesty of my carriage towards her, she perceived not my burning lust. One time having a fit opportunity, she being alone, I communicated my thoughts to her. Waiving what amorous discourse passed on my side, I would have fallen roundly to the matter, but she understanding my intent, cried out ; whereupon I desisted, seeing it was to little purpose if I proceeded. Sitting down by her, she expressed an absolute hatred to me for my incivility, and vowed she would neither see nor endure me more. The vehemence of her utterance and countenance fully declared she was in earnest, so that I saw 'twas time to be gone. Looking about (unperceived by her) I took up half a sheet of paper of her writing, and clapped it into my pocket ; and so took my leave.

Coming home, I found my love converted into hatred, and therefore vowed my revenge, and thus it was. I understood from her whereabout her husband lived, and what his christian name was, with something of her concerns ; that her husband's mother could not endure her (because her son married her without a portion, though a wise, discreet, virtuous,

and handsome woman), and whereabout he lived, with name, &c. I counterfeited a letter, as from this virtuous gentlewoman, to a gallant of hers, taxing him with want of love, and that if he proved not more constant, she had no more to say to him, &c. The contents you shall have in the letter itself, as followeth.

MOST BELOVED BY ME OF MEN !

I cannot blame you so much as myself ; it is customary for man to proffer, but then it should be a woman's duty to refuse : but alas ! how could I withstand the powerful persuasions of your eloquent tongue, especially when they carried with them so much seeming reality of affection and constancy ? I find you now like other vow-breaking men, who having obtained the fruition of their desires, their appetite nauseates that which before it so eagerly craved. Call to mind those many endeared and melting expressions you did voluntarily utter, when I was encircled in thine arms, and if that will not reduce you to your former station, and good esteem of me, now so much slighted by you, consider that I have preferred you in love before my husband, not caring how much I wronged him to pleasure you. If nothing will prevail, know then, this shall be my resolution, that since you have alienated my affection from my husband, and you thus unworthily desert me, I will procure a subject elsewhere shall out-do you in every thing, as much or more as you have outdone my husband. I am young, plump, handsome, and buxom ; what then should hinder me from enjoying such a person, my heart will not rest satisfied till I have found, which having done, he shall lead me in thy view, and then it is probable you will desire, but never shall reassume your place again within my breast.

Farewell.

This letter was sent to her mother in law in the country, who was glad she had matter to impeach her daughter to her son. As soon as he saw the letter, he very well knew the hand, he thought, and would have sworn it to be his wife's : but reading the contents, the poor man was ready to sink down for grief. Perturbation of mind would not let him rest in his country dwelling, but rid up post to London, where he soon found out his wife. The unexpected sight of him at first surprized her, not hearing of his coming, and knowing that his occasions were very urgent in the country : however, like a truly-loving wife, she was overjoyed to see him, and would have kissed him, but that he rudely thrust her off ; which action struck her to the heart, and overwhelmed her in amazement. ' Prithee, sweetheart,' said she, ' what is the matter ? ' ' There, read it,' said he, throwing her the letter. She read it, and swooned. He let her lie, not caring whether she lived or died ; and had died indeed, had not her maid come up accidentally. Being recovered, he asked her whether it was her hand. She could not deny it : which made the man rage, ready to run out of his wits, whilst she was silent with astonishment, taking such inward grief that she betook herself to her bed.

Nothing could comfort her, neither would she take anything to sustain life. Hearing how powerfully my forgeries had wrought, to the hazard of some lives, in the same hand I sent him a letter, wherein I gave him an account of the design, proclaiming to the world this gentlewoman's honesty, unspotted and unstained. The gentlewoman recovered in a little time after ; but this trick had too much seized upon my gentleman ; for like a fool he fell distracted in a sneering posture, as pleased to think his wife was honest notwithstanding. I have been somewhat long in this relation, because it was a passage very remarkable. Now I shall tell you how I cheated a young citizen and an upholster.

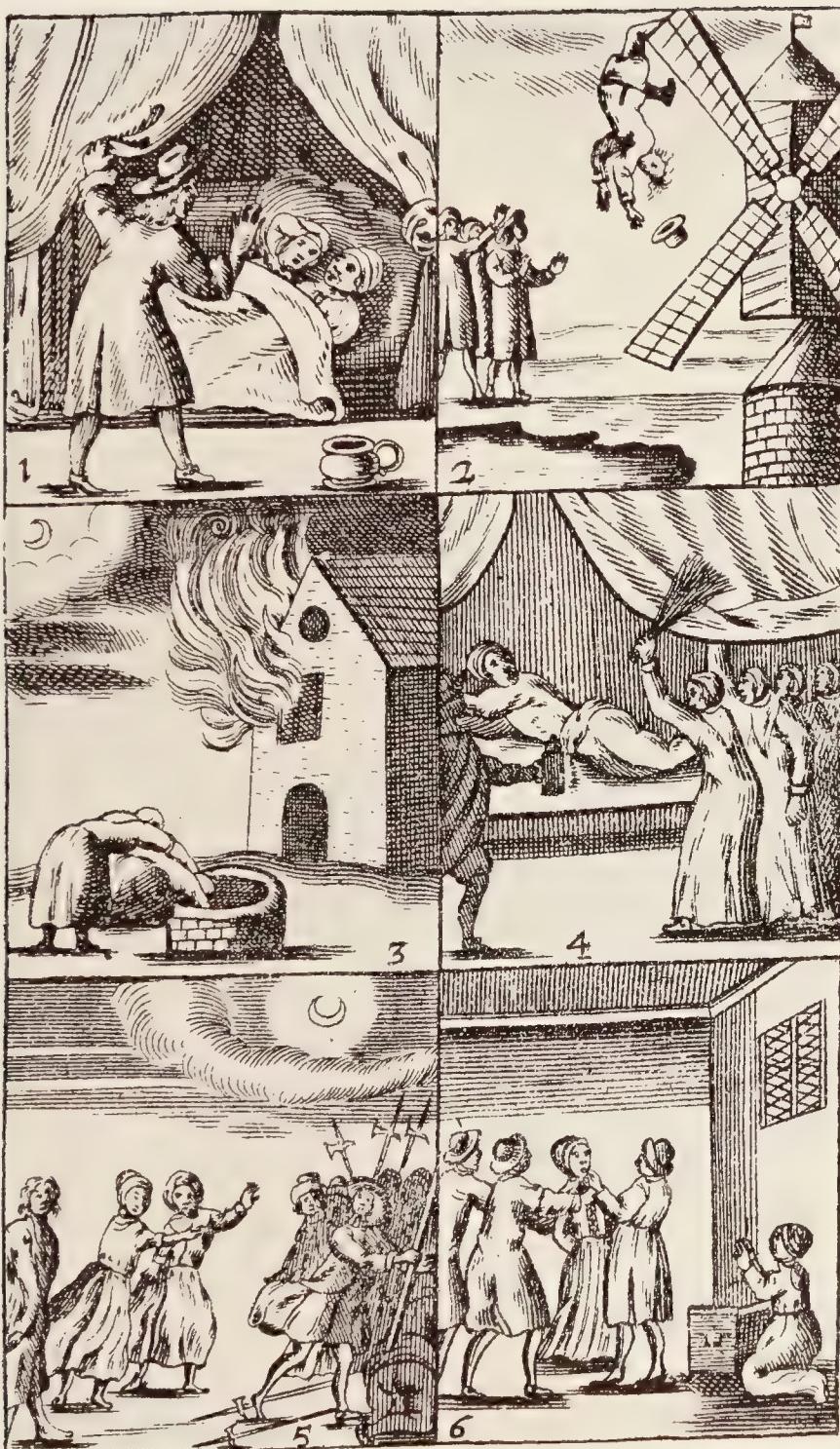
## CHAPTER XLIX

*How he cheated a young citizen newly set up, and an upholster*

A YOUNG citizen about to set up, and wanting some money, was directed to me, to procure so much as his present occasion required. I treated him very civilly, promising him very fairly ; and in order thereunto, appointed him a day, which being come, contrary to my expectation or desire, he brought a crew with him, to see the receipt of the money. Judging this time inconvenient for my designs, I told him I expected the money this very day, but if he pleased to seal the bond, and have it witnessed, he might keep it himself, and bringing the bond with him the next day, he should not fail to have his money. The next day he came to the place appointed, where I was ready to wait him. As good fortune would have it, he came alone. I discoursed with him a while : at last I desired him to let me see the bond ; which he delivered into my hand, being signed and sealed before. I took this as a good and lawful delivery, and put it up into my pocket. He asked me what I meant. I told him he should know when the bond became due. ‘ Why sir,’ said he, ‘ you will not serve me so.’ ‘ Dost thou think I am such a fool,’ said I, ‘ to lend thee so much money upon a piece of paper which next shower of rain will wash away with thyself into the common shore ? Shall I trust thee, when thou canst not trust thyself ? ’ At this the young man began to be clamorous, but one of my accomplices soon stilled the clapper of his mouth, by a sound knock on the pate, which laid him asleep ; and in the meantime we marched off. Just as the money came due upon the bond, my flock pated cit was gone to tell his friends in the country the danger of compters and prisons in the city.

At another time I wanted money to supply my present occasions,

PLATE III



[ face p. 192



but could not instantly think of any other means of assistance in this necessity but to sell my featherbed, together with its appurtenances. Whereupon I packed them up, and desired a friend to go with the porter, and sell them to an upholster. My friend did so, and brought me half their worth ; but withal, that which was more than their worth, the man's name. A week after I wanted my bed, and resolved to have it again. To that end, I went to him that bought it, and asked him before a couple that I took with me, whether at such a time he had not such commodities sold him. He acknowledged that he had. I desired to see them, and he as readily granted it. 'Sir,' said I, 'these are my goods. I was lately robbed, and now I know you are the receiver. I must have you before a justice, to know how you came by them.' The naming of a justice so terrified this silly fellow, that he bid me take them if I would swear they were mine, and put him to no further trouble. I swore they were mine (and therein I was not perjured), but told him I could not receive stolen goods safely, though they were mine own. In short, I recovered my bed and furniture, with money to boot.

## [CHAPTER L]

*He is at last met withal, and laid up in prison by one of his creditors : the abuses and tricks serjeants use to arrest men : lastly, he escaped, by putting a trick upon his keeper*

HAVING gone thus far without any remarkable check or control, at least any such as might bear a proportion with the villainies and injuries I had done, I absolutely thought that nothing was dishonest or difficult that had in it either pleasure or profit. Meeting with no molestation or hindrance, I took my freedom to do even what I listed. One time thinking myself most secure, I then found myself in the greatest danger, being arrested in an action of 5000*l.* Several times there were attempts made to take me, but I was still too cunning for them : yet at last they overreached me ; it will not be amiss to relate in what manner.

They had information, that every week I had letters come to me out of Essex, and that the porter which brought them had still free admittance to me : wherefore the serjeant provided himself a frock and a rope about his middle, which would better have become his neck, and with letters in his hand directed to me, trudged to my lodging. Knocking at my door, and being demanded his business, he told them he had letters for the master of the house, nominating me. Looking out, and seeing

no one but a seeming porter, I ordered that he should be let in. As soon as he was entered, he bid my worship good morrow, and instead of delivering me his letters, shewed me his mace ; which I wished might be the only spice and meat too he should eat for a twelvemonth. Seeing how I was betrayed, I went quickly along with him to the compter and afterwards, finding I could make no composition with my creditors, turned myself over to the King's Bench. Various are their tricks and inventions to ensnare whom they intend to arrest. Sometimes I have known a creditor seem to comply with his debtor, telling him that paying some inconsiderable matter, his bonds should be renewed with longer time : then appoint him a place of meeting, where he saith he will bring a counsellor and scrivener, a counsellor to advise them in management of their business, and a scrivener to write what they determined. He acquainted a serjeant and a yeoman with his plot, who were as hot upon it, as an Italian on a wench of fifteen. The serjeant going with a barrister's gown on his back and the yeoman with his beard cut as close as a stubble field with a pen in his ear and some parchment in his hand, effected their design without suspicion.

A merchant I knew that intended to break and go beyond sea, was betrayed by his servant, who informed his creditors that just at such a time his master would be gone, that on the morrow he would send for coopers to hoop some dry vats to pack his goods, and that if ever they hoped to have their money, they must make that their time. Some serjeants were presently acquainted herewith, who attired like coopers in red caps, canvas breeches, with adzes in their hands and hoops about their shoulders, went to the merchant and were entertained whilst he was giving them direction ; but instead of hooping the dry vats, they hooped him in their arms, and arrested him. Before they parted with him, they made him part with so much money as would satisfy his creditors and them, and made him fee them besides, not to enter any more actions against him. They will change themselves into as many shapes as Proteus, to bring about their designs ; sometimes like a grand wealthy citizen, othertimes like a country fellow newly come to town, with boots and spurs all dirty. Now as I have related their manner of arresting, so let me in short inform you of their using (or rather abusing) prisoners. First they enquire of the person whether it be the first time he was arrested : if so, then they know the better how to deal with him. Perhaps they will carry him to the tavern, pretending to do him kindness, where they will advise him to send for some friend, and one of them will be the porter himself ; but instead of fetching the friend, he only enquires out his creditors, and persuades them to use this opportunity to recover their debt : meanwhile, the other that is left behind doth milk him.

The messenger returning, sorrowfully tells him his friend is not at home. Getting as much as they can by spunging, and sucking the very heart blood of his pocket, the compter must be his refuge at last.

Sometimes, when they see a man in fear of arresting, they will without warrant of the creditor give him a cast of his office, which they often do before they enter their action, and have ways to prevent any mischief that can come by search of the offices. Other times, for a fee, they will send to the party to keep out of the way, as was concluded beforehand. Oftentimes, upon an arrest, if the creditor stand not by, they will let the party escape for a brace of angels or so, and tell his adversary that he cannot set eye on him. And whereas their fee for an arrest is to be but 1 s. yet will they hardly be persuaded to do their office under a crown : and albeit the statute say that the party arrested shall pay but one groat, he will not excuse him for an angel. If a man oppose them, or endeavour an escape, they will both gripe and pinch him, and afterwards clap an action of assault and battery on him at their own suit. I could say more of them, but that for fear I must be favourable, who am now, as I tell you, a prisoner in the King's Bench, which may be called the bankrupts' banqueting house, where he feasts himself on dishes borrowed from other men's tables, or the prodigals' purgatory, and a pesthouse for decaying citizens. Weary of this place, wherein are as many maladies and mischiefs as flew out of Pandora's box opened by Epimetheus I invented this strategem.

One day I pretended much business abroad, and so got leave to go out with my keeper, resolving not to return with him. Having been from tavern to alehouse and so to tavern again, pretending the dispatch of much business, I at length told my keeper, that I would visit a very dear friend of mine, but that I thought it requisite to be trimmed first. He consenting, we went to a barber's. I sat down in the chair first, and being dispatched, I desired the keeper to sit down too, and I would pay for sprucifying his phiznomy. Whilst he was trimming I talked of one thing or other, to hold him in discourse. At last said the barber, 'Shut your eyes, or else my ball will offend them.' Shutting his eyes, I took an occasion to slip out, planting myself in an house hard by, the barber not imagining I was a prisoner. The keeper not hearing me talk, valued not the smart, but opened his eyes and seeing me not in the shop, rose up, and that so hastily, that he overthrew Cutbeard, and the basin on him, running out into the street with the barber's cloth about him, and Don Barberoso's turban on his head. The people seeing him thus with the froth about his face, concluded him mad, and as he ran gave him the way. The barber with his razor ran after the keeper, crying, 'Stop him, stop him, that I may be revenged on the rogue.' The other ne'er minding

the outcry, ran staring up and down as if his wits had lately stole away from him, and he in pursuit of them. Some durst not stop him, others would not, thinking the barber by his posture intended to have his testicles for abusing his wife. To conclude, the barber at last seized him, and having recovered his clothes, and made him pay 6 d. for shaving, the keeper was dismissed with a kick or two in the arse, the barber not suffering him to speak a word in his own defence. Thus freeing myself, I resolved to take the country air, where I happily met with you. Many other things worthy remembrance did he relate, which now I have forgot. Some while we stayed together ; but at last his business called him one way, and my padding trade invited me another.

## CHAPTER LI

*He is laid up in Oxford gaol by his host : he is cheated at Chester, and after some time is ransomed thence by some of his comrades, knights of the road, they paying his debts*

OUR crew having been abroad, we had got a valuable purchase ; which after we had divided, I told them that I would but visit a friend at Oxford, and repair to them again within two or three days. My old acquaintance being overjoyed to see me after so long absence, treated me very gallantly, introducing me into the society of the wits ; who would frequently drink too, till they had lost them. The company pleased me so well that I thought it a solecism in civility to be sober, when they made any appointment for mirth ; and they being true Bacchanalians, in the uppermost classes of Aristippus's school, scorned to be outvied by a junior sophister. And therefore, do what I could, they would be drunk before me. They never contended about any argument that tended to ebriety, but swallowed them all. I thought they would never have done speaking of sack ; every one endeavouring who should express most in its praise. One said, that Diogenes was but a dry fellow ; and the only reason he could give for it, was, that it is shrewdly suspected by the commentators on his tub, that that wooden-house of his was given him by a beer brewer, who being a enemy to all good wits and learning, gave him this cask, which formerly had contained that pernicious liquor, beer, that by the mere scent he might destroy his understanding. But Bacchus is so witty a philosopher, that he never fails, night nor day, to pour forth his instructions, till he hath filled his auditors out of measure ; it is he that makes us speak fluently, and utter

our minds in abundance. For my part, I am commonly so overjoyed in his company that I have often feared I should never be my own man again.

Said another, it is sack was the Promethean fire, not stolen from Jove's kitchin but his wine-cellar, to increase the native heat, without which we are but cold clay ; but that celestial liquor applied even to the dead, will cause a revivification : this is it which gave Ganymede beauty, and Phoebe youth. Can you think that ever Aristotle would have been taken notice of, had he drank ale or beer ; or that Alexander's conquests had been heard of, had he been sober ? To make his captains famous to posterity he taught them how to muster quarts and pottles, and by accustoming them to be dead drunk shewed them the way to contemn death.

' All this is true,' said another, so drunk that what he spake could hardly be understood, ' but pray take my opinion with you too. Do not all light things ascend ? What better way is there to understand high matters, than a light head ? Copernicus, by the lightness of his head, claimed alliance with heaven, and by that first found out the motion of the earth ; which he could never have done had not sack been his instructor. Hence grew the proverb, *In vino veritas*, as if sack were the only butt truth shoots at, the piercing of which causeth the other to be drawn out with it.'

' For my part, Gentlemen (said I) my passion was never more stirred than the other day, coming by a red-lattice, unto which I have a natural antipathy. There did I hear a tapster aver that Helicon was nothing more then an hogs-head of march beer, and that Pegasus was anciently a dray-horse ; and then speaking of French wine, in derision, called him frisking Monsieur ; and the Spanish, Don Rhodomontado ; swearing that if ever he met with either, he would challenge all the drawers in the Town to dash him as he would. Then tumbling out two or three small-beer oaths, he wished that he might never look through his red-lattice portcullice, if he did not verily believe he should see Monsieur burned, with a pox to him, and Spanish Don mulled to death with butter and eggs.

It is a thing beyond my reason,  
That we strong ale for sack should quit ;  
Since 'twould have blown us up by treason,  
Had not ale bestirred our wit.  
Then give us ale, but banish sack ;  
That Spanish Don must have the rack.

I could do no less for his malapertness, but broach his hogs-head, which to convince him of his error, ran terse claret. I heard afterwards, this accident converted the infidel.' We spun out various discourses of

this nature, as long as we could see, and then each man reeled to his respective lodging.

The next morning, walking abroad to find out some of my last night's associates, unfortunately my Chester landlord (who having some business to do in Oxford, was newly come thither to dispatch it) espied me, and without accosting me (like a subtle sophister) watched me whither I went. Being housed, he fetched two officers, and coming out into the street napped me. I sent to those friends that had been so merry with me ever since my coming to that city ; but they understanding the business, came not near me, one pretending indisposition of body, another that he was not within, a third that he was about urgent occasions, which having finished, he would wait upon me. In fine, none came to my relief, shewing themselves right pot-companions, whose courtesies, it may be, shall extend to the payment of a reckoning, when their friend wants it to discharge it himself ; but who disappear and vanish when their assistance is implored to draw him out of prison.

Seeing no remedy, I patiently suffered myself to be confined. My adversary visiting me, I treated with him about my releasement, offering him what I had, which was near upon half ; but his resolution was to have all, or there I must lie. Though I could not much condemn him, yet I could not but complain against the inconstancy of Fortune ; and ruminating within my mind the miseries that attend all sorts of prisons, I judged that of debt to be the most deplorable. And though I wanted liberty, which commonly doth depress the mind, yet by the virtue of canary (which I could not be without) my fancy scorned to be fettered, but would in spite of fate, use her freedom. 'Tis some kind of pleasure and comfort for a man sometimes in adversity to descant on his own miserable condition ; which because I found experimentally true, I applied myself to my usual custom, the use of my pen, differencing these metropolitan prisons thus :

To *Bedlam* men are sent bereft of wit ;  
When 'tis restored, then they are freed from it.  
Confin'd to *Newgate* long, men can't complain,  
For once a month they're clear'd from it and pain ;  
In a short time their bolts wear off, and then  
They may be sure ne'er to come there again ;  
Discharged thence their fettered souls shall be,  
Only an hour confin'd, and then set free.  
*Bridewell*, no wiseman yet did e'er dispraise thee,  
For thou dost feed the poor, correct the lazy ;  
The expiration of a little time,  
Forgives offenders, and forgets their crime.

Hereafter from the prison, Heav'n defend me ;  
Rather to *Bedlam, Newgate, Bridewell*, send me ;  
For there wit, work, or law doth set men free,  
Nothing but money here gets liberty.

Having lain here above a week, I sent away a letter to my brethren, informing them of my misfortune, and acquainting them with the sum I was imprisoned for ; which was sent me by them, and brought by one of our trusty knights. Paying my debts and fees, I returned again to them.

## CHAPTER LII

*He returns to his brethren, the knights of the road, whom he finds with two or three gentlemen, strangers : he cheats one of them of a very fair and rich watch*

MY companions took little notice of me at my return, which made me think there was some design in hand ; but according to their usual course, fell to drink high. Observing two or three faces, I tipped a wink to one of my brethren, being in another room. I asked him who they were ; he replied, gentlemen that were travelling into the North ; to which he added, ‘ We have been pumping them ever since we did thrust ourselves into their company, to know what store of cash they had about them ; but we find little more than will defray their necessary expenses on the road ; only,’ said he, ‘ there is one of them hath a very rich watch.’ I bid him return to his place, and I would warrant to have it before he stirred. I came in again to the company, not taking the least cognizance of any, but shewed much respect and civility to them all, as a stranger. I purposely asked what it was o’clock. One of the gentlemen, and both my friends, pulled forth their watches, striving who should first give me satisfaction to my question ; after this, they viewed interchangeably the workmanship of one and the other, both praising the seeming goodness of each other’s watch.

At last my friend makes a proposition : ‘ Come, Sir, if you please we will make an exchange upon sentence and repentance.’ The stranger desired to understand his meaning. ‘ Why, Sir,’ said he, ‘ we will commit them both into the hands of any one indifferent person, and what difference he shall judge there is between them, shall be given in money by him whose watch is least worth.’ It was concluded upon ; but they could not agree into whose hands to put them. At last it was mutually agreed

upon between them that I, being a stranger to them both, should be the decider. I seemingly refused it, but they would not hear me allege any arguments to the contrary ; whereupon I went out, and immediately causing my horse to be brought forth, without the least delay I mounted, and away I rid. My comrades knew where to meet me at the next stage. The next morning they found me out, telling me how they all stormed to be so cheated, to avoid suspicion ; and now did they all embrace me, promising to themselves great hopes in me from this adventure.

## CHAPTER LIII

*He puts a notable trick upon a physician*

NEAR adjacent to our general rendezvous I was informed of the habitation of a wealthy physician, who had shewed himself fortunately expert in divers cures, where it seemed that human art had not sufficient power to give a remedy. The fame of his great skill, and of many admirable cures, which to the shame of other physicians, he had performed, made him so generally beloved and sought after that in a short time he purchased by his sanatory industry, above 500 *l. per annum*, and seldom had less by him than a thousand pound. Thus much I casually understood from one accidentally, speaking of this his rich neighbour. But that which pleased me most was, that (as he said) he seldom carried less then an 100 pieces of gold about him constantly, proceeding from a fancy derived from an extreme love he bore that metal. I could not sleep for contriving a way how I might disemboque this urinal of what it contained. Sometimes I waylaid him in his return ; but he was so well esteemed of, that he seldom returned home without two or three gentlemen to accompany him. At another time I thought to have pretended some distemper, and so have applied myself to him for cure ; and imagining that he would privately discourse with me about my malady, that then I would present a pistol to his breast, swearing, that should be his immediate and unavoidable executioner if he did not without the least noise or resistance, deliver such a quantity of gold. But this way I could not approve of, it being accompanied with so much hazard.

At last I thought of this stratagem, which safely produced its effect. One day after dinner I rid to his house seemingly in extreme haste, which he might perceive not only by my own affrighted looks, but by my

horse, which was all of a foam. I asked his servant, with much quickness, whether Mr Doctor was within. ‘Yes, Sir,’ said he, ‘if you please to walk in, I shall call him to you.’ I waited some time (for most of that profession must take some state upon them) and then Mr Doctor came. ‘Sir,’ said I, ‘the report of your great experience in your happy practice hath brought me hither, humbly imploring your assistance, and that instantly, if you have any respect to the preservation of life. The trouble I shall put you to, shall be gratefully recompenced to the utmost of my ability.’ The doctor inquired of me who it was, and what manner of distemper the person laboured under. I readily told him, it was my wife, who for some continuance of time had been extremely troubled with the flux of her belly; ‘the more that is applied to it by us, the more it increaseth; wherefore, our help failing, I beseech you lend us yours, and favour me so far as to ride with me to her.’ The seeming sincerity of my words prevailed upon him, as they would have done upon the most distrustful. This doctor (who as I was informed, was accustomed to be induced more by gain, than fair words) gave me this desirable answer. ‘Sir, far be it from me that I should refuse to do my endeavour to any person whatever, much less to a gentleman of your rank and quality, in that little skill which I have in the knowledge and practice of physic. If I can effect anything for the good of the good gentlewoman, your wife, I will attend you thither with a very good will, which at any time my charge requireth.’ Without attending any further discourse, his horse was made ready, and so we rid away together.

As we rid through a small wood, leading him the way, I turned my horse about, and clapped a pistol to his breast, shewing him withal an empty bag. ‘See here, Sir,’ said I, ‘my wife, which hath a long time been troubled with a flux or vomiting, which you please, the last I think more proper; for she no sooner receives anything for her and my sustenance but she immediately brings it up again at her mouth. Now, Sir, if you do not find out some means to mitigate this distemper (the cure I shall never expect, as knowing it impossible) this pistol shall send you to *Æsculapius*, to consult with him what is most fit to be administered. Come, Sir, let me advise you, and save yourself the trouble of so long a journey; your gold (an hundred pieces as I am told) are the constant attending esquires of your body. I say, that is the best and only recipe for a remedy.’ The doctor perceiving there was no help, in much amazement and fear delivered me what gold he had about him, which was near upon the sum expressed. There was a rich diamond ring on his finger, which I desired him likewise to give me, which should serve for a perpetual memorandum of his kindness to me. I commanded him, as he tendered his life, to ride back again without so much as once looking

behind him ; and that if he offered to raise the country, if I was sure to die that instant I would be the death of him first. The doctor followed my dictations so exactly that I never heard more of him.

## CHAPTER LIV

*He falls in love with a wealthy widow, who is poetically inclined : he courts her, and in a short time enjoys her, and after that ungratefully leaves her, carrying away what ready money she had*

HAVING gained so much money by my own industry and sole procurement, I resolved neither to acquaint my brethren therewith, nor associate myself any longer with them, being so encouraged by this success, that I concluded I might achieve gallant things by myself. Being belated one night, and some miles from any town, I knocked at an house that stood in my road, imagining it at first a public house for entertainment. One of the servants coming to the door, I found it no such thing. She demanded my business ; ‘ Prithee, sweetheart,’ said I, ‘ acquaint your master that there is a gentleman requests the civility of a night’s lodging.’ She goes in and informs her mistress what I said, who came to me with much respect, telling me she questioned not but I was a gentleman, and therefore should be welcome to the mean accommodation she was capable of shewing. I rendered her many thanks, and so alighted. Strict order was given to the groom that he very carefully looked after my horse. This being done, I was conducted into a very fair room ; there did I make my apology in the best rhetoric I had, for I perceived she was endued with ingenuity, by the quaintness of her expressions ; *Ex pede Herculem*. Many things I forged, as that the ways being dangerous I was fearful to adventure any farther, having a great charge upon me.

Such was her urbanity that laying aside all niceties, she bore me company till it was time to go to bed, entertaining me all this while with what the house afforded, which was beyond my expectation. Every glass of wine or bit, almost, that I committed to my mouth, she ushered thither with some apothegm or other. The whole of her discourse was composed of nothing but reason or wit, which made me admire her ; which she easily understood, I perceived by her smiles, when she observed me gaping, as it were, when she spoke, as if I would have eaten up her words. As her soul was beautiful, sparkling with celestial ornaments, so was the cascanet that contained it very fair, and enriched with

Nature's chiefest gifts. She was very clear skinned, well-bodied ; a sharp piercing eye, a proportionable face, an exceeding small and white hand ; and then she lisped a little, which became her so well that methought it added a grace to the rest of her internal and external qualifications.

Being about ten o'clock, she advised me to repose myself, supposing I was weary. I condescended, though with much regret to leave her so soon ; but good manners would not permit me to do otherwise. She conducted me to my chamber, where bidding me good night, she betook herself to her own chamber. That night I could hardly sleep, not so much for pure love as the heat of lust. Next morning, very early, I heard her stirring, which made me wonder ; but she told me afterwards that she got up so soon, fearing I should have gone away, and she not take her leave of me.

About eight in the morning, the maid brought me up a sack posset ; and a little after, her mistress came, courteously saluting me, and enquiring how I slept. I returned an answer, in as handsome terms I could utter. Her eyes plainly discovered to mine that she had more than a common respect for me. Having left me a while, I arose, and made myself ready for my journey. After several discourses which she had engaged me in, purposely to delay time, with much gratitude I took my leave, she attending me to the court. My horse being brought out, halted down-right (she had caused him to be pricked in the foot, to the intent I might stay longer). Not knowing what to say or do, ' Well, Sir,' said she, ' since the unhappy accident hath fallen out so unexpectedly, make use of my house, and what is in it, till your horse be recovered of his lameness.' This was a proposition that my soul longed for ; wherefore I could not but shew much satisfaction in the acceptation of this proffer. We walked in again, and prosecuted for diversion sake our former discourse, interlining it with some love-touches at a distance, which she would frequently descant on pleasantly.

We in this short time became intimately acquainted ; which need not be much wondered at, considering the greatness of sympathy between us ; so that now the conquest of her appeared not any ways difficult. Having talked ourselves weary, ' Come,' said she in a very familiar manner, ' I will shew you the product of some idle hours ' ; and with that brought me several epitaphs, elegies, anagrams, anacrostics, epigrams, &c. of her own composition, too many here to relate ; but for their wit, deserved to have each line characterized in gold. Some I would here insert, were not the radiant lustre of her conceits so great and glorious that they would absolutely extinguish the dim-sightedness of my fancy. Having viewed them, I could not but applaud them, as their

due merit ; and I was glad I had this happy occasion to vent my own thoughts, which I tacitly insinuated in these lines, reflecting on her from what I had read :

Sisters thrice three I've read of, and no more,  
Till your quick wit completed half a score :  
Since you are one, let me persuade you then,  
Be kind to me, for they are kind to men.  
Dearest, be like them, they are soft and blithe ;  
Let who will love the nine, give me the tithe.

These lines so powerfully wrought upon her that she could not forbear to tell me that she was much obliged to me for what I had writ. ‘ You cannot Madam,’ said I, ‘ cancel your obligation till you have made some recompence.’ With that, said she smilingly, ‘ What will content you ? ’ ‘ The continuance of your favour, Madam, is the utmost ambition of my desires.’ ‘ You have it Sir ; neither can I deny any deserving man a thing so inconsiderable.’ ‘ By your favour, Madam, love, I mean.’ ‘ I never was so uncharitable,’ said she, ‘ to be out of love with any.’ I was glad to hear her reply so merrily ; for a fort which so capitulateth, is half surrendered. Since I had broke the ice, I was resolved to prosecute my design ; wherefore in plain English I told her that I loved her from the first interview, so ardently that my constancy should prove the reality of my affection. She desired me to leave that to the test of time ; that should she believe me suddenly before she had made trial, she should not only lose the good estimation she had gained by the prudent and discreet management of her affairs, every one accusing her for too much credulity, but thereby it may be involve herself in a labyrinth of all manner of troubles. ‘ Trial,’ said I, ‘ you shall have.’ And knowing the manner of courting a widow, a trial I gave her, knowing that parleys operate little on a widow, and there is nothing sooner gains a conquest than a storm or a resolute assault.

This action made her so firmly mine that I durst not speak of leaving ; which when I did at any time, her soul was ready to leave its ancient habitation to attend on me. Some two months we spent in all manner of self-pleasing delights, till at last I begun to be tired with her too frequent invitations ; the more I endeavoured to satisfy her, the further I was from it. Not only by her, but by others, this experiment I found, that the oftener I treated them the more eagerly and earnestly they desired it. Being now incapacitated to hold out in this manner longer, I thought it high time to be gone, but not without sufficient recompence for my service. She daily solicited me to marry her, which I promised her from time to time, waiting an opportunity when I might become master of

her treasure. One day in a frolic, and the more to encourage me to make a speedy consummation of our loves by marriage, she shewed me all her writings which concerned her estate, by which I found her to be so wealthy a fortune, that I often times cursed my unhappy stars that they had thus debarred me from the complement of so great a bliss. After this, she shews me a trunk wherein was contained her cash. Then taking me about the neck with such fervency of affection that I thought she would have strangled me, and with the repetition of kisses, she smiling, asked me, whether these things satisfied me or not. I told her they did, but they were not to stand in competition with her most affected self. With that she gave me the keys of that trunk wherein her money was, and in retaliation, I vowed to marry her in four days.

In the meantime I studied how I might be gone, but could not contrive a way, she not enduring me to be out of her sight. In fine, I feigned some indisposition of body, and that I would ride two or three miles for the benefit of the fresh air, and return ; with much willingness she consented. Just as I was about to take horse (having furnished myself with as much money as I could well carry without discovery) she wept bitterly (as having, I think, a prophetic spirit). I asked her the cause of her discontent ; all bathed in tears, she answered me with a deep sigh, 'I shall never see you more. Hard-hearted man ; can you thus leave a woman that loves you thus dearly, nay, that dotes on you ?' I made many protestations to the contrary ; which were not believed. Seeing that I could not prevail on her belief, I bad her farewell, setting spurs to my horse, and was out of sight in an instant. I could not but condemn myself extremely for this inhuman action ; but considering that there is no slavery greater than that of the smock, I soothed myself up in mine own unworthiness. Passing by a little ale-house, I called in, and over a pot of ale I composed these ensuing lines, which I sent to her by a messenger I procured in the house, directed thus :

Deliver these to the fair hands of *Mrs Pulcheria  
Tickleman*, at her dwelling-house, near *Reading*.

The contents were these, or to this purpose.

MADAME,

A poetess you are, and prophet too,  
Thus to divine I'm gone from you  
Eternally. 'Tis true. D'ye think that I can eat,  
Though ne'er so choice, always one sort of meat ?  
No, faith. I'd rather wear a porter's frock,  
Than to be shrouded in one woman's smock.  
You say you are with child. Pish, don't complain,  
'Tis but the product of your fruitful brain ;

Y'are only big with fancy, which may prove  
 A witty brat, like *Pallas* sprung from *Jove*.  
 And have you then conceiv'd ? How can I choose  
 But write *encomiums* on my fertile muse ?  
 Mind not the father, nor his brat, for it  
 Will like the father live (no doubt) by wit :  
 Let *Pegasus* be godfather, the crew  
 Of the nine Muses, gossips ; so adieu.

I desired no answer, therefore stayed not till the return of the messenger, but rid that night to Maidenhead.

## CHAPTER LV

*He comes up to London, sends to a particular friend whom he could confide in, to come to him, and requests him to compound with his creditors, which he did in a short time : in a short time after, he attempts the robbing of an house, but is taken and clapped up in Newgate : the miseries of an imprisoned estate, with the manner of his escape out of that prison*

THE next day I rode towards London, and about twilight took up my quarters in the suburbs. The day following, I sent for a friend whom I could put confidence in, who came immediately upon the reception of my letter. I communicated to him my intentions, who was very glad to hear of my resolution ; yet I would not acquaint him how strong I was, nor by what means procured. 'Twas enough that I gave him commission how far forth he should proceed, and no farther, which was half a crown per pound. He went (after I had given him a list of them all) to every one particularly, and treated with them so cunningly, and they despairing of ever recovering a farthing, condescended to his proposals ; whereupon he gets them all to subscribe, and then brings the paper to me, which I exceedingly well liked of. According to the day appointed, he carried them the money, which every one received proportionably, each man respectively giving me his general release from the beginning of the world. They to whom I had confessed judgments, filed according to law their discharges.

But when my creditors, a little while afterward, saw me walk the streets in so splendid a garb, some of them were ready to die with anguish : but that which troubled them most was my supercilious looks when I met any of them, and my slighting salutations. What I did in this respect,

was only to have the freedom of walking the streets, without the molestation of chargeable arrests. I kept such debonair company that the remaining part of my money grew low, and in a very short time after, was all spent. All my drunken companions failed me, and I having nothing left me but my clothes, necessity made me to condescend to the enquiry after the kind-natured gentlewoman, my wife. Her nearest relations could not give me any account of her, giving her over for lost. I wandered up and down, employing all the powers of my wit and invention in the search of what might conduce to supply my present necessities. While I was thus hammering out some new design on the anvil of experience, I bethought myself where probably I might find my wife. First, I went to Ratcliff Highway, and made enquiry of Damaris, &c. the metropolitan bawd of those parts, for a gentlewoman of such a complexion, stature, and age ('twas but a folly to mention her name, for those that follow that trade change their names as often as they do their places of abode). But that cart-load of flesh could give me no information, neither was it possible for me to have stayed to hear it, she so stunk of strong-waters, stronger than that cask that never contained anything else. I went down all along to the Cross. In my way I saw many whores standing at their doors, giving me invitation; but being poor, they could not afford the charge of fucus, so that their faces looked much like a piece of rumbled parchment, and by their continual traffic with seamen's breeches, I could not come near them, they smelt so strongly of tarpawlin and stinking cod. Yet still no tidings of her I sought for.

From hence I went to Fleet Yard, but there they were so dawbed or plastered with paint, and botched with patches that had I seen her there, it was impossible for me to have known her. Away I went to Lukeners Lane, Sodom, and Dog and Bitch Yard; but the pox, it seemed, had not yet fitted her for those places. From hence I went to Whetstone Park, where I saw my madame standing at the door. Her frequent trading, and those many shots she had received between wind and water in the service, had so altered her countenance and disproportioned her body that I knew not whether this frigate was English or Flemish built. But at last, hailing whence she was, I boarded her, and made her lawful prize. Mistake me not, I rummaged not in her hold, fearing she was a fire-ship. The sight and knowledge of me made her shed some Babylonish tears, which I took little notice of, knowing them to be either customary to that sex, or the effects of a moist brain.

In we went together, where we had, according to the custom of the house, pint black pots of small ale for twopence, and quarterns of strong water half filled for sixpence, with biscuits; which as soon as brought, everyone broken, though not a bit afterwards eaten. We must

be smoking, too, though the pipe must be thrown down carelessly, and often broken as soon as put to the lips. One of the plyers being gone down to draw some more drink, she begged me to conceal myself for the present, and comply also with the cheating customs of the house, and she would willingly pay all. I had hardly smoked two whiffs more, but that a fellow came where we were, swearing ‘ Damme, why do you stay with this fellow, and leave me thus, you unconstant quean ? Have I spent my estate on you, and must you now grow weary of me ? ’ And with that drew his knife, making a proffer to cut her nose off.

I was so amazed at what I heard, and so irritated by passion, that I knew not which of them to be revenged on first. ‘ Sir,’ said I, ‘ I have been longer acquainted with her than you, and may justly claim a better title and more privilege ; but as you have affronted me, so I shall require satisfaction instantly, not referring our difference to be decided by the field, an umpire that cowards frequently make choice of.’ So drawing my knife also, and seizing on his nose, which I intended to have divorced from his face, I was prevented, for it dropped off into my hand. This accident so astonished me, and withal being much affrighted at the sight of his death’s-head, I durst not meddle with him any further, lest handling any member, it would have dropped off in the same manner. He made a blow at me, but instead of striking me, I expected when his fist would have flown from his body into my face. He kicked at me, but that leg being up, the other was incapable of supporting his body, and so he fell down.

The old bawd hearing this disturbance, ran to us as fast as the vast bulk of her body would give her leave, whose pace was not much swifter than a snail in his full career, who having fasted too long, by the constant repercussion of the sun-beams on him in a misling morning, forrageth a garden for pillage. From the place whence she started to that where we scuffled was about six yards distance ; and from the time of her setting forward, to the time she came to us (not to belie the woman) was about half an hour, and then too, out of breath, for the haste she made. ‘ Sirrah, sirrah,’ said she, ‘ come you hither to breed quarrels, and abuse civil gentlemen, and it may be build a sconce too ? Get you out of my house, you rascal, or I’ll scald you out.’ By this time the pimp came to their assistance, and so they all conjoined to shove this poor fellow out of doors. And notwithstanding he had for two or three years frequented the house, yet they neither pitied nor relieved him as a maimed soldier, the marks whereof were a sufficient testimony, besides the loss of a member or two.

Having discharged my reckoning, my wife appointed me a place where I should meet her. Having now conveniency and privacy of

discourse, we waived everything that tended not to my present design, which was the contrivance of some way to live. At last we resolved to take an house and live together. I thought it was as good to be pimp to my own wife, by which means the major part of the gain would be mine, as pimp to another for 12 pence a day and spunging. What we had determined, we soon put in execution ; what money she had was laid out in utensils belonging to our trade, as for bedding, linen, chairs and stools, &c. The tally-man or broker sells his goods to be paid by 12 d. a pound *per week*. The truth of it is, we found of him, but more especially his servants, excellent customers ; for they would for a private favour, cut off a score, sometimes two or three from the tally. Our stock being but small, my wife was forced to be both bawd and whore ; but our trade increasing, she goes frequently to the carriers, where at last she had picked up a couple of very well-featured country-girls, and brings them home, entertaining them as servants ; but shewing as much kindness to them as if they had been our nearest kindred, purposely to induce them to stay. The whore, my wife, intended to have sold their maidenheads at a dear rate ; but in truth, I ever loved such things too well to put them to sale, having them in my possession. To be sure thereof, I gathered my rose-buds the first night, lest the infectious and contagious breath of some Suburbicarian should blast them. In four days' time I fitted them for their occupations, leaving the instructive part thereof to my wife to season them withal. I never saw two young jades understand their trade sooner in my life ; for in a month's time they could cant indifferently, wheedle most cunningly, lie confoundedly, swear desperately, pick a pocket dexterously, dissemble undiscernibly, drink and smoke everlastingily, whore insatiately, and brazen out all their actions impudently.

Now did I begin to renew my acquaintance with the tribe of rogues, with whom I grew so intimate that I was seldom out of their company, either at home or abroad. To relate all the tricks and rogueries we committed in one half year were an half year's work ; therefore, to be short, we were grown so notorious, and so generally taken notice of, that at last my wife and her two maids of dishonour were apprehended by the marshal's men, and carried to Bridewell ; I myself narrowly escaping by flight. The next day I boldly went to visit them. Methought their beating of hemp became them excellent well ; and in troth I'll say this for them, there hath not been seen in that place a more serviceable strong-dock crew for many years. Looking very earnestly upon that hemp my wife was beating, a deep fit of melancholy seized me, proceeding only from my imagination ; for I fancied that very hemp would make that very rope which should put a period to my life.

The time of my visiting them fell out on the day of their correction ; understanding so much, I resolved to stay and see them well lashed, I hoped. My wife being manacled, and the whip ready to encircle her waist ; ‘ Hold,’ said I, and then directing myself to the Masters of Bridewell ; ‘ May it please your Worships, this woman now under correction is the most impudent brazen-faced whore in the whole town. I have known her a long time, ever since, and some small time before she undid her husband, a very honest man, indeed, and had the good report of all his neighbours. But this confident slut could not then be content without her stallion, whom she maintained by what she purloined from her husband, and so utterly ruined him. Since, she hath been the destruction of several, some in their estates, others in their bodily health ; and now so far from being penitent, she glories in nothing more than in the relation of how many she hath undone here and hereafter. Wherefore, I beseech your Worships, for my friend’s sake, that good honest man, and for the good of her own soul, add one half-dozen stripes to the number intended, and let them be laid home.’ I had no sooner ended my speech, but I vanished immediately.

Just as I was out of the gate, I met with two of my roguing friends, whom the Devil had sent, I think, to waylay me. They were going, it seems, to see some of their doxies that had that day been committed. Being overjoyed to meet me so accidentally, they would needs have me go to the tavern with them. Over a glass of wine we consulted about divers matters, no goodness to be sure ; the result whereof was, that I should go to such an house and try if by any means I could get into it unperceived, and abscond myself in order to my opening the door for them about twelve o’clock. According to the time nominated I went, and with much facility conveyed myself into a lower room, wherein there was a bed, under which I crept, being confident I might lie there securely till all the household were retired to take their rest. After I had lain about some two hours on the ground, there came into this room a servant. I peeped out, and by the light of his candle, saw that which I thought would have distracted me with fear. He was laying the cloth, by which I understood the master of the house intended to sup there. Soon after, meat was brought in and served to the table ; then came five or six persons, who passing divers compliments (all which needless ceremonies at that time, I wished with their inventors were stark naked upon the top of the snowy alps) every one took seats. Had not there been at that time some small prattling children running up and down, and making a noise, the affright their appearance had put me in, would have betrayed me, for my knees knocked so hard one against the other that they made a noise like a mill-clack, or the striking of two

marrow-bones together. For my life I could not prevent the palsy from seizing every limb of me.

My cruel fate had so ordered it that there was a small dog in the room, and a cat, both dearly beloved by their mistress ; who would be continually flinging down something or other, which they continually quarrelled about, jealous and envious upon the distribution of their mistress's favours. At length she threw down a small bit ; the cat being somewhat a more nimble servitor and diligent waiter than the dog, took it and ran with it underneath the bed. The dog ran after the cat snarling, endeavouring to affright her, that she might forsake the purchase. The dog approaching near, and too much entrenching upon her right, she puts him in mind of his duty by one scratch with her claw, and chastiseth him for his rashness with two or three more. This so angered him that he made a furious assault upon puss, who defended herself as well as she could ; but at length they closed, and grappling each other, they made a most hideous noise. The spot in which they fought this combat, was underneath the bed, upon my buttocks. The servant that attended, being over-hasty to quell the noise by parting the fray, snatched up the fire shovel, and throws it underneath the bed. Had it hit my nose with the edge, as it did my breech with the handle, I should have had it pared off even with my face. The cat instantly provides for her safety by flight, but the dog still remained behind grumbling, and now and then barking with such eagerness that he became very offensive to the whole company. Wherefore the servant was commanded to drag him forth, which he did, beating him, and throwing him out of doors ; in the meantime I was left in such a condition as if I had been breathing my last.

As soon as the door was opened again the dog came in underneath the bed with more fury than before. This second alarm did my business (or as they vulgarly say, made me do my business) for running fiercely on me, he had bit me by the nose, but that I snatched away my head from him. But not observing the bed-post behind, I thought I had dashed my brains out against it ; fear also having bereft me of my retentive faculty, I did let fly at one and the same time, which made so strange a noise together that they all rose from the table to see what was the matter. Their noses quickly informed them of some part, for the room was presently strongly scented ; looking underneath the bed, they could see poor Jain Perus giving up the ghost (as dying persons usually evacuate their ordure before their departure) they pulling me forth, quickly revived me, roughly handled me, and then beat me till I was near dead again.

Being taken in the present offence, I could expect no other but to be

subject to the rigour of their vengeance ; I could make no plea sufficient to stay their fury, or satisfy their revenge. Having fetched a constable, I was carried before a justice of peace, who with little examination caused my *Mittimus* to be drawn, and so I was sent to Newgate. I was no sooner within, and under lock and key, but fetters confined my legs from struggling, and bracelets were clapped upon my arms. The rogues came all flocking about me for their garnish, which I gave them ; some of the genteeler sort added more to it, so that we had abundance of drink. But never did I hear so confused a din of Damn-me and Sink-me : others singing so loud (*alias* roaring) that I thought myself in Hell, and that these were damned souls that roared through extremity of torments. I thought none had been so wicked as myself, till I came among these Hell-hounds. Not a word came from any of their mouths but what was seconded with an oath, cursing their bad stars, and blaspheming.

The misery of this, or any other prison is sufficiently represented, if by nothing else than want of liberty, that rich inheritance of living souls, as it is the greatest of enjoyments next that imperial gem of health, so the want thereof next to sickness must needs be of all other the most bitter. Since then to be confined to the confines of a gaol is to be in part unmanned, entombed alive, what and how great is that wretchedness that is occasioned not only by a want of liberty, but by a continual dread of shameful death ! The terror of this place full of torture is so exasperated by the imagination of a noble mind, that Hell itself cannot contain more exquisite woes and pains, a continuance whereof were sufficient to punish all offences, if the law dispensed with that debt due to justice, the life of the offender. Your companions are none but licentious wretches, souls which daily surround you with their loathsome persons overspread with scabs and lice. Here sighing is our air, our comfort coldness, our food despair, our music rattling of chains, our recreation the destruction of vermin ; lastly, our expectation death and damnation. The keeper with the grim aspect of his stern countenance makes us tremble with fear of a new martyrdom, whilst the insulting rascal on the tip-toes of his pride need not screw his ill-favoured face to a frown, for he knows not how to look otherwise ; which so dejects the spirits of us poor imprisoned slaves, that the contrition of our looks seems to implore his smiles, whose flinty heart having renounced remorse, casts a defiance in our sad and piteous faces.

I might insist much further, but that I am hastening to get out of the miserable and soul-excruciating prison. One day after I had exonerated nature, I chanced to view the seat, and found that it was no difficult matter to go down the vault by the help of a rope. A trusty friend coming to see me, I told him what I had observed, and what I wanted.

Some three days before the sessions, he brought me rope enough to have hanged us all. Having a respect unto two more, which I honoured for their admirable good parts, I informed them of what I intended ; which presently we put in execution. First I went down, but I could have wished myself up again ; for I was up to the neck, and knew not but I might be deeper ; but to my great comfort I found to the contrary ; the rest descended after me, with the like good success. Having gotten us to an house, in which we could put confidence, we quickly freed ourselves from our iron tackle.

## CHAPTER LVI

*He and his two comrades (which he had delivered) disguise themselves : and having been old experienced gamesters, they taught him all the tricks on cards, by which they usually cheated their cullies or mouths : also how to nap, palm, or top a die, with all things thereunto belonging*

WE had places enough to send to for change of apparel, as rich as we pleased, or as beggarly again on the contrary, according as our design required. Having lain in lavender about a fortnight in this house, not only to sweeten us, but that the rumour of our escape, and search for us might be over, we got ourselves change of habits. Then did we all consult with our looking-glasses for the change of our faces, not suffering our own judgments to pass without the approbation of the rest. In the first place I got me a coal-black periwig (my own hair being flaxen) and a small false beard suitable, with whiskers in the Spanish fashion. It was no great trouble to black my eye-brows every morning ; then clapping a patch on my left eye, stealing out of the room, while my companions were busied about the same thing, not minding me, and coming in again presently, my appearance did put them all into a very strange confusion. I changed my voice, and asked them what they were doing ; and speaking to them in a tone they were not acquainted with, their chops moved incessantly, but the Devil a word I could understand ; they had got a palsy in their jaws by their sudden surprizal. To have observed the several monkey-faces, and baboon-postures, could not but extract laughter from the severest cynic. ‘ Why don’t you answer me, and that quickly, ye sneaking dumb rascals ? ’ Looking most pitifully one upon the other, expecting who should speak first, at last said one, ‘ We mean no harm, we are only preparing some things for a mask, which shortly will be presented to the citizens, and we are persons therein concerned.’ I

could not hold longer, but burst forth into an excessive laughter, by which they understood their mistake, not without shame enough, to think that the apprehension of danger so slightly grounded, should so terrify them, being struck dumb, and almost dead with a panic fear. To be brief, we very well liked the manner of our metamorphosis ; and having borrowed some money as the necessary tools of our intended trade, we adventured abroad.

The first mouth we picked up was in the Long Walk by Christchurch, upon the account of a wager. There came towards us a young man, who by his garb seemed to be a merchant's man (he afterwards proved so, and his cashier). I stepped to him and said, 'Sir, if it may not be too troublesome to you, I beseech you resolve me one question : this gentleman hath laid an angel with me, and referred the decision thereof to the next that came this way, whether this next adjacent hospital be St. Thomas's, or St. Bartholomew's.' Said the young man, 'I can assure you it is St. Bartholomew's.' 'Why then, friend,' said I, 'you have lost. Sir, will you be pleased (if it may not be any great hindrance to your present affairs) to accompany us to the next tavern, and participate of the losings, for I scorn to pocket it ?' He condescended, and so we went together. We discovered not anything till the sixth pint, and then my friend, as by chance, found a pair of cards in a corner of the window, which he himself had laid there before. 'Here is a pair of cards,' said he, 'come, to pass away the time, let us play for a pint or so.' I really took up my friend : put was the game. I won of him two or three pints, and ever and anon I would drink to the stranger, so that now he began to be warmed, and seemed to take delight in our play, looking over my hand, and sometimes prompting me to see him when he did put to me. At last my friend played the high game, as the term of art renders it ; that is, he gave me two trays and an ace, and reserved for himself two trays and a deuce. My antagonist puts to me. I pretended I knew not what to do, shewed my game to the stranger that looked over my shoulder. He jogs me on the elbow. I still delayed. 'Come Sir,' said my opponent, 'what will you do ? I will hold you five pound on these very cards in my hand.' I received the second jog. 'Will you go halves, Sir,' said I ? He answered me, that he would. But alas, we lost : it could be no otherwise. This so animated the stranger that he persuaded me to play again, and that he would go the moiety of every stake.

Sometimes 'twas so ordered that I won ; but in fine I lost forty pound, my cully being half. He would now give over, being much perplexed that he should thus lose his master's money ; but that he might forget the condition he was in, we drank round some half a dozen healths ;

so that now I thought it high time to provoke him again to let down his milk by some new trick or stratagem.

Now did we fall to the preaching of the parson, a trick on the cards which hath deceived the most curious eye and the wariest of men ; with which we gained from our young merchant, the major part of his money.

Lastly, to the intent we might without any further delay give him an acquittance for the rest of his money, we drew out some other implements, *viz.* dice fixed for our purpose, as High-fullums, which seldom run any other chance than four, five, and six ; Low-fullums, which run one, two, and three, &c.

By these means we sent him home penniless and heartless, whilst we drank healths to the confusion of sorrow.

## CHAPTER LVII

*From hence he goes, by the direction of his comrades, to a new fashion bawdy house : he describes it, and relates his own success*

UPON the division we found each man's share to amount to 40*l.* a piece. Being overjoyed at our first good success, we resolved to return thanks for our good fortunes in some private meeting-house, where we might have a sister to assist in the carrying on the work of the day. The Devil in all societies never wants his factor, or one to solicit his business ; for, I had no sooner intimated my desires, but one of my rope-brokers gave me information of a place fit for that purpose, and that the like was not anywhere to be found. Being pricked on with the desire of novelty, and to understand the curiosities therein, I went according to my directions solely ; for company in such designs commonly frustrates expectations.

They advised me when I came to the door, to pretend I came to enquire out lodgings. At the first, I verily thought myself abused by these rogues, or mistaken in the house, when I saw a porter standing at the door with his tip-staff. To undeceive myself, I confidently, yet civilly asked him whether there were any lodgings to be let there ? ‘ Yes Sir,’ said he, ‘ which you may view if you will give yourself the trouble of walking in.’ I had no sooner entered the door but I was met by a grave matron, who readily understood (as I conceived) my approach, by her sentinels above in the windows. ‘ Madam,’ said I, ‘ I am informed that here are lodgings to be let.’ ‘ There is so, Sir,’ said she ; and with

that conducted me into her parlour, which was gallantly furnished, there to take a stricter view of me, as to my person, but more especially my garb, by which she might partly judge how well lined my pockets were.

After the resolution of some trivial questions, for discourse sake, she was so well satisfied in me that she shewed me the way up one pair of stairs, into a very large and fair dining-room hung with rich tapestry, and adorned round with excellent pictures, the effigies of divers ladies (as I took them to be) renowned and celebrated in all ages, for the fairest and most beautiful of that sex. A servant brought us up immediately after our entry into that room a bottle of sack, without any order given, as I could perceive ; out of which the old gentlewoman drank to me, expressing my welcome. For want of other discourse, because we were both silent a while, for I was contemplating her face, in which I could then see still the goodly ruins of a beautiful and handsome countenance ; ‘Sir,’ said she, ‘as you are a gentleman, you may have some knowledge in that noble art of limning, since for its excellency it is in these our days (and hath been in most ages) much studied by the gentry of this nation ; wherefore, your judgment, Sir, which of all these pictures is the best drawn, or according to the rules of physiognomy, hath the best features ?’ ‘Madam,’ said I, ‘I shall freely give you my judgment ; which is this, in my opinion (pointing at one), for she hath a full large front, her arched eyebrows are thick and black, without any straggling hairs ; her eyes are of the same colour, and by their intuitive faculty seem to penetrate that which they look on ; passing her cheeks, which carry in them an excellent air, and her nose, which is neither too long nor too short, view her lips, whose plumpness and redness resemble a double cherry ; and then for the dimples in her cheeks and chin, I could make them the subject of an whole day’s discourse. What might be said more of this representation, I shall waive, wishing myself no greater happiness than to discourse the rest with the real substance.’ ‘Which is not impossible, Sir, if you can have but the faith to believe your own eyes’ ; and so instantly thereupon withdrew herself, leaving me amazed at what I had already seen, my heart the mean time beating an alarm to my passions, to be all in readiness at the approach of this celestial creature.

Hearing a rustling of silks, I drew my eyes off the picture, and looking towards the door, there I saw enter an angel ; for I could not believe there could be so much perfection in any one mortal. With profound reverence I stood at a distance, admiring, or rather adoring her person, till she smilingly and familiarly desired me to sit down. Being come to myself, I could talk to her ; and in half an hour, confidence had reposessed

her ancient seat in me. It will not only take up too much time, but also offend the ears of the modest Reader, here to insert what discourses we had ; therefore I shall waive them, and come to the conclusion.

'Sir,' said she, 'I question not but that you are acquainted with the customs of the house.' I protested to her, I was altogether ignorant. 'Why, you know that you may call for what wine you please, not exceeding four bottles ; and if you please to eat, you shall have some choice bit suitable to the season, &c. If you stay not all night, your expense shall be but forty shillings, and you shall have to boot, the enjoyment of a mistress besides ; but if you stay all night, then thus must you do ' (and with that she drew forth ten pieces of gold) 'whether you fancy me or any else, that matters not, you must deposit before you go to bed ten pound, laying it underneath your own head, and for every kiss, &c., take a piece back again, and if you draw in this manner all your own stake, you may next day be dismissed with a great deal of applause, without expending a penny, but what you shall be pleased to distribute voluntarily among the servants.'

I was stark mad to be at it, and so impatient that I instantly told out ten pieces. Telling my money the next morning, I found I had eight pound of my ten, but I deserved to have had my money trebled : however, for the present, I thought forty shillings was never better spent, nor eight husbanded with so much recreation and delight. By her I understood what manner of cattle they were that frequented that house, though prostitutes and freebooters, yet such as scorned a piece of country dirt : some were persons of no mean quality, which came thither to satisfy (what was impossible to do) their insatiate lusts, and therefore enacted that law or custom of depositing ten pieces, merely to incite such who were confident of themselves to make trial of their skill for the lucre of gain ; and to the intent that it might not be discovered, either by their husbands or such relations or friends that had received causes of jealousy, they had their peeping-holes, where they might plainly and fully see such who came upon the like account. If the gentleman was unknown to that gentlewoman whose picture he elected to bear him company that night, she with much freedom would appear, and tender herself as the subject of his pleasure ; otherwise abscond herself. If so, and the gentleman press hard for a sight of her the picture represented, why then Madam Bawd finds some excuse or other, as that picture she bought casually at second-hand as she passed through Long Lane, or that it was the gift of some friend of hers ; with many other fictions, merely to make him desist from the pursuance of his desires.

Being very much pleased in the satisfaction of my fancy, I took my

leave, not without some acknowledgment thereof, in these consequent lines.

What is a *bawdy-house*? I fain would know :  
It is a thing appears so by the shew.  
Is that a *brothel*, or an house of state,  
Where tip-staff porters do attend the gate ?  
Then there are many noble ones I see,  
And palaces may courts of bawdry be.  
This was a stately house, and yet was such ;  
In stately houses ladies take a touch.  
It must be so, th' have little else to do,  
Than study how to answer those that woo.  
Such pamper'd flesh must yield, and few gainsays  
Their own lusts motions, but with formal nays ;  
Rather than want that satisfaction, most  
Stick not to purchase it, though at the cost  
Of health and wealth, delighting thus in sense,  
They never think too much the recompence.  
Why should they then fond souls rail at an whore,  
Since they themselves are on that very score ?  
And damn all *brothels*, too to Hell ; but stay  
What house is not a *brothel-house* I pray ?  
Many I've seen, with this none can compare ;  
A new exchange where ladies sell their ware  
To none ; they scorn thereon to set a price,  
But leave it solely to the Chapman's choice.  
No sale-shop, but a game at *In* and *In* ;  
Throw *In* and *In* but ten times, and you win.  
Here by a female council 'twas judg'd fit,  
He that reaps pleasure here, must pay for it ;  
Not with his purse, so much as brawny back,  
Solely affecting such who hold them tack.  
And to provoke men on, no want of wine ;  
Nay, all delights do here in one combine  
To raise men's fancy, that he may do o'er  
That thing he did but even then before.  
Her rosy dimpled cheeks, vermillion lips,  
Did blush to see her ivory thighs and hips :  
Her round soft belly swelled with pride below  
Like a small hill 'twas overspread with snow :  
Let a warm hand but touch it, and it will  
Its moisture into pearly drops distil ;  
We kist and parted, I sigh'd, she did sob ;  
She for her lusty *lad*, I for my *Mob*.

## CHAPTER LVIII

*He finds out his two comrades (the gamesters) and after some consultation had, they resolved to re-assume their quondam trade of padding, are taken, and committed to Newgate*

FROM this house of pleasure (where I must ingenuously confess I never received more for so little expense), I went in search of my two gamesters, whom casually I met. The next tavern was our council-chamber, where wine was the dictator. We there unanimously concluded it was a thing beneath us to pick up here and there crowns or angels but resolved on have-at-all, knowing that a five hours' adventure might make us possessors of 500*l.* With this resolution we went and bought us horses, with all things requisite for our intended expedition. Being all ready and well prepared, we took our leave of London for a while. We had not rid above fifteen miles, but we baited ; the hostler knowing me, and what designs I had formerly been upon, and imagining I was steering the same course, whispered me in the ear that he had a desire to speak with me instantly. Taking my opportunity, under the pretence of looking to my horse, he informed me that there were three within, drinking, that on the next morning would travel such a road, and that they had a great charge with them. I thanked him, bidding him come to my chamber at night, where I would discourse farther with him. Then he gave me a summary account of all ; and after a smart drinking bout, with promises to him of reward if we prospered, we betook ourselves to our rest.

In the morning, very early, we called for our horses, and rid in that very road through which those three travellers were to pass, where we planted ourselves very conveniently. About three hours after, we could discern them at a distance. By that time we had made ourselves ready, they were at hand ; just at the bottom of a small hill we bid them stand. They asked us to what intent. We told them that we were younger brothers, and wanted money, and therefore must borrow some of them. With that, they all in an instant drew their swords ; being not unprovided with pocket-pistols, we fired at them, and they again at us. We were all at level coil, and very equally matched ; the second shot killed my horse, and a fourth bereaved my consort of life ; the third rogue ran away.

Being in a labyrinth of perplexity, I thought it the best way to sell my life at as dear a rate as I could (knowing very well that if I were taken I should be hanged). I fought with my sword as long as I could stand

upon my legs, wounding both them and their horses ; but at last one unhappily ran me through the sword-hand, and thereupon I was disarmed. I was carried by them before the next justice of peace, whom they enquired out, and by a *Mittimus* was committed. I could not now expect anything but death ; but the next news I heard was, that I must be removed to Newgate, there being other things to be alleged to my charge. I was mounted again, in order to my removal, but very ill horsed, being bound thereunto and pinioned. My greatest grief when I came into London streets was to hear the various descants of the good women on me ; some saying, what a pity it is such an handsome young man should come to the gallows so soon ? Others judged I had deserved it, otherwise I should not have rid to town in that posture pinioned and so attended with a guard. As soon as the keeper saw me, leaping for joy, ‘ O Sir, are you come again ? We will take care that you shall not be any more annoyed with smells proceeding from the vault ’ ; and so without more ado, laid as much iron on me as there is in some smith’s shops, and confined me close prisoner to the dungeon.

Which made me curse those acts the Fates have done,  
To cause a setting ere a rising Sun :  
But since my doom is now decreed by Fate,  
I must indur’t, repentance is too late.

## CHAPTER LIX

*He much condemns the follies of his past actions, and in token of his unfeigned repentance, gives some general instructions to his countrymen, first how to know padders on the road, by infallible signs : with other remarks worthy the observation of any traveller, laid down in some consequent chapters*

BEING in this terrestrial Hell (where darkness, horror and despair surrounded me), my conscience started out of her dead sleep, and demanded of me a severe account of what I had done. My guilt was such I had not a word to speak for myself, but wished my production (as my actions were) inhuman. What did not then the apprehension of an approaching and unavoidable death suggest to my thoughts ? To have only died (though with the most exquisite, terrifying, and soul-excruciating tortures) was not a thing the spirit of man should shrink at ; but the consideration of an eternal punishment hereafter, justly inflicted on such who have offended an infinite God, absolutely distracted

me. So that methought I already heard the howls and hollow groans of damned souls, which add to the weight of their everlasting misery.

Having somewhat appeased my enraged conscience by a faithful promise and constant resolution to lead a new life, if I should escape the danger of the Law, I determined with myself to shew the first-fruits of my reformation by publishing something to the world that might serve as a guide for travellers, how they might pass in safety on their way. To that purpose I acquainted my keeper with my good intentions ; but that being no particular profit to him, he valued not the public, and therefore rejected my good motion till I greased his fist, and then I had the accommodation of a candle, pen, ink and paper, &c.

The uncertainty of their attire, various disguises, non-constancy of residence, and changeable names, makes me incapable to do what I would ; therefore I will do what I can (according to my small experience, occasioned by my no long continuance among them). Riding on the road (if you have company) it may be two or three shall overtake you, and seem to be much afraid of you. They will pretend to be even now set upon by half a dozen stout fellows, but that they did beat the rogues, forcing them to fly for safety : and this fiction they use to seal with basket-hilt-oaths. Thus by your answers they will find whether you dare fight ; if not, they will wait an opportunity to act their roguery on you ; which having done, as a reward for what unwillingly you have left them, they will pretend to give you a word shall protect you better than your sword, from any injury shall be done you upon the like account ; but this is nothing else than a mere cheat, and no securing charm ; for we valued not words, when our wants were in pursuit of money. Not but that we used some formal words among ourselves, when ready to seize a prize ; and observing other company, either before or behind, to desist a while, by which we knew what we had to do, and the ignorant travellers suspected no wrong.

## CHAPTER LX

*What is to be taken heed unto, before the traveller begin his journey*

MOST respected country-men, and more especially you who frequently pass the road, the most part of my notorious wicked life having been consumed in all manner of cheats and debauchery, and that in part of late maintained by robbing, seeing now the wretchedness of that course of life, and being sensible of the injury I have done my

country, I looked upon myself as bound to satisfy the debt I owe to you, to the uttermost of my power ; which reacheth to an act not more satisfactory than good advice how to avoid those dangers which too many of late days have fallen into, since Dammee plumes of feathers came in fashion.

First then, if you carry a charge about you, make it not known to any, and conceal the time of your departure in your own breast ; for it is a custom no less common than indiscreet and foolish, among some sort of persons, to blaze abroad among their reputed friends the time of their intended journey, and vaingloriously make them acquainted with what considerable sums they should carry with them. By this means the son hath oftentimes betrayed the father, and one friend another, by informing or plotting with some of the padding society, the discoverer sharing (for giving notice of the prize) one quarter or more of the gain he betrays, when but for this foolish humour they had not been waylaid. Again, have a special care, both of the hostler, chamberlain and host himself. The two first the thief is sure to bribe ; and the last, in expectation of a share with them (as it is so ordered) or in hopes that the major part of what they get shall be profusely spent in his house, gives them items where the booty lies.

Especially be sure on the road to associate with none but such as you find inclined rather to leave your company than keep it ; for they are very suspicious persons, and oftentimes prove dangerous, that press into your society, and are very inquisitive to know whither you intend spinning out the time with many impertinent questions. But if you would know whether the strangers' intentions be honestly inclined, take occasion to make some stay. Observe you in the mean time their motion ; for if they make an halt, or alight, so that you may overtake them, follow at a distance ; but if their pace be so slow that you needs must overtake them, look about you, and provide for your safety ; for there is no surer symptom of an highwayman than such purposed delays.

The other usual marks of such moths be these ; they commonly throw a great leaguer-cloak over their shoulders, covering their faces, or else they have visibly disguised their faces in some manner or other. Now of late they find very useful a vizard, in every respect (but for the largeness) like the *a-la-mode* vizard-masks so much worn by gentlewomen who endeavour to conceal the shame of their wanton actions by absconding their faces. If you meet with any who have none of these things, as soon as they come somewhat near you, fix your eye full in their face : if they turn their heads from you, keep your distance, and ride from them with what expedition you can. But being surprized by any you know, be very careful that you discover it not to them ; for these desperadoes

never think themselves secure till they have prevented your giving intelligence, by cutting asunder the thread of your life.

Observe whether their beards and hair of their head agree in a colour, and are not counterfeit ; and be sure to beware of him that rides in a mountier cap, and of such as whisper oft ; or of any one single person that intrudes into your company, for that is one way they have to ensnare the traveller. He will tell you a great many merry and facetious stories, merely to ingratiate himself with you ; which having obtained, he shews himself more than ordinary civil, and so fearful of anything that may prejudice his new acquaintance that he no sooner espies two riding toward them, but he apparently trembles, and will question his new friends what charge they have about them. If little, the best way were to yield to these approaching persons, if thieves, rather than hazard a life ; but if it be anything considerable, he will presently vow to be true to them, and rather than they should come to any danger or loss, he will fight with them as long as he hath breath.

These so causelessly suspected, were perhaps downright honest fellows, but before they had travelled five miles further, 'tis ten to one but they overtake two or three more, one it may be riding aside with twists of hay instead of boots, it may be with a fork, bill, or goad in his hand, like a country boor. It may be your newly-entertained treacherous friend will tell you that he will make good sport with this country bumpkin, and so to that purpose ask him some foolish impudent question, which the other shall answer as ridiculously ; so spinning out the time till a convenient place and a fit opportunity serve ; then shall this pretended friend seize one of you himself, and my hedge-creeper turn hector, and lay hold on another : and now will it be in vain for you to strive, for nothing but money will ransom you out of their hands.

## CHAPTER LXI

*Instructions in what manner, at what time, and what road is most safe to ride*

THERE are so many ways to rob the innocent, that it behoveth every man to be very circumspect, how, when, and where he rides. If you have a quantity of money about you, choose rather to ride by night than day ; for by this means you are freed from any horseman or cutter whatever. But this course cannot seal your protection from base sheep-stealing penny-rogues, the baseness and lowness of whose spirits will stoop for a noble, though they hang for their pains. Therefore take

heed of their long poles, and that they do not suddenly start out and lay hold on your bridle. As for the nobler sort of rogues, this they believe as an undeniable maxim, that none will ride by night that are worth the robbing. Besides, they are obliged to take their inn betimes, lest through mistrust they should be apprehended. Moreover, they hardly dare adventure in the dark, because they cannot discern what dangerous defences the assailed have, as pistols, or other private weapons in readiness, nor see their own advantages : and withal, it will be no difficult matter to convey in the obscurity of the night, what they have undiscovered, into some ditch. Choose to travel in by-roads, for it is a general rule with highwaymen to keep their station on the greatest roads, that of the number that pass by they may select such as they think will prove the richest booties. Here now as a corollary, take notice of a foolish custom ; some when they ride by any place that commonly speaks danger will bustle up together side by side ; which is the usual overthrow of such. Wherefore take my counsel here, when ere you ride, in fear especially, ride far asunder, at least a stone's throw. By so doing none durst set upon you, fearing lest this straggling order give some leave to escape undoubtedly, and so raise the country in their pursuit.

## CHAPTER LXII

*How a man is to behave himself if beset or surprized*

WHEN the rogue bids you stand, look not about as if amazed, or hoping for a rescue ; for this doth but encourage them to the height of resolution and expedition ; but looking sternly, as if fear were a stranger to you, making your brow the throne of rage and fury, draw, and undauntedly tell them that though you have but little, yet you would willingly sacrifice your life rather than lose a penny ; and add ten more to it (if you had them) than have your reputation stained with cowardice. This is the readiest and most certain way to save both your money and credit ; for they fighting with a guilty conscience within and without, against country, law, and justice, if nobly a man resists (this I know experimentally) the stoutest, and most undaunted, and highest spirit of them all will stoop to discouragement.

Some I have known, that durst out-brave the roaring cannon to the mouth, yet their courage has found an alteration when on this account they have met with a bold and nobly resolved antagonist. But if by your own negligence, and the malevolency of fortune, the pleasure of your

journey is eclipsed and clouded by a sudden surprizal, and that you see no hopes but that you must yield, be not so unwise as to strive when it is too late, but give them the best words you can ; and rack your wits to please their ear, most devoutly wishing you had more money to supply their present occasions ; and so banishing all dejectedness from your looks, deliver some, and so perhaps they will let you pass without further search.

If they make a second offer, yield freely to it ; then it may be they will sift you soundly. Never in that time lay your hand near your money, and seeming fearless, it will be a means to make their suspicion of a greater sum to vanish. This I have known myself, that when I have taken so much as pleased me well, by men's fear I have had grounds to think they had more, and so made me research ; laying my hand but near the place where they had concealed the rest, suddenly would they cry out that they were undone, when as yet I had found nothing ; but by their foolish and undiscreet carriage I have found the remainder, which otherwise might have been secure and safe from me.

### CHAPTER LXIII

*Directions, if robbed, how to follow the thieves ; which way to set Hue and Cry after them ; how to coast, and where to find them*

**I**F you are robbed, there is no help but to endeavour to surprize the thieves by a strict pursuit. Therefore let no Remora or delay deter you from obtaining your wish, and so seize them that so lately seized you. In the first place, scour the next road, not straight before, but either on the right or left hand ; for they know Hue and Cries never cross the passages, but go straight along. If in so doing you miss them, then conclude they are sheltered in some inn which you have passed, and therefore you must set some careful spies, with a sufficient assistance near at hand, and be confident you will see them come that way, without the least apprehension of fear, or fear of apprehension. But this observe, that if they light of any considerable sum, then do they ride that night to their general rendezvous in London, which is too sure a shelter for them.

But observably take notice, for here is as eminent an example of their subtlety as any ever the Devil enriched their knowledge with ; if you are robbed in the eastern quarter, pursue them not in the direct road to London with Hue and Cry, for by some other way they are fled ; but haste to the City, and in Westminster, Holborn, the Strand and Covent Garden search speedily, for there they are. If northward they light on

you, then to Southwark, the Bankside, or Lambeth they are gone ; and when you find anyone, seize all with him, for they are all companions that are together.

## CHAPTER LXIV

*Cordial advice, and infallible instructions for the innkeeper, how to know thieves from his honest guests*

METHINKS the many tragical examples of innkeepers who have harboured and countenanced thieves were sufficient (I should think) to deter those that survive from doing the like ; wherefore my advice to them in general is, that their chiefest care be not to wink at any such life-destroying actions for hope of gain, lest that sweet be imbibited by future trouble and disgrace. That you may know them, observe these rules : First, they are extraordinary curious about their horses ; they will have them as strangely dressed, as strangely fed, with mashes, bread, flesh, and mingled provender, and that in an unusual quantity. If any wonder at the extraordinary feeding of their horses, they will endeavour to palliate their design therein by telling that their tricks and good abilities deserve it : nay, sometimes they will boast that their worthy services will soon repay the cost ; using the like dark words to that effect, which are palpable grounds for suspicion.

It is their custom likewise to ask, Whose horse is that ? or, What is the owner thereof standing by ? of what function or quality ? whither he intends to travel ? how far, and when ? Observe again, that their cloak-bags are for the most part empty, carrying them only but to make a show. Next, the chamberlain conducting them to their chamber, he is at once dismissed ; but let him hearken, and if they are highwaymen, 'tis ten to one but they fall to share what they have purchased that day ; and he shall see every one taking his dividend, as well as hear the money, if he but narrowly pry into the chamber. This they never defer, lest he which hath the purse should cheat the rest.

But above all, for their discovery, make this trial ; Cause one to knock hastily at the gate, giving him instructions in the meantime that attends on them to observe their carriage then, and he shall see them start and stare in each other's face with ghastly looks, being struck with fear and amazement. Speak so that they may hear you, seemingly to some or other in the house, asking what officers those are ? what is their business ? or whom do they look for ? or the like. If they seem much frightened, bid them fear not, for none shall search where they are, to offer

them any injury ; and that they are as safe with him, as in a well fortified castle. By this means you may pry into their private thoughts and actions so far as that you may gather, not only substantial grounds for more than bare conjectures, but it may be they will confess something too, desiring your concealment and succour, and they shall think themselves for ever engaged. After this you may use your own discretion.

Then again, you may perceive by their loitering and disregard of time, what they expect ; for they only bait but to observe what purchase they can see pass by ; which when they have espied, they will pretend immediate business calls them to be gone, and so mount in great haste. Again, when they come to an inn to lodge, they commonly come in divided, or in several companies, frustrating the Hue and Cry by their number : besides, if one part be surprized, the other may escape ; and when the residue comes in, they seem as strangers one to the other, enquiring of mine host what their companions are, what countrymen, whether he knows them ? And if they find he hath suspicion of any of them, they will feign some business that necessitates their speedy departure. But if you take them for honest men, as they met by seeming chance in your kitchin, so after some formal civil salutations and drinking together, they soon became acquainted, and before they part, shew much familiarity.

Thus as I was farther endeavouring to lay open their devices and deceits, to repair what wrong my country had sustained by me, when word was brought me that I must immediately appear at the bar, and there answer what should be objected against me ; and it was but just that I should be now exposed to the law of justice, since I had so often rejected and slighted the law of mercy.

## CHAPTER LXV

*He receives sentence of condemnation : he thereupon seriously contemplates death, and considers eternity*

**A**PPEARING at the sessions, and seeing so many of my adversaries ready to give in their evidence against me, I concluded myself a leman ; my very countenance betrayed both my thoughts of guilt and despair. In short, I received sentence of death, to be hanged at Tyburn by the neck till I was dead. I thought these sad tidings would have deprived me of my life, and so have saved the hangman a labour. All the way I went back to Newgate I fancied nothing but gibbets stood in my way, and that I saw no other trades but cordwinders.

Being entered the prison, I was forthwith put into the dungeon, laden with shackles. I had not been many hours there before a charitable physician of the soul, I mean a minister, came to visit me, who advised me to repent, since it was high time ; and endeavouring to disburden my conscience by extracting from me a general ingenuous confession of what enormous crimes I had committed. Finding this person to have no other design, but merely for my soul's sake, I dissected the actions of my whole life, not omitting anything that might be accounted sinful. He was amazed to hear such notorious roguery in one man, and so young ; wherefore, before he applied any cordial, he administered his corrosives, and so thoroughly searched every corner of my heart that there was nothing hid from him. In the first place, he made me sensible of the wickedness of my life, and that every, nay, the least evil action deserved the loss of eternal and inexpressible happiness, and instead thereof, torments everlasting and intolerable. It will take up too much time to give an account of every thing this pious man alleged for my information, contrition, and consolation. So effectually and powerfully he delivered his divine message that the obdurateness of my heart was able to hold out no longer, but melting into tears, was willing to have its flintiness broken by the hammer of Sacred Writ.

Finding me in so good a temper, he left me to God and myself for the perfecting of that work he had so hopefully and successfully begun. I began to consider what I was, only a statue of dust kneaded with tears, and moved by the hid engines of restless passions ; a clod of earth, which the shortest fever can burn to ashes, and the least shower of rheums wash away to nothing. And yet I made as great a noise in the world as if both the globes (those glorious twins) had been unwombed from that formless chaos by the midwifery of my wit. All my actions were attended with so much success, and so answerable to my desires, as if I had been one of Heaven's privy-counsellors ; which swelled me up with so much arrogance that I spake thunder, looked lightning, and breathed destruction ; and by the eloquence of my own vanity I persuaded myself that the machinations of my brain were able to unhinge the poles. But it was otherwise decreed, that the ministers of justice should put a period to my boundless pride, to make me know I am but a man, and that mortal too. And having but a short time to live, I thought it very requisite to think of that which must shortly be the means to convey me either to bliss or woe ; by so doing, I seized on death before it seized on me. It was the fittest subject I could busy my soul about, for what more heavenly, than the thought of immortality ? and what so necessary, as the thought of death ? Seneca saith, when he was a young man he studied to live well ; when aged how to die well : but I never practised

*Artem bene vivendi*, and therefore am so ignorant in *Arte bene moriendi*; which makes me so fearful that I know not how to be careful of not being found unprepared. Methinks I already hear that doleful saying, *Ite imparata in paratum.*

My sole companions were now despair and fear, for the king of fear is death; and indeed there is nothing absolutely fearful, but what tends to death, and I am confident, the fear of death is worse than the pains of death; for fear of death kills us often, whereas death itself can do it but once. Life would not be troubled with too much care, nor death with too much fear, because fears betray, and cares disorder those succours which reason would afford to both; and though some say he is more sorrowful than is necessary, that is sorrowful before there is necessity, yet that soul cannot be in a good condition, so long as it fears to think of dying. But did I not sorrow now, and justly fear that messenger that must bring me before the tribunal of Heaven, I should have too little time to wash away so many black spots, especially having nothing but objects of terror and amazement before my eyes; but I never needed have feared what I should suffer when dead, if I had not deserved it whilst I lived. Life is not alike to all men. To such a wicked wretch as I am, the best had been that I never had been, and the next best were to live long. In this condition, it was ill for me that I was born, worse for me that I must die; for without unfeigned repentance, this dying life will bring me to a living death; whereas a good man is otherwise minded, he counts his end the best of his being, for that brings him to the fruition of his hope. Could death end misery, it should be the greatest happiness I would wish: but my conscience will not let me lie, for I fear the end of my present miseries will be but the beginning of worse; yea, such as death itself cannot terminate.

Now came into my mind the consideration of eternity; and with it, I remembered how it was represented by the ancients, which very much helped my present contemplation; which was thus: a vast den full of horror, round about which a serpent winds itself, and in the winding bites itself by the tail. At the right hand of this den, stands a young man of a most beautiful and pleasant countenance, holding in his right hand a bow and two arrows, and in his left an harp. In the entrance sits an old man opposite, and having his eyes very intent on his table-book, writes according to the dictations of the young man standing by. At the left hand of this den sits a grave matron, gray-headed, and having her eyes always busied. At the mouth hereof are four stairs ascending by degrees; the first is of iron, the second of brass, the third of silver, and the last of gold. On these are little children sporting up and down, playing, fearless, and inapprehensive of falling. The sight of this emblem of

eternity inculcated into my thoughts this interpretation : The den, which was bottomless, signified to me the incomprehensibility of Eternity ; the circumferating serpent, Time ; the young man, Nature : on earth and hell are her arrows fastened ; but in heaven there is the harp, fulness of joy, and pleasures inexpressible. The old man I looked upon to be Fate ; the grave matron, Providence ; the stairs, distinct times and ages ; the children running up and down the stairs without fear of danger, do signify foolish men and woman, who regardless of their salvation, sport and play with it so long, till they slip into eternity.

So have I been careless of that which should have been my greatest care, though I knew (but would not know) that the least and lightest touch of death were sufficient, in a moment to translate me from Time to Eternity. Were we all to live a thousand years (whereas the executioner is to put a period to my life in one day longer) we should, before we had ran half our course, in our very nonage, apply ourselves to repentance and newness of life. Now, now is the time, every hour, every moment ; now one part of an hour (as I am informed, to my great comfort) may obtain pardon here, which all eternity cannot hereafter. Therefore, let this now be my time (this one day I have left me) to cancel my debts and trespasses against heaven, which I can never do in hell fire, in all the years and times to come hereafter.

Let such who have lived as I, in all manner of wickedness, consider what eternity is, which may make them return like the penitent prodigal. What then is Eternity ? It is a circle running back into itself, whose centre is everywhere, and circumference nowhere, that is to say, infinite. It is an orb that hath neither beginning nor ending ; or it is a wheel,

*Volvitur et volvetur in omne volubilis evum.*

A wheel that turns, a wheel that turned ever :  
A wheel that turns, and will leave turning never.

Eternity is like a year, continually wheeling about, which returns again to the same point from whence it began, and still wheels about again. It is an ever-running fountain, whither the waters after many turnings flow back again, that they may always flow. It is a bottomless pit, whose revolutions are endless. It may be compared to a snake bowed back unto itself orbicularly, holding its tail in its mouth ; which in its end doth again begin, and never ceaseth to begin. What is Eternity ? It is a duration always present ; it is one perpetual day, which is not divided into that which is past, and that which is to come ; or, it is an age of ages, never expiring and never changing ; or, more properly, it is a beginning continuing, never ending, always beginning, in which the

blessed always begin a blessed life, in which the damned always die, and after all death and struggling therewith, always begin again to die. As hell torments are eternal, so will the conscience be perpetually tormented with deep and horrid despair for the life past ; their worm shall not die. The poets of old alluded to this place, notably in that fiction or fable of Tytius, whom Virgil feigneth, that a flying vulture every day gnaws and tears his liver, which is every night again repaired and made up that every day the vulture may have more matter to prey upon. What is this vulture, but the worm I speak of ? and what is his liver, but the conscience always gnawn and tormented ? Not only this (as he that preached my funeral sermon told me) but all the torments of the damned shall never have end, because there can be no place for satisfaction. For although these inexpressible torments shall continue many millions of years, yet shall there not one hour, no, nor one minute of respite be granted. Let us then be no longer forgetful of ourselves, and so degenerate into beasts, but seriously consider our end, and what shall come after.

All men are in the way of Eternity, but I am now almost at my journey's end : I sit on the stairs of Eternity, expecting when one small thrust shall plunge me into the bottomless pit, where one hour's punishment shall be more grievous (as Thomas a Kempis saith) than 100 years here in the bitterest of torments. There they are tortured for infinite millions of ages, and are so far from finding an end, as never to be able to hope for any end. The consideration of these things brought me to that pass that I was content to suffer anything in this life, so that I might not suffer in the life to come. Though a king, I should willingly and patiently have endured what Andronicus did, Emperor of the East ; who (as history relates) being overcome and taken prisoner by Isaac Angelo, had immediately two great chains of iron put about his neck ; and being laden with fetters, was brought before Isaac, who delivered him over to the rage of the multitude, to be abused at their pleasure. This rabble being incensed and stimulated on by revenge, some buffeted him, some bastinadoed him, others pulled him by the beard, twitching the hair from his head, dashing out his teeth, dragging him in public through the streets. The insolence of women was such, as to fall upon him, leaving the marks of their nails in his imperial face. After all this, they cut off his right hand. Thus maimed and bruised, he was thrown into the dungeon of thieves and robbers, without either attendance, or the least thing necessary to sustain life. Some few days being passed, they put out one of his eyes : thus mangled, they put upon him an old rotten short coat, shaved his head, set him upon a scabbed camel, with his face towards the tail, put on his head a crown of garlic, made him hold in

his hand the camel's tail instead of a sceptre, and so they carried him through the market place very leisurely, with great pomp and triumph. Here did the most impudent crew and base, among the people, like tigers, after an inhuman manner fall upon him, not considering in the least that not three days before he was no less than an emperor, crowned with a royal diadem, whose frowns were inevitable death, was honoured, yea, adored of all men.

Their rage and madness fitted every one with instruments to execute their revenge. Some struck him on the head with sticks, others filled his nostrils with dirt, others squeezed sponges upon his face soaked in human and bestial excrements : some threw stones, others dirt at him. An impudent woman as he passed, came running out with scalding water in her hand, and poured it on his head. All these indignities which they exercised upon this poor emperor did not satisfy their insatiate revenge, but bringing him to the theatre, took him down from the camel, and hung him up by the heels. Yet did he behave himself like a man, by bearing patiently what was inflicted upon him, being never heard to cry out against the cruelty of his fate. All that he was heard to say, was this, which he often repeated, *Domine miserere, Domine miserere.* Thus hanging up, one would have thought their malice should have ceased ; but they spared him not as long as he lived ; for pulling his coat from his body, they tore him with their nails. One more cruel than the rest, ran his sword through his bowels as he was hanging. Two others, to try whose sword was sharpest, cut him and gashed him in several places ; and so ended his life miserably, but was not suffered to be buried.

Oh, that my condition were as Andronicus, to suffer all that man can lay upon me, that I might not perish for ever ! I should be content to be miserable for so short a time, that I may not be miserable to all eternity. Questionless, he could never have suffered such things so constantly and courageously, but that he had eternity in his thoughts ; and were our minds employed about the same subject, any adversity or affliction we should more easily bear.

From the time of my condemnation till Monday morning I slept not, neither did I eat or drink. Then did I hear my passing-bell (having heard the day before my funeral-sermon) every stroke methought carried my soul one degree higher, being confident I had made my peace above. Whilst I was in the depth of meditation, and my soul breathing out this short ejaculation :

Is there no hope now of relief,  
In this extremity ?  
Mercy ere now hath sav'd a thief,  
And may do as much for me

behold a friend came to me (that never visited me during my imprisonment) but now in the time of need brought me a reprieve. When I looked thereon at first, I could not believe my own eyes ; I thought I dreamed, or that grief had so distracted me as that I imagined things that are not. My friend at length cleared up my doubts ; but I shall tell you this for a truth, I knew not whether I were best accept of this self-preserving courtesy. For, methought I had so well settled my eternal concerns as that I had nothing else to do but die.

About a fortnight after, I was sent aboard, in order to my transportation ; my sentence of death being converted into a seven years banishment.

## CHAPTER LXVI

*Being on board he descants on his ensuing misery, yet draws comfort to himself from the sufferings of others : he relateth how he was freed from his intended banishment by a double shipwreck : the manner thereof he amply declareth*

THE ship that was to transport me lay at Woolwich, about the latter end of Aug. 1650. I was conveyed aboard a lusty ship, a Virginia merchantman, and was instantly clapped under hatches ; but I knew they would quickly call me aloft if there was any fighting work ; as such a thing might easily be, since the sea was nowhere free from such as would make a prize of what vessels were too weak to contend with them. Having pen, ink, and paper about me, I busied my thoughts and pen in contriving consolation for my disquieted and disconsolate mind, thus :

Why should not I with patience suffer ? some  
Have kissed what brought them to their martyrdom.  
Many a Saint hath suffer'd on a cross ;  
And our good King endured three kingdoms' loss.  
Shall I (fool) then at any cross take grief ?  
*Tyburn's* the way to heaven for many a thief.  
But must I now to sea ? Well, 'tis no matter ;  
Fortune now frowns, though heretofore did flatter.  
Let not my soul despond, since 'tis my hap,  
I'll scorn that *whore*, and trust to *Thetis* lap :  
Though she may foam with anger, and the wind  
May aggravate her passion, I may find  
Her calm again, and set me on that shore,  
Where I may moor, and put to sea no more.  
*Neptune* may shake his *Trident*, and each wave,  
Or tumbling billow may become my grave.

A thundring cannon may pronounce my death,  
Or a small shot bereave me of my breath :  
All which may throng together in full crowds,  
To make m'a winding-sheet of tatter'd shrouds.  
The winds shall sing my *requiem*, and my knell  
Shall be a peal of ordnance, they shall tell  
My angry fates I'm dead, and the sea must  
Entomb without the form of *dust to dust*.  
But I hope better things, and do believe,  
My good events will make the *furies* grieve.

About the beginning of September following, we set sail for the Downs. As soon as we had weighed anchor, a thick melancholy cloud encompassed my thoughts, and so much sadness seized my spirits as if I had been not so much taking my leave of my dearly beloved country as leaving the world. Though my soul could not foresee the least danger, nor be troubled at the apprehension of what slavery I was to undergo in my exilement ; yet certainly I found this strange anguish and propassion to be ominous, proceeding from something divine, which is able to unriddle the Apocrypha of nature, and made my soul sensible of some approaching mischief.

Having been about 5 days at sea, one morning, just as the sun began to gild our hemisphere with his golden rays, the boatswain made us all turn out, and commanded all hands upon deck. Coming aloft, I could not see a man in whose face there was not written the pale characters of fear and amazement ; which were the infallible marks of some sudden and ensuing danger. Upon my first coming on board I could discern a great many red-nosed fellows (a drunkard's truest *indicium*) but the apprehension of present danger had now extinguished all those flaming torches of their faces, without the help of water. The faces, indeed, of the stoutest amongst us were so altered by this affrightment that we knew not almost one another ; losing our natural complexions through the extremity of passion. One was at his prayers, that never till then knew what a prayer was ; another shedding of briny tears, to make room for more salt water. For my own part, I found myself not much moved, having lately made myself acquainted with death. By this time I understood what had passed ; that is, our ship had sprung a leak, and was ready to sink.

Seeing every man in that posture, and that there required means, as well as prayers for our preservation ; 'Come,' said I, 'Gentlemen, let us not thus cry out, and never lend our assisting hand. Let us to the pump, and let every one be employed in this grand concern.' Whereupon we all unanimously fell to work. But as is usual in such extremes,

we were all busy about doing of nothing. What we began we left imperfect, and fell to another, and so perfected nothing to our safety. Some were sent down into the hold, who quickly returned to us with the symptoms of death in their countenances ; for they all with hesitation and quivering of tongue, with words abruptly or half-spoken, signified to us that our ship's wound was incurable, that the leak could not be stopped, but that we must inevitably perish within some minutes.

These words I received as from a death's-head, which I never heard speak before ; and truly his very looks would have sufficiently declared what message he was about to deliver, *viz.* ruin and immediate destruction. Our inexpressible fears bereaved us of the power of counselling one another ; neither did we know what was best to be done. Our master commanded our long boat to be cast out, and withal ordered some eight guns to be fired, which methought resembled so many tolls of my passing bell, when I was designed to pass by St. Sepulchre's Church in a cart, guarded by fellows whose visages were the true resemblance of the Saracen's Head on Snow Hill, for terror, horror, and merciless proceeding ; as to all which, these cannibals will outvie that inhuman and bloody nation. Every man endeavoured to shift for himself, and I amongst the rest (being loth to be drowned alone) leapt short of the boat, and fell into the sea in *Charontis Cymba* ; but necessity then forcing me to use treble diligence to recover myself, with much difficulty I got into the boat. I was no sooner there, but another leaped down upon me, and had like to have beaten the rest of my breath out of my body : which I took kindly enough, for I would have been content to have borne them all on my back, nay, boat and all, so that I might have escaped with life.

We were constrained to leave many of our friends behind us, and committed ourselves to the sea, driving us we knew not whither. Now were all our hopes dashed, as well as ourselves, by the waves ; for we were almost in despair of human help ; for we were left in the wide ocean, which did not at that time wear a smooth brow, but contending with the wind, swelled into prodigious mountains, which every moment threatened our overwhelming. How could we expect safety in an open shallop, when so stately a castle of wood, which we but now lost, could not defend itself, nor preserve us from the insolency of the imperious waves ?

We were many leagues from any shore, having neither compass to guide us, nor provision to sustain us, being as well starved with cold as hunger. Several bags of money we had with us ; but what good could that do us, where there is no exchange ? We could neither eat nor drink it ; neither would it keep us warm, nor purchase our deliverance.

Therefore we may justly esteem of money in its own nature, as an impotent creature, a very cripple, *inutile pondus*, an useless burden. I could not now imagine anything could preserve us, less than a miracle : and as we were all sinful creatures, especially myself, we could not expect that nature should go out of her ordinary way to save us. The waves indeed carried us up to Heaven,

*Jam jam tacturos sidera summa putes.*

Neptune sure at this time was very gamesome, for he played at tennis with us poor mortals, making a wave his racket to bandy us up and down like balls. Sometimes he seemed so proud and lofty, being raised so high, as if he had been about to scale Heaven ; which the incensed Deity perceiving, seemed again to throw us down headlong to Hell, for too much ambition and presumption. Yet I could not see but that the extremity of our condition pleaded for us, crying aloud for pity and compassion. I was now silent, committing myself into the hands of providence ; yet verily believing that the inversion of the old proverb appertained to me, that being not born to be hanged, I should be drowned. Commonly we are not so much moved with a clamorous and importunate beggar, who hunts after our alms with open mouth, and makes Hue and Cry after our charity (as if we had robbed him who begs of us) as with the silence of impotent and diseased lazaroës. Their sores speak loudest to our affections ; *Quot vulnera, tot ora* ; each wound is a gaping mouth strenuously imploring mercy ; the sight whereof, cannot but melt the most obdurate spectator into a charitable compassion. This was our case, our misery was louder than our prayers, and our deplorable condition certainly was more prevalent than our imperfect devotions.

In this moment of death, when we were without the least expectation of any deliverance, the wind chopped about, and drove back one ship that had over-run us. This was unquestionably *Digitus Dei*. This ship made towards us, and we, what in us lay, towards it. The wind blew hard, and the insulting sea, that will not admit of pity, rose high upon us ; so that we were forced to lave the water out of the boat with our hats. It was my chance to sit on the weather side ; fain would I have exchanged my place, but such compliments are useless in a storm ; so that I was constrained to endure patiently the indignation of my raging enemy. But now began another despair ; for with all our endeavours we could not reach the ship, nor she us, although she hung on the lee to retard her course. Thus our pregnant hopes brought forth nothing but wind and water (for the ship rode on furiously before the wind, and we came after in pursuit of her as slowly as if an hedge-hog had been running with a

race horse) ; so that we which before flattered ourselves with an assurance of safety, were as much confounded with a certainty of perishing. In my opinion it is better to have no hopes at all than be disappointed in them : doubtless it did redouble the punishment of Tantalus, to touch what he could not taste. That mariner who seeing a fatal necessity for it, is contented to die in a tempest, would be exceedingly troubled to perish in a haven, *In Portu perire*. In this very condition were we, having a ship near us, but could not board her for stress of weather ; so that ruin attended us, though all the while we looked safety in the face.

Now did it grow dark, whereby we could not see which way to row. Though this was an evil in its own nature, yet accidentally it became our benefit ; for not seeing our danger, we understood it not, but redoubling our strength, we brake through the waves, and by the assistance of a light which was in the ship, we directed our course truly ; and now did we find we were very near her. As soon as we touched her on the lee side, the seamen, with the rest in the boat, being more dexterous in the art of climbing than myself, never regarding their exiled prisoner (whom they ought to have taken charge of) got all up into the ship in a moment, leaving me alone in the boat. By good hap they threw me out a rope (which once had like to have deprived me of my life, but was now the preserver) which I held fast, to keep the boat from staving off. Our boat was half full of water, and the waves dashed it so violently against the ship side that every such stroke struck me down, so that I had like to have been drowned (and did much fear it) in that epitome of the sea. It would have vexed a man in my condition, to escape by swimming over a large river, and coming ashore, to be drowned in a wash-bowl.

At last with much difficulty I got aboard too. The master, merchants, &c. having saved their lives (even miraculously) one would have thought they should not have been so pensive as they were for the loss of their goods. Those which lost much took it very heavily ; those which lost less, their affliction was greater, having lost all. I was the most glad, joy riding in triumph in my cheerful countenance, having lost nothing, neither could I anything, but my life. Having escaped so miraculously, it was unchristian-like to murmur at any loss ; and as ridiculous, as if a man being restored to life, should complain that his winding-sheet had sustained some damage by lying in the grave.

The ship wherein we were was bound for the Canaries, the wind blowing very fair for that coast. The second night after our deliverance, about ten o'clock, having set our watch, we laid ourselves down to rest, with the thoughts of much safety and security. But it was otherwise decreed, for about one o'clock we were forced to use all hands aloft, a most terrible storm beginning to arise, and the wind blew so furiously

that before morning we lost our bow-sprit and mizzen. We durst not bear the least sail, but let the ship drive whither the wind and waves pleased ; and before the next night, we could not endure our remaining masts standing, but were necessitated to cut them by the board. Thus we were tumbled up and down for four days, and as many nights, contending with the waves in a pitched battle, not knowing where we were, till our ship struck so violently against a rock that the horrid noise thereof would have even made a dead man startle ; to which, add the hideous cries of the seamen, bearing a part with the whistling winds and roaring sea ; all which together, seemed to me to be the truest representation of the Day of Judgment.

The ship stuck fast so long between two rocks that we had time enough, all of us, to leap out ; the only means left us for our safety. We all got upon a rock, and the morning star having drawn the curtain of the night, we found that we were a very little distance from the shore. Getting thereon, and ranging to and fro, we at last espied a small house, the sight whereof made us direct our footsteps thither, steering our course solely by the compass of our eyes. Being come to the house, the master thereof stood at the door. We addressed ourselves to him in English, but his replications were in Spanish, which we understood not ; wherefore I spake to him in Latin, in which language he answered me *Tam compte, tam prompte*, both quaintly and readily. In that tongue I made a shift to tell him the sad iliad of our misfortunes. This noble Spaniard understood it better by our looks than my relations ; which made such a deep impression in his soul that his gravity could not forbear the shedding of some few tears, so that one would have thought he suffered shipwreck as well as we. He desired us to come into his house, and refresh ourselves. What little meat he had, stewed in a horse-load of herbs, with some pottage only seasoned by a piece of bacon, that had served for that purpose at least a dozen times, he ordered to be set before us. He was no ways sparing of his wine, better than any I ever yet could taste in taverns ; this good man being not acquainted with dashings, dulcifyings, &c.

Seeing us eat so heartily, he caused another dish to be provided, which was composed of such variety of creatures that I thought he had served us in as a mess, the first chapter of Genesis. This Ola-podrida was so cooked that the distinction of each creature was sauced out of our knowledge. Having satisfied our hungry stomachs, he dismissed all excepting myself, desiring me to accept of what kindness he could do me, for he confessed he took much pleasure in my society and discourse. I was very well contented to entertain his proffer. In some few days he told me he was to go to sea, being captain of a vessel that lay in Perimbana, a

small seafaring town near the place of our shipwreck ; and asking me whether I would go with him to the Indies (whither he was bound) I readily consented, and in some few days after we did sail from thence, to perfect our intended voyage.

## CHAPTER LXVII

*From Perimbana, a small maritime town on the Spanish coast, he sets sail with Captain Ferdinando Velasquez bound to the East Indies : but by the way meets with three Turkish galleys, and by them is taken, miserably abused, and imprisoned*

A N hour before day we left the port, and sailed along the coast before the wind ; about noon we discerned three vessels, whereupon we gave them chase. In less than two hours we got up to them, and then we could easily perceive that they were Turkish galleys ; whereof we were no sooner assured, but we betook ourselves to flight, making to land with all speed possible, to avoid the danger that inevitably threatened us. The Turks understanding our design, hoisted up all their sails, and having the wind favourable, bore up to us so close, and getting within a small faulcon shot of us, they discharged their ordnance on us, wherewith they killed eight of our men, and wounded as many more ; and so battered our ship beside that we were forced to throw a great quantity of our lading overboard.

The Turks, in the meanwhile, lost no time, but grappled us ; we on the other side, who were able to fight, knowing that on our valour and undaunted courage depended our lives, or loss of liberty, with perpetual slavery, resolved to fight it out. With this determination we boarded their admiral, doing very eminent execution ; but being overpowered with numbers, we were so overpressed and wearied that we desisted from making any further resistance. For, of 35 men we had at first, we had only remaining ten, whereof two died the next day, whom the Turks caused to be cut in pieces or quarters, which they hung at the end of their main-yard for a sign of victory.

Being taken, we were carried by them to a town called Mocha, and received by the governor and inhabitants, who expected and waited the coming of these pirates. In the company was likewise one of the chiefest sacerdotal dignity ; and because he had been a little before in pilgrimage at the temple of their Prophet Mahomet in Mecca, he was honoured and esteemed by all the people as a very holy man. This Mahometan impostor rid in a triumphant chariot up and down the town, covered all

over with silk tapestry, and with a deal of ceremonious fopperies bestowed on the people his benediction as he passed along, exhorting them to return hearty thanks to their great Prophet for this victory obtained over us. The inhabitants hearing that we were Christians taken captives, flocked about us ; and being exceedingly transported with choler, fell to beating of us in that cruel manner that I thought it a vain thing to hope to escape alive out of their hands ; and all this, because we owned the names of Christians. When I was in England, I justly was sentenced to die for my villainy, and now here only for the bare profession of Christianity, I must not be suffered to live. The wicked Cadi (as they called him) instigated them on to those outrages they committed ; who made them believe that the worse they dealt with us, the more favour and mercy they should receive from Mahomet hereafter.

We were chained all together, and in that manner were we led in triumph ; and as we passed along, we had our heads washed with women's rose water, thrown down upon us from balconies, with other filth, in derision and contempt of the name of Christian ; wherein every one strived to be most forward, being instigated thereunto by their priest. My sufferings then put me in mind of my former wishes, to be as unfortunate Andronicus, miserably afflicted here, that I might escape eternal torments hereafter. I received in part the effect of my *quondam* wishes, no ways acceptable to my present desires. Having tired themselves in tormenting us till the evening, bound as we were, they clapped us into the dungeon, where we remained 21 days exposed to all kind of misery, having no other provision allowed us than a little oatmeal or rice and water, which was distributed to us every morning, what should serve us for that whole day. For variety sake, we had sometimes a small quantity of pease soaked in water.

## CHAPTER LXVIII

*He is brought forth into the market place, and there put to sale : he is bought by a Jew (a miserable avaricious man) and by a stratagem he delivers himself from that master : is sold to a Græcian, in heart a Christian : the ship being taken, and his master drowned, he escaping to shore by swimming, is at his own liberty*

**I**N the morning the gaoler repairing to us, found two of our miserable companions dead, by reason of their wounds, which were many, and not looked into. This made him haste to the Guazil or judge, to acquaint

PLATE IV



[face p. 240]



him of what had happened ; who upon information given, came to the prison in person, attended with officers and other people : where having caused their irons to be struck off, he ordered their bodies to be dragged through the town, and so cast in the sea. We that remained were chained altogether, and so led out of prison unto the common place of sale, to be sold to him that should give most.

By reason of my strength (which those that looked on might argue, from the straightness and firmness of my limbs, being elevated by the pole above a common or middle stature) I was first bought by one, whom at the first sight I could not well tell whether he was man or devil ; for his complexion was of the same colour as the Devil is usually rendered. To say all in short, he was a Jew. He carried me home to his house, where I no sooner arrived but he marked me for his own. My employment was constantly to turn a handmill. If I rested at any time, though ever so little, the punishment he inflicted on me was three or four blows on either the belly, or soles of my feet ; which were doubled or trebled according as he judged of my offence. My diet was such as only served to keep me alive. In general, he used me so cruelly that becoming desperate, I once thought it better resolutely to cut the thread of my life than spin it out longer in so much wretchedness and misery. Revenge too induced me to the undertaking of this attempt, as knowing him to be the most covetous wretch living, and therefore would even hang himself when he should lose what he paid for me.

But considering myself, I made choice of a better expedient, which was to pretend (what I intended not) to kill myself. I made choice of such a time, when I was sure some one or other was set to watch me ; who perceiving that I was about to destroy myself, rushed in and prevented me, and went forthwith to inform my master of what he had seen ; advising him withal to sell me out of hand, otherwise he would infallibly be a loser by me. My master taking notice of my countenance and behaviour, resolved to put his friend's counsel in practice ; and so sold me to another, who fortunately proved a Greek, that in show was Mahometan, but cordially a Christian.

Once more was I delivered from miseries that are hardly to be endured, and was embarked with my new master in a ship bound for the East Indies. In the course that we held, we sailed with so prosperous a gale that in a very short time we arrived in view of the Fort of Diu ; but seeing several vessels lying before that fort, firing against it in an hostile manner, we shaped our course to Goa, where we arrived in safety. From hence we sailed unto the River Lugor. Just as we were entering its mouth, we saw a great junk coming upon us, which perceiving us to be few in number, and our vessel but small, fell close with

our prow on the larboard side ; and then those that were in her, threw in to us great cramp-irons fastened unto two long chains, wherewith they grappled us fast unto them ; which they had no sooner done, but incontinently some 70 or 80 Mahometans started out from under the hatches, that till then had lain lurking there ; and pouring out their small-shot upon us, clapped us aboard in an instant.

Those that knew what it was to be a slave to the merciless Turks, leapt into the sea, whereof I was one. We were not far from land, so that it was not long before I got safe to shore. It was my master's misfortune (and truly I think my unhappiness, for he behaved himself to me as to one of his familiar friends) being wounded, and ignorant in swimming, to be entombed in the deep. There were some five or six more that escaped the danger of their enemies and the sea, that wading up to the waist in mud, landed in safety ; with these I hid myself in the next adjacent wood. There was hardly one of us but received some hurt ; and being now divested of all hope of help, we could not forbear to unman ourselves by weeping, complaining against our hard destiny, that should in so short a time bring us into so sad a disaster. In this desolation we spent the remaining tragical part of the day ; but considering with ourselves that the place was Moorish, and full of venomous creatures, we betook ourselves to the ouse, standing therein up to the middle.

The next morning, by break of day, we went along by the river side until we came to a little channel, which we durst not pass (not knowing its depth) for fear of lizards, plenty whereof we had sight of therein. We wandered so long to avoid this and the bogs covered with rushes, which environed us about, till that we were forced to rest ourselves, being so weary and so hungry that we could not go one step farther. In the morning awaking, four of our company lay dead, so that there was only one remaining to bear me company. I now thought my condition worse than if I had hung at Tyburn, surrounded with a full jury of fellow-sufferers. My companion and I, with tears, sang the obsequies of our dead friends, expecting hourly our own dissolution. Their bodies we covered with a little earth, as well as we could ; for we were then so feeble that we could hardly stir, nay, nor speak. In this place we rested ourselves, intending to bear our friends company to their eternal rest.

Some four hours after this resolution, about sunset, we espied a barque rowing up the river. Coming near us we hailed her, and prostrating ourselves on the ground, beseeched those that were in her to receive us on board. Amazed to see us in that posture on our bended knees, and hands lifted up to Heaven, they stopped ; our cries for succour reached their ears, which obtained commiseration from their hearts ; so

taking us in, they carried us with them to Lugor, where about noon next day we landed.

The people are fearful black like the Devil, whom they superstitiously worship, in the form of a bloody dragon. They have many idols amongst them, which they hold in great esteem, as a ram-goat, a bat, an owl, a snake, or dog, to whom they ceremoniously bow or kneel, grovelling upon the earth, and throwing dust on their faces ; they offer rice, roots, herbs, and the like, which is devoured by the witches ; these devilish creatures being both feared and esteemed by the savages. The female sex, against the appearance of the new moon, assemble upon a mountain, where turning up their bare bums, they contemptuously defy the Queen of Heaven who hath this despite shewn her, because they suppose her the cause of their monthly courses.

They are much given to novelties, amongst which dogs are of very great value with them ; insomuch, that whilst I was there, I saw six slaves exchanged for one European cur. They abound with the choicest of Nature's blessings, as health, strength, and wealth, but are very inhuman and uncivil ; for they delight much to feed on man's flesh, eating it with more satisfaction than any other food. Upon my first arrival, I did not rightly understand their meaning by feeling my flesh, but when I was informed that like butchers, they felt my flank to know how fat I was, they never touched me afterwards with their fingers but I fancied myself either boiled or roasted, and that their hands, my bearers, were conveying me to the open sepulchres of their mouths, to be entombed in the gut-rumbling monument of their bellies. Whereas other anthropophagi content their appetites with the flesh of their enemies, these covet most their friends, whom they embowel with much greediness, saying they can no way better express a true affection than to incorporate their dearest friends and relations into themselves, as in love before, now in body, uniting two in one (in my opinion) a bloody sophistry. It is a very truth, of which I was an eye-witness, they have shambles of men's and women's flesh, jointed and cut into several pieces fit for dressing. It is usual for some, either weary of life, or so sick they have no hopes of recovery, to proffer themselves to these inhuman butchers, who returning them thanks, dissect or cut them out into small parcels, and so are sodden and eaten.

It is a custom among them, when they would add to their beauties (deformity) to slash their faces in several places. They adore those two glorious planets, the sun and moon, believing they live in matrimony. They are much addicted to rapine and thievery, and they choose to commit any villainy rather by day than night, because they suppose thereby the moon and stars will never give testimony against them.

Their heads are long, and their hair curled, seeming rather wool than hair. Their ears are very long, being extended by ponderous bawbles they hang there, stretching the holes to a great capacity. Both men and women hideously slash their flesh in sundry forms ; their brows, noses, cheeks, arms, breasts, back, belly, thighs and legs, are pinked and cut in more admirable (than amiable) manner.

They contemn apparel, and indeed, the heat of the climate will not permit them to wear any ; very few have nothing on to cover their secrets. Most have but one stone, the other is forced away in their infancy, that Venus may not too much allure them from martial exploits : wherefore the women take great delight in strangers. One of them so strongly besieged my modesty that more for fear than love, I yielded to her incontinency. I was displeased at nothing but the sight of her ; for her flesh, no velvet could be softer.

There are in this place great quantity of lions, which in dark weather use great subtlety to catch and eat some savages. They, again, in the day-time dig pits, and covering them with boughs, do train the courageous lions thither, where they receive destruction, eating them to-day, who perhaps were sepulchres to their friends or parents the day before. I have seen these well-bred people descend in a morning from the mountains, adorned with the raw guts of lions or other wild beasts, serving for an hour or two for chains or neck-laces, and afterwards for their breakfast ; of which good cheer, if I would not participate, I might fast for them. So that my squeamish stomach was forced to give entertainment to that unwelcome guest, to keep starving out of doors.

The ship that brought us hither was now ready to set sail, being bound for Goa, the master whereof was a Portugal, who understood Latin and French very well, of which I was not ignorant. I addressed myself to him in the French tongue, desiring him to accept of mine and my comrade's service ; which he condescended to with much willingness. At Goa we stayed not long, but from thence passing towards Surat, a vehement and unexpected storm overtook us, for three days raging incessantly, so that those which were acquainted with those parts, very much feared an *Hero-cane*, a tempest commonly of thirty days continuance, and of such fury that ships, trees, and houses perish unavoidably in it. Once in nine years, it seems, it fails not to visit them. It chanced that my comrade being heedless and unexperienced in sea-affairs, was washed off by a wave into the sea, and so was buried in the large and deep grave of the vast ocean ; a sure treasury for the resurrection.

The foulness of the weather forced a junk man-of-war, full of desperate Malabars, a bloody and warlike people, in view of us ; but the seas were too lofty for them to board us. After three watches, the sea

changed colour and was calmer ; and by the swimming of many snakes about our vessel, the seamen knew we were not far from shore, landing shortly after safely at Surat.

## CHAPTER LXIX

*From hence he set sail to Swalley Road, and so from thence coasted till he arrived at Delyn, a Town that belongs to the Malabars : he gives an account of what he there saw and observed*

SOME two hours after we set sail, we were becalmed, having not the least breeze of wind, the weather withal being exceeding hot and sultry. At length we arrived in Swalley Road where was riding an English vessel ; there we cast anchor. The Englishmen came aboard of us, whom our captain welcomed with the best of his entertainment. I could not forbear embracing my dear countrymen, shewing them so many demonstrations of joy that by their looks, they seemed to question whether I was in my right wits. Their master's mate calling me aside, asked me how I came to be engaged in this vessel ? How long since I came from England ? with many other questions too tedious here to relate. To all which I gave him such satisfactory answers that he seemed very well pleased. I gave him a summary relation of what I had suffered since my departure from my own country ; the report whereof, seemed to extract much pity from him. In fine, I told him, I had a great desire to see England again, and to that end desired him to make use of what interest he could to remove me into their ship. He promised he would ; and accordingly giving a present to our captain, he so far prevailed upon him to let me go, and persuaded the chief of whom he was concerned withal, to entertain me, which they did with much willingness.

I was so like a seaman in this short time that none could distinguish me from one that received his first rocking in a ship. I carried about me as deep a hue of tarpawlin as the best of them, and there was no term of art belonging to any part of the ship or tackling but what I understood. I could drink water that stunk (as if *stercus humanum* had been steeped two or three days in it) as well as any of them, and eat beef and pork (that stirred as if it had received a second life, and was crawling out of the platter to seek out the rest of his members) I say, I could devour it with as much greediness (scorning that my appetite should be ever again taxed with any of those epithets, either nice or squeamish) as if it had been but nine hours, instead of nine months, in salt. And to make

me the more complete, I had forgot to wash either hands or face, or what the use of a comb or shirt was, neither did I know how to undress myself ; or if wet to the skin, to make use of any other means than my natural heat to dry myself. I never looked on a hat or band, but as prodigies.

But to return to my purpose, where I left off. In three days' time we set sail for Swalley Road, steering our course from thence, all along the coast of India, Deccan, and Malabar. I knew not whither they intended, neither did I care now, as thinking myself safe, being amongst my friends. On the 20 of April, seven days from our weighing anchor in Swalley Road, we came to an anchor at Delyn, a town of the Malabars. We durst not land, the people being so treacherous and bloody ; yet we suffered them to come aboard us in their small canoes, selling us for any trifles, coco-nuts, jacks, green pepper, Indian pease, hens, eggs, and the like. They brought us likewise oranges of so pleasant a taste, the rind vying with the juice which shall become most grateful to the palate. We had likewise from them plantanes, a fruit supposed by some to be that which Eve was tempted withal ; if a man gathers them green, yet will they ripen afterwards, coloured with a dainty yellow ; the rind or skin will peel off with much facility ; they melt in the mouth, giving a most delicious taste and relish.

These Malabars are coal black, well limbed, their hair long and curled ; about their heads they only tie a small piece of linen, but about their bodies nothing but a little cloth which covers their secrets. Notwithstanding their cruelty and inhumanity, we manned out our long boat, and 15, whereof I was one, went ashore, carrying some muskets and swords with us, suspecting the worst. Landing, they fled from us, but not without sending good store of poisoned arrows and darts amongst us. It is no wonder that these people are so black, for they live under the scorching fire of the Torrid Zone. We returned to our ship, finding it no way safe to stay here longer ; next morning hoisting sail, we came to Canavar, where we met with people more civil. Whereupon we landed, and receiving things from the inhabitants of considerable value, for toys and trifles we gave them in lieu, we resolved to stay here a while. The better sort of these people are called Nairoes, whose heads are covered with a low tulipant, and their middles with a parti-coloured plaid, resembling a Scotch plaid. The poorer sort have nothing but a small veil over their privities, wholly naked elsewhere ; which veil or flap the women, in courtesy, will turn aside, and shew a man their *Pudenda*, by way of gratitude for any courtesy received, as if they would render satisfaction with that which could never receive plenary satisfaction itself.

They have a strange custom in their marriages, observed among them

by the highest to the lowest : whoso marrieth is not to have the first night's embraces with his bride, but is very well contented to bestow her maidenhead on the Bramini, or priests, who do not always enjoy it, being glutted with such frequent offerings, and therefore will many times sell them to strangers. Such a proffer I had once made me, and with shame I must confess I did accept it, forgetting those sacred vows I made in Newgate, to live a more pious, strict and sober life. The bride that night, was placed in one of their fanes, as is customary, the priest or Bramin coming to her ; but instead thereof, according to agreement between this priestly paynim and myself, I went. I wondered to find her so low of stature, but I did not much matter it then, minding something else ; which having performed, I departed. The next morning I had a great desire to see her, but was amazed to see her so young, believing it impossible (though I knew the contrary) a child (for I may so call her, being but seven years of age) could be capable of man's reception at that tender age. Afterwards, I was informed it was usual for them to marry so soon : first, being extremely salacious and lecherous, and as fit, nay, as prone to enjoy man at that age as Europeans at fourteen. Next, they extremely honour wedlock, insomuch, that if any of their children die whilst very young, they will hire some maiden to be married to him, and so lie with him the night after his decease.

So soon as we arrived (which is a custom they use to all strangers, of what country soever) we had presented us choice of many virgins ; our boat-swain choosing one he fancied for a small price, she guided him to a lodging, where if he would have stayed so long, she would have performed his domestic affairs, as well at board as bed, discharging her duty very punctually. But he that undertakes any such thing must be very wary that he be not venereally familiar with any other woman, lest that she with whom he hath contracted himself for such a time, doth recompence his inconstancy with mortal poison. At his departure, her wages must be paid to her parents ; she returns then with much joy, and they receive her with as much credit and ostentation. The chiefest amongst them hold it a very great courtesy if any one will save them the labour, pain and trouble, by accepting the hymeneal rites of his bride. I should have told the reader that the Bramins are so much respected and esteemed by the commonalty that if any of them gets their wives or daughters with child, they believe that off-spring to be much holier than their own, being extracted from pagan piety.

Their funerals they celebrate after this manner. Bringing the dead corpse near to their fanes or churches, they consume it to ashes by fire made of sweet smelling wood, unto which they add costly perfumes in

aromatic gums and spices. If the only wife (for here they will not hear of polygamy) cast not herself into the flames voluntarily, they look upon her to be some common prostitute, having not anything commendable in her natural disposition ; but if she freely commits herself to the flames, with her husband's carcase, she from that noble act (for so it is esteemed of among these infidels) derives to her memory reputation and glory amongst her surviving friends and kindred. They are deluded on to this resolution by their Bramins, who persuade them by so doing they shall enjoy variety of perpetual pleasures, in a place that is never disturbed by alteration of weather, wherein night is banished, there being a continual spring ; neither is there wanting anything that shall ravish each individual sense. This was at first a stratagem invented by some long headed politician to divert them from murdering their husbands (which they were frequently guilty of, by reason of their extreme lechery and insatiate venery) so by that means they were reduced to that good order, as that they tendered the preservation of their husbands' healths and lives equally with their own. For my part, I could wish the like custom enjoined on all married English females (for the love I bear to my own country) which I am confident would prevent the destruction of thousands of well-meaning Christians, which receive a full stop in the full career of their lives, either by corrupting their bodies by venomous medicaments administered by some pretended doctor's hand (it may be her stallion) unto which he is easily persuaded by the good opinion he hath of his wife's great care and affection for him : or else his body is poisoned by sucking or drawing in the contagious fumes which proceed from her contaminated body, occasioned by using pluralities for her venereal satisfaction, and so dies of the new consumption.

Or lastly, by pettish and petulant behaviour, she wearieth him of his life, and at last is willing to die that he may be freed, not only from the clamorous noise of her tongue, but that the derision of his neighbours, and scandal that she hath brought upon him, may not reach his ears. That all such might be mindful of their duty, I would have (were it at my disposing) these two lines fixed as a motto to their doors.

A couchant cuckold, and a rampant wife,  
Are cop'latives disjunctive all their life.

## CHAPTER LXX

*From Delyn he sailed to Zeyloon : with what he there observed*

THE isle of Zeyloon is very famous, and not far distant from the point of India, called Cape Comrein. It abounds with all sorts of odoriferous and aromatical spices ; the people are pagans, not owning a deity ; some, though, have heard of Christ, and others of Mahomet, but such are rarely to be found. They go naked, not compelled thereto by want or poverty, but mere heat of the sun. They are great idolators, worshipping things in monstrous shapes. On the top of a high mountain they have set conspicuously the idea of an horrible *Cacodæmon*, unto which pilgrims from remote parts do resort. And upon this account, a king of Zeyloon coming, once derided this idol ; another time, intending to make a second repetition of his former derision, the king was even frightened out of his wits ; for not only he, but his attendants all saw how this *Dæmon* threatened him for so doing, by shaking a flaming scimitar, and rolling his fiery eyes : from his gaping mouth, issued out fiery flames ; whereat this king returns with as much penitence as amazement, resolving by his due respect and worship for the time to come, to make an atonement for his former errors. For my part, had I not believed there was a Devil, the sight of this horrid monstrous representation would have induced me into the belief that this was one really.

They have in another place a chapel, in which they adore the Devil (whom they call *Deumo*). The height whereof is about three yards, and uncovered ; the wooden entrance is engraven with hellish shapes ; within, their beloved Devil or *Deumo* is enthronized on a brazen mount. From his head issue four great horns, his eyes of an indifferent proportionable bigness, having somewhat a larger circumference than two saucers ; his nose flat ; a mouth like a portcullice, beautified with four tusks, like elephant's teeth ; his hands like claws, and his feet not unlike a monkey's. Beside him stand lesser *Deumos* attending on this grand pagod, some whereof are represented or pictured devouring souls. Every morning the priest washeth them, not departing till he hath craved their malediction ; and when he takes his leave, he is very careful of offending the Devil by shewing his posteriors, and therefore goes from him retrograde, stedfastly fixing his eyes on the idol. 'Tis strange that a rational soul should be so much infatuated as to adore such a monstrous and ridiculous thing.

The people in way of mutual love and amity use to exchange their

wives ; a thing, though much hated by the jealous Spaniard, yet would be very acceptable to other Europeans, or else to be rid of them altogether, who are the daily murderers of their content and quiet. Polygamy, or plurality of wives is here permitted ; and as the men are granted the liberty to have more than one wife, so are the women allowed more than one husband. However, the woman hath the disposal left her of her children, giving them to him she hath the greatest affection for ; which he receives, not questioning his interest or right (by generation) unto the infant.

Elsewhere the Fates decreed a cuckold's lot,  
 To keep that child another man begot ;  
 And by his joy therein he plainly shews,  
 He thanks the man that pay'd those debts he owes :  
 But these *She-Blacks* in justice thought it fit,  
 That he which got the child, likewise keep it :  
 Therefore both love and custom made it so,  
 On the true father they the child bestow :  
 By which good Law unto each man 'tis known,  
 That he doth keep no other child but's own.  
 Were this observ'd in *England*, I durst swear,  
 Some *what-d'ye-lacks* would heirs to lord's appear ;  
 And half of what some own, must be conferr'd  
 On such who have a father's name deserv'd.  
 These *blacks* do tax our women, for they paint  
 The Devil white, and make him seem a saint ;  
 To let them know, they are far greater evils ;  
 For fairest females oft are foulest Devils.

We stayed not long here, but having dispatched what we came for, we sailed along the coast of Coromandel, and landed at Meliapor. The people are much after the same complexion of those of Delyn, only a little more dusky, and go in a manner naked, too. Here are likewise great store of Bramins, who are very busy and industrious to instruct these poor ignorant souls in the perfect way to damnation ; for which they have the honour and estimation of all conferred upon them. We manned out our long-boat and went ashore ; upon our landing, it was our hap to be eyewitnesses of one of their funerals, which was performed after this manner. The husband was carried before the combustible pile ; his most dearly loving wife closely following after, attended by her parents and children ; music (such as they have, which I cannot compare to that of the spheres) playing before, behind, and on each side of her. She was dressed both neatly and sumptuously, to the height of the rudeness of their art ; her head, neck, and arms (not omitting her nose, legs, and toes) each bedecked and charged with bracelets of silver, with jewels

everywhere about her distributed. She carried flowers in her hands, which she disposed of to those she met. The priests going backwards before her, shewed her a magical glass, which represented to her sight whatever might be pleasing to her sensual appetite. The Bramin all along inculcating to her thoughts the sense-ravishing and affable joys she shall possess after her decease ; at which this poor deluded soul smiled, and seemed to be much transported. We followed them till they came to the fire, which was made of sweet odoriferous wood. As soon as her dead husband was committed to the flames, she voluntarily leapt in after him, incorporating herself with the fire and his ashes. We wondered that the standers-by would permit her thus to destroy herself, imagining this rash action proceeded from the ardency of her affection ; but perceiving her friends to throw in after her, jewels and many precious things, with much exultation and expressions of joy, we concluded this to be the effects of custom. Such as refuse to burn in this manner, are immediately shaven, and are hourly in danger to be murdered by their own issue or kindred, looking upon them as strumpets : and indeed many of them are so audaciously impudent that upon the least distaste, or not having their luxurious expectations answered, nothing more intended or endeavoured than the lives of their husbands. They are in these parts so extremely idolatrous, and so over-swayed by the Devil, that they adore a great idol made of copper gilded, whose statue is carried up and down, mounted on a glorious chariot, with eight very large wheels overlaid with gold. The ascent or steps to the chariot are very large and capacious, on which sit the priests, attended by little young girls, who for devotion sake, prostitute themselves freely to the heat of any libidinous spectator ; for so doing, they are entitled the pagod's children. A very strange zeal in their bewitched or besotted parents, to destinate the off-spring of their bodies, from their nonage, to such an abominable liberty ; for by letting them know the use of man so soon, it cannot but be very prejudicial to their bodies, but also invest them with the thoughts of perpetual whoring. For that woman that shall admit of more than one to her private embraces, will admit of any upon the like account. Nay, such is their blind zeal and superstition, that as the chariot passeth, some will voluntarily throw themselves under the wheels, who are crushed in pieces by the weight of the idol and its attendants, suffering death without the benefit of a happy (but to them unhappy) martyrdom.

## CHAPTER LXXI

*From Zeyloon, he arrived at Siam : what there he saw and observed*

**S**IAM is a kingdom contiguous to Pegu, a part of the East Indies. And, as the people are included within the burning zone, therefore far from being fair ; yet are tall of stature, very strong and valiant, and generally so straight that few are found among them crooked. Formerly they were much given to sodomy, to prevent which, 'twas wisely ordered (though strangely), that the males, as soon as born, should have a bell of gold (and in it a dried adder's tongue) put through the prepuce and flesh. When the desire of copulation stimulates any of them, he presents himself to some expert midwives, who advise him to drink opium, or some such somniferous potion ; which having done in their presence, he falls asleep ; during which interval, they remove the bell, and apply to the orifice from whence it was taken, an unguent, which affords a speedy cure ; then is he free to make use of such as his fancy leads him to. The young girls are served in a worse manner ; for as soon as born, their *Pudenda* is sewed up, and only a small *foramen*, or passage left, as an aqueduct. About eight or nine she is unstitched, and it is as great a rarity to find a pure virgin here at ten years old, as to find a maid at sixteen in most places of France, or its neighbouring countries. And that these young lecherous fry may be capable of that employment they are destinat unto, they have potions given them to drink which have the efficacious power as to distend their *muliebria* to such a capacity as that (if their bells were withdrawn) their males would find too easy an entrance.

The women here (still the more to allure the men from that detestable and unnatural act of sodomy) go naked ; (as little a novelty in these parts, as for Irish and Scotch to wash their clothes with their feet, their coats, smock and all tucked up about their middles, though twenty men stand by as (deriding) spectators). I say, they go naked to their middles, where the better sort are covered with a fine transparent taffaty or dainty lawn, which by a cunning device is so made to open, that as they pass along, the least air discovers all, to all men's immodest views. Their priest, which they call Tallapoi, are seeming very zealously superstitious. They somewhat incline to Mahometanism ; for they pretend they will not drink wine, being forbidden it by their law, yet are abominable hypocrites ; for, though they wear a sheep-skin with the wool thereon, not suffering any hair to be on their bodies, and in show lead a chaste life, yet I found the contrary ; as you shall understand by what passed

between one of them and myself. I being on shore with our ship's crew, I chanced to walk abroad, carrying with me a bottle of Spanish wine.

As I entered into a wood, intending not to adventure too far, there came to me one of these Tallapoi or priests, in the habit aforesaid, with a horn about his neck, resembling a sowgelder's, but much less ; with which, I was told, they, with the sound thereof, used to convene the people to hear them preach. This holy infidel espying me, blessed himself (as I guessed by his gesture), and approaching near me, I imagined that he prayed for me, by the elevation of his eyes and hands. As a requital, I proffered him some of my wine ; and having tasted thereof, liked it so well that by signs I understood he desired his horn full of me. To tell you the truth, I liked it so well myself that I had no desire to part with one drop more of it ; but his importunities so far prevailed that I granted his request ; which having obtained, he made no more ado but drank it off, making but one gulp thereof ; a thing contrary to the strictness of his profession. After this, he seemed to bless me, and so departed. It was but a little while before he again presented himself to my view ; and beckoning to me, I followed him. Coming close up to him, he pointed with his finger to a place, where covertly I espied three maidens (as I supposed) to whom he by signs persuaded me to go. Sitting down amongst them, they entertained me with as much civility as they were endued withal, and courted me after their amorous fashion. One of these was the handsomest that I had seen in those parts ; though not to be compared, for form of face, with the homeliest kitchin-stuff wench in London. I dallied with her so long, till that lust conquered my fancy ; attempting something, and being in a fair way to it, this satyr Goat-Devil (I can't invent a name bad enough to call him by), presently falls down upon us ; and taking me thus unawares, lying on my belly, I was not able to help myself, that he had like to have performed his business. He questionless had effected it, but that the two maidens standing by (no ways ashamed at this most shameful sight) assisted me, pulling him off. I presently started up, and seized him ; and tripping up his heels, I laid him on his back. Having so done, I bound him ; then taking out my knife, I could not find in my heart to spare him one inch ; and that he might not have any witnesses left of what was done, I took away his testicles too. The three young girls fled, fearing my rage and revenge might have extended to them. And fearing myself, that they would give information of what I had done, I fled too to my ship's comrades ; and giving them account of what had happened, we all judged it the safest way to go aboard ; and so we did, with all expedition possible.

## CHAPTER LXXII

*From hence he sails to Do-Cerne, so called by the Portugals ; who Adam-like, give (or, as I may say, take too much liberty) in imposing names on all new places, and things : by the Hollanders, it is called Mauritius : its general description*

DO-Cerne or Mauritius, is an isle situate within the Torrid Zone, close by the tropic of Capricorn ; but it is very uncertain unto what part of the world it belongs, participating both of America, and bending towards the Asiatic Seas, from India to Java. This isle aboundeth with what the use of man shall require. The landing looking out at sea, is mountainous ; the circuit of this island is about an hundred miles ; it procreates an healthy and nourishing air. The great quantity of ever-flourishing and fragrant trees doth no less lenify the burning heat, when the sun enters into Capricorn, as helped by the sweet mollifying breath of the North west wind, when Sol again adheres to Cancer. Now as the temperature of that body is best composed, that participates indifferently of all the elements, which either super-abounding or wanting, begets defect ; what then is the temperature of this place, which is blessed with, and abounds in all, and abortive in none ? Water is here very plentiful, drilling itself from the high rocks and trickling down into the valleys, spreads itself into various meanders, till those sweet and pleasant waters disembogue themselves into the lap of the salt ocean. There is so great a quantity of wood, that we could hardly procure passage. But of those many various trees, we found none so beneficial to us as the Palmeto. This tree is long, straight, and very soft, having neither leaves, boughs, nor branches, save at the top, whereon there is a soft pith, wherein consists the sole vegetative of that tree ; which cut out, the Palmeto in a very short time expires. Its taste is much like a kernel of an hazel-nut ; boiled it is like cabbage.

But the chiefest commodity that this tree produceth is the wine which issueth from it, pleasant, and as nourishing as Muscadine or Alligant. Thus we procured some thereof ; coming where two or three grew together, with an auger we bored some small holes in each, which immediately the liquor filled ; then with a small cane or quill we sucked the wine out of one tree ; then we went to another, and from that to the third : by that time we had drained the last, the holes in the two former were full again. This course we followed so smartly that in less than an hour three of us were so drunk (whereof I was none of the soberest) that had not these trees been near the shore, for aught I know, by the morning we might have feasted the wild beasts.

Divers other trees there be, strange both in shape and nature ; one whereof (merely out of curiosity) I must needs taste, which for half an hour so bit or stung my tongue as if I had had my mouth full of vitriol, or spirit of salt. It is a comely tree to look on, but brings forth not anything that is good. This tree is in a manner naked too, and the body thereof as soft and penetrable as new cheese. The form of the tree, its uselessness, with that hidden sting it carries in it, together with its softness ; the last of which, invites me to cut these lines therein ; which my knife as easily performed, as to write a man's name with a stick on the sand. The lines were these :

Th'art like a woman, but thou want'st her breath ;  
Who's fair, but fruitless, and will sting to death  
If tasted : would I could blast thee with my curse,  
Since woman thou art like, for nothing's worse.

There is another tree, which beareth a cod full of sharp prickles, wherein lies hid a round fruit, in form of a dove's egg ; crack it, and therein contained you shall find a kernel, pleasant in taste, but poisonous in its operation. My sweet tooth longed for a taste, and being very toothsome I did eat several ; but it was not long ere my guts were all in an uproar, and were resolved in this mutiny, could they have found way, to charge my mouth with high treason against the rest of my members. But they were at last content only to discharge their fury through the postern of their microcosm ; which they did so curiously that I was much afraid my guts having spent all their shot, they would have marched out after. I had (in plain English) in less than six hours sixty stools, besides purging upwards ; and had not we had a very skilful Dr Chirurgeon of our ship, I had unavoidably perished.

Nature in this island shewed her prodigality of water and wood, corresponding also in everything else a fruitful mother labours to be excellent in. Here she seems to boast, not only in the variety of feathered creatures, but in the rareness of that variety, which should I run over but briefly, the subject is so large, that by some I cannot but be thought too tedious. However, I shall lightly touch thereon. Here, and here only is generated the Dodo ; for rareness of shape contending with the Arabian Phœnix. Her body is round and very fat, the least whereof, commonly weighs above twenty pound. They please the sight more than the appetite, for their flesh is of no nourishment, and very offensive to the stomach. By her visage (darting forth melancholy) she seems to be sensible of that injury Nature hath done her, in framing so great a body, and yet useless, but to please the eye ; committing its guidance to complemental wings (for so I'm forced to call them) since they are so

small and impotent, that they only serve to prove her an off-spring of the winged tribe.

Here are bats also, as large as goshawks. There is likewise great plenty of fish ; among the rest of more especial note is the cow-fish ; the head thereof not unlike an elephant's, her eyes are small, her body at full growth about three yards long, and one broad ; her fins exceeding little, her flesh (being an amphibious creature, living as well at land, sometimes, as in the sea) doth taste much like veal. Some say that this fish doth affect, and takes much delight in the sight of a man's visage. About this island are flying-fish, dolphins, and sharks. One of our men imprudently swimming one day, the weather being very hot, in our sight a shark came and bit off his leg, and part of his thigh, and he thereupon sunk ; we made out to save him, but before we came, he was drowned. Here are tortoises so great that they will creep with two men's burdens on their backs ; but their pace is so slow that they would make but ill porters, going not above ten yards in two hours, when they make their greatest speed. The birds here are so unaccustomed to frights that I have shot five or six times amongst a flock, letting the dead still lie, and not one of the surviving did so much as offer to fly. The goats here have more of the politician in them ; for they seldom feed or rest themselves, but they set out their sentinels.

## CHAPTER LXXIII

*Hence he sailed for Bantam : by the way he recounts the danger he had like to have sustained, by ascending a burning Mountain*

WEIGHING anchor, we steered our course for Bantam ; but being much straitened by the way, for want of fresh water, we were compelled to make up to the first land we descried. Though the darkness of the night blinded our eyes from such discoveries, yet flames of fire not far distant from us, gave us perfect intelligence that land was not far off. That night we cast anchor, fearing we might run foul of some rock or shelf. In the morning we saw a large track of land before us, not knowing what place it should be. Our captain commanded the long boat to be manned out, to procure water, if any good were there ; amongst the rest, I went for one ; for I was very greedy to observe novelties. Coming on shore, and seeing this hill now and then belch out flames, by my persuasions I made my fellows forget for a time their duty or errand they came about, to make some inquisition into this

miracle of nature. Whereupon we all resolved unanimously to ascend the hill, and with much difficulty we came so nigh the top, that we heard a most hideous noise proceeding from the concave thereof. So terrible it was that we now began to condemn our rash attempt, and stood at a convenient distance, judging it the only medium of our safety.

Whilst we were thus in a delirium, not knowing what was the best to be done, the mountain was instantly possessed with an ague fit, and afterwards vomiting up smoke and stones into the air (which afterwards fell down in a shower upon our heads) we thought we could not escape without a miracle. And whilst we were all striving which way, with greatest expedition, we might eschew the danger, there rose in the midst of us such an heap of earth, ashes, and fire, with such kind of combustible matter, as that we all seemed as so many moveable burning beacons : and without any thoughts of helping each other, every one endeavoured to secure himself.

And although I was the last in the company, yet in this expedition it was much available to me ; for my companions making more haste than good speed, tumbling down the hill before me, fell several of them together ; which blocks lying in my way, obstructed my passage, and so saved the breaking of my neck, which otherwise would have been inevitable. In this prodigious conflict, most of us lost the hair of our heads, not without receiving several batteries upon the out-works of our bodies. At first sight we were much afraid ; but the consequence made it appear, we were not more afraid than hurt. We made a shift to crawl down the rest of the way ; and having fixed our unadvised feet on the bottom of the mountain, we resolved we would never again pay so dearly for our curiosity, but forthwith went in search of some spring, that might serve as well to quench our clothes as our thirst.

What we sought for we quickly found ; and so filling our empty cask, we made what haste we could aboard. The captain and the rest stood amazed to see us look so ghastly, and were very impatient to know what was the matter with us ; we told them succinctly what had happened, and what great dangers we underwent. Instead of pitying us, they only laughed at us for being such adventurous fools. Having thus furnished ourselves with what we wanted, we set sail again for Bantam ; where we safely arrived in a short time.

## CHAPTER LXXIV

*Going ashore to Bantam, and observing the merchants what they did, taking up goods upon credit (as it is usual in those parts) till the ship is ready to set sail, he by a stratagem turns merchant, too, and cheats a Banian, or China merchant*

AS soon as we came into the harbour before Bantam, we manned out our long boat and went ashore to acquaint the president what we were, and by what authority we came thither to traffic, being empowered by the East India Company. We were received with much demonstrations of joy, and nobly feasted for three days together. Here note, that the house wherein the president dwelleth is the receptacle for the whole factory, each man according to his quality having a dwelling within this house suitable to his dignity ; the factors all in general taking their daily repast with the president. In a week's time I learned by observation the custom of the country, and manner or way of trading, our merchant taking up goods daily, and sending them aboard without giving present satisfaction ; it being sufficient that he belonged to such a ship, and therefore must pay before he go, otherwise the king will arrest the ship, compelling him to make restitution or payment.

One time I met with a Banian, whom I observed to have a box full of precious stones. I could not sleep for thinking how I should make myself a partner with him. At last I hammered out this invention. I clothed myself in Indian silk, according to the custom of the country ; and having so done, I discoloured my face, and clapped a black patch upon one of my eyes. In this equipage I addressed myself to this Banian, who presently laid open his treasure to my view. I was not long in choosing what I esteemed as most valuable ; and demanding of him the price, we agreed he should have either so many pieces of English gold within two days, or else take his choice of what commodities I had aboard.

We made a shift to understand each other's broken expressions ; and he without the least suspicion of my treachery, delivered his stones into my hands. Taking off my disguise, I went instantly aboard, and hid what I had cheated the Banian of (as I might easily do, for the smallness of its bulk) in the hold of our ship, resolving not to go ashore yet awhile. The day of payment being come, and the Banian nowhere finding me on land, came aboard of our ship, where by signs he made known to our captain his errand ; that a merchant belonging to his ship, had bought commodities of him, and promised to pay him on that day. Our captain replied that he verily believed he was mistaken (as knowing what com-

modities the merchants belonging properly to the ship had bought) and therefore told him he must make enquiry elsewhere for satisfaction. The Banian still persisted, alleging he was not mistaken, and that he was confident if he might have a sight of all the men, he could out of them select the concerned person.

So wary I was of being discovered, that I acquainted not one soul with my project : for had I committed this secret to any (though ever so dear a friend) it had been mine no longer ; neither could I have promised to myself safety. Hereupon the captain ordered us to be all called aloft ; which was speedily performed. He went all round the company, viewing every man particularly, and very heedfully. At last he came to me, and there made a stand, which had like to have made my heart start out of my breast. He looked upon me on this side, and on the other side ; and to say truly, on every side : and having thoroughly eyed me, he ran to our captain, saying, ‘ That should be the man ’ (pointing to me) ‘ but that he is a white man, and hath two sees (*id est*) two eyes.’ Whereupon I was strictly examined ; but for all this sifting, I would not let drop anything of a confession that should convict me of guilt ; but with lifting up hands and eyes to Heaven, I utterly denied that e’er I saw this man, or ever had any dealing with him.

I had now forgot what promises and vows I made to Heaven, when in Newgate, and sentenced to be hanged at Tyburn, what a serious, pious, and honest life I would lead, if I escaped that eminent danger the concerns of this life and that to come were then in. Herein I see the old proverb verified :

*Quo semel est imbuta recens servabit odorem  
Testa, diu, &c. . . .*

That cask will savour of that liquor still,  
With which at first the cask a man did fill.

Or according to that thread-bare expression so commonly used :

*Naturam expellas furca, licet usque recurret.*

Though man should stop his nature from its course,  
It will o’erflow again with greater force.

In short, the Banian, since he could not say positively I was the man, was dismissed, not without a solemn vow he would be revenged of us all in general ; and I was cleared of the indictment.

## CHAPTER LXXV

*The next going ashore of the seamen, this Banian (for the injury was done him) caused a Running a Muck, that is, he instigated a great many people to kill all they met of that ship : the loss of several men there-upon : but he is out of danger, having cunningly kept himself aboard that time : he afterwards had like to have been killed by a crease the Banian had hired for that purpose : his enemies being destroyed, he marrieth an Indian Punch woman*

THE next day, a great many of our men went ashore ; and going into China Row (a street so called in Bantam), to drink punch and tea, a great crew of Indians and Chinese (headed by this Banian) fell upon them, killing whom they could (not directing their revenge upon any particular person, which they call a muck). So hot and sharp was this conflict that many were killed on both sides, but more wounded. This accident alarmed the whole town, but most especially the English there resident : but at last, with much ado, this grand uproar was calmed. It was my good fortune that I was not then among them, otherwise I might have been made a sacrifice among the rest of my fellows. But I was fore-warned, having been preinformed that such broils are usual upon such occasions ; wherefore I kept myself out of harm's way for that time.

But not long after, thinking their malice blown over, I went ashore ; and walking with others of our boat's crew in the same Row (where most of our men were used to resort, because of the liquor that was there to be had, and a whore to boot), a fellow came to me, with this Banian I cheated, and both of them with 'Creases' (a kind of dagger of about a foot and half long), would have stabbed me, had not my friends prevented them by striking up their heels, and afterwards with their own creases stabbed them to the heart. After this, we could walk very quietly without any disturbance, going anywhere without any danger.

Being very hot there, our usual pastime was to go up a little small river joining to the town four or five miles to wash ourselves. The trees so covered it over like an arbour that the beams of the sun could not penetrate it ; by which means it was fine and cool, which very much refreshed our parched bodies. I never came ashore, but I drank very immoderately of punch, rack, tea, &c. which was brought up in great china jugs holding at least two quarts. With every such jug there was brought in a dish of sweetmeats, not of one sort, but variety, and excellent

good, for which we paid a shilling English : and if you called for another jug, you paid no more, unless a dish ushered it in.

One house especially I much frequented, for the Indian woman's sake that kept it ; for though she was black, or rather tawny, yet she was well-featured and well-formed, having long black hair (when she untied the tresses) hanging down to her legs. She from the first shewed me as much kindness as could be expected from that lump of Barbarism ; and I could discern her inclinations in the same manner as a man may from beasts, when they are prone to generation, but yet it went against my stomach to yield to her motions. However, she continued her love to me, not letting me pay for anything I called for ; and when there was no necessity of being aboard, she would in a manner make me lie in her house, which, as their houses commonly are, had but one story. The beds they use are a kind of hard quilt ; for were they soft, the hotness of the climate would cause them to be very destructive to man's body, even melting his very reins. Gold and jewels she had great quantity, with an house richly furnished after the Indian fashion. For this consideration I persuaded myself to marry her ; and with several arguments alleged, I gained so much conquest over myself that I could kiss her without disgorging myself ; and by accustoming myself to her company, methought I began to take some delight in it. By degrees, interest so overpowered me that I resolved to marry her. Thus many, nay most, for money, stick not to give themselves to the Devil.

Having one night, lying there, seriously considered of my resolution, and liking it indifferent well, I fell asleep ; but wondered when I awaked, to see a thing lie by me all black, as if she had had a mourning smock on. It seems she could hold out no longer. I pretended to flee from her ; but she held me fast in her arms, using what rhetoric she could to persuade me to the contrary. I asked her what she meant ? She told me in a little broken English she had got, that she would ' Money me ' ; marry me, she meant : ' Aye, money me,' said I, ' that I like well ' ; but without it, let the Devil have married her for me. I asked her several questions, to which she gave me satisfaction ; and enjoined her several things, which she greedily condescended to : whereupon I gave her the first-fruits of her desires. But ere I go farther, take something of my rhyming fancy with you.

## CHAPTER LXXVI

*He descants on his marrying and lying with an Indian Black : gives wholesome advice to others ; and concludes for this time*

AT the first sight, her head seemed in a case,  
 Or that a *vizard-mask* had hid her face,  
 Or that she was some *fiend* from hell had stole,  
 Having for lust been *burnt* there to a coal.  
 I could not tell what this foul thing should be ;  
 A *Succubus* it did appear to me ;  
 A damn'd *black* soul, that was by heaven sent,  
 To make me of my *blacker* crimes repent.  
 I started from her, being much amazed :  
 The more I was afraid, the more I gazed.  
 Then she arose, and caught me in her arm ;  
 Such soft flesh sure intended me no harm.  
 'Twas time to roar, since that I could not tell,  
 But that I was *encircled* (now) by *Hell*.  
 'Stay, stay,' said she, 'I am no *hellish fiend*,  
 I'm flesh and blood, and am thy loving friend :  
 If my complexion do not please thy mind,  
 Then close thine eyes, yet love : *Thus love is blind.*'  
 I understood her tongue, and straight did swear  
 That I would banish this my causeless fear ;  
 And so betook myself unto the *rug*  
 On which we lay, and after many a *tug*,  
 I plighted *faith* with this kind *Infidel* ;  
 But what we did, my modest tongue won't tell.  
 I would at any time (might I but choose)  
 The *fairest white* for this same *black* refuse.  
 But mischief on't, let me *shoot* e'er so right,  
 It can't be said that I did *hit the White*.

Interest so blinded my reason that I went instantly to my captain, and gave him information of my proceedings, desiring his consent in the marrying this Indian, alleging how advantageous it would be to me. He granted my request, upon my earnest importunity ; and being dismissed from his service, we were married according to the ceremonies of the Church by an English priest, she renouncing her paganism. What money was got by my wife's trade, I laid out in such commodities the country afforded, as calicoes, pepper, indigo, green ginger, &c. and sold them immediately to the ships lying in the harbour, doubling what I laid out ; so that in short time I found my stock to increase beyond

expectation. Such satisfaction my black received from me, that she thought she could not do enough to please me. I was an absolute monarch in my family ; she and her servants willingly condescended to be my vassals ; yet though I thus enjoyed the prerogative of an husband, yet I did not lord it too much ; which won so much upon my wife's affection, and those that were concerned with her, that as soon as I desired anything, it was immediately performed, with much alacrity and expedition.

I fancied my life to be now as happy as the world could make it, having plenty of everything, and not controlled by the foolish self-will of an obstinate woman. I confess it was at first a great regret to my spirit to lie by a woman so contrary to my own complexion : but custom made her become in process of time as lovely in my eye as if she had been the completest European beauty. I now again considered how he must live that intends to live well ; and upon that consideration, concluded upon this resolution, Not to neglect my duty to Heaven, myself, or neighbours : for he that fails in any of these, falls short in making his life commendable. For ourselves, we need order ; for our neighbour, charity ; and for the Deity, reverence and humility. These three duties are so concatenated that he which liveth orderly, cannot but be acceptable to his maker and the world. Nothing jars the world's harmony more than men that break their ranks ; and nothing renders man more contemned and hated than he whose actions only tend to irregularity. One turbulent spirit will even dissentiate the calmest kingdom : so did my past unruly and disorderly life ruin myself, as well as many families. I have seen an orthodox minister in his pulpit with his congregation about him ; and since revolving in my mind the comeliness of that well-ordered sight, I have thought within myself how mad he would appear, that should wildly dance out of his room. Such is man when he spurns at the law he liveth under ; and such was I, that could not be contained within due limits, living like the drone on others' labours ; taking no pains, but only making a humming noise in the world, till justice seized me for a wandering, idle, and hurtful vagabond (*an ignavum pecus*), and so had like to thrust me out of the world, the hive of industrious bees.

Ill company at first misled me, and it is to be feared by my example others have been misled. For he that giveth himself leave to transgress, he must needs put others out of the way. Experience giveth us to understand, that he which first disorders himself, troubles all the company. Would every man keep his own life, what a concord in music would every family be ! It shall be my own endeavour to do this, and my cordial advice to others to do the like.

Doubtless he that performeth his duty to Heaven, shall find such a

peace within that shall fit him for whatsoever falls. He shall not fear himself, because he knoweth his course is in order ; he shall not fear the world, because he knoweth he hath done nothing that hath angered it ; he shall not be afraid of Heaven, for he knoweth he shall there find the favour of a servant, nay more, a son, and be protected against the malice of Hell.

I know I shall be looked on no otherwise than an hypocrite ; neither will the world believe my reformation real, since I have lived so notoriously and loosely. Let a man do well an hundred times, it may be he shall for a short time be remembered and applauded ; whereas if he doth evilly but once, he shall be ever condemned, and never forgot. However, let me live well, and I care not though the world should flout my innocence, and call me dissembler. It is no matter if I suffer the worst of censorious reproaches, so that I get to Heaven at last ; to the attaining of which, the best counsel I can give myself and others is, *Bene vive, ordinabiliter tibi, sociabiliter proximo, et humiliter Deo* : Live well, orderly to thyself, sociably to thy neighbour, and humbly to thy Maker.

Take this as wholesome advice, though from an ill liver, which hath been in part discovered in the foregoing discourse ; wherein I have endeavoured, by drawing up a list of my own evil actions, to frighten others from the commission of the like. For as there is no company so savagely bad but a wise man may from it learn something to make himself better ; so there is no book so poorly furnished, out of which a man may not gather something for his benefit. Herein I have not minded so much words, as the matter ; aiming at nothing more than how I might completely limn vice in her proper ugly shape ; having done that, I have done what I intended, the reformation of others by my wicked example. For vice is of such a toady complexion, so ill shaped and deformed, that she cannot choose but teach the soul to hate ; so loathsome when she is seen in her own nasty dress, that we cannot look upon her but with detestation and horror. Vice was cunning and curiously painted when I fell into her scabbed embraces ; neither could I have ever known her foulness and rottenness, had I not tried whether her (seeming) fairness and soundness were real. Believe me, she is no ways that she appears to be ; therefore be not deluded by her : but let my life be to the Reader, as a friend fallen into a pit, that gives warning to another to avoid the danger. So admirably hath Providence disposed of the ways of man, that even the sight of vice in others is like a warning-arrow, shot for us to take heed. Vice usually in her greatest bravery, publisheth herself foolishly, thinking thereby to procure a train ; and then it is, that the secret working of conscience makes her turn her

weapons against herself, and strongly plead for her implacable adversary, virtue. We are frequently wrought to good by contraries ; and foul acts keep virtue from the charms of vice. An ancient poet writ well to this purpose, thus :

... Insuevit Pater optimus hoc me,  
Ut fugerem exemplis vitiorum quæque ; notando.  
Quum me hortaretur parce, frugaliter, atque ;  
Viverem uti contentus ea, quod mi ipse parasset :  
Nonne vides Albi ut male vivat filius ? utque ;  
Barrus inops ? Magnum documentum ne patriam rem  
Perdere quis vellit. A turpi Meretricis amore  
Quum deterret, Sectani dissimilis sis.  
... Sic me  
Formabat puerum dictis ...

... Thus my best father taught  
Me to flee vice, by noting those were naught.  
When he would charge me, thrive, & sparing be,  
Content with what he had prepar'd for me ;  
Seest not how ill young Albus lives ? how low  
Poor Barrus ? Sure, a weighty *Item* how  
One spent his means. And when he meant to strike  
A hate to whores, To Sectan be not like.

There is no better way to correct faults in ourselves, than by observing how uncomely they appear in others. After a fit of drunkenness, my conscience would usually accuse me, and many times, after conviction, would pass so severe a sentence of condemnation on me that my own hands have oftentimes been like to prove my executioners. Considering within myself what should be the cause of this trouble and self-loathing, I found it proceeded from no other reason than the observation of others in the like beastly condition, and how noisome it hath rendered them to all. The first thing that made me abhor a choleric passion, and a saucy pride in myself (of which I was too guilty), was the seeing how ridiculous and contemptible they rendered those that are infested with them. Besides, those that are thoroughly experienced in navigation, do as well know the coasts as the ocean ; as well the sands, the shallows, and the rocks, as the secured depth in the most dangerless channel ; so I think those that would arrive to as much perfection as they are capable of enjoying here, must as well know bad, that they may abtrude or shun it, as the good, that they may embrace it. And this knowledge we can neither have so cheap, nor so certain, as by seeing it in others : for under

a crown you may buy the whole experience of a man's life (as of mine), which cost some thousands ; though me no more hundreds than what I borrowed of the world, having of mine own nothing originally.

If we could pass the world without meeting vice, then the knowledge of virtue only were sufficient : but it is impossible to live, and not encounter her. Vice is as a god in this world ; for as she ruleth almost uncontrollably, so she assumes to herself ubiquity ; we cannot go anywhere, but that she presents herself to the eye, &c. If any be unwittingly cast thereon, let him observe for his own more safe direction. He is happy that makes another man's vices steps for him to climb to his eternal rest by. The wise physicians make poison medicinable ; and even the mud of the world, by the industrious (yet ungrateful) Hollander, is turned to an useful fuel.

If, Reader, then, thou lightst here on anything that is bad, by considering the sordid stains, either correct those faults thou hast, or shun those thou mightest have. That mariner which hath sea-room, can make any wind almost serve to set him forwards in his wished voyage : so may a wise man take any advantage to set himself forward to the haven of virtue. Man, as soon as created, had two great suitors for his life and soul ; the one Virtue, and the other Vice. Virtue came in this manner, and thus attended ; truth ran before her naked, yet courageous ; after her followed Labour, Cold, Hunger, Thirst, Care and Vigilance ; these poorly arrayed, as looking upon it unseemly to go finer than their mistress, who was plainly and meanly clad, yet cleanly, and her countenance shewed such a self-perfection, that she might very well emblem whatsoever Omnipotency could make most rare. Modest she was, and so lovely, that whosoever looked on her stedfastly, could not but insoul himself in her. After her followed Content, enriched with jewels, and overspread with perfumes, carrying with her all the treasure and massy riches of the world. Then came Joy, with all essential pleasures : Honour, with all the ancient orders of nobility, sceptres, thrones, and crowns imperial. Lastly, Glory, whose brightness was such (which she shook from her sunny tresses), that it dazzled the eyes of her beholders, so that they could never truly describe her. In the rear came Eternity casting a ring about them, which like a strong enchantment made them ever the same.

Vice strove not to be behind-hand with Virtue ; wherefore she sets out too, and in this form. Her precursor or fore-runner was Lying, a painted housewife, of a smooth, insinuating, and deluding tongue, gaudily clad, but under her vestments she was full of scabs and loathsome ulcers. Her words seemed exceeding pleasant, promising to all she met whatsoever could be wished for, in the behalf of her Mistress Vice. On this

hypocritical quean Wit waited : next him, a conceited fellow, and one that over-swayed the fancy of man with his pretty tricks and gambols. Sloth and Luxury followed these, so full, that they were even ready to be choked with their own fat. After these, followed some impostors to personate Content, Joy, and Honour, in all their wealth and royal dignities. Close after these, Vice came herself, sumptuously apparelled, but yet a nasty surfeited slut ; her breath being so infectious that he which kissed her was sure to perish. After her followed suddenly Guilt, Horror, Shame, Loss, Want, Sorrow, Torment ; and these were charmed with Eternity's ring, as the former.

And thus they wooed fond man, who taken with the subtle cozenages of vice, yielded to lie with her ; whereby he had his nature so empoisoned that his seed was all vitiated and contaminated ; and his corruption even to this day is still conveyed to his undone posterity. It is man's folly, only to look on the fore-runners of Virtue, which are very poor, as Cold, Hunger, Thirst, &c. but not to consider her glorious attendants that follow after, as Content, Joy, Honour, and Glory. We fancy Vice for her outside, not imagining what she is when stripped of all her gauderies.

If you, then, intend to enjoy for your portion a kingdom hereafter, adhere not to the allurements of Vice ; for she will soon persuade you to be an unthrift, to sell your inheritance whilst it is but in reversion. But harken to Virtue's counsel ; she will teach you how to husband all things well, so as to become a purchaser of no less than joys eternal.

Fortune's favours oft do fade,  
To those that in her arms do sleep :  
Shelter yourselves in Virtue's shade ;  
She crowneth those that do her reap.  
For though darkned, you may say,  
When Friends fail, and Fortunes frown,  
Though Virtue is the roughest way,  
Yet proves at night a bed of down.

**T**HUS have I given you a summary account of my life, from the nonage to the meridian of my days. If there be any expressions either scurrilous or obscene, my only design was to make vice appear as she is, foul, ugly, and deformed : and I hope, he that hath sense will grow wiser by the folly that is presented him ; as drunkards are often cured by the beastliness of others that are so. The subject would not permit to be serious, neither would it have been suitable to our merry age, being generally of Tully's mind, when he said, *Lectionem sine ulla delectatione negligo* : He hated reading where no pleasure dwelt.

As the daylight is purest, so have I endeavoured to make my slender wit appear terse and spruce, without the fulsome ness of wanton language. If I have in any place transgresed the bounds of modesty by loose expressions, you need not fear to be offend ed with their unsavoury breath, for I have perfumed it : but if it should chance to stink, it is only to drive you from my former inclination and conversation. It is probable I may be a little guilty, being not fully cured of that malady I lately laboured under. For as the breaking out of itch and blains shews the body is not clear, so foul and unrinsed expressions are the purulent exhalations of a corrupted mind, stained with the unseasonedness of the flesh.

If any loose word have dropped from the mind's best interpreter, my pen, I would have the Reader to pass it over regardless, and not like a toad, only gather up the venom of a garden ; or like a goldfinder, make it his business to dive in Stench and excrements. However, very cautious I was in offending any modest ear (though sometimes it could hardly be avoided, the matter in a manner requiring it), because I look upon obscene expressions as the plague on paper ; and he that comes between the sheets is in danger of being infected. I shall assure you, had I not more respected a general good by displaying vice in general, to put men out of conceit with it, I should not have taken so much pains to be both blamed and laughed at, but should have wrapped up in silence my shame and infamy. For in truth, this book may bear a similitude with the Amphisbena, a serpent headed at either end : one biteth the vicious temper of him that reads it, and the other stings him that wrote it. To conclude, I care not though my wickedness and folly be set up as a monument to make my infamy eternal, so that the reading of my Life may be any ways instrumental for the reformation of licentious persons.

## PART TWO

### THE PREFACE TO THE READER

WHEN this piece was first published it was ushered into the world with the usual ceremony of a Preface, and that a large one, whereby the author intended and endeavoured to possess the reader with a belief that what was written was the Life of a Witty Extravagant, the author's friend and acquaintance. This was the intent of the writer, but the readers could not be drawn to this belief, but in general concurred in this opinion, that it was the life of the author, and notwithstanding all that hath been said to the contrary many still continue in this opinion. Indeed the whole story is so genuine and naturally described, without any forcing or romancing that all contained in it seems to be naturally true, and so I'll assure you it is ; but not acted by any one single person, much less by the author, who is well known to be of an inclination much different from the foul debaucheries of the relations. If the readers had read the Spanish rogue, Gusman ; the French rogue, Francion ; and several others by foreign wits, and have upon examination found that the authors were persons of great eminency and honour, and that no part of their own writings were their own lives, they had happily changed their opinion of the author of this ; but they holding this opinion caused him to desist from prosecuting his story in a Second Part, and he having laid down the cudgels I took them up. My design in so doing was out of three considerations ; the first and chiefest was to gain ready money, the second I had an itch to gain some reputation by being in print, and thereby revenge myself on some who had abused me, and whose actions I recited, and the third was to advantage the reader and make him a gainer by acquainting him with my experiences. This were the reasons for my engaging in the Second Part, and the very same reason induced me to join with the author in composing and writing a Third and Fourth Part, in which we have clubbed so equally, and intermixed our stories so jointly that it is some difficulty for any at first sight to distinguish what we particularly writ. And now having concluded the Preface, which should never have been begun but that I had a blank page, and was unwilling to be so ill a husband for you but that you should have all possible content for your money, and withal to tell you that I would not have you as yet to expect any more parts of the book, for although a Fifth and last part is designed, yet I'll assure you there is never a stitch amiss, nor one line written of it,

*and if you desire that, you must give me encouragement by your speedy purchasing of what is already written ; and thereby you will engage*

*Your Friend,*

*FRANCIS KIRKMAN*

## CHAPTER I

*He discourses of the manner of government of the inhabitants of the East Indies : A small voyage by sea, where he is in danger by a tempest, and a Malabar man-of-war, but escapes both. He makes some rambles into the country, and returning home has some reflections on his fore-passed life*

I WAS now arrived at the meridian of my age, and enjoyed such a plenty of everything that I soon forgot the many miseries I had lately suffered since my banishment from England. I governed my family with a most absolute command, and received a willing obedience as well from my wife, as all our servants, and during the stay of our English ships, I gained very much by entertaining my countrymen with necessaries. I kept so punctual a correspondence with the Banian merchants that I could command anything ; and by their means found the way of trading by which I considerably enriched myself ; so that at the departure of the English fleet, I, having cast up an account of my estate, found that I had gained above 2000 rupees (which being the country money, and worth about 2 s. a piece, amounted to 200 l.). Also I had a good parcel of diamonds, besides those I had cheated the Banian of at my first arrival. Several other commodities I had by me, which (with my household-stuff which was considerable) did in all amount to a great value.

The fleet being departed, the chief of our trading ceased, and now it was vacation time, and I (hating idleness, and somewhat weary of my wife's company) being desirous of novelty, set out to view the country. To which end taking money with me, and all other necessaries, I hired an Indian coach, which is a kind of a chariot with two wheels, and will hold about four persons. This coach was drawn with two oxen, who will travel about thirty miles a day. My charge was not much, for about eighteenpence a day paid my coachman, and kept his cattle. Thus did I ramble about the country, visiting other of my acquaintance, where I had a full enjoyment of everything the country afforded. For we had not only the country drink called toddee, which is made of the juice of

several trees, and punch, which is made of rack-lime, or lime-water, sugar, spices, and sometimes the addition of amber-grease, but we likewise drank great quantities of Persian wine, which is much like claret, and brought from that country in bottles. These were our drinks whereof we drank plentifully, and oftentimes to excess ; our meat was chiefly rice, with beans, and turkeys, beef and mutton, and sometimes veal and lamb. This was my ordinary diet, but the Banians eat no flesh, accounting it criminal, it being contrary to their religion to kill anything. The chiefest exercise we had was playing at nine-pins, a game I was well acquainted with in England, and therefore could well enough deal with the natives, though they were expert therein.

Though I pleased myself in these things, yet there was still wanting the only thing which had always made my life pleasant to me, and that was the company of women, for without their pleasing society in a full enjoyment I reckoned I had nothing, and therefore upon every turn found them out. But I must now be contented with the natives, who although they are not so fair as the women of our European countries, yet they may pass well enough, for their complexions are commonly of a tawny hue, but they are richly adorned with pearl and other jewels ; I speak of those who were mercenary. There is no town but had two or three of these brothel-houses, which were allowed of ; neither was it any disgrace to be seen therein. The handsomest women are here ; the matron of the house is furnished with several, who she purchases sometimes of their own parents, who sell them, not accounting it an injury to dispose of them to this purpose. These old bawds are as cunning as those of our country, for they will sell a maidenhead two or three times over, for which they will sometimes have twenty or thirty rupees, according to the goodness of the commodity and good will of the purchaser, who shall enjoy his bargain for two or three days or nights together, either at their lodgings, or at home at their own houses. Neither do their wives dare to contradict their husbands therein, for they will often-times bring home one of these lasses, and lodge them in a cot in the same room with their wives, and lie with them as often as they please, and when they have done with them send them home again.

I tried several of these *Bona Robas*, who pleased me very well, for what they wanted in beauty they supplied in respect and willingness to comply with and please me in all my desires ; and though many times they have the pox, by reason of their heat and activity, yet they value it not, for they are so well acquainted and furnished with remedies that they soon cure themselves and the men who accompany them. My ramble being finished, I returned home, and though my wife knew I had been at several of these brothels, yet I was joyfully received and

welcomed by her. We keeping a public house had all sorts of guests, and now being at leisure I discoursed with several of the Brammanes who are their priests, who informed me not only of the civil but ecclesiastical government of the nation. For though I supposed them heathens, yet I found that they followed a rule in their living to which they strictly tied themselves. They in general gave me this account ; that they are governed by a kingly monarch, who is called the Great Mogul. He is absolute in his dominions, and all his subjects are his slaves ; all the land and houses throughout his dominions are his own, and the inhabitants or occupiers are only his tenants, and pay a valuable rent for what they enjoy, which is annually collected by officers to that purpose appointed, and paid into his Exchequer ; this he bestows at his own pleasure, or spends in making war with his enemies, who are chiefly the Tartars, and sometimes the Persians.

They have frequently civil wars amongst themselves upon the death of their prince, if he leaves more sons than one behind him ; for he who last ruled, and was father of this present Mogul, made his way to the empire by the death of eleven of his brethren ; he himself being the youngest when he died, which is not long since. Three of his sons survived him, who all immediately raised great armies either to gain the empire, or lose their lives in general. The two youngest having assembled all their well-willers and friends, with considerable armies approached one another, a river now only parting them. The eldest of the two dispatched a messenger to his brother to tell him that he was very well satisfied in his taking arms, and since he was in such readiness, if he pleased he would join forces with him, and assault their elder brother, who being vanquished they would divide the government. The youngest brother willingly assenting to these propositions, came over to him, but no sooner was he in his power, but he caused both his eyes to be put out (thereby disenabling him from the government), and soon gaining the captains of his brother's army to his party, he joined forces, and causing his blind brother to be carried with him, advanced to meet and oppose his elder brother. In short time they met, and fought each other with various success, but in fine he conquered his brother, and depriving him of life, as the other of sight, he now remains sole monarch of this large empire.

The old Mogul died infinitely rich, for he left eight tanks of coined money, each tank esteemed to hold ten millions of rupees ; and indeed it is no great marvel, for he hath some of his subjects, especially the Banian merchants, that are very rich, all whose treasure he will command at his own will. There is one Banian whose name is Vergore, who was the chiefest merchant of his tribe, and hath most of the stocks of his fellows

in his hand. To him the Great Mogul sent for money, to which message he sent this answer, That he would instantly furnish his Highness with a hundred carts loaden with ready money. The Mogul hearing this, ordered him to keep it till he sent again, or had further occasion. The English have great privileges, for they pay less duties and customs than the natives, for the Banian merchants will sometimes hire an English man to go to sea with them in their junks, which are great barks, not to do any service in the voyage but only to own the goods that they may save several taxes and duties that else must be paid, as anchorage and moorage.

I one time was asked by a Banian of my acquaintance whether I would go to sea with him, and he would give me a considerable recompence. He told me that I should only wear my hat, eat my victuals, and when we came to our port own the goods. Being desirous of seeing fashions I consented, and our junk being loaden, we set sail and departed : but never was I accompanied with such sailors, for the junk (which is much like a close lighter) was deeply loaded with calicoes, it carried above 1000 ton. The wind being fair, all the tackling was nailed down and fastened, but when we had been four days at sea, the wind contrary to custom changed ; but though it began to be tempestuous yet, all our men being then at dinner, there was none would leave their eating to handle the sails or alter the tackling. Dinner being ended, I persuaded them with much ado to go to work, but it was some hours ere they had loosened their tackling so as to lower their sails, and by that time we were driven out of knowledge ; the winds there are usually so constant that they never make provision to handle their sails, and alter them, but commonly as they fix them at their setting out, so they continue till they come to their port, where instead of an anchor they carry a very great stone, fastened by an iron ring to their cable, which they let down while they stay, but take up when they go away. And then they alter their sails, fitting them to the wind to bring them back ; they continue in that manner to the end of the voyage.

But now it falling out otherwise, great was their trouble, not knowing how to behave themselves ; and although there was forty men on board, and they all well enough acquainted with navigation in those parts, yet I that was but of one year's standing was their best instructor, or else we had been lost and perished. Most of our sails being now taken down, and the wind ceasing, we by the next day came into our knowledge, but met with another misfortune, which was like to prove worse than the former, for we discovered a junk, though nothing near so big as ours, yet better manned, and was indeed a Malabar man-of-war, and our professed enemy, who are used to infest those seas with their piracies. Our seamen being sensible of the desperateness of our condition, were

greatly dismayed, but I (who was formerly used to be dead-hearted enough) did now become valorous, and encouraged them by words and actions, for considering the badness of my own condition, being likely not only to lose what estate I had lately gathered, but at leastwise my liberty and it may be my life (for many of these Malabars do kill and feed on their prisoners), these considerations I say possessed me with so much courage that I was resolved to try my utmost power to defend myself from my enemies. We were by chance accompanied by ten Moors called Rashpoots, who being always brought up in wars, never go unarmed. These persons being more courageous than the rest, by my example put themselves into a posture of defence, and the other seamen had swords and other weapons put into their hands, to keep the enemy from boarding us. We had eight great guns in our junk, which were carried more for ornament than use, for they knew not how to discharge them against an enemy to advantage. Being as well as their tackling and sails, fixed to one place they only served to be shot off in triumph, and make a noise, but would not be well levelled to carry a bullet to do execution. I seeing this inconvenience, took such order therein that the guns were placed so as to damage our enemy, who now approaching us, came close up towards us. But he found a hotter entertainment than he expected, for we killed several of his men with our first broadside. The only weapons our enemies had were great stones, which they threw at us in abundance ; but we having again charged our great guns and all the small ones we had abroad, gave them such a peal as was the funeral knell to many of them. By this time they were discouraged, and our men seeing the good success we had, came all in sight and every one taking a great stone which had been thrown to us by the enemy, gave them such an onset with the stones as now made them think of giving over their enterprize, which we compelled them to do so soon as we had given them another broadside, and once more discharged all our small guns. This gave them so general a blow that they veered about and left us to prosecute our voyage.

Our enemies being gone, I called all our men together to see what damage we had sustained, and upon enquiry found that we had not lost a man ; but about half a dozen broken heads and faces was all the harm we had received.

I was generally applauded for my courage, and the chief owner of the goods not only rendered me infinite thanks, but promised me a great reward, which was justly paid me at the end of our voyage. I told them that I much wondered at the manner of our enemies' fight, but I received this answer, that they seldom used any other weapons than stones, which they carried in great plenty, trusting to them and their great numbers ;

for the bark that set upon us had above a hundred men in her, and would have certainly taken us had I not made so good a fight with our guns, which was a thing unusual for them to meet with, not suspecting that we could make any use of them otherwise than to shoot upright as was usual, but they found the contrary to their cost. I suppose we had the good fortune to kill several of them, which so disheartened them that they left us, as I told you ; and thus we meeting with no more obstruction, in two months' time finished our voyage, and returned home, where I received 500 rupees as a recompence for my good service.

I was joyfully received at home by my wife, and acquired a very good esteem of all by my valorous exploit, and had many advantageous offers to go again on the same account ; but I valuing my pleasure more than profit, which was hazardous, declined the propositions, and now rested myself at home, only making some excursions to visit the best of my friends (who failed not to welcome me) being the handsomest women, to whom I made myself welcome. Sometimes I travelled to the adjacent towns, where I visited the pleasant gardens ; and other times I went further to the cities, which being well built with brick, had pleasant platforms or turrets on the top. Many of the cities were walled and fortified with castles for their defence. I seldom went without a couple of attendants, which are called Puisns, who were my daily servants ; these were a sort of Banians who served me for four shillings a month apiece, and out of that found themselves diet, unless they travelled far from home, and then I allowed each of them but three halfpence apiece *per* day to buy them victuals and drink, which was only Cutkeree, Butter, Toddee, with which they were very well satisfied. Neither, indeed, doth the consul give much more to his servitors, for his chief Puisn hath but twelve shillings *per* month, and out of that he keeps a horse and a servant to attend him. They are very diligent and faithful in what they are entrusted with, but so soon as they perceive a new moon, they tell their masters of it, that they may pay them their wages.

Having now satisfied my curiosity in these travels, and being returned home, I began to consider with myself my fore-passed life. Then it was I did run over these several accidents that had formerly befallen me.

At first, how I committed rogueries when but a boy, and ran away from my mother (of whom I had never since so much as heard or enquired). I had some reflections thereupon, and what my mother might judge was become of me. Then did I call to mind the rogueries I committed when among the gypsies and beggars, and how with them I first tried and tasted the pleasure of a female companion ; from that my apprenticeship, and the several adventures I had, and the pleasant nights'

lodgings I enjoyed, not only with the maid, but the mistress. How, after the maid whom I had gotten with child was delivered, I dispatched her and child to Virginia, and soon after by mine and my mistress's extravagancies sent my master first to prison, and so out of the world, my mistress herself not long surviving him.

Being then a freeman, I married, but was justly enough fitted for my disloyalty by my wife's incontinency, which with my own prodigality soon consumed me, enforced me to leave England for Ireland, which being my first great remove, I seriously reflected on not knowing where I should end my days, I being now far distant from the place of my nativity. But bethinking myself that my only livelihood depended there in my virile strength, not that I was exposed to carry burthens, or labour in the day time, but in the night, in venereal combats, where I received equal pleasure: and indeed I having run through the whole course of my life, found, that by the favourable and good opinion of women (which was not undeserved) I had not only preserved myself, but many times raised myself a sufficient fortune; as I had lately done by marrying with my Moorish wife. In which present condition I concluded myself much better than when I was in Ireland tied to my old woman, who only paid me and gave me money according to the service I did her, and was then again old and peevish, and above all things very jealous; whereas now I was my own paymaster, and though my bedfellow was not fair, yet she was young and pleasant, and so far from jealousy that she herself sometimes would procure me a young girl, the fairest in the country, to lie with me, and she also lying by me and taking much pleasure therein.

Then did I proceed in the thoughts of my former life, and considered the many dangers I underwent all the time I followed my padding employment, and though I then usually wore money enough in my pocket, and sometimes met with some female adventures, as the farmer's daughter, the poetic widow, and my female robbers, and others in whose converse I took much pleasure, yet I was in all these pleasures still accompanied with fear of being snapped, as indeed I was at last and likely to be trussed up, but that my penitence wrought so upon my friends as to procure my sentence of death to be altered into that of banishment; which had through many miseries and cross adventures brought me hither, where I received the full enjoyment of all things. This consideration took me up much time, and possessed me with some virtuous thoughts, believing that I had not been preserved and reserved from so many hazards but for some good end; and now I had a fair opportunity of declining vice and living virtuously, I not being likely to be exposed to any such roguish shifts or courses as formerly. These thoughts of virtue

made way for those of religion, and now it was that I seriously considered of that word in general, and being (though little practised in) yet well enough acquainted with the Christian religion, I wondered at the absurdity of the religion of other nations, especially of the country wherein I now lived. And having been curious in the enquiry of the grounds thereof, I had received a good account, though little satisfaction ; but since it is a novelty, and may well enough suit with the following discourse, which will consist of several and variety of knaveries and cheatings, whereof I suppose this of this country's religion may very well bear a part ; I shall give you a short account thereof in this following chapter.

## CHAPTER II

### *The Origin, Religion, and Worship of the Banians and Persees, with all their castes and tribes*

**T**HIS large part of the world which is governed by the Great Mogul is inhabited by these three sort of people, Banians, Moormen or Rashpoots, and Persees. The several religions or worships of the first and last, *viz.* the Banians and Persees, I shall here give you an account of ; but for the Moors or Rashpoots, they have little esteem for any religion in particular, and being for the most part soldiers, are of the Great Mogul's religion, which is partly Mahometan. I shall therefore begin with the Banians, who believe in one God, and that he created the world out of nothing, and that after this manner.

First he having the four elements of Air, Earth, Fire, and Water for a ground-work, by some great cane or such like instrument, blew upon the waters, which arose into a bubble of a round form like an egg, which spreading itself made the firmament so clear and transparent, which now compasseth the world about. After this there remaining true liquid substance in the Earth, God made of both these together a thing round like a ball, which is called the lower world. The more solid part became earth, the liquid sea, both which making one globe, he by a great noise or humming sound placed them in the midst of the firmament. There he created the Sun and Moon to distinguish times and seasons, and the four elements, which were before mixed, were now separated and assigned to their several places, and discharged their several offices ; the Air filled up the empty parts, the Fire nourished with heat ; the Earth and Sea brought forth their living creatures, and then was the world created. And as it had its beginning from four elements, so it was

measured by four points, East, West, North and South, and was to be continued for four ages to be peopled by four castes or sorts of men, who were to be married by four sorts of women appointed for them. The world being made, man was likewise made out of the earth, God putting him into life, and he worshipping his creator. Woman was likewise made and given to him as a companion. The first man's name was Ponrous, and the woman's name was Parcoutee, and they lived together as man and wife, feeding on the fruits of the earth, not destroying any living creature.

These two had four sons called Brammon, Cuttery, Shuddery, and Wyse, who were of different and distinct nature from each other ; for Brammon was of an earthly constitution, and therefore melancholy ; Cuttery fiery, and therefore martial ; Shuddery flematic, and therefore peaceable ; Wyse airy, and therefore full of contrivances and inventions. Brammon being melancholy and ingenious, God gave him knowledge, and appointed him to impart his Laws, and therefore gave him a book containing the form of divine worship and religion ; Cuttery being martial had power to govern kingdoms, and therefore had a sword given him ; Shuddery being mild and conversable, it was thought fit that he should be a merchant and traffic, and therefore had a pair of balances and a bag of weights hung at his girdle ; and Wyse being airy, was appointed for a mechanic or handicraftsman, and therefore had a bag of several sorts of tools.

These were the first men, and these their qualities (according to the Banian tradition), that peopled the earth ; Ponrous and Parcoutee had no daughters, because the sons should go elsewhere to find them wives, which were made for them, and placed at the four winds. The four sons being grown up to man's age, were commanded to travel.

Brammon with his book in his hand, took his journey towards the rising of the sun in the East ; for the place where they were born, and their parents created was in the middle or navel of the world, the sun at noon-day casting no shadow. Brammon taking his journey, as is said, towards the East, arrived at a goodly mountain, before which was a valley through which there passed a brook ; in the descent of which there appeared a woman a-drinking. This woman was of black hair, yellow complexion, of an indifferent size, and a modest aspect, and indeed in everything made as if made for her beholder ; who being naked, and seeing her to be so, was more bashful than the woman, who first brake silence by questioning the cause of his coming thither.

Brammon hearing her spake, and that in his own language, replied, that the great God, who made all things had sent him thither. The woman seeing his book, asked the use of it ; whereupon he opening it,

shewed her the contents thereof ; and after some other discourse she consented to be married to him, according to the form prescribed in that book. Which being done, they lay together, and had many children, who peopled the East part of the world. This woman's name was Savatree.

Cuttery the second brother was sent upon the same account to the West part of the world, and taking his sword in his hand, he advanced on his journey. But not meeting with any adventure or occasion to make use thereof, he was much troubled ; desiring above all things that he might meet with some people whereon he might exercise his courage. Thus impatiently did he proceed on his journey, till he arrived near a high mountain, where he might behold a personage who was walking with a martial pace, and coming nearer, found to be a woman armed with a weapon called a Chuckery. They were no sooner met but they encountered, and set upon one another ; but though he expected a sudden conquest, yet was he deceived therein, for his adversary held him in play all that day, till night parted them. The next day also they wholly spent in fight ; he gained no advantage over his female enemy, only at the close of the day, he had the fortune to cut her weapon in two ; but the night coming on, she escaped from him without any further damage.

The next day she was provided with bow and arrows, and then had a great advantage over him, because she could wound him at a distance, and he could not hurt her without a close fight. He being sensible of this odds, closed with her, and by main strength threw her down, holding her by the hair of the head ; when having a perfect view of her beauties, instead of an enemy, he became a lover of this beautiful object ; and that he might gain her affections, he threw by his weapons, and applied himself to her in fair speeches, to which she was attentive. And he at length became so prevalent that they plighted troths to one another, and of enemies, not only at that instant became friends but in short time after, living together and Nature dictating to them what must be done for the procreation of their like, they tasted the fruit of love's garden, and had many children, who peopled the West part of the world. This woman's name was Toddicastree.

Chuddery, the third son, who was the merchantman, was sent to the North with his balance and weights, and he after much travel happened on a place where he found pearls, and a rock or mine of diamonds ; and believing them (by reason of their great lustre in the dark) of some extraordinary value, took some of them with him, and special notice of the place, that he might find it again. And so proceeding on his journey, came to the place where was the woman that was to be

his wife, who was wandering by the side of a wood. She seeing him, became fearful ; but he coming to her, and giving her good words, won upon her to stay and receive him into her company. And after an account of his journey, which she concluded was purposely designed to her, because they understood one another's speech, he bestowed some of his pearls and diamonds upon her. In time they proving the comforts of the conjoined state, had several children, who peopled the North part of the world, and became merchantmen : he afterwards travelling with them, shewed them the rock of diamonds. This woman's name was Visagundah.

Wyse, the fourth and youngest of the brethren, went also to the South parts of the world, and carried his tools with him, whereby he was able to build a house, or perform any other piece of work needful for the use of man. He was forced to pass over seven seas, at each place making a vessel and leaving it behind him. The last sea was called Pashurbatee, and brought him to a land called Derpe, where he built him a house to live in, which he did with much content till the woman appointed for him came thither to behold the same. She was very amiable and white, and her hair was powdered with Saunders and other odours. She first spake to him, demanding how he came thither. He answered her, that the Almighty had sent him, and he had taken great pains by coming over seven seas to wait on her. She was displeased with his discourse and house, telling him that she needed him not ; and notwithstanding all his persuasions, left him. He afterwards met her walking in the woods, but could not prevail with her to continue with him ; but left him much troubled. After this, he being in a profound melancholy, walking abroad, came to a parcel of trees, under which he placed himself, and there prayed to his Creator that he might not lose his labour, in coming so far to find a woman that would not converse with him. To this prayer he had answer, that his request should be granted, on condition, that for the future he would erect images, and adore, and worship them under green trees. To this he consented, and at the next meeting he gained the good will of this woman who was named Jejunnogundah, so that she became his wife, by whom he had several children that peopled the South.

These four brethren being thus dispersed at the four several parts of the earth, and having peopled the same, were all desirous of returning to their own country from whence they came, to see their father and mother, and recount their several adventures to them ; and to that end, leaving their children behind, they and their wives travelled so long, till they came to the place. There they were first joyfully received of their parents, and then of each other ; there they likewise had several

other children, begetting several generations, that all the world might be instructed in their several qualities, by Brammon in matters of religion, by Cuttery in rule and governments, by Shuddery in traffic and merchandize, and by Wyse in matters of handicrafts. Of which four castes the world consisteth, every one of them living in his several quality, keeping his tribe free from confusion or interfering ; and thus the world was peopled. But in time, multitude begat difference and disorder and mischief, and every person disagreed with the other, every one producing new and various differences, as well in matters of religion and worship as in all other affairs ; then the Almighty for the wickedness of mankind sent a flood which came and destroyed all the creatures of the earth ; and this according to the tradition of the Banians, was the first age of the world.

This world of creatures being destroyed, others were made in this manner. The Almighty first made out of the earth these three creatures, Breman, Vistney and Ruddery, and gave great power to them. To Breman he gave the power of making creatures, because, say the Banians, as great persons do not their work but by deputies, so neither was it fit that God should be servile to his creatures, but give to them their being by his instruments. To the second, which was Vistney, he gave charge to preserve the creatures. But to the third, which was Ruddery, he gave power to destroy them, because he knew they would be wicked, and deserve judgments. Breman was to be taken up to Heaven in conclusion of the second age. Vistney was to live as long again as Breman, and Ruddery was to continue three times as long, and then he should destroy all the world, which should be the great day of judgment.

Breman, according to the power given him, produced man and woman out of his own bowels, who being instructed by him gave worship to God, and reverence to him. The man was by him named Mamaw, and the woman Ceterrupa ; they were sent to the East, and there they had three sons and three daughters, who were sent severally to the West, North and South, which were peopled by them. Thus man being made by Breman, Vistney provided things necessary for them, and Ruddery dispersed afflictions, sicknesses and death, as men did deserve them.

It was now necessary, say the Banians, that the Law should be given, according to which they should live ; and therefore Breman being called up into a mountain, the Almighty gave him out of a cloud a book, which the Banians call the Shaſter, wherein was written their laws. This book consisted of three tracts :

The first, whereof contained their Moral Law, and an explication or appropriation of the precepts to every several tribe and caste.

The second, was their Ceremonial Law.

The third, distinguished them into castes or tribes, with peculiar observations for each caste and tribe.

The first tract of the Moral Law contained eight commandments :

1. That they should kill no living creature, because like man it had a soul.

2. That they should make a covenant with their five senses ; the eyes not to see evil things ; the ears not to hear evil things ; the tongue not to speak evil ; the palate not to taste, as wine or flesh ; the hands not to touch anything defiled.

3. That they should duly observe the times of devotion in washing, worship, &c.

4. That they should not tell false tales to deceive.

5. That they should be charitable to the poor.

6. That they should not oppress their poor brethren.

7. That they should celebrate certain festivals, not pampering the body, but fasting and watching, to be fitter for devotion.

8. That they should not steal, though never so little.

These eight are bestowed among the four tribes or castes, to each two commandments : to the Brammanes, which are the priests, the first and second, as being strictest in religion. To Shuddery they appropriate the third and fourth, as most proper to them. To Cuttery the fifth, and sixth, and to Wyse, the seventh and eighth : they are all enjoined to keep all the commandments, but more particularly those that are appropriated to their several castes.

The second tract of the book delivered to Breman comprised certain ceremonial injunctions, which are these :

First, washing their bodies in rivers, in memory of the deluge, in which they use this ceremony : first they besmear their bodies in the mud of the river, as an emblem of man's filthiness ; and then coming into the water and turning their faces towards the sun, the Brammane prays that as the body which is foul as the mud of the river which is cleansed by water, so that his sin may be in like manner cleansed ; and then the party plunging himself three times in the river, and shaking in his hand some grains of rice as an offering on the water ; he receiveth absolution for his sins past, and is dismissed.

2. The ceremony of anointing the forehead with red painting, as a peculiar mark which they often renew.

3. They are enjoined to tender certain prayers and offerings under green trees, the original of which custom they derive from Wyse, to whom they say God appeared in a vision under a tree ; the tree particularly appropriated for this worship, is called *Ficus Indica*, as, *vide Sr. W. Rawleigh*, for which tree they have a very great esteem.

4. They are enjoined prayers in their temples, where they offer to images with ringing and loud tinkling of bells and such like impertinent services.

5. They are enjoined pilgrimage to rivers remote, as Ganges, where they throw in, as offerings, jewels and treasure of great value.

6. They use invocation of saints, and for all their affairs they have several saints they invoke for assistance.

7. Their law binds them to give worship to God, upon sight of any of his creatures first seen after sunrise, especially to the sun and moon, which they call the two eyes of God, as also to some beasts.

8. In baptizing children there is difference in the castes, for the Brammanes are extraordinary ; the rest of the children are only washed in water, with a short prayer that God would write good things in the front of the child, all present saying Amen. They name the child, putting a red ointment on the midst of his forehead, and the ceremony is done. But the children of the caste of the Brammanes are not only washed with water, but anointed with oil with these words : ' Oh Lord, we present unto thee this child, born of a holy Tribe, anointed with oil, and cleansed with water ' ; unto which they add other ceremonies. Then they enquire the exact time of the child's birth, and calculate his nativity, which they keep by them and give them at the day of their marriage.

9. As for their marriages, their time is different from other nations, for they marry at seven years of age. They are usually contracted by their parents, which being agreed on, they send presents, and use many triumphant perambulations about the town for two days ; and then at the going down of the sun they use this ceremony. A fire is made and interposed between the young couple, to intimate the ardency of their affections ; then there is a silken string that encloses both their bodies, to witness the insolveable bond of wedlock ; after this bond, there is a cloth interposed betwixt them, a custom taken from the meeting of Brammon and Savatre, who covered themselves till the words of matrimony were uttered, so the Brammanes pronouncing certain words, enjoining the man to provide for the woman, and her to loyalty, and pronouncing the blessing of a fruitful issue, the speech is concluded ; the cloth interposed is taken away ; the bond which engirted them, unloosed ; full freedom is given them to communicate with one another. They give no dowry, only the jewels worn on the bridal day ; none come to the feast but those of the same tribe or caste. No woman is admitted to second marriage, except the tribe of Wyse, which are the handicrafts. Men in all tribes may marry twice, except the Brammanes, every tribe marries in their own caste, and the tribe of the Wyse not only marry in

their own tribe, but in their own trade ; as a barber or smith's son must marry a barber or smith's daughter of the same tribe.

10. Which is the last, is the ceremony of their burials. When any is sick to death, they enjoin him to utter Narrane, which is one of the names of God, importing mercy to sinners. They pour fair water into his hand, praying to Kistnetuppon, the god of the water, to present him pure to God. Being dead, his body is washed, and buried in this manner : they carry the body to a river's side and being set down, the Brammane uttereth these words. ‘ Oh earth ! we commend unto thee this our brother. Whilst he lived thou hadst an interest in him, of the earth he was made, by the blessing of the earth he was fed, and therefore now he is dead, we surrender him to thee.’ After this, putting combustible matter to the body, lighted by the help of sweet oil, the Brammane saith, ‘ Oh fire, whilst he lived thou hadst a claim in him, by whose natural heat he subsisted, we return therefore his body to thee that thou shouldst purge it.’ Then the son of the deceased sets two pots, one with water, and the other with milk on the ground ; the pot with milk on the top of the other, and with a stone breaks the pot with water, whereby the water and milk are both spoiled ; upon which account the son thus moralizeth, that as the stone makes the vessels yield, so did sickness ruin his father's body, which is then burnt to ashes, which are thrown into the air, the Brammane uttering these words, ‘ Oh air, whilst he lived by thee he breathed, and now having breathed his last, we yield him to thee.’ The ashes falling on the water, the Brammane saith, ‘ Oh water, whilst he lived, thy moisture did sustain him, and now his body is dispersed, take thy part in him.’ This being done, the Brammane reads (to the son or nearest of kin to the deceased) the law of mourners ; ‘ That for ten days he must eat no beetle, nor oil his head, nor put on clean clothes ; but once a month make a feast, and visit the river whose water drank up his father's ashes.’ Besides this, there was a custom which is brought into a law, for the wives of the deceased to accompany their husbands in death, by burning themselves with his body ; and this is still used among persons of greatest worth, the women voluntarily exposing their bodies to the flames. And this is the sum of the second tract of the book delivered to Breman.

The third tract consisteth of their being distinguished into castes and tribes, with peculiar observations for each. The Brammanes being first, have their name either of Brammon, who was the first of that tribe, or else from Breman, who was the first of the second age, to whom the Law was delivered. There are two sorts, the common, and the more special ; the common Brammane hath eighty-two castes or tribes ; which are distinguished by the names of the places of their first

habitations. These discharge the ministerial function in praying and reading their Law to the people, in which they use a kind of minical fantastical gesture, and a singing tone. They are first received into that order at seven years of age, using the ceremony of washing and shaving their heads, only leaving one lock. They are bound to a Pythagorean silence, and prohibited hauking, spitting, or coughing, wearing about their loins a girdle of an antelope's skin, and another thong of the same about their neck, descending under the left arm. At fourteen years of age they are admitted to be Brammanes, exchanging those leather thongs for four sealing threads that come over the right shoulder, and under the right arm, which they sleep in withal, in honour of God and the three persons. They are enjoined to keep all things in the Brammanes' Law.

The more special sort of Brammanes are of the caste of the Shudderys or Merchantmen, who for devotion take this condition. He wears a woollen garment of white, reaching down to the middle of the thigh, the rest is naked. His head is always uncovered ; they do not shave, but pluck off all the hair from their heads and beards, leaving only one lock.

There are several castes of these, that live more strictly than the rest ; for these never marry, are very moderate in their diet, and drink nothing but water boiled, that so the vapour, which they suppose to be life, may go out. They sweep away and disperse their dung, lest it should generate worms that may have life and be destroyed, they keep an hospital of lame and maimed flying fowl, which they redeem with a price ; they have all things common, but place no faith in outward washings, but rather embrace a careless and sordid nastiness.

The second tribe or caste was Cutteryes, who had their name from Cuttery, the second son of Ponrous, who having dominion and rule committed to him, therefore all soldiers and kings are said to be of his tribe.

That particular of Breman's book that concerned this caste, contained certain precepts of government and policy, which being of common import, I choose to omit, and shall only tell you that in their flourishing estate they were the ancient kings of India, especially of that part that is called Guzzarat, and were called by the name of Racabs, which signifies a king. They are said to have thirty-six tribes, and none were admitted to rule or govern but out of these tribes. But in time these Racabs were most of them put from the government, and destroyed by the Mahometans, who oppressed them. Some of them still remain, and are called Rashpoots, which I have before named ; some are as yet unconquered, and sometimes fight with and against the Great Mogul.

The third son of Ponrous being called Shuddery, and merchandizing being appointed him, all merchants therefore are comprised under this

name. The particular of Breman's book that concerned this caste, was a seminary of religious advertizement, enjoining them to truth in their words and dealings. These are they that are most properly called Banians, which name signifies a harmless people, that will not endure to see a fly, or worm, or any living thing to be injured, and being themselves stricken, bear it patiently without resistance. They are equal in number of their castes to the Brammanes, and being like to them, do more strictly follow their injunctions. Their form and contract in buying and selling is something notable ; for the broker that beateth the price with him that selleth, looseth his Pamerin that is folded about his waist, and spreading it upon his knee, with hands folded underneath. By their fingers' ends the price of pounds, shillings or pence, is fixed, as the chapman is intended to give. The seller in like manner intimateth how much he purposeth to have ; which silent composition their Law enjoineth.

Lastly, as the son of Ponrous was called Wyse, and was master of merchants or handicrafts, so all handicrafts are of that tribe. The directions that were in Breman's book for these, were touching their behaviours in their callings. The name Wyse signifies one that is servile or instrumentary ; these people are now commonly called Gentoos, which are of two sorts ; first, the purer Gentoos, such as diet themselves as the Banians, not eating flesh, fish or wine ; and the impure eat of all sorts, and are commonly husbandmen, and usually called Coulees. These of the purer sort have thirty-six castes, according to the number of the trades practised among them ; in which, they make as few instruments serve for the effecting of divers works, as may be ; and whatever they do is contrary to the Christian form of working, for the most part. This is the substance of the third tract of the book delivered to Breman, concerning the manner of the four tribes.

This book was by Breman communicated to the Brammanes to be published to the people, who did give absolute obedience to these injunctions ; but in time, fraud, violence and all manner of wickedness being committed, God grew angry, and acquainted Breman that he would destroy the world ; who acquainted the people herewith, but to little purpose, for soon after they fell to their wickedness, and God took Breman up into his bosom who had interceded for mankind. Then also Vistney (whose nature and office it was to preserve the people) did intercede, but God would not be pacified, but gave charge to Ruddery (whose office it was to destroy) to cause the bowels of the earth to send out a wind to sweep the nations as the dust from the face of the earth. This command was accordingly executed, and all people were destroyed saving a few that God permitted Vistney to cover with the skirts of his

preservation, reserved to propagate mankind in the third age, and so this age concluded.

The wickedness and ill government of the kings and rulers being the chief cause of destroying the last age, therefore all those of Cuttery's tribe were all destroyed. Now because it was necessary that there should be some of that caste as well as others, wherefore God raised that tribe again out of the caste of the Brammanes : the name of him who renewed and raised this tribe was called Ram, who was a good king and lived piously ; but his successors did not so, but committed so much wickedness that God again destroyed the world by the opening of the earth, which swallowed up all mankind but a few of the four tribes who were left to new-people the world again, and this was the conclusion of the third age.

At the beginning of the fourth age, there was one Vistney, a famous ruler and pious king, who wonderfully promoted religion. Vistney was now taken up into Heaven, there being no further need of his preservation ; for when this age is concluded there shall be a full end of all things. The Brammanes suppose this age shall be longer than any of the rest, in the end whereof Ruddery shall be taken up into Heaven. These four ages they call by these four names, Curtain, Duauper, Tetrajoo and Kotee ; they hold the manner of these last judgments shall be by fire, when all shall be destroyed ; and so the four ages of the world shall be destroyed by the four elements. And then shall Ruddery carry up the souls of all people to Heaven with him, to rest in God's bosom, but the bodies shall all perish ; so that they believe not the resurrection ; for they say Heaven being a place that is pure, they hold it cannot be capable of such gross substances.

This is the sum of the Banian's religion, wherein you find much of fancy and conceit as to make it be ancient. The number four is used often (as you have heard the meaning of the three creatures, I suppose alludes to the trinity), but instead of a confirmation and proof of a trinity, they would make a quaternity thereof, in the name. I suppose they (as well as other nations who differ from us in religion) had read over our Bible, and supposing that but fictions, were resolved to make a Law of their own, to be somewhat like that of ours ; which how they have done you have already heard. I shall now likewise give you a brief account of the religion used by the Persees, and so put an end to this chapter.

These Persees are a people descended from the ancient Persians, who lived in much splendour, but wars coming among them, they were dissipated, and the Mahometans who invaded them, compelled several to leave their ancient religion for that of the Mahometan ; which they

refusing, exposed themselves to a voluntary banishment, and therefore carried what of their substance they could with them. They sought a new place of habitation, and at length found it in this country, where they now inhabit, being admitted to use their own religion, but yielding themselves in subjection to the government of the nation, and paying homage and tribute. Their religion being different from the rest of the inhabitants, I shall thus describe to you :

They affirm that before anything was there was a god, who made the heavens, and the earth and all things therein contained at six times or labours, and between each labour, he rested five days. First, he made the heavens with their orbs, adorned with great lights and lesser, as the sun, moon and stars ; also the angels whom he placed in their several orders, according to their dignities, which place he ordained to be for the habitations of such as should live holy in this life ; and this being done, he rested five days. Then he made Hell in the lower parts of the world, from which he banished all light and comfort, wherein were several mansions that exceeded each other in dolour, proportioned for the degrees of offenders ; about which time Lucifer the chief of angels, with other of his order, conspiring against God to gain the sovereignty and command over all, God threw him first from the orb of his happiness, together with his confederates and accomplices, damned him to Hell, the place that was made for offenders, and turned them from their glorious shapes into shapes black, ugly and deformed till the end of the world, when all offenders shall receive punishment ; this was the second labour.

After this God created the earth and waters, making this world like a ball, in that admirable manner that now it is ; this was the third labour. The fourth was to make the trees and herbs ; the fifth was to make beasts, fowls and fishes ; and the sixth and last, man and woman, whose names were Adamah and Evah. And by these the world was propagated in this manner ; God, as they affirm, did cause Evah to bring forth two twins every day for a thousand years together, and none died. Lucifer being malicious, and endeavouring to do mischief, God set certain supervisors over his creatures ; Hamull had charge of the heavens, Acob of the angels, Foder of the sun, moon, and stars, Soreh of the earth, Josah of the waters, Sumbolah of the beasts of the field, Daloo of the fish of the sea, Rocan of the tree Cooz, of man and woman, and Settan and Asud were guardians of Lucifer and other evil spirits, who for all that did some mischief, the sins of men occasioned the destruction of world by a flood which spared only a few to repeople the earth, which was done accordingly ; and this is their opinion of the creation and first age.

As to their religion, it was given them by a law giver, whose name





was Zertoost, whose birth was strange, and breeding and visions miraculous. The names of his father and mother were Espintaman and Dodoo, he was born in China, and great fame going of him when young, the king of that country endeavoured his destruction, but could not bring it to pass, for those who were sent to destroy him had their sinews shrunk. He being twelve or thirteen years of age, was taken with a great sickness, the king hearing thereof sent physicians to destroy him ; but Zertoost, sensible of their practice, refused their physic, and fled with his father and mother into Persia ; in his way meeting with rivers, he congealed them to ice, and so went over. He arrived at Persia in the time of the reign of Gustasph ; it was in that country that at his request to God, he, being purified, was carried up into heaven, where he heard the Almighty speaking, as in flames of fire, who revealed to him the works of the creation and what was to come, and gave him laws for the better government and establishment of religion. Zertoost desired to live always, that he might instruct the world in religion ; but God answered, That if he should live never so long, yet Lucifer would do more harm than he should do good : but if he desired to live so long as the world endured he might. God also presented to Zertoost the seven ages or times of the Persian monarchy ; the first was the Golden Age, the days of Guiomaras ; second, the Silver, the days of Fraydhun ; third, the Brazen, the days of Kaykodoy ; the fourth, the Tin, the days of Lorasphe ; fifth, Leaden, the days of Bahaman ; sixth, the Steel, the days of Darab Segner ; the seventh, the Iron Age, in the reign of Yesdegerd. He finding by this that the times would be worse and worse, desired to live no longer than till he had discharged his message, and then that he might be translated to the same place of glory ; so he was reduced to his proper sense, and remained in heaven many days ; and then having received the Book of the Law, and the heavenly fire, he was conveyed by an angel to earth again. But the angel had no sooner left him but Lucifer met him ; but notwithstanding his persuasions, he went on in his designs of revealing the law, which he did first to his father and mother, and by their means it came to the ears of Gustasph, then king of Persia ; who sending for him, he told the king every circumstance, so that the king began to incline to his religion, often sending for and conversing with him.

The churchmen of that time endeavoured to put infamy upon Zertoost by persuading the king that he was an impostor and of unclean living, for that he had the bones of human bodies under his bed. The king hearing this sent to search, and found it so to be, for these churchmen had caused them to be conveyed thither ; wherefore Zertoost, by order of the king, was put in prison. But there happened an occasion

that he was not only soon released but also brought into the king's favour ; for the king having a horse that he prized that fell sick, and no person able to cure him, Zertoost undertook the cure, and performed it ; and working some other miracles, was now of good credit, and esteemed as a man come from God ; so that now his book gained an esteem, and the king himself told him, that if he would grant him four demands, he would believe his law, and be a professor thereof. The demands were these ; first, that he might ascend to Heaven, and descend when he list. Secondly, That he might know what God would do at present, and in time to come. Thirdly, That he might never die. Fourthly, That no instrument whatsoever might have power to wound or hurt him. Zertoost did consent that all this might be done, but not by one person ; and therefore to the first, Gustasph had power to ascend to, and descend from Heaven, granted to him. The second, which was to know what would fall out present and hereafter, was granted to the king's churchman. The third, which was to live for ever, was granted to Gustasph's eldest son, named Dischiton, who yet lives as they say, at a place in Persia, called Demawando Lohoo, in a high mountain, with a guard of thirty men ; to which place all living creatures are forbidden to approach, lest they should live for ever, as they do who abide there. The last, which was never to be wounded with instrument or weapon, was granted to the youngest son of Gustasph, called Esplandiar.

So Gustasph, and the other three mentioned, proving the power of these several gifts, all determined to live according to the precepts in Zertoost's book, he unfolding the contents thereof, which were these. This book contained three several tracts, the first whereof was of Judicial Astrology ; the second was of Physic ; the third, was called Zertoost, and this was of matters of religion. And these three tracts were delivered to the Magis, Physicians and Churchmen, called Darooes. These tracts were devided into chapters, seven were in the Wisemen or Jesopps book, seven in the Physicians, and seven in the Darooes book ; the two first is unlawful or unnecessary, I shall omit it, and proceed to the third. The decision of men being laity and clergy ; and those of the clergy being ordinary or extraordinary, it pleased God, say the Persees, to divide and apportion his Law among these men. First, therefore, to the layman God gave five commandments :

1. To have shame over them, as a remedy against sin, for that will keep them from oppressing his inferiors, from stealing, from being drunk, and from bearing false witness.
2. To have fear always present, that they might not commit sin.
3. When they go about anything, to think whether it be good or bad, so to do it or let it alone.

4. That the sight of God's creatures, in the morning put them in mind to give God thanks for them.

5. That when they pray by day, they turn their faces towards the sun ; and by night towards the moon.

These are the precepts enjoined the laymen, those of the common churchman follow, who are bound to keep, not only these appropriated to him, but the preceding precepts.

1. To pray after the manner as described in Zundavestaw, for God is best pleased with that form.

2. To keep his eyes from coveting anything that is another's.

3. To have a great care to speak the truth always, because Lucifer is the father of falsehood.

4. To meddle with no body's business but his own, and not meddle with the things of the world ; for the layman shall provide all things needful for him.

5. To learn the Zundavestaw by heart, that he may teach the layman.

6. To keep himself pure as from dead carcasses, or unclean meats, lest he be defiled.

7. To forgive all injuries, in imitation of God, who daily forgives us.

8. To teach the common people to pray, to pray with them for any good ; and when they come to the place of worship, to join in common prayer together.

9. To give licence for marriage, and to marry men and women, the parents not having power to do it without the consent of the Herbood.

10. To spend the greatest part of their time in the temple, that he may be ready on all occasions.

11. And last injunction is upon pain of damnation, to believe no other law but that of Zertoost, and not to add to it, nor diminish it.

These are the precepts enjoined the Herbood. The Distore being the High Priest, who commands all the rest ; is enjoined not only these of the layman or Behedin, these of the Herbood or churchmen, but 13 more of his own, which are these that follow.

1. That he must never touch any of a strange caste or sect, of what religion soever ; nor any layman of his own religion, but he must wash himself.

2. That he must do all his own work, in token of humility, and for purity, *viz.* Set his own herbs, sow his own grain, and dress his own meat, unless he have a wife to do it for him, which is not usual.

3. That he take tithe or tenth of the Behedin, as God's due, and dispose of it as he thinks fit.

4. That he must use no pomp or superfluity, but either give all away in charity, or bestow it in building of temples.
5. That his house be near the church, where he must retire himself, living recluse in prayer.
6. That he must live purer than others, both in frequent washings and diet, and also sequester himself from his wife in time of her pollutions.
7. That he be learned, and knowing all the several books of Zertoost, as well the astrological and physical parts, as the other.
8. That he must never eat and drink excessively.
9. That he fear nobody but God, and sin ; and not fear what Lucifer can do to him.
10. That God having given him power in matters of the soul ; therefore when any man sins he may tell him of it, be he never so great ; and every man is to obey him, as one that speaketh not his own cause but God's.
11. That he be able to discern in what manner God comes to reveal himself, in what manner Lucifer.
12. That he reveal not what God manifesteth to him by visions.
13. That he keep an ever-living fire, that never may go out ; which being kindled by that fire that Zertoost brought from heaven, may endure for all ages, till fire shall come to destroy all the world, and that he say his prayers over it.

This is a summary of those precepts contained in the book of their law that Zertoost is by them affirmed to bring from heaven ; and that religion which Gustasph with his followers embraced, persuaded by the afore-mentioned miracles wrought by Zertoost among them.

The 3rd particular in this tract is the rites and ceremonies observed by this sect, differencing them from others.

First, though their law allows them great liberty in meats and drinks, yet because they will not displease the Banians and Moors, they abstain from kine and hogsflesh ; they eat alone, and drink in several cups.

2. They observe 6 feasts in the year, according to the 6 works of the creation.

3. As for their fasts, after every one of their feasts they eat but one meal a day for 5 days together ; and when they eat flesh they carry part of it to the temple as an offering.

Their worship of fire is taken from Zertoost's bringing it from Heaven, and it being enjoined them ; for the nature of it, that which he brought, could not be extinguished ; whether that be preferred is unknown, but upon effect thereof they are licensed to compose a fire of several mixtures, which is of seven sorts. When they meet about

that ceremony bestowed on this fire, the Destoore or Herbood, together with the assembly encompass it about, and standing about 11 or 12 foot distance, the Destoore or Herbood utterereth this speech. That forasmuch as fire was delivered to Zertoost their law giver from God Almighty, who pronounced it to be his virtue and excellence, that therefore they should reverence it, and not abuse it in the ordinary use thereof, as to put water in it, or spit in it, &c.

At the birth of a child the Daroo or churchman is sent for, who calculates the nativity of the child, and the mother names it without any ceremony; after this it is carried to the church, and water is poured thereon, and prayer used, That God would cleanse it from the uncleanness of the father, and menstrual pollutions of the mother. At 7 years of age he is led by the parents into the church to have confirmation, where he is taught prayers, and instructed in religion, and being washed, he is clothed in a linen cassock and other habits, which he ordinarily wears, and so is admitted into their sect.

They have a five-fold kind of marriage, for which they have several terms. The most singular, is that of hiring a man's son or daughter to be matched to their dead daughter or son, with whom they are contracted. The ceremony observed in their marriages is performed at midnight, not in the church, but upon a bed, by two churchmen, one in behalf of the man, the other in behalf of the woman, who ask if they are willing to be married, and they join hands, the man promising to provide for the woman, and give her some gold to bind her to him; and the woman promiseth all she hath is his. Then the churchman scattering rice, prays that they may be fruitful, and so they conclude, celebrating the marriage feast for 8 days together.

As for burial they have two places or tombs, built of a round form, a pretty height from the ground. Within they are paved with stone, in a shelving manner, in the midst a hollow pit to receive the consumed bones; about the walls are the shrouded and sheeted carcasses laid both of men and women, exposed to the open air. These two tombs are distant from one another; the one is for the good livers, the other for the wicked. When any are sick unto death, the Herbood is sent for, who prays in the ears of the sick man: and when he is dead he is carried on an iron bier; all who accompany them are interdicted all speech; only the churchman, when the body is laid in the burial place, saith thus, ' This our brother whilst he lived consisted of the four elements, now he is dead let each take his own, earth to earth, air to air, water to water, and fire to fire.' This done they pray to Sertun and Asud, that they would keep the devils from their deceased brother when he repairs to their holy fire to purge himself; for they suppose the soul wandereth three days on

the earth, in which time Lucifer molesteth it ; for security from which molestation, it flies to their fire, seeking preservation there. Which time concluded, it receiveth justice or reward, Hell or Heaven ; and therefore they for those three days offer up prayers, morning, noon and night, that God would be merciful to the soul departed, and forgive his sins. After three days are expired they make a festival, and conclude their mourning.

### CHAPTER III

*The arrival of the English fleet : his entertaining of six Englishmen, an account of whose adventures is promised him by one of the company*

I HAD now spent several months in my voyage by sea, perambulations by land, and observations of the country in general, and this more particular discovery of the laws and manners both civil and ecclesiastical of the inhabitants ; a just account whereof I have given you in the foregoing chapters. And now we daily expected the return of ships from England, and therefore every one provided to be furnished with all things necessary against their arrival. The merchants who were resident on shore had every day several sorts of commodities brought out of the country in waggons drawn by oxen, so that their storehouses were filled ; and I for my part provided myself with all sorts of liquors and victuals that the country afforded.

At the time usual the fleet arrived, which consisted of four ships, whereof three was on the account of the Company, and the fourth by their permission, came as an interloper. Those that came on account of the Company were provided with all things necessary; by the order of the Consul or President ; and the other ship's company being left to shift for themselves, took up my house for their quarters. The chief of the Company that lodged with me consisted of six persons, two whereof seemed to be very handsome young men, of about 18 years of age. These two, were very well respected as well by the captain as his companions ; they were all very frolic, blithe, and merry, and several times laughed at several adventures that had befallen them during the voyage.

Though the captain of this ship came not on the Company's account, yet he was very richly loaden, and was directed to such persons of this country as would be sure to do his business for him. Neither was he a stranger therein, for he had been here twice before, and was acquainted with most of the Banians, who are so curious and diligent observers that if they see a man but once, if he ever return, though several years

after, yet they will know him again, especially if they have had any trading with them ; and they have so good a conceit of our countrymen that they will oftentimes trust a captain with 2 or 300*l.* worth of commodities from one year to another, only giving them common interest. As to their ordinary dealing and bargaining, they are at a word, and there is money to be saved by dealing with them and trusting them, for if you distrust them then you shall pay so much the more ; if you trust them they will provide your goods as cheap or cheaper than you can yourself do it, though never so well experienced therein. I needed not to acquaint our captain with any of their fashions, for he well enough understood it himself ; but I assisted him and some of the rest in exchanging their monies ; for the Banians allow no more for any silver or gold coin than it weighs ; for it will never go current there till it be changed or minted into the coin of the country.

Four of my guests, *viz.* the captain, and three of the rest did employ themselves in looking after the ship's unlading ; but the other two, who were the youngest (and therefore, as I thought, fittest to take pains) did still stay at home in my house, or else walk out for their recreation. This, and some other things that I observed, made me curious in my observations of them in all their actions, suspecting they were either personages of greater quality than ordinary, or that there was some other mystery in the case. But they being as cunning as myself concealed that from me which I since knew, though I tried them with several speeches and discourses, in which I thought myself cunning enough. I observed this, that these two young men never lay together, but sometimes the captain lay with one of them, and another person of his company with the other. The greatest part of their business being for the present dispatched, they often times stayed at home and feasted, where they drank off great quantities of Persian wine, and other country drinks, the best I could get for them. They having all drank one time to a good height, and being very merry, the captain asked which was the best house for handsome women now. I informed him of the best I knew ; 'but,' says he, 'ye have no English girls here ?' 'No,' said I, 'seldom any such blessings come into this country, we are forced to content ourselves with the brown natives.' 'I believe,' said the captain, 'if these two young men, William and George (for such was the names of the two young men I spake of) were handsomely dressed in women's clothes, they would pass for handsome women.' I then of a sudden turning my eyes towards the parties he spake of, saw that their cheeks were dyed of a vermillion hue, deeper than lately they had acquired by drinking. This caused me to distrust something ; but the rest of the company falling into a kind of a laughter, which I supposed was somewhat forced, they

altered their discourse, and began a fresh health to all their friends in England, which I pledged them with a very good will, telling them that I had some, whose company I had heartily wished for. ‘What are they?’ said the captain. ‘Sir,’ said I, ‘they are such as I believe you love, that is, handsome women in general; and of these I had the good fortune to be particularly and intimately acquainted with several.’

At the ending of this discourse, I was called for down to attend some of my guests who were going, which having done, I again went up, where I found the captain and the rest in a standing posture, ready likewise to be gone, at which I wondered, but let them take their pleasures. So five of my six guests left me, and he had gone too had he not been a little flustered, and then asleep. After they were gone several thoughts possessed my mind of what these two youngest persons should be, and it was long ere I could hit upon the right. But having one person in the house with whom I was more intimate than the rest, I resolved to use my utmost interest with him to be satisfied. He in few hours awaked, and would have been gone after his companions; but I so far prevailed with him that he lay there that night. And because I would have the better opportunity for my discourse, I lay with him. When we were in bed, I told him that I could heartily wish I could accommodate him with a female bedfellow; he replied, that would do very well. I offered my assistance in procuring the best of our country, but he was cold in his reply; whereupon I told him, that by that time he had been so long in the country as I had he would be glad of one of those whom I sometimes made a shift to spend a night with. ‘But,’ continued I, ‘I had rather be at Mother Cr—— in Moorfields.’ ‘Are you acquainted there?’ replied my bedfellow. ‘Yes,’ said I, ‘and at most of those houses of hospitality in or about London, to which colleges I was a good benefactor.’ ‘Why,’ said my bedfellow, ‘you have been right.’ ‘Or else I had never come hither,’ said I. Whereupon I acquainted him with many of my rambles about London, and gave him such satisfaction in my discourse that he began to be more free with me; and then I conjured him to deal truly with me in resolving me one question, to which he promised me, that he would.

I having gained thus much upon him, told him that my request was to know what those two young persons were, which were called William and George. ‘Truly,’ said he, ‘you could not have asked me anything that I should be more unwilling to discover than that; but since I have promised you I will tell you, and that the truth without any disguise, provided you swear to me not to discover or take any notice thereof without my consent.’ To this I agreed, and having sworn to him, he told me that they were not of those names nor sex that they went for,

but women. I told him I had long since doubted so much, and now I knew it I would take no notice thereof, but rather assist than hinder any design wherein there was so much pleasure, for I had been as very a wag as any of them, and had in my time run through as many and various adventures as any man of my age. He hearing me say so, asked me where I had lived, and the most part of my life. I, without any dissembling, gave him a short account of my life, which so pleased him that we spent most part of the night therein, and at my earnest request he promised me that the next day, he would give me an account of his life, and adventures, ‘wherein,’ said he, ‘you will find so many different chances of fortune as had hardly befallen any man, and I hope,’ said he, ‘I shall be able to give you a good account thereof; for since my coming from England, I have had time to recollect myself, of some things that else I had forgotten. But now I have placed the chief passages of my life into such a method as I shall be very exact in.’ Though I was impatient to hear what he promised me, yet the night being far spent, sleep seized on us both for some hours, but awaking in the morning, and putting him in mind of his promise, after a morning’s draught taken, and a command that none should interrupt us, he began as follows.

## CHAPTER IV

*The traveller describeth the place of his birth and parents: the death of his elder brother, and how through the persuasion of his father he resolved to follow thieving*

I WAS born in Golden Lane, a place situate in the suburbs of London. My father’s name was Isaac, and by reason of his small stature was commonly called Little Isaac, being a native of the same place, and by profession a cobbler. But such was his courage that he was much troubled when any one called him cobbler, and would reply that he was a translator, or a transmographer of shoes. His wife, who I believe was my mother, was named Ursula. She was, in the beginning of her days, one of those sort of people that we call Gypsies, or Canting-Beggars, and my father travelling into the country, and wanting money to pay for a bed at night, he was forced to take up his lodging in a barn, where he first came to be acquainted with my mother. Whether they were ever married or no, I cannot tell, though I suppose they only took each other’s words, as being willing to save the charge of a priest’s hire. But notwithstanding the darkness of her complexion (as those sort of people commonly have), there is not so bad a jill but there is as bad a jack, for it was

not long before she hornified my father by a Banbury tinker ; which thing was so well known amongst the neighbours, that they would commonly make horns with their fingers, and point at him as he passed along the streets. My eldest brother at seven years of age attained to such ingenuity that he seldom carried home any mended shoes to a gentleman's or citizen's house but he would filch either linen, silver spoons, or something else of worth, which by negligent servants was not laid up safely. Which trade he drave for some space of time, being by reason of his childish years not in the least suspected. But the pitcher goes not so often to the well but at length it comes broken home. In process of time he was taken with the theft, and for the same carried to Newgate, where poor little angel (peace be with him) he died in prison, under the penance of a discipline which was applied to him with a little too much rigour.

Our whole family smarted in his punishment ; my father sighed, my mother sobbed, and I wanted my part of those dainty morsels which his theft furnished us withal, for by him my father drave a pretty trade ; having those who always furnished him with ready money for whatsoever he brought. Indeed, his loss would have utterly disconsolated my father but the great hopes that he had in me, who was now come to the same age that my brother was of when he first began to exercise his gifts in the mystery of thievery. And that I might tread the same steps that my brother had done before me, my father (upon a certain day, when my mother and he and I were alone by ourselves) began thus to indoctrinate me.

' My son,' said he, ' the profession of a thief is not of so base repute as the world gives it out, considering what brave men have in former times exercised themselves in this way. I have heard the clerk of our parish say, who I assure you was a well read man, that Robin Hood, that famous thief, was in his younger days Earl of Huntingdon ; and that Alexander the Great was no better then a thief in robbing other princes of their kingdoms and crowns.' (This, it seems, he spake in vindication of the sexton, who used to rob the dead corpses of their sheets and shirts, and those other necessaries which they carried along with them in their voyage to heaven.) ' I tell thee, he who steals not knows not how to live in this world ; nay doth not almost each thing in the world teach us for to steal ? Do we not see youth steal upon infancy, manhood steal upon youth, and old age upon manhood, until at last death stealeth upon us undiscerned and bringeth us to our long homes ? How doth summer steal on the spring, autumn on summer, and winter on autumn, until all the whole year is stole out of our sight. Pray, what do rich farmers and griping cormorants, but steal when they exact in their prices of corn, and

grind the faces of the poor ; and how can shopkeepers wipe off the aspersion of theft from themselves when they sell a commodity for twice the worth of it, and thereby cozen the buyer ? So we see if things be rightly scanned, there be more thieves in the world than only tailors, millers, and weavers. And what, I pray you, makes serjeants, bailiffs, and catchpoles so to envy us, and persecute us as they do, but that one trade still envies and maligns another ; and would by their good wills suffer no other thieves but themselves. This it is that makes them so double diligent in the surprizal of us, though oftentimes our craft fore-stalls their malice, as I shall instance to you in one memorable example.

' Myself and two of my comrades had agreed to rob a rich usurer, whose younger brother having viciously wasted his estate, was forced to take this his brother's house for sanctuary, where he kept as close as a snail in his shell, unless only at such times when, as he imagined, the darkness of the night might shroud him in obscurity. He dreaded these shoulder-clappers, who stick closer to a man than a bur on his cloak, for being once got into their clutches, you may as soon wring Hercules' club out of his fist, as get free from their fingers ; and herein have thieves a great privilege over debtors, for the most notorious thief that ever was, once in a month's time is carted out of prison, as others for smaller matters are freed from durance by following the cart, where a fellow with a cat-of-nine-tails doth play him such a lesson as makes him to skip and mount for joy of his deliverance ; but with a poor debtor the case far different, for being once in prison, the best team of horses that ever drew in a waggon cannot draw him out from thence without a silver hook.

' But to speak of that which more properly belongs unto thee (for I suppose thou wilt never attain to such credit as to be laid up in prison for debt). By the help of a servant of the house, who went shares with us in our prey, we got a false key made to the back door, whereby, one night, we attained an easy entrance, and loaded ourselves, to our hearts' content. But in our return one of our own companions chanced to sneeze, and therewithal brake wind so violently behind that it waked the old usurer, who suspicious of the least noise cried out ' Thieves, thieves.' Trusty Roger, his man, was very ready to rise at first alarm, fearing that our discovery might prove prejudicial to his liberty, and lighting a candle, pretended to search every hole in the house into which it was possible for a mouse to enter.

' In the meantime we lay close, yet not unperceived by this false servant, who very formally told his master that all was safe and well, and that he might take his rest without any fear. But the dread of his hearing us prolonged our stay so long that day began to approach, whereupon

fearing more danger from without than from within, we prepared for our departure. But having opened the door, we found that we had leapt out of the frying pan into the fire, and by shunning Scylla were fallen into Charybdis, for four of these catchpoles were waiting at the door for the usurer's brother, having intelligence belike that he used to make the dusky morning and dark evening the two shrouds that carried him safely out and into his brother's house. Now I going out of the door first, one of these robustious fellows laid hands upon me, taking me for the party they waited for ; my two companions endeavouring to rescue me were seized on by the other three bailiffs, so that we seeing no hopes of escape, resolved to cry whore first, and with full mouth cried out 'Thieves, thieves.' Trusty Roger and the man that should have been arrested hearing this cry, took weapons in their hands, and out of doors they came, where Roger soon perceiving how the business went 'Ah you Rogues,' said he, 'do you come to rob my master?' and thereupon laid so nimbly about him, being seconded by the other, that the bailiffs were glad to let us go to defend themselves.

'Whilst they were thus busied in pelting each other, we slipped away with our prize, and to take a full revenge of those catchpoles, raised several of the neighbours, whom we sent to the apprehending of the bailiffs, whilst we marched away in safety. What became of them afterwards I do not know, only this I tell thee, to let thee see that there is not any danger whatsoever so great but by wit and cunningness may be avoided.'

This story I heard with great attention, which so wrought upon my mind that I thought myself no less than a second Robin Hood or Little John, and thereupon resolved to put in speedy execution my father's dictates which yet proved very unfortunate to me, as you will find by that which follows.

## CHAPTER V

*His robbing of orchards : how he was caught by a night-spell : the extremity their family was brought unto, and how to relieve it, he robbed a grocer*

MY mind being thus fully fixed to follow thieving, I began my trade in robbing of orchards, returning home with laden thighs, the trophies and spoils of cherry-trees, pear-trees, and plum-trees. My mother, instead of correcting me for what I had done, encouraged me to proceed on as I had begun ; for indeed hunger had pinched us sorely ever since my brother's death, my father's credit being so eclipsed thereby that until people saw he would mend his life, scarce any one would

employ him to mend their shoes. One orchard I especially haunted, it being stored with most gallant fruit, whose very looks methought did cry, ‘Come eat me !’ But so often I frequented the same, especially one tree of more choice fruit than all the rest, that the owner of the orchard (being a rich miserable chuff, and one who knew on which side his bread was buttered) began to mistrust the same, and therefore that his apples might not depart away without first taking leave of him, he resolved for the future to prevent the same. And having some little skill in necromancy, against my next coming he enchanted his orchard with a night-spell.

This he placed at the four corners of his orchard, in the hour of Mars, and is of such force being rightly applied, that who ever comes within the bounds thereof must be forced to stay there till sun-rising. Now I, that knew not anything of what was done, according to my accustomed course, having the dark night for my coverture, boldly entered the orchard, with winged haste ascended upon one of the trees, where having filled with apples a bag which my mother had furnished me withal for that purpose, I thought to depart away as formerly I had done. But the case was quite altered from what was before ; for I found myself in such a labyrinth that the best clue of my invention could not wind me out. Here did I wander about with my bag on my shoulders (having not the power in the least to lay it down) till such time as Aurora begun to usher in the day, when the old chuff entered the orchard to see what fish his net had caught, resolving with severity to punish the caitiffs that had stolen away his goods. But instead of a gudgeon finding but a sprat, beholding my childish years, he could not imagine me to be the author of so much wrong as he had received ; and thereupon altering his resolution of breaking arms and legs as he first intended, he stepped back to his house and fetched from thence a great birch rod, the instrument wherewith he intended to chastise me withal. With much silence he approached unto me ; (for a word’s speaking would dissolve the charm) and having with some struggling untrussed my breeches, laying me over his knee, he began to exercise the office of a pedagogue upon me. Now I having for some space of time before eaten nothing but green fruit, had gotten a terrible looseness, which with the fright that I was in and the smart that I felt, wrought such effects in my belly that opening my posteriors I discharged a whole volley of excrements in his face. This action of mine made him at once to shut his eyes, open his mouth, and unloose his hands, so that the charm being broken, and my body at liberty, I quickly conveyed myself out of the orchard, leaving the old caterpillar in a very stinking condition, not to be remedied without the benefit of that cleansing element of water.

Warned by this disaster, I was very fearful to enter into any more orchards, and indeed, had I met no remora in my proceedings, yet this trade would soon have failed, for not long after the apples were all transplanted out of the orchard into the cellar, and winter began to hasten on apace. And now hunger, which will not be treated withal without bread, began to reign lord and king in our family. The chandler would let us have no more cheese for chalk, nor penny loaves for round O's. We had made a black post white already with our score, and his belief would extend no further to trust us for any more. Nay the very alehouse-keeper (to whom we were such constant customers) was now grown such a Nullifidian, that he would not believe us for small-beer ; wherefore we were forced to make a virtue of necessity, and to prevent starving, our household goods marched away one after another. The first thing that we sold was the cupboard, as the most unnecessary thing in all the house, having no victuals to put therein ; soon after followed the table as an appendix to it, for seeing the table will hold no victuals thereon for us to eat, we in revenge thereof did eat up the table. That (with some joint-stools belonging to it) being devoured and gone, our stomachs were so hot that it soon melted away the pewter dishes ; for we considered with ourselves that good meat might be eaten out of wooden platters ; then followed the napkins and table-cloths, for we were not so much cloyed with fat meat but that a little linen would serve to wipe the grease off our fingers. In fine, this pinching hunger was the *Habeas corpus* that removed all our goods out of the house unto the brokers, and now our dwelling place corresponded with our bellies, both being alike empty.

In this comfortless condition we remained for the space of three days, having neither money nor anything to make money of. Being thus sadly necessitated, my father and I set our wits upon the tenter-hooks which way to recruit our decayed estate. Many inventions we had for that purpose, and present necessity urged us to make a speedy use of one of them, which not long after we brought to pass in this manner.

It being then winter time, the evenings long and dark, we bought a link for threepence, the remainder of our whole estate ; with this about ten of the clock in the night we marched out, resolving to fasten on the fairest opportunity that should present itself to our sight. Many streets we traversed, but found not anything that might answer either our intent or expectation. Coming at last to Basing Lane, and casting our wandering eyes into a shop, we there espied a grocer telling money on a counter, being lighted only by a single candle ; this made for our purpose, whereupon my father planting himself, I boldly entered the shop, desiring him to give me leave to light my link ; which being

granted, I with the same soon popped out his candle, snatched up a handful of money, ran out of the doors with the same as fast as I could. The grocer hasted after me amain, in the meantime my father stepped into the shop, and took away the remainder of the money. My nimbleness had soon outstripped the grocer, who returned back, and found that the Devil might dance upon his counter, for there was never a cross to keep him from it. About an hour after we met together at home, where having counted our purchase, we found it amounted to seven pounds eighteen shillings and sixpence. So long as this money lasted, the pot, the spit, and pitcher was never idle ; but what was thus got over the Devil's back was soon spent under his belly, and in a short time we were reduced to as great want as we were in before.

## CHAPTER VI

*He cheatheth a cutler : afterwards robbeth a bacon man : his father is pressed away for a soldier : his mother dieth, and he being left alone goeth to live with an uncle, where he acteth many rogueries*

NECESSITY is the best whetstone to sharpen the edge of a man's invention. When the guts begin to grumble against the belly for want of food, oh, in what a confusion is then this little microcosm of ours ? How is the invention racked, tortured and stretched forth to supply that defect. My hungry belly found this to be too true, which made me set my wits on work for a speedy remedy. A project quickly came into my head, but to effect the same I wanted money. This was a double task for me to do, but a willing mind overcomes all difficulties. Away went I to a cutler's, where in the cheapening of one knife I stole another, and lest the cutler should mistrust me, I came up to his price, but pretended I had forgotten my money, and therefore must go home and fetch it. This stolen knife I sold for a groat, which money I intended for a bait to catch a bigger fish. Some few streets I traversed before my project would fasten, at last coming to Warwick Lane I saw in a bacon shop a fellow standing in a pocket blue-apron, whose innocent looks gave me confident hopes of a golden prize. In I went and asked him the price of a pound of bacon. 'Sixpence, boy,' said he 'of the rib, and four pence for the gammon.' 'Then give me a pound of the gammon,' said I, 'and here is a groat, the whole estate of a poor boy who hath been a long time in getting the same.' Whilst he was weighing it I told him I had a cursed mother-in-law, who fed me only with a bit and a knock,

which made me to go with an empty belly and a heart full of sorrow ; that if she should know I were in possession of so eatable a commodity, she would take it from me, and that she did often search my pocket for that purpose. I therefore desired him, to prevent the worst that might happen, to put the same down my back betwixt my doublet and shirt, which whilst he was doing, I leaning my head against him, with a short knife cut the pocket out of his apron ; and having thanked him very kindly, away I went, leaving my poor bacon man with a bottomless, penniless pocket.

My purchased prize was about thirty shillings, of which some four of it was in brass farthings ; but all was current coin that came into my hands, for I made no scruple at all in the receiving it. With this I returned home, thinking to be received with much joy, as having gotten that in my pocket which would make us all merry. But the case was quite altered from what was before ; my mother was on a sudden fallen sick, my father pressed for a soldier, and hurried away. This much abated the edge of my mirth, but my years not being capable of much sorrow, although my mother's death ensued not long after, yet it was soon over, and indeed her outward condition was so deplorable it had been almost impiety to have wished her longer life.

Now, though my condition was bad enough before, yet by my mother's death it was much worse. I was now left to the wide world, friendless, moneyless, and pitiless, for not any one of the neighbours would give me entertainment, expecting no good fruit from the loins of such a bad stock. To follow my trade of thieving I began to dread, for every line, rope, and halter that I saw, methoughts did admonish me to leave it off, for fear I came home short at last ; and to follow the occupation of begging was then a very bad time to begin in, it being about the depth of winter. At last I remembered my mother had a brother, a barber-chirurgeon, living in St. Martin's. Thither I went, acquainted him with his sister's death, my own sad condition, and what a boy I would prove if it would please him to give me entertainment. He being ignorant of the trade that I drove, and moved with compassion at my pitiful tale, told me if I performed what I promised, I should not want for anything he could assist me in. Hereupon I was had into the house, and though my aunt scowled on me, my uncle commanded my rags to be taken off, and a suit of one of my cousins put upon me, as being the more durable, although my own were a thousand strong.

Having thus with the snake cast my skin, and attained to good diet and lodging, I quickly began to be as brisk as a body-louse, and to vapour amongst the boys like a crow in a gutter. And notwithstanding my promise my mind was now wholly fixed upon roguery, but in a lower

orb than what I practised before, tending rather to mirth than much mischief. To do this I had several inventions, according as time and place were convenient ; one of my first exploits was, that being sent on an errand to a grocer's shop in a frosty morning, where was a pan of coals to warm their fingers, I secretly conveyed therein some guinea pepper, which set the prentices in such a violent coughing fit that they were not able to speak to a customer. Their mistress hearing this noise below came running downstairs, where scenting the matter, she began to speak aloud at both ends, and being something laxative by drinking of cider, she bewrayed in what a condition she was in by what was scattered on the floor.

Sometimes would I, in a clean place where wenches were to pass, lay a train of gunpowder ; and at the very instant that they went along set fire to it, which was a great pleasure to my worship to see how the poor girls would skip and leap, just like a horse when he hath a nettle under his tail. At other times in the night would I tie a line from one side of the street to the other, about half a foot high, whereby those that came next were sure to have a fall. Nay I could not forbear to act my rogueries in the church itself, having a goose quill filled with lice and fleas, which I would purchase of the beggars for broken meat ; these would I blow into the necks of the daintiest gentlewomen that I could see. At other times would I with a needle and thread (which I always carried about with me in my pocket) sew men's cloaks and women's gowns together as they stood in the crowd, so that when they went away, there would be such pulling of one another that they would never leave until one of their garments had a piece of it rent out.

Amongst other instruments of mischief wherewith I exercised myself, one was a hollow trunk to shoot with, in which I was such an artist that I seldom missed hitting the mark I aimed at ; and that I might be the better undiscovered I on purpose brake a hole in the glass window, through which I used to shoot at my pleasure. Scarce could an oyster-wench or kitchin-stuff wench pass by, but I would hit her on the neck, hands, or some naked place, which would set her a railing and scolding for a quarter of an hour together at she knew not whom. One Monday morning a shoemaker's maid had been fetching a great pitcher of beer for the Crispins to begin their week's work withal ; now as she sailed along with the pitcher in her hand, which with the weight thereof drew her quite a one side, to prevent the wench's growing crooked thereby, I levelled so right that I hit her on the fingers, so that down came the pitcher, and with the weight thereof brake all in pieces, and spilt the good liquor. The poor wench cried pitifully, the Crispins stormed for losing their morning's draught, and being informed it

was I that did it, they vowed to be revenged on me, which not long after they brought to pass.

For I that could not live without roguery any more than a fish without water, still continued my trade, notwithstanding all their threats. One day, whilst I was watching for my prey, through the hole of the glass window aforesaid, there came by a man with a basket of drinking glasses on his head. Scarce was he past me, when I saluted him with a dirt-bullet on the calf of his leg, which made him give such a leap that down came the basket with the glasses clattering upon the stones, making such a murder amongst them that never was a citizen (though he owed ten thousand pound more than he was worth) so much broken as they. The fellow seeing his glasses thus mortified, cursed most bitterly, breathing forth nothing but revenge, if he did but know who it was that did it. I, who was conscious of my own guilt, hearing him so to thunder, thought some of his anger might lighten on me, and therefore to prevent the worst, I ran up the stairs, and hid myself under the bed. But he that hath a bad name is worse than half hanged ; the shoemakers who I had mischieved before, right or wrong, said positively that it was I, urging him on to revenge himself on my uncle's glass windows. The fellow who was easily induced to believe what they said and to act accordingly, made no more ado but up with his empty basket, and to revenge his quarrel made such havoc of the windows that there was scarcely ever a quarrel left. O how did my uncle look, and my aunt scold to see their house thus metamorphosed into the shape of a bawdy-house ; but it was in vain for them to complain, every one took the man's part, and laid all the blame of the mischief upon me. Hereupon was a search made all the house over for me, and being found, my poor buttocks paid full dearly for the breaking of the windows, my aunt standing by all the while to see execution done upon me, and urging my uncle on to beat me, for which I cursed her in my heart most bitterly.

## CHAPTER VII

*He discovers his Aunt's playing loose with a shopkeeper, his Uncle's invective against women*

MY aunt's unkindness to me vexed me to the heart, so that I vowed to myself to be revenged on her. The print of the rod did not stick so fast on my buttocks as the remembrance of her words did stick in my mind ; I was not so watched by Argus as I watched her, for I

knew that women were subject to many faults, and my aunt as subject as any of the rest. One shopkeeper used constantly to haunt our house, not a day passed in which we had not his company. This man my uncle entertained with very much respect, for what reason I know not, unless it were that of the poet's :

Experience plainly doth unto us shew,  
Cuckolds are kind to them that make them so.

One day my uncle went forth to dress a patient. No sooner was he gone but the shopkeeper was there. Now our whole family consisted only of four persons, my uncle and aunt, a maid and myself. In order, therefore, for their more privacy, the maid was sent to the market to buy eggs, and myself had liberty to go forth to play. I kindly thanked my aunt for this courtesy, and taking my hat, with a seeming forwardness pretended to go forth ; but clapping to the door on the inside, I softly sneaked back and hid myself under the stairs, where undiscerned I could plainly see all the passages between my aunt and the shopkeeper. He, thinking us gone, took my aunt by the hand, and clasping his arm about her neck, fell to kissing her with as much eagerness as a hungry dog snatcheth at a bone ; no doubt but her lips were very sweet, for he was still hanging at them as if he had taken a lease of them for three lives, when at last my aunt began to struggle (I suppose for want of breath) and opening her mouth (which I wished a hundred times had been closed eternally) she thus said to him : ' No pish, why do you thus trifle ? now that the coast is clear, let us take time by the forelock lest we be prevented of our design. In sooth you are so long about the prologue, as may chance to mar the comedy ; make not such a long stop at the porch, but enter love's citadel, and ransack all her treasures,' and so giving him a short kiss, hand in hand upstairs they went. No sooner were they gone, but I slipped out of my peeping hole, and coming to the door at the stair's foot, softly locked the same, and putting the key in my pocket, with as little noise conveyed myself out of the house.

Thus, whilst they were playing their game, I resolved to play mine, and hiring a porter, sent him to my uncle to certify him that my aunt was swounded away, and laid upon the bed in such a condition as would grieve him to the heart to behold it, desiring him to make all the haste home that possibly he could. And having given him his message, I stepped aside to a neighbour's house to observe (when my uncle came home) how the project would take.

The porter quickly dispatched his errand, and my uncle suddenly posted home, where entering the house and finding not any one within, he began first to call for the maid, then for me, and last of all for my aunt.

But receiving no answer, he attempted to go upstairs, when the locksmith's daughter denied him entrance. The two lovers (who by this time had verified the saying to be true, that a man may be made a cuckold in the short time of going to a neighbour's house, as well as going a voyage to the West Indies) hearing my uncle below, were almost distracted with this surprize. My aunt dreaded my uncle's anger, knowing him to be of a very choleric disposition ; and the poor shopkeeper feared to be served as the country clown served the curate whom he took in bed with his wife, and whom he thus menaced :

Make me a cuckold, reading rogue :  
 No pulpit serve but Susan's,  
 Must Susan's smock your pulpit be ?  
 I'll take away that nuisance.  
 And though priest wept, and wife did beg,  
 Churl slighted words and tears,  
 And at one gash from curate took  
 Musket and bandaliers.

This fear of losing his genitals made him to shake worse than if he had had a tertian ague, and therefore to prevent it he crept underneath the bed, whilst my aunt went downstairs intending to smother up all with a dissembling kiss. But when she saw the door was fast, and my uncle asked her why she locked it she could not tell what answer to make ; but being well principled in the mysteries of Venus, she soon recollected herself, and with a sorrowful voice (as if she had been sick of a fever for a fortnight together) she peevled out these words : ' Ah dear husband,' said she, ' I was lately taken with such a great swimming in my head as not able to sit up longer, I was forced to go upstairs and lie down upon the bed ; in the mean time I suppose your unhappy kinsman (who minds nothing but mischief) hath in revenge of me for causing him to be beaten, locked the door, and thrown away the key.' Whilst she was thus exclaiming on me, I came in puffing and blowing as seeming quite o'erwearied with play, and as if ignorant of what had happened, asked very earnestly what was the matter ? My aunt, though she were mewed up like a hawk, yet hearing my tongue, could not forbear to vent her spleen against me in these words : ' You impudent young rogue,' said she, ' do you act mischief and then plead ignorance ? O that I were but well for thy sake, I would make every limb of thee feel the weight of my displeasure,' concluding her invective with as horrid a yelling as an old woman grown hoarse with crying of ' Sprats,' or as a company of dogs when they bark at the moon.

My uncle, who was of the same nature that other cuckolds are commonly of, to believe whatsoever their wife do say unto them, hearing

her so positively to affirm it was I that did it, began to ransack my pockets for the key, protesting if he found the same about me, he would make me an example of his severity. But I, who always dreaded what might ensue, to prevent such after claps, had before bestowed the same in a house of office. No sooner had my uncle examined my pockets (there was not anything to be found that might do me a prejudice), but I began to enveigh against my aunt's malice in blaming my innocence, and to persuade him it could be no other than some thief, who whilst my aunt slept, having locked the door, had hid himself in one of the chambers. This, though it carried but little shew of probability in it, yet the fear of losing his mammon made him believe anything, and therefore he sent me for a smith to break open the door, which being done, we all three ascended the stairs to search for his hidden thief, although my aunt vehemently urged the contrary, alleging it was impossible that anyone should go up the stairs but she must needs hear them. However my uncle would not be so pacified, but searching about, he at last spied the poor shopkeeper as he lay shaking underneath the bed half dead with fear. But when he saw who it was, turning to my aunt he said, ' You impudent whore, do you abuse me thus? you could feign sickness with a pox to you, when you were so rampant as to cornute me in my absence. Is this your pretended chastity and reservation? I shall take a time when to be even with you. In the meantime Master Shopkeeper,' said he, ' I will have my pennyworths out of you,' and thereupon falling on him with his fists (anger giving him at once both strength and courage) he so buffeted the shopkeeper that had not the smith interposed, I suppose he would go near to have killed him. But after an hundred or above of blows, the smith stepped in betwixt them, giving the shopkeeper liberty to run away, bearing along with him the marks of my uncle's anger, which he wore as badges in his face for a long time after.

My aunt seeing how bad the shopkeeper had sped, and knowing the business too apparent to be denied, fell down on her knees, desiring my uncle to pardon her for what was past, and protesting amendment for the time to come. This humiliation much mollified the edge of my uncle's anger, who instead of beating her (which I heartily wished) fell a railing on the whole sex of women in general, in these or the like words.

' O Nature ! why didst thou create such a plague for men as women ; how happy were men had they never been. Oh why could not Nature infuse the gift of procreation in men alone without the help of women ? then should we never be acquainted with the deceitful devices of those devils, harpies, cockatrices, the very curse of man, dissembling monsters only patched up to cozen and gull men ; borrowing their hair from one, complexions from another, nothing of their own that's pleasing ; all

dissembled. Not so much as their very breath is sophisticated with amber pellets and kissing causes, and all to train poor man unto his ruin. A woman's an angel at ten, a saint at fifteen, a devil at forty, and a witch at fourscore, so stuffed with vice as leaves no place for virtue to inhabit ; of such crooked conditions, and corrupt actions, that if all the world were paper, the sea ink, trees and plants pens, and all men clerks, scribes, and notaries, yet would all that paper be scribbled over, the ink wasted, pens worn to stumps, and all the scriveners weary, before they could describe the hundredth part of a woman's wickedness, so that I may very well conclude with the poet.

There is not one good woman to be found ;  
And if one were, she merits to be crown'd.'

My uncle's invective puts me in mind of a story which I have heard since, concerning the scarcity of good women, that above five hundred years agone there was a great sickness almost throughout the whole world, wherein there died forty-four millions eight hundred seventy-two thousand six hundred and eighty-three good women, and of bad women only two hundred and fourteen ; by reason whereof there hath been such a scarcity of good women ever since, the whole breed of them being then almost utterly extinct.

## CHAPTER VIII

*His aunt and the maid join together, and by a blind wager make him to be laughed and hooted at by the boys : he is soundly revenged on them both for the same*

NEVER was prentice more subject to a master than my aunt was to my uncle, after the discovery of her lechery ; his desires were commands, and those commands laws which were by her put in speedy execution. If he bid her go, she would run ; do that, it was no sooner said than done ; but the greatest miracle of all was that if she were never so busy in talking, yet if he said but ' peace,' she would suddenly hold her tongue, which before used to be in perpetual motion, and was as hard to be stopped as a stream when it hath overflowed its banks, or the sails of a mill when the wind blows in its greatest violence, so that a serene sky seemed to have succeeded that storm that all things were pacified, and that my uncle had contentedly put his horns in his pocket.

But though she carried fair weather in her countenance, she had

storms of revenge in her heart towards me ; for she did more than conjecture that it was I which had caused her all this mischief ; and therefore since she durst not vent her spleen upon me herself, she used the help of her maid, who brought the same to pass after this manner.

One evening (my uncle being abroad) whilst she, the maid and I were sitting alone by the fire, after some other discourse, the maid proffered to lay a wager with me that I could not blindfolded with my tongue lick forth a six pence from betwixt her breasts. This I thought so easy a thing to do that I willingly laid a shilling with her on the same, and accorded for to be blinded ; which whilst she was doing, my aunt (as it was before agreed) stepped forth of doors, and called in a boy who was to act their design, as also some of the neighbours to be spectators of this my folly. Now instead of the maid's breast, the boy's hose were put down, and his naked breech exposed to be the object for me to lick, which I greedily pursued : but presently hearing a giggling, and scenting a rank smell, I soon desisted, as being very apprehensive what the matter was. But when I was unblinded, and beholding my shame before my eyes, I hung down my head and looked like a dog that had stole a pudding, much blaming my credulity, and bitterly cursing the great cause of their jollity.

For a long time after I could not walk the streets, I was so laughed and hooted at by the boys, my aunt and the maid having spread the same abroad in every place. Flesh and blood could not endure this, to see my enemies triumph in my shame, so that nothing now ran in my mind but revenge ; the very thought of mischief was more sweet unto me than muscadine and eggs, and soon I thought upon a way for to do it. One of our neighbours who beared as little love to my aunt, as she did to me, or loyalty to my uncle, having a burning-glass, I imparted my project unto him, who applauding my invention, willingly lent me the same ; thus fitted with an instrument I soon found out an opportunity to work my revenge. My aunt being extremely proud, used to wear lawn ruffs of a great value. One sunshiny day, sitting in the shop a sewing with her back towards me, I took the burning-glass, and by attracting the sun-beam's set her ruffs on a flame about her neck, which made her to shriek and bellow most hideously ; whereupon I started up, and as if affrighted snatched up a pail of dirty water away from the maid where-with she was washing the kitchin, and poured the same on my aunt's head. This, though it made her to look like a bawd that was newly alighted from the cart wherein she had ridden for the sin of lechery, did she take as a great courtesy at my hands, having thereby extinguished the fire wherein otherwise she might (she said) have perished ; not in the least judging it was I that did it, but imputing it as a just judgment

upon her for her intolerable pride, and vowing thereafter to be more humble in her carriage, and loving unto me.

Now though I thought I had plenary satisfaction for my abuse of my aunt, yet I resolved that the maid should in no case go scot free, but that her disgrace should be equal to mine. Being thus resolved, I procured some ant's eggs by the help of a countryman ; the nature of which are, that being taken, in broth posset, ale, or the like, they will set the parties on farting as if they would break their very twatling strings therewith.

The very next day after I had gotten them, my uncle had invited some guests to dinner, wherefore I resolved to put my resolution in execution then. That morning the maid, to strengthen her the better to go through her work, had provided herself a caudle, she being of the same nature that most women are of, to know very well what is good for themselves. No sooner was her back turned but I conveyed the eggs into the same, which she very freely drank off ; but presently her belly began to wamble, and her backside proclaimed aloud that she was very much troubled with wind. Such loud reports she gave, and so fast they came one after another, that the good wife in the tale of the Friar and the Boy, was a mere nothing to her. I could not forbear laughing if I should have been hanged to hear how fast she trumped it about, which gave her occasion to mistrust that I had done something unto her ; but when she went to rail at me, her tongue could not be heard for the exceeding noise that she made with her tail. By this time my aunt was come down off her chamber, but hearing how the maid talked to her at both ends, she could not forbear laughing neither, which vexed the maid worse than before. My uncle hearing the great noise that was made, came also to see what was the matter, but Jane (for so was the maid's name) was so ashamed that she could not speak one word for blushing, only that her tail proclaimed that she had a very great Civil War within her belly. Poor Jane did all she could to hold it in but it would not do, out it flew with such impetuosity that my uncle could less forbear than we, but laughed as if he would have split himself. This treble noise of laughter made Jane to think that we had all conspired against her, wherefore she got into her chamber, and notwithstanding dinner was to dress, yet locking the door, all the rhetoric that could be used to her could not prevail with her to quit her chamber all that day.

Next morning (her body being now in a quiet temper) she appeared out of her den, but who should then have seen her looks might plainly perceive how anger and shame strove which should have most predominancy in her. At first her clack began to go, but my aunt pacifying her, she fell to her work as she was accustomed. Now over night I had

so divulged it amongst the boys that when that forenoon she was sent to market, she had not been far out of doors but she had a hundred boys at her heels, farting with their mouths, and making such loud hoots and hollows, that she was forced to return back again, where enclosing herself within her chamber till night, she packed up her clothes and in the dusk of the evening departed away, whither I never saw her afterwards.

## CHAPTER IX

*Some abuses of chirurgeons : the knavery of tapsters, hostlers and chamber-lains, with a brief character of a drunken host*

HAVING now attained to about twelve years of age, my uncle began to instruct me somewhat in his art of chirurgery, intending when I had attained some small perfection therein, to send me to sea, although my mind never stood that way, resolving not to be mewed up in a wooden cage, where there was but some few inches distance continually betwixt me and death. In this small tract of time that I was thus employed with my uncle I found out much cunningness in his art whereby to gain money, for if it were but a pricked finger, he would make a great matter of it, and tell you what danger you had been in if you had stayed but a minute longer ; instancing how such a patient by only cutting of a corn, and drawing blood, it turned to a gangrene, which by bad handling of unskilful chirurgeons growing worse and worse, they were at last inforced to send for him, who in a few days made him perfectly sound, that otherwise (had he not come to him) must inevitably have perished.

Now because monied customers were something rare, when they did come we made both their bodies and purses smart for it ; lengthening out the healing of their wounds, the better to wiredraw their purses. Indeed, we were not so much beholding to the wars as we were to the stews, unless sometimes a tavern quarrel brought us a patient ; but then what a brave incitement we had to make him part with his money, telling him he might recover that and ten times more of his adversary, that we would be witness for him, and that if he had not met with a skilful chirurgeon, it would have cost him his life ; when as perhaps it was but a little scratch, his block-head being too hard to receive any deep wound.

One story of a patient I shall relate, not so much to shew the rarity of his cure, but the malice of a woman which occasioned his hurt.

The fellow by his profession was a plasterer, who had a most damnable scold to his wife, that used to fetch him from the alehouse with a horse-pox. One night coming home three quarters drunk, she acted the part of Xantippe, and made the house to ring with her scolding ; this music was so untunable in her husband's ears that getting a cudgel in his hands, he fell to belabouring her as seamen do stock-fish, until he made her ask him forgiveness, and promise him never to scold so again. Having thus, as he thought, got an absolute conquest over her tongue, he went quietly to bed, where he slept soundly, whilst she lay awake studying mischief. In the morning before he waked she examined his pockets for money, the common trick of a great many women ; but found nothing in them save only some lath-nails. These did she take and set upright all about the chamber, which done she gets a pail of water in her hands, and calling aloud, commands him to rise, which he refused to do, she throws the pail of water upon the bed. This so vexed him that starting suddenly up, he went to run after her, when his naked feet lighting upon the lath nails, he was forced to slacken his pace, being so mortified with them that for three quarters of a year afterwards he lay under my uncle's hands.

But to return where I left. I had not been long at the trade when my uncle one day walking down to Wapping, provided me of a master to go to sea, which (as I told you before) I was fully resolved against ; and therefore very peremptorily I told him that I would not go, which so incensed him that he vowed that I should not stay any longer in his house. I was the less troubled at his words because the day before I had heard of a tapster in an inn not far off that wanted a boy ; thither, therefore, went I and proffered my service unto him, which he as readily accepted, and the same night was I entertained into the house, he having heard the cause of my departure from my uncle, for which he rather blamed him than me.

Now was I in my kingdom, having store of company, and my fill of strong drink, which two things I dearly loved. I applied myself to my calling very diligently, and soon learned to cry 'Anon, anon Sir,' and 'By and by,' with as much alacrity as the best tapster's boy in Christendom. My master taught me how to nick the cans, and froth the jugs, and with the crotched chalk to score up two flagons for one, and I quickly found the way, when company was drinking, to take away flagons before they were half empty, and full tobacco-pipes amongst the foul ones. When company first came in, I always observed to bring them of the best liquor, but when they were half drunk, then that which run on tilt, or the drippings of the tap should serve their turn ; if they found fault, I would take it away to change it, but nevertheless they should be sure to pay for it as if they had drunk it.

One thing I observed of my master, that if the reckoning once came to above three shillings, he would be sure to bring in six pence or eight pence more than it was ; then when the company were going away he would say, ‘ Nay stay, Gentlemen, and take my half dozen cans before you go,’ which most commonly produced another reckoning, the gentlemen not knowing how to retaliate his kindness without doing so, by this means getting their money, with thanks to boot. If gentlemen brought tobacco of their own, we would say it stunk were it never so good, and feigning a cough, as if half stifled, cry out, ‘ Who is it that takes of this stinking stuff ? this is enough to suffocate the devil.’ Which would make some gentlemen throw away their pipes and say, ‘ Pox on this grocer, he hath cheated me damnably, come give us three pipes of your tobacco,’ which when they have had they would commend for super-excellent, although perhaps twelve-pence in the pound worse than his own, by which may be proved that tobacco is nothing else but a mere fancy.

I seeing my master cozen gentlemen so frequently, thought with myself that I might cozen them also, or at leastwise cozen my master, who so often cozened others, being warranted thereto by that of the poet.

Cozen the cozener, commonly they be  
Profane, let their own snare their ruin be.

And therefore, when he was out of the way, to the reckoning I would add a groat, sixpence, eight pence, or twelve pence, according as it was in bigness, which yet I would also score up, lest if he came in the way before it was paid, and should tell the score, I might be mistrusted. But if I received the money before he came, then the over-plus went into my own pocket, which could not be discovered when the chalk was wiped out.

In summer, when people drank in cans, if my master were in company (as oftentimes he was invited by guests to drink with them) we had a can with a false bottom that held not above a quarter of a pint, which in the delivery of them I always so ordered as that can came to his hands, which he would drink off leisurely, and then turning the bottom upwards, it passed undiscerned, saving thereby much beer in a day, keeping himself sober to drink in other companies.

In winter, for morning draughts we furnished our guests with ‘Gravesend toasts, which is bread toasted over night, our plenty of guests not permitting us to do it in the morning. If we put any of them into drink before our guests (as sometimes we were forced to do) we would be sure to warm the beer or ale before-hand, and in putting in the toast cry ‘siz,’ although it were as cold as a stone.

But my master and I were not all the cozeners that belonged to the inn ; the hostler claimed as great a share in that mystery as we. His chief cunning consisted in tallowing horse-teeth that they should eat no hay ; or when a gentleman gave his horse oats, no sooner was his back turned but he would steal them half away, telling the gentleman, his horse must needs travel well he was so quick at his meat. If a gentleman's saddle were anything torn he would be sure to make it so bad that he could not ride any further with it without mending, as also to spoil the shoes on the horses' feet, that he must be forced to have new ones, for which he had pensions from the smith and the sadler.

Nor must I here forget the chamberlain, who deserved to be ranked with the foremost for roguery ; he was a sly thief, and used to cheat guests with foul sheets, pretending them to be clean, when as they had been lain in three or four times ; and then a little water strewed on them, and folded up and pressed, made them seem as if new washed. He was a very diligent observer of gentlemen's cloakbags, whether they had good silver linings in them or no, which if he found to be ponderous, his next care was to enquire what countrymen they were, which way they travelled, and the like, which having found, he gave intelligence accordingly to a gang of highway men, with whom he was in continual pay.

These were the servants that belonged to this inn, such a parcel of canary-birds as well deserved to look through a hempen casement at the three-cornered tenement in the highway betwixt London and Paddington. Were not those guests well blessed think ye, which happened in such a place where none but knaves, thieves, and cheaters were their attendants ? Now you cannot but imagine that the master of such servants was well worthy of his place, I shall therefore only give you a brief character of the host himself, and so proceed on in my discourse.

He seemed by his bulk to be of the race of the old giants, and though his belly were not so big as the tun at Heidleburg, yet a flagon of beer therein seemed no more than a man in Paul's. He commanded with as much imperiousness as if he were the great Cham of Tartaria, and had an excellent faculty to strut along the streets with the top of his staff bobbing against his lips. He could call the young wenches whores with a great grace ; and when he took tobacco, his mouth vented smoke like the funnel of a chimney. He much blamed the English for affecting to drink wine, preferring beer and ale before all foreign liquors whatsoever. To show his loving nature he would drink with all companies, and would toss off a can with celerity and dexterity. He would not be jealous though he saw another man kissing his wife, knowing such familiarity to be the greatest load-stone that attracted guests

to his house ; in sum, his forenoon's work was to scoop in beer by the quart, and the most part of the afternoon to spend in sleeping.

In this house I wasted away my time nigh three quarters of a year, but then a sad accident befel my master, which left me again to shift for myself. He had belike been dabbling in private with Prudence, one of the maids belonging to the house, I know not what the business was, but she looked so bigly on him that he could not endure her sight, and therefore to avoid it, he privately put off his cellar to another, and having received his money, marched off *incognito*, leaving me to the wide world ; for this new tapster having a boy of his own, dismissed me to shift for myself.

## CHAPTER X

*The cheats of cooks : a story of the spirit in the buttery : he steals a silver bowl, the cozenages of astrologers : the death of his father being killed in a drunken brangling*

LONG I was not without a master, being entertained into a cook's service, of which I rejoiced not a little, being in good hope however the world went, that I should not be starved in a cook's shop. One extraordinary privilege I had by living in this service ; for if the old proverb be true, that the nearer the bone, the sweeter the flesh, then I always ate of the sweetest, my diet being to pick the bones that came off of gentlemen's tables. During the time that I lived here, although I had been a young wench, I should not needed to have feared being troubled with the green-sickness, running up and down stairs so many score times in a day would have cured me of that malady. Those who had seen my nimbleness would have absolutely judged that my shoes were made of cork, I was as light heeled as she who hath made her husband cuckold seven and twenty times over. My master drove a great trade, not only in boiled meat and roast meat, but also in baking small pies, which the women cried up and down the streets for him. Every Friday I observed we had brought in a porter's basketful or two of pieces of raw meat, which though methought they smelt very unsavoury, yet were they made use of, some minced, others peppered and salted, and put into pies. Ere the week went about they all marched off. I wondered for a great while from whence this meat came, at last I was informed by one of the prentices that it was such pieces as were cut off of the stinking raw hides, that were brought into Leadenhall to sell there on Fridays. Bless me thought I, what deceit is here ! then did I think

on the old proverb, that the blind eats many a fly. No marvel that sicknesses are so rife, since such unwholesome food must needs introduce them. Now because those pieces of meat were lean and dry, they used to mix with them such fat pieces of meat as gentlemen left, adding thereto some dripping, and such-like stuff, which altogether made a gallant hodge-podge for hungry stomachs.

To roast meat twice over is so commonly now used amongst most cooks that I think I shall not need to mention this as a rarity in my master ; and yet would not that, nor what I mentioned before, nor his buying of carrion, such meat as would have died alone had it not been killed, being diseased or maimed, and selling it for good ; all this (I say) would not do, notwithstanding all his great pains, but still he went backwards in the world. Which puts me in mind of a story that I have heard some while ago, concerning an evil spirit that haunts the houses of such persons who use unconscionable ways whereby to grow rich, which though it be nothing as concerning my life, yet I think it not amiss to relate the same, as being not altogether impertinent to our purpose.

In the city of Bristol (a place which may compare with the choicest of England for the fairness of the buildings, and richness of trading) within the memory of our fathers there lived a young man named Francisco, who although prentice to a baker, yet when his time came out, set up the trade of a cook. This young man was very desirous to gain a great estate quickly, and so impatient he was of being rich on a sudden that he resolved to leave no means unattempted which should lie in his way whereby he might effect his desire, for so he might gain, he stood not upon what means whereby he might do it. Bad infected meat he sold for good, nicked his cans, frothed his jugs, scored up two flagons for one, yea what not ? but all his endeavours arrived not to that height which he expected, for notwithstanding he went forward in trading, do what he could he went backwards in thriving. This Francisco had a priest to his uncle, that lived about some twenty miles off him, who had bestowed some small matter on him when his time came out whereby to set him up ; and two years being now expired, he repaired to his nephew to see how fortune had favoured him, and whether he had made any improvement of that little he had given him. The nephew entertained him kindly, and feasted him royally, but when his uncle asked him how the world went with him, he could not choose but sigh, telling him what endeavours he had used whereby to increase his estate, but that all proved fruitless. ‘ Ah, cozen,’ said the old man, ‘ come along with me, and I will shew you the thief that steals away all your gains.’ And thereupon taking him by the hand he led him into the cellar, where

when they were come, they beheld a big fellow with a paunch like a tun, his eyes strutting out with fatness, his thighs like to mill-posts, so unwieldy that he could hardly go. There they saw him gourmandizing on the cold meat that was left, devouring more in a minute than six hungry plough-men could do in half an hour. After he had so eaten, he takes a flagon in his hand, and of the best beer, swallows down five or six of them full one after another, which being done he vanished away. ‘This, Cousin,’ said the priest, ‘is the Spirit of the Buttery, who so long as you use unconscionable ways by cheating of people, hath power over what you have, which he will so invisibly devour, that do what you can for the gaining of an estate, it is but all in vain ; and therefore if you intend to thrive, you must take a clean contrary course to what you have done, and by dealing honestly, there is no question but a blessing will follow upon your endeavours.’

The young man promised very faithfully to do according to his uncle’s directions, who thereupon returned home again. Accordingly when his uncle was gone, he began to work a thorough reformation, bought of the best meat, sold good pennyworths, filled his flagons, scored right, and dealt justly in all his acting, doing this, he quickly begins to thrive in the world, grows rich, purchases house and land, and hath a great stock by him besides ; in so much that his wealth being taken notice of, he was soon after chosen one of the aldermen of the city. His uncle afterwards comes again to visit him, to whom he relates his change of condition, and how God had blessed him with a plentiful estate. ‘Now, Cousin,’ said the old priest, ‘let us again visit your cellar.’ When they came there, they beheld a thin, lean, meagre faced fellow, one that seemed more like an anatomy than a man ; his ribs appeared through his clothes, his eyes were sunk into his head, his cheeks looked like to shrivelled parchment, and his legs (which were no bigger than cat-sticks that boys use at trap-ball) were so weak as would hardly support his body. He went to a platter of cold meat, but had not strength enough to lift it up to his head ; afterwards he essayed to draw some beer, but could not pull the tap out of the fasset, so that seeing his endeavours were in vain, with a deep sigh he vanished away. ‘Now, nephew,’ said the old priest, ‘you may plainly perceive what it was that hindered you from thriving before and therefore now since you are thoroughly instructed whereby to be rich, I shall take my leave of you, wishing with all my heart that all of your profession would leave off their cheating and cozening tricks, and take the same course of life whereby to thrive as you have done.’

After I had been at this cook’s some small space of time, my father returned home from being a soldier, in that voyage he was pressed out

as I told you of before. Now though he did not go out full, he returned home more empty than he went out ; without clothes, and without money to buy any ; and which was worst, so pinched with hunger that he looked like a scare-crow, or one newly risen from the dead. It grieved my heart to see him in this condition, but how to remedy it I did not know. Some little money I had which was left of that I snipped in the tapster's service, which I very freely bestowed upon him, but alas that was gone as soon almost as received, and I having no more to supply him, he asked me if we had no plate that went about the house ? I told him we had. ' Then,' said he, ' to furnish me, you must at such time as your house is full of guests, upon their going away, convey a silver bowl into a secure place, which you may afterwards deliver for me to one whom I will send for that purpose, for I will not come to your house myself, because there shall be no suspicion of me.' I promised him to do as he bid me, appointing him the time when he should send the man, which was the next day ; accordingly he came and I delivered him a large silver bowl, which he carried cleverly away. At night, when my master came to lock up his plate, the best bowl was missing, which put all the house into disorder. My master swore, my mistress scolded, the servants grumbled, but who to blame not any one could tell ; only the maid said she saw it in my hand that afternoon, for which I wished her tongue in a cleft stick. But I stoutly denied that I had seen it that day ; indeed my master had a great conceit of my honesty or else her bawling might have discovered me, for had they charged me with it strongly, I should not have had the impudence to have stood out in the denial of it, having that within me which strongly checked me for doing it. But after some small inquisition about it, it was generally agreed that some of the guests had stolen it away ; then next was enquiry made what several companies we had that day, and which of them was the most to be suspected ; but the more they thought, the worse they were satisfied, not one appearing more probable than another. Wherefore it was agreed by a general consent that the next morning the maid and I should go to a cunning astrologer about it, one who was cried up for art to be little inferior to Friar Bacon, for though he could not make a brazen head to speak, yet he had such a brazen face of his own as could outface the Devil himself for lying.

I was not afraid to go, though I knew my own guilt, because I always judged that art to be a mere cheat, and though they lay their nets very plausibly to take people, yet they seldom catch any but owls and wood-cocks. Knocking at the door, Master Astrologer came out unto us, so wrapped up in his purple gown that you could scarcely see an honest limb of him. He had on his head a black cap with a white one under it,

PLATE VI



[ face p. 320



which was turned up some part over the black one, that it looked like a black jack tipped with silver.

After we had discovered our business unto him, he told us the price of his art was a shilling whether he found out the thief or no ; we knew it was in vain for us to contend with him, and therefore we very freely gave it him, by which he perceived that the stars were very auspicious to him in that hour, or else (for aught I know) he might have gone without his morning's draught. When he had received our money he very formally set himself down in a chair, having a piece of white paper before him, and then taking a pen in his hand, he made thereon several triangles and quadrangles, with other crotchets and whimsies, which he called the Twelve Houses. 'Jupiter,' said he, 'being Lord of the Ascendent, signifies good luck for the gaining your cup again, did not Mars interpose with an evil aspect towards Mercury. Now Venus being on the fiery Trigon, denotes the party that had it lives either East or West ; and Saturn being retrograde, and in the cusp of Taurus, it must needs be that it is hidden under ground either North or South.'

Then asked he us if there were not a red-haired man there that day ? We told him no ; 'nor a black-haired man neither,' said he. We still answered no. 'Was there not,' said he, 'a brown-haired man there, with gray clothes, not very tall, nor very low ?' We told him yes ; then asked he us if we knew him or no ? We answered no. 'The Sun,' saith he, 'being ill posited in the eleventh House, and Mercury in trine with Virgo it was without all doubt a brown-haired man that had your bowl.' Then asked I him if it might not be a woman as well as a man ? This put him something to his trumps ; but when the maid said that could not be, for there was never a strange woman there all that day, he grew bold and answered, no ; 'for Venus,' said he, 'being weak in reception with Gemini, and the Moon in her detriment, both feminine planets, does plainly tell that it was a man, and one betwixt forty and fifty years of age.' 'Upon my life,' said the maid, 'I saw the party that had it ; he was a curl-pated fellow, with a whitish cloak and a sad coloured suit, about thirty years of age. He dined in the Half Moon, and had sixpenny worth of roast beef to his dinner ; but if ever I see the rogue again, I'll teach him to steal bowls with a murrain to him.'

I could not choose but laugh to myself at the wench's confidence, and the cheat of the astrologer, and to think how poor silly people are cozened by these juggling artists, for no better term can I give them, as believing no truth at all in their predictions. For let me ask them this question, whether the stars do compel or only incline ? If they say they compel, they speak little less than blasphemy, by ascribing too much to Nature, and derogating from the deity. If they only incline, then what sure

groundwork can there be for what they say, when their conjectures are but only probable ? And for their doctrine of nativities, that if a man be born under such a planet his destiny will be so and so, and he will come to such an end, we see oftentimes that in a battle, a cannon bullet kills five or six at one instant, who no doubt were born under several planets and yet come all to one fate. Or if they say it is possible so many might be born under one and the self same planet and aspects ; yet let me go further with them ; we have known battles at sea, when by an unhappy shot a ship hath sunk in an instant, with six or seven hundred men in her, who have all been drowned in the deep. Will they say these were all born under one planet ? Verily if they should so say, I should not believe them ; therefore I may say of our astrologers as Cato said of the Aruspices of Rome in his time, that he wondered how one of them could forbear to laugh, when he met with any of his fellows, to see how they deceived men, and made a great number of simple ones in the city. But I tire your patience with this digression, for I expect not my words will work any reformation in them, seeing they may say with Demetrius in the Acts of the Apostles, that by this craft they get their wealth.

To return, therefore, where we left ; having taken leave of the astrologer, away we went home again, fraught with a sackful of news to tell our master. No sooner were we within doors, but the maid set her clack agoing ; ‘ Master,’ said she, ‘ the cunning man hath told us exactly who it was that stole your bowl ; he hath described him fully from top to toe, not so much as his very shoestrings but he told us of what colour they were of, his hat, his hair, his beard, his doublet, breeches, hose, not one thing that he omitted. I served the rogue that stole it with roast beef myself, the Devil choke him with it, for I think silver will not ; but if ever he comes here again, or I meet him in the streets, I’ll serve him such a trick as shall make him wish he had never drank out of anything in his life but a wooden dish.’ I said nothing all this while, and though I knew she lied most abominably in what the astrologer said, yet I confirmed her speeches, hoping this would forever take away suspicion from me of being culpable ; only I thought with myself if that party she imagined to have it should come again to the house, what a coil she would make with him ; but whether she forgot his physiognomy, or that the man never came there again, I never after that heard any more of the matter.

In the meantime my father had disposed of the purchased prize, bought him an old suit with some part of the money, and ranted it in the alehouse with the rest of it, for what is thus gotten over the Devil’s back is for the most part spent under his belly. At last his sinful life had a tragical conclusion, for one of his comrades and he being fuddling

together, they chanced to fall out, and from words proceeded to blows, where my father received such a knock on his pate with a flagon that though it killed him not outright, yet he survived not long after, making his end answerable to his life ; for as he led a troublesome life all the days he lived, so he put the parish to some trouble at his death, who were forced to be at the charge of burying him.

## CHAPTER XI

*The abuses of nurses, and keepers of sick people : his master dieth : the knavery of his executor both in his trade and office : he lives with a locksmith : the knavery of that trade*

I WAS the less grieved for the death of my father, knowing, if he had lived, he would have brought me to the gallows, for he would have been always in want and urging me to supply him, which I could not do any other ways than by theft ; but now he was dead I resolved quite to give over the practice of it, for fear in the end it should bring me to look through a hempen casement. And now I bent all my endeavours to please my master, knowing I had few friends to rely upon ; I was up with the first, and down with the last, and refused no work I was set unto, and I found the benefit of my diligence at last, for it pleased God to visit our family with the pestilence, which in a week's space swept away all the whole household but my master and I. In this week's time I observed the abuses and cheats of nurses and keepers, such who look to people who are visited with the sickness. Two of these jades we had in our house, who when my mistress lay distracted with the distemper, took away her keys, and ransacked her trunks, from whence they took a purse full of money, most of it gold, which she had gathered unknown to my master, intending to keep it for her further need, or (as we say) against a rainy day. This these jades conveyed away together with a great deal of the best linen in the house, which was done by the help of the watchman that guarded the door, who was son-in-law to one of the queans ; and that my master might not discover their theft, they sent her [my mistress] to her long home, by giving her drinks and other slops quite contrary to what the physicians prescribed ; by the same way they dispatched the maid and the prentices, with a little girl, the only child my master had. And now was none remaining but my master and I, whom they intended should have followed after the rest, then they might have plundered without control ; but I seeing how soon my

fellows were gone, and observing that they all died after they had received any of their slops, would have nothing to do with them, persuading my master to do the like, affirming it even before their faces, that they were the persons that had killed my mistress and the rest, and would, if let alone, make a hand of us too.

But these impudent jades hearing me begin to discover their villainies, would have persuaded my master that I was also infected, and that it had already taken my brain, which caused me to talk so idly, and so began to seize upon me, intending to have tied me into a bed, which if they had done I should never have come out of it alive ; but my master interposing bid them let me alone, for he himself was of the same mind with me. These bold queans hearing him say so, one of them flew at him ; ‘you old dotard,’ said she, ‘do you begin to talk idly too ? We must tame you, ifaith,’ and so attempted to pull him down, whilst the other was as busy with me. My master and I struggled with them what we could ; but perceiving them to be too hard for us (for they were two stout mastiff queans) we got to the window and cried as loud as we could, and thereby gathered a great many people together to know what was the matter. To whom we related the great danger we were in of being murdered by the two women that were with us, desiring by all means that we might be rid of them, they being the greatest plague we were infected withal at the present, and whom we dreaded as much as death itself. Amongst others that came (alarmed by this outcry) was a shoemaker that lived not far off, who was near of kin to my master, and thought himself no mean fellow, he being at that time overseer of the poor. This man kept a great bustle, commanding the door to be broken open, which being done with as much imperiousness as a country justice domineers over a hedge-breaker, he commands the two women to depart out of the house, which they (being conscious of guilt) accordingly did, to the no little joy of my master and me, who feared we should have perished under their merciless hands.

Being rid of these two harpies I was more than double diligent towards my master, well hoping that death with his besom would sweep him away also, which I judged the rather could come to pass, because the thread of his life was spun out to a far greater length than mine, not at all considering, that the pestilence makes no difference betwixt age and youth, or if it doth, sooner seizes upon youth than age, as having more matter to work upon. But I was so confident that my master would die and that I should live, that I would rather perform all offices towards him than admit of a partner to plunder the house with me when he was dead. But three days being passed and no alteration at all appearing in him, I began to alter my opinion, and feared he would escape and not

have it at all ; and therefore I began to cast my wits about and consider with myself, what I had best to do. Now I knew conceit would do much with him, and therefore I first begun to tell him that he looked very ill all of a sudden, asking if he felt no alteration in his body ? At first he said, no ; but afterwards, upon my persuasions that he must needs be sick, he soon grew conceited that he was so, indeed, insomuch that at last I told him that he had the perfect symptoms of a dying man upon him ; those words struck him to the very heart, that without further delay he went to the window, called for a porter, and sent him for the shoemaker I spake of before, to come to him, and bring a scrivener along with him. I asked him what he would do with a scrivener ? But when he told me it was to make his will, I was ready to swound, fearing he would take an inventory of his goods also, and so hinder my pilfering when he was dead, for I was now fully minded to thieve from him what I could, notwithstanding my resolution but a little before to leave it off. I feared to be known for stealing the silver bowl ; so hard it is for those that are principled in wickedness, to leave off that vice they have been accustomed unto. However I praised him for his care therein that he would settle his mind as to outward affairs, they might be no hindrance to his more pious thoughts, which now should be bent altogether Heavenwards.

Scarce had I made an end of praising his good intentions but the shoemaker and the scrivener were come, to whom out of the window he declared his mind for the disposing of his estate. First, he commended his soul unto Heaven, and his body to earth, which I wished had been racked up in it before the scrivener came. ‘ Next,’ said he, ‘ for the good and faithful service he hath done me, I bequeath to my boy Gregory (for that is my name) the sum of twenty pounds, whereof ten pound to be bestowed on him in schooling, the other ten pound to buy him clothes, and put him out to apprentice to some handicraft trade.’ I hearing my master say this, could not but reflect upon my monstrous ingratitude that I should go to kill him that was so kind to me, and had so much care for my future livelihood ; but covetousness cancels all obligations, and therefore is well termed the springhead of all ungodliness. ‘ Next,’ said he, ‘ I bequeath to the poor of the parish wherein I live, the sum of five pounds, three pound thereof to be laid out on clothes for them, to make them apparel, and bestowed on such as my executor shall see most needful ; and the other forty shillings to be laid out in bread for them, and to be distributed the next four Sundays after my decease, each Sunday alike till it be out.’ The rest of his estate he gave unto the shoemaker, whom he made his full and sole executor, giving him a great charge to be careful of me ; and so having subscribed and sealed it,

he betook him to his bed, as prepared to die ; and free leave he had to go both of me and the shoemaker also.

To hasten him on the more, I persuaded him to sweat, which he was willing to do ; so I covered him with as many clothes as he was able to bear, and being in a violent sweat, he called for some strong waters ; whereupon I went to the pump and filled him a pint of such sober liquor as that yielded, and brought it to him ; which having tasted, he asked me what I had brought him ? I told him it was excellent good white anniseed. He said, it tasted like fair water. I told him that was only the badness of his palate which could not distinguish anything. ‘ Truly,’ said he, ‘ it tasteth so small that I think you may leave the word anniseed out, and call it only white-water.’ Yet notwithstanding he found such fault his parching thirst caused him to drink it all off, which gave such a sudden chill to his blood that what with that and some other slops that I gave him in three days’ time he turned up his heels and died.

No sooner was his breath out of his body but I began to put in execution what before I had intended. First I examined his pockets, wherein I found the sum of fourteen shillings and nine pence ; eleven shillings whereof I took, leaving some, that I might not be suspected to have taken any. But this was nothing to what I thought to find in his trunk, which I opened with an expectation to have mine eyes blessed with the sight of store of white and yellow pieces ; but the clouds dropped no such rain, the trunk courted not me as Jupiter did Diana with a golden shower ; some plate was in it, some bonds and other writings, but no money. This was a shrewd cooling card to my high hopes, which promised me mountains, and performed not mole hills ; for as for the plate, the executor knew of each piece in the house, and bills and bonds signified no more to me than meat to an hungry man which he might see but not come at. Wherefore seeing it would be no better, I armed myself with patience, considering I had not lost by his death, he having given me twenty pound for the bringing me up to some learning and putting me out apprentice, by which I hoped to be sufficiently able to live in the world.

And therefore having secured the eleven shillings in the collar of my doublet (mistrusting my pockets might be searched) I called for a messenger and sent the executor word of his death, not bidding him to have a care of frightening him in the delivery of his message, for I did not think the sudden news of his death would make him to break his heart with sorrow, there was less fear in that than of a usurer undoing a young heir, when he once gets him into bonds. He having received the news, made no long tarriance before he came to me, bringing a couple of old women along with him to search the dead corpse, that an account might

be given what he died of, which is a thing that (you know) is usual. But before I proceed any further (having occasion here to speak of these searchers) give me leave to mention some abuses and cheats which I have observed to be practised by them.

They are, indeed, very necessary, especially in great cities, that an account may be given of what diseases people die of, and that men may not have their lives shortened by violence, which appearing after their deaths, may be by them discovered. But these women have their cheats too, for notwithstanding they are sworn to give a true information to the parish clerks, yet money can so blind their eyes that if a man be poisoned, they can bring it in that he died of the French pox : and though a house be visited with the sickness, yet if the master thereof be unwilling to be shut up for losing his trading, if he do but grease them in the first with some money, they will make the pestilence to be surfeit, and the spotted fever (which is little inferior to the plague) the swine-pox, and sometimes the measles. Nay, once I knew two of these searchers that for money brought it in that the party who had the spotted fever died of nothing else but the toothache. Thus you see that it is an undeniable maxim that there is knavery in all trades, people being now grown so villainous in their practices that they make the very dead to be accessory to their cheats.

But to return to my story. The shoemaker standing in the street, whilst the women came in, called to me and bid me, if any of the trunks were open, to lock them up and throw the keys down to him ; which I accordingly did, the fear of losing his mammon making him to dispense with any danger that might accrue to him by taking the keys. That night was my old master buried, and a fortnight after (the bedding and clothes being aired in the mean time, and I continuing sound) I was removed to his house, where I took special notice of his great care in performing my master's will. First for the three pounds that was given to buy the poor clothes, he bestowed the same on two suits for his own boys, proving it to be the will of the dead it should be so, 'for,' said he, 'they are poor who are in want,' and his sons wanting clothes, therefore they were to be reckoned in the number of the poor, and policy bids us this, always to provide for our own poor first. Then for the bread he ordered with the baker so that for every ten dozen he would have a twelvepenny loaf and yet were they made fifteen to the dozen, which overplus above twelve he also took to himself, so that the penny loaves shrunk to the bigness of halfpenny ones, and only for the name there was no difference. I seeing how he had dealt by the poor, thought with myself that my legacy would shrink also like Northern cloth in the wetting, and my twenty pound come to twenty shillings ; but whilst I had cause for

myself, I would not complain of his dealing by others, and therefore expected the event with patience.

Soon after, I was set to school with a fellow that went in black clothes, and therefore taken for a man of learning because so habited. This man and his scholars were of one mind, for he cared not how little he taught them for their money, and they cared not how little they learned for it. But I who had no friends to rely on for bestowing anything upon me afterwards, resolved not to neglect opportunity, but to gain what learning I could ; thinking it might stand me in great stead another day, and therefore I so plied my book that in a short time I could read English very perfectly, and had some skill in writing and casting accounts.

During this time that I went to school I plied not my book so altogether but that I observed some practices of the shoemaker, both in his trade and in his office. First for his trade ; I saw he used two sorts of leather, one whereof was called men's leather, which was strong, fast, and would last well, the other he called woman's leather, which was not half tanned, and would scarce last ten miles going ; this last sort of leather (because it was cheap) he used most, especially in women's shoes, and the inner soles of men's. Sometimes I observed that if the inner soles were too little, he would slit them in the middle to make them appear on both sides, and at other times with his teeth he would stretch his leather, as for gain he would stretch his conscience. Then for his office ; for the bread that was given to the poor at the church on Sundays he had a weekly fee from the baker for his custom ; and for other gifts that were to be distributed (as there was some quarterly) that poor man that received them must either do a day's work gratis for him, or else present him with some gift worth half of what he was to receive, or else he was sure to go without it. So that in respect of his office, these verses of Withers were very applicable unto him,

The poor's neglector, O, I pardon crave,  
Collector I should say, may play the knave,  
The fool I would have said, but choose you whether  
He may be both, and so he may be neither.

But before I had been at school long my guardian told me the ten pound was out for my board (for I paid a roast-meat price for my diet, although I fed most commonly on bread and cheese) and therefore I must prepare to go to prentice. I thought it was in vain to contend with him, and therefore bid him provide me a master as soon as he would, for I was willing, I told him, to go. He quickly heard of one (for bad masters are as easy to be found as bad servants) one that was a true Bacchanalian,

a son of Vulcan, by profession a locksmith. What the executor was to give with me I know not, but thither I went some few days upon liking ; and indeed it was but a few days I was there in all, for there was found knavery in that trade as well as others. My new master had belike driven an old trade with pick-pockets, house-breakers, and such kind of people whom he furnished with store of pick-locks, and instruments to break open shop-doors and windows ; he also drove a great trade with thievish prentices for false keys for their master's counting-houses and trunks, they bringing him the print of them either in wax or clay, with some of which he was sharers in their purchase. He had also his emissaries abroad which would steal iron bars from cellar windows, and sometimes fetch a short jaunt into the country and steal the coulters and shares from the ploughs, as also hooks and hinges from gates, which he bought for a small price, and used to work them out in the night for fear of discovery. Yet all would not do, wicked actions have bad endings ; one of these prentices who had made use of him, and thereby much wronged his master, spending that money riotously which he had got naughtily, his excess brought him to a surfeit that occasioned his end ; when upon his death-bed, reflecting on his former vicious practices, he detected my master, who was thereupon apprehended and carried before a Justice of the Peace, that sent him to Newgate. How he sped I know not, but if he had his deserts, I am sure he could not escape hanging.

## CHAPTER XII

*He is bound prentice to a tailor : the knavery of that trade : his master dies of a stitch, he is turned over to a baker, who misusing him he runneth away*

MY next master, forsooth, was a tailor, a dapper fellow, to whom the shoemaker (because he would be sure to be rid of me) bound me prentice the first day I went to him. After I had been there a little while, whether it be the nature of the trade, or what it was I know not, but all my mind ran upon penny loaves and pudding pies ; and whereas before I was more given to drink than to eat, now my whole appetite was for feeding. If I went by a baker's shop, oh, how would I cast mine eyes upon the penny loaves, wishing my belly a cupboard to contain such precious jewels. Neither could it sink into my faith that there was any trade in the world comparable to a baker's. But that which made me the more hungry, I conceive, was that we were much pinched in our diet ;

for my master made us observe more fasting days than were set down in the kalendar, and then with a counterfeit zeal he would preach a long lecture of sobriety unto his prentices. Not that he had any religion in him (for at another man's table he would gourmandize like an epicure) but to save victuals ; and when we fell short at meals (as we often-times did) he would put us off with an old proverb, that many a sack is tied up before it be full. For his other qualifications and endowments, take a brief view in this short but true character of him :

He was such another as Sir Thomas Overbury speaks of, a creature made up of shreds that were pared off from Adam when he was rough cast. His chiefest care was how to clothe other men's backs, and feed his own belly ; how to make them fine and himself fat, against Christmas, Easter, or Whitsuntide. He was a man of some repute, but most time else like a thick cloak in summer, hanged behind the door. His offensive and defensive weapons were only a needle and a thimble ; with the first he murdered many Egyptian vermin, and the last he made a gauntlet for the top of his middle finger, which at other times jingling in his pocket with his bodkin, made the alewife to think he had money in his pocket, which caused oftentimes a flagon to be scored up behind the door. His chief upholder was in the sin of pride, a new fashion being to him like the term to a lawyer ; to gain which he used to frequent those churches and places where gallants most resorted, when on a sudden the mechanics' wives' and kitchinmaids' gowns came trowling in to be new altered, for 'out of the fashion, out of the world.' He differed altogether from God, for with him the best pieces were still marked out for damnation, and without hope of recovery cast down into Hell, for though he had many bottoms yet his conscience was bottomless. Of all weapons he most affected the long bill, and he who paid him but one half, he would be sure to be no loser by him.

An ancient gentleman one day brought a suit of clothes to our shop to be made, who that he might have them the warmer, had bought two yards of baize to cotton his breeches in the inner-side. My master thought that was too good for such an use, and therefore took it to himself, and supplied the place with old painting cloth. It happened, afterwards, the gentleman wearing those clothes, going to Islington, as he went over a stile, a snag or cleft of the same took hold of his breeches and rent a great slash or gap in them, that quite discovered my master's theft ; for right against the hole was the picture of a Devil with a muck-fork in his hand, which made the gentleman to admire how the Devil he should come there. Searching further he found more of his fellows, and all of them with muck-forks in their hands, tormenting of Dives in the flames. This put him in a great rage to consider how that by the knavery

of the tailor, he should carry Hell-fire in his breech ; ripping the other slop, there was the Prodigal on horseback, his journey into a far country, hawks, and his whores, his feeding husks with swine, with his returning to his father, and the killing the fatted calf. Wherefore in great rage he came to my master, calling him knave, thief, and a great many other names, such as came first to his tongue's end. My master desired him to be quiet, told him it was stole off his shop-board, but for his part, he wished if he had it that he might find it in the Hell, meaning the Hell under his shop-board, which was the receptacle for all stolen goods.

Now those pieces which were condemned to this Hell, were termed cabbage, and we never made any clothes either for men or women, in which he snipped not some pieces from them ; sometimes out of a suit and cloak enough to make a boy a pair of breeches or a doublet, and sometimes enough for breeches and doublet too. Then we drove a trade with the saddlers for pieces of cloth to make seats for saddles. The cabbage of coarse cloth was to make dust-cloths for the legs of country ploughmen, woollen caps, and mittens for old women ; all was fish that came to net. When a gentleman bought a suit and cloak of good cloth, if my master could but persuade four or five more to buy of the same, out of them all he would steal a suit and cloak for himself. Then for women's clothes, the cabbage of cloth of silver, branched satin, and the like, went for pin-cushions, pin-pillows, women's purses ; and if black, churchwardens' caps ; cabbage of tabby, coloured taffaty and sarcenet, for facings of the hands of doublets, &c. When we set on gold and silver lace we should stretch it so that in four or five yards we would get a quarter of a yard, which with old silver buttons and such like stuff, went for ends of gold and silver ; and sometimes in rich laces we would rub them so on our knees that in eight or nine ounces half an ounce would come off, which went also to the increase of ends of gold and silver.

Now being the under-prentice, my chief employment was to run on errands, so that having thereby an opportunity, I often visited the ' Dagger ' in Foster Lane for pudding-pies. Amongst other places that I went to one of the chief was a mercer's in Paternoster Row, from whence my master received a small snip for every gown he helped him to custom withal. Now their way of dealing was thus ; my master bought the stuff, then the mercer was to justify that it cost him so much a yard, perhaps eight or ten shillings more in the gown than it did, for which my master when he brought customers to him, was to persuade them to the stuff, avouching there was not such another pennyworth in the town, and that he was confident that he saved little or nothing by it ; but only for to gain their custom. By which you see he who carries a tailor with him to help him buy cloth, carries a thief instead of a friend, for the

mercer and tailor was both agreed, and what the first says the other will swear to. Now to hear them muster up the names of their stuffs would make you swear they were raising so many devils, there's your Paragon, Burragon, Phillipine, Cheny, Grogrum, Mow-hair, Damasilly, Novato, Pinckanilly, Pinckadino, Prunella, Italiano, Castiliano, Perpetuana, Sempiternum, Tamme, Tammet, Tammeletto, and a thousand more besides, such as Adam never gave names to, being more for pride than for warmth, and rather to clothe sin than to cover nakedness.

But ere I could attain to any perfection in the trade, my master died of that which he lived by, the stitch, being taken with it as he was contriving a new fashion for a woman's placket, that should be neither before nor behind nor on either side ; but before he could finish his project he was taken with this stitch, so that that invention was utterly lost thereby. Now because he died of such a disease, I mustered up all my wit and invention together, and made for him this epitaph :

A tailor in this grave doth lie,  
Who by the *stitch* did live and die,  
Longer his life's *thread* might have been,  
But Death with's *shears* came him between,  
Wound up his *bottom*, bound his feet,  
And sewed him up in's winding-sheet.

My mistress not continuing the trade, I was turned over to a baker, at which I rejoiced exceedingly, being heartily desirous to be dealing with belly-timber, remembering how I was full fed when as I lived before with the cook. Here I found the maxim to be still true, that there is knavery in all trades ; for as my last master thieved from people's backs, so this robbed their bellies, and was in one sort worse than a tailor, for tailors commonly filch their cabbage only from the rich, who can the better spare it : but a baker by making his bread lesser than it should be, stealeth it out of the poor people's bellies, for doing which he deserveth the same fate to attend on him as did on Pharaoh's baker, *viz.* hanging ; or at leastwise to look through an oaken plank, and shew the people a knave's head.

He would be sure to be in fee with the clerk of the market, and pretended great love to him, though he hated him as his executioner. By this means he had always timely notice of my Lord Mayor's going about, when he would be sure to have his bread full weight stand at his window. And if at any time he chanced to be catched, oh, how he would repine at his forced charity to see his bread given away to the poor, hating justice itself for the weigh-scales' sake, though it did the beggars as much good as their dinner, to see his basket sent to the prison.

When we had any stale mouldy bread, such as we could not sell

ourselves, or was returned us again by our customers, we used to soak it in water, and so mould it up again in our dough, which in summer time at four days' end would roap so that if you pulled it in pieces it would appear as if it were all cobwebs, which made us always to sell such bread new. Now what other knaveries he used in his trade, I was not there long enough to know them ; for because I used to forget to rise betimes in a morning, my master would remember me with a good ashen wand which he always kept in store by him, wherewith he would beat me as your seamen do stock-fish, insomuch that my flesh had on it all the colours in the rainbow, *viz.* black, blue, green, red, yellow, white, &c. Above all things in the world I liked not beating, wherefore I resolved to march off ; yet before I went I purposed to be in part revenged on him for those many blows he had given me. Now so it was that he lay above stairs, and I below, and when he came down, if he found me not up and about my business, he would so rib-roast me that I could have felt no cold although it had been frosty weather. Against that morning I intended to be gone, I had parched some pease in the oven that they were almost as hard as leaden bullets ; them did I strew here and there upon the stairs against my master's coming down. And so having put up my things and made myself ready, I stayed expecting what the event would be. Anon my master called me at the stairs' head ; I heard him very well, but made him no answer. Wherefore he, supposing I was asleep, was coming down to give me the bastinado, when treading on the pease his heels flew up, and down he came tumbling from the top to the bottom, swearing all the way he was falling, that this damned rogue (meaning me) intended for to break his neck. I hearing him to thunder so loud, thought it would lighten upon my jacket presently, and therefore to prevent it, I opened the door and shewed him a fair pair of heels, leaving him sore bruised with his fall, and more vexed that he could not come at me to revenge himself of me for the same.

### CHAPTER XIII

*He serveth a plasterer : sheweth some cheats in that trade : he is even with the maid of the house for her sloth, and punishing him : giveth his master a fall from the scaffold, and runneth away from him into the country*

I WAS now grown a good sturdy lad, and it being then the spring of the year, I was entertained into a plasterer's service. I imagined with myself that there could be no knavery in this trade, but after I had been there a while I found there was a great deal of difference in our labour

when we worked by the day and when we wrought by the great. In the one I could not be too quick for my master, in the other he cared not how slow ; dispatching that in six days in the one, which we would hardly do in ten days in the other. In the one we minded only our work, in the other we used to lengthen out the time with discourses of wenches, football playing, and such like ; for so we brought the day to an end we cared not so much for our work going forward, seeing our wages ran parallel with the day ; and when that was done, we counted our money due, whether we earned it or no. In this service I lived like a prince, to my heart's content, for my master would not only wink at any rogueries that I committed, but also countenance me in the doing of them. When we wrought upon scaffolds in the street it was a great pleasure to me to throw the mortar upon the heads of young wenches as they passed by ; and at other times with our whiting to bespatter gentlemen's cloaks as they walked under us, that they looked as if the crow had shit upon them.

My master kept a maid who was none of those huswifes that use to disturb other people's sleep by early rising ; she would endure three calls in a morning, and when she began to stir, she would groan sadly, stretching out her arms and legs, and giving a two or three "ha's" to get upon her breech ; when she would sit in her bed half an hour lacing of her bodice, and throwing of her coats over her head, so that we were forced to put up the victuals we carried with us ourselves. My master asked me if I could not invent a way to punish her sloth ? I told him I would do my best endeavour ; so that day I got some horsehair and shred it fit for my purpose, telling my master what I would do with it. At night, when he came home, he sent the maid for two pots of ale. When she was gone for it, I took my shred hair and strewed the same in her bed betwixt the sheets, which plagued her worse than if she had had half a peck of six footed vermin to her bedfellows. A good while she endured it, being exceeding loth to be at the pains of putting on her clothes, for she always accounted the trouble of dressing and undressing herself to be a great plague inflicted on mortals to disturb them of their ease, accounting the birds in a far happier condition than men, for they go to bed and rise with their doublet and breeches on ; and was resolved if she changed her religion to have turned Adamite, that she might have saved that labour of dressing herself. But the hair tormented her so abominably that *nolens volens* she was forced to rise and sit up until the morning, when looking in the sheets she found the cause of her disquietness. The cunning jade made no speech of it at all, but was as pleasant that morning as if she had ailed nothing all night ; which made me to mistrust my art, and think I had not done my business right.

All that day she was busied with her thoughts in contriving mischief

against me, the result whereof was, that she took the sheets from off her bed and laid them on mine, whereby she paid me home in my own coin, and whereof I could not justly complain, seeing what was sauce for a goose was sauce for a gander. I had worked very hard that day, and would willingly have taken some rest at night, but it was in vain to think of it. I might almost have lain as well upon pins and needles as on what I did. I then thought upon the story which is usually told boys when they first come to be apprentices concerning their enrolling, that they must be rolled in a barrel drove full of nails, with the points sticking up, and thought this punishment to be little inferior to that. Flesh and blood could not endure it, wherefore I got up and uncased my bed of the sheets, creeping in betwixt the blankets where I lay all night. In the morning the maid asked me how I slept that night? I told her very well, for my skin was proof against the biting of fleas, or any other disturbance whatsoever. But though I carried fair weather in my countenance, my heart boiled in revenge against her, wherefore that day I went and bought two pennyworth of cow-itch, which is a drug of that nature that where it touches the flesh, it will make them to scrub seventeen times worse than if they were plagued with the itch. With this I anointed her sheets in the same manner as I strewed them with horse-hair before; but if the hair nettled, this flayed; she had needed to have had Briarius's hundred hands to have scratched herself at once, for when she came to be a little hot in her bed she fared like a mad woman. The more she scratched the more it itched, so that by what she seeked to allay her pain, she increased it. The going out of her bed would not cure her now, she carried her distemper along with her, so that knowing not how to ease herself, she bellowed like a bull, and made such a quarter that the whole house was disturbed with her bellowing. All night she continued thus; in the morning I began to play upon her, told her that the scratching of her arse signified we should have butter cheap, and that however things went she would be sure to rub through with them. But had I not took my heels, she had so rubbed my ears for it, as would have turned my mirth into mourning.

That day was very fatal to me, and my running from the maid in the morning prognosticated I should run from my master before night. It so happened that we had some work to do that day at a tavern in Thames Street, the back-side whereof adjoined to the Thames, which the vintner would have beautified next to the water-side. Now to make him a scaffold to work on he put the ends of two long sticks out at the window, laying a board over them for him to stand on the outside; and on the inside fastened the end of the one with a cord, but wanting a cord for the other, he bid me to sit on it, thereby to keep it from kicking up.

Thus was all things ordered, my master gotten up upon his scaffold, which was just over the water, and I sitting on the end of the stick ; he fell a singing as he was accustomed to do at his work, and I fell a nodding, being lulled asleep with his singing. In my sleep I dreamt that my old master the cook was alive again, that I lived with him, and that our house was full of guests ; by and by some gentlemen knocked in the next room, I hearing them, imagined that I was called, and thereupon cried out, ‘Anon, Anon, I come I come, Sir,’ and thereupon fell a running, when up flew the stick, and down fell my master, crying all the way he fell ‘Help, help, I shall be drowned.’ The noise he made waked me out of my sleep, when looking forth of the window, I saw my master floating like a shittle-cock upon the water. I seeing what had happened, thought more upon saving myself than him, imagining if he were drowned that I should be hanged ; and therefore that I might not die the death of a dog, to prevent it, I run away leaving my master to shift for himself, whom though yet I loved well, and would not have parted from him but for this accident.

I made great haste in going, and yet knew not whither to go ; East, West, North, or South, all was indifferent to me, for it is impossible he can be out of his way to whom all ways are alike. London, though large and populous, I judged no coverture for me, I wanting those two great helps of concealment, money and friends. The country, therefore, I pitched upon, invited thereto the more it being then the merry month of May, the pleasantest time of all the year, the earth having then put on her richest apparel, the meadow clothed in green, the fields beautified with flowers, and the woods adorned with violets, cowslips, and primroses ; the winged choristers of the forest, warbled forth their ditties very harmoniously, the lambs frisked and leapt, dancing lavaltos on the flowry pastures, and the murmuring stream made a noise like to a chime of bells running through their winding Meanders.

As I was thus stricken into admiration of these beauties, and wholly taken up in contemplation of the felicities of a retired life, being already in my thoughts an absolute countryman, I being now some miles distant from the Metropolitan City of our fruitful Albion, on a sudden the welkin began to roar, and send forth terrible peals of thunder, the serene sky was overshadowed, and Phœbus hid his head behind a cloud, the heavens began first to weep small tears, afterwards to pour them in full rivulets upon the thirsty earth. I had then no pent-house to walk under to keep me from the rain, nor was there a red lattice at every nook and corner (as at London) to give me entertainment ; the spreading boughs of the sturdy oak were too feeble to defend me from being wet ; I looked like a drenched mouse, having never a dry thread on me. What to do I knew

not, money I had but little, friends none, a stranger both to the place and people, unexperienced in the world, as in the way where I travelled.

The consideration of those things made me add more moisture to the earth by the salt tears that trickled from my eyes, to stand still, I thought, was in vain, so forwards I went wet without, and dry within, (sorrow they say causeth drowth). At length I spied by a corner of a wood a little thatched cottage, thither I went, and found by an old rotten stick that darted out of it, in imitation of a signpost, that it was an ale-house. This something revived my drooping spirits, so in I went, to dry my outside and wet my inside ; where I found a good fire, and store of company of both sexes merrily trolling the bowl about, singing of catches, and smoking tobacco. No sooner was I entered but one of them drank to me a full cup, so down I sat amongst them, being all alike free citizens of the wide world. The strong ale soon washed away all sorrow from my heart, and now that I had a warm fire to sit by, and a house over my head, I bid a fig for all foul weather.

#### CHAPTER XIV

*He lighteth on a company of canting Beggars, and is stalled one of their society : is married to a doxy, with the manner of their wedding*

**T**HIS company that I thus happened into was a crew of canting beggars, pilgrims of the vast earth, the offspring of Cain, vagabonds and wanderers over the whole world, fit companions for such who make a trade for idleness and roguery. These were at this time fit companions for me, who seeing the merry life they led, resolved to make one of their company. Whereupon (after I had a little more ingratiated myself amongst them, and taken two or three cups more of Rum-booz) I imparted my intentions to one of the chief of them, telling him that I was a prentice who had a cursed master, whose cruelties had caused me to run away from him, and that what ever fortune might betide me, yet should not the most necessitous condition I could be plunged into ever make me to return to him again. Therefore, if I might be admitted into their society, I should faithfully observe and perform what rules and orders were imposed upon me.

He very much applauded me for my resolutions, telling me that to be a beggar was to be a brave man since it was now in fashion for brave men to beg. 'Do not we,' said he, 'come all into the world like arrant beggars, without a rag upon us ; and do not we all go out of the world

like beggars, without anything saving only an old sheet to cover us ? Shall we, then, be ashamed to walk up and down in the world like beggars, with old blankets pinned about us ? No, no, that were a shame to us indeed ; have we not the whole kingdom to walk at our pleasure ? Are we afraid of the approach of quarter-day ? Do we walk in fear of bailiffs, serjeants and catch-poles ? Who ever knew an arrant beggar arrested for debt ? Is not our meat dressed in every man's kitchin ? Does not every man's cellar afford us beer ? And the best men's purses keep a penny for us to spend ? '

Having by these words (as he thought) fully fixed me in love with begging, he then acquainted the company with my desires, who were all of them very joyful thereof, being as glad to add one to their society as a Turk is to gain a proselyte to Mahomet. The first question that they asked me was, if I had any 'loure' in my 'bung' ? I stared on them, not knowing what they meant, till at last one told me it was money in my purse. I told them I had but eighteen pence, which I freely gave them. This by a general vote was condemned to be spent in 'bouse' for my initiation. Then they commanded me to kneel down, which being done, one of the chief of them took a gage of bouse, which is a quart of drink, and poured the same on my head, saying, 'I do by virtue of this sovereign liquor, stall thee to the rogue, and make thee a free denizen of our ragged regiment ; so that henceforth it shall be lawful for thee to *cant* and to carry a *doxy* or *mort* along with thee, only observing these rules : First that thou art not to wander up and down all countries, but to keep only to that quarter which is allotted to thee ! and secondly, thou art to give way to any of us that have borne all the offices of the wallet before thee, and upon holding up a finger to avoid any town or country village where thou seest we are foraging to victual our army that march along with us. Observing these two rules, we take thee into our protection, and adopt thee a brother of our numerous society.'

He having ended his oration, I rose up, and was congratulated by all the company, hanging about me like so many dogs about a bear, and leaping and shouting like so many madmen, making such a confused noise with their gabbling that the melody of a dozen oyster-wives at Billingsgate, the scolding at ten conduits, and the gossipings of fifteen bake-houses were not comparable unto it. At length he that stalled me cried out for silence, bidding the French and English pox to light on their throats for making such a yelping ; then fixing his eyes upon me, he read a lecture to me out of the Devil's hornbook as followeth :

' Now,' saith he, ' that thou art entered into our fraternity, thou must not scruple to act any villainies which thou shall be able to perform ; whether it be to nip a bung, bite the Peter, cloy the lurries, crash either a

bleating cheat, cackling cheat, grunting cheat, quacking cheat, Tib of the buttery, Margery prater, or to cloy a mish from the crackmans : that is, to cut a purse, steal a cloak-bag or portmantle, convey away all manner of clothes, either a sheep, chicken, sucking pig, duck, goose, hen, or steal a shirt from the hedge ; for he that will be a queer cove, a professed rogue, must observe this rule, set down by an ancient patrico in these words.

‘ Wilt thou a begging go,  
O perse o, O perse o,  
Then must thou God forsake  
And to the Devil thee betake  
O perse o, &c.

‘ And because thou art as yet but a novice in begging, and understandest not the mysteries of the canting language, to principle thee the better, thou shalt have a doxy to be thy companion, by whom thou mayst receive fit instructions for thy purpose.’ And thereupon he singled me out a young girl of about fourteen years of age, which tickled my fancy very much that I had gotten a young wanton to dally withal. But this was not all, I must be married unto her after their fashion by their patrico (who amongst beggars is their priest), which was done after this manner.

They got a hen, and having cut off the head of it, laid the dead body upon the ground, placing me on the one side of it, and my doxy on the other. This being done, the patrico standing by, with a loud voice bid us live together till death did us part. Then one of the company went into the yard and fetched a dry cow-turd, which was broken over my doxy’s head in imitation of a bride-cake ; and so shaking hands, and kissing each other, the ceremony of the wedding was over, and for joy of the marriage we fell to drinking afresh, till we were all as drunk as beggars. But then to hear the gabbling noise we made would have made you to have blessed yourself, to hear such a Babel of confusion amongst us ; some were jabbering in the canting language, others in their own ; some did nothing but weep and protest love to their morts, others swore swords and daggers to cut the throats of their doxies if they found them tripping ; one would drink a health to the bride till he slavered again ; some were for singing bawdy songs, others were devising curses for justices of peace, head-boroughs, and constables ; at last night approaching, and all their money being spent, we betook us to a barn not far off, where we couched a hogshead in the darkmans, and went to sleep.

## CHAPTER XV

*The orders and degrees of the canting beggars, Men and Women, with their several qualities and manner of life*

THOUGH my lodging was homely, my bedfellow pleased ; yet though she were so young I could not boast of the purchase of her maidenhead, that being a dainty bestowed always on the Upright-men (the chief of the rogues) who must have the first taste of such morsels, and then are they free for any of the brotherhood. The whole night was spent in prigging, wapping, and telling of drunken stories ; in the morning as soon as Phœbus began to dart some of his beams through the crannies of the walls, the Patrico began to set up his larum, and to waken the rest with this song.

This is *Bien Bowse*, this is *Bien Bowse*,  
Too little is my skew.  
I *Bowse* no *Lage*, but a whole *Gage*  
Of this I'le *Bowse* to you.

This *Bowse* is better than *Rom-Bowse*,  
It sets the *Gan* a giggling ;  
The *Autem Mort* finds better sport  
In *Bowsing* than in *niggling*.

Tis better than *Peckidge, Plannam*,  
Than *Yarum, Loure*, or *Lage* ;  
Then lift the same up to thy *Nab*,  
And *Bowse* off a whole *Gage*.

Being thus roused, and having shaken our ears a little, the Upright-man (who was the bell-wether of the flock) appointed out the station wherein everyone should go, prefixing a day wherein we were all to meet again. My doxy and I had a particular walk assigned unto us, wherein we were to travel, and not to entrench upon any of the others' limits. Whilst I thus rambled about with her, I learned of her the several qualities and offices of the brotherhood, and how they were distinguished from each other according to their degrees of superiority and inferiority. The men were divided into these twenty several sorts :

- |                |                                 |
|----------------|---------------------------------|
| 1. Upright-men | 5. Wild Rogues                  |
| 2. Rufflers    | 6. Priggers of Prancers         |
| 3. Anglers     | 7. Palliards, or Clapperdugeons |
| 4. Rogues      | 8. Fraters                      |

- |                        |                   |
|------------------------|-------------------|
| 9. Quire Birds         | 15. Patricos      |
| 10. Abraham-men        | 16. Irish Toyles  |
| 11. Whip-jacks         | 17. Swig-men      |
| 12. Counterfeit Cranks | 18. Glymmerars    |
| 13. Dummerars          | 19. Curtalls      |
| 14. Jack-men           | 20. Kinchen Coves |

Of the women kind were only these six :

- |                  |                  |
|------------------|------------------|
| 1. Kinchen Morts | 4. Walking Morts |
| 2. Dells         | 5. Autem Morts   |
| 3. Doxies        | 6. Bawdy Baskets |

And now what these several sorts of people are, you shall hear by their descriptions.

1. An Upright-man is the chief of all the ragged regiment ; he walks like a commander with a short truncheon in his hand, which he calls his Filch-man ; pretends himself to be a decayed soldier, and claims a share in all the booties which any other inferior rogues do get. He hath all the morts and doxies at his beck, and can command them from any other of the gang at his pleasure. By this description you see there is a great deal of difference betwixt an Upright-man and an honest man.

2. A Ruffler is the same in condition as an Upright-man, like to like quoth the Devil to the collier ; they both of them pretend themselves to be decayed soldiers, are both of them very imperious over the inferior subjects of their commonwealth ; receiving tribute also from rogues, palliards, morts, doxies, &c.

3. The next are Anglers, but they seldom catch fish till they go up Westward for flounders. The rod they angle with is a staff of five or six foot in length, having a hole bored through it within an inch of the top, into which hole do they put an iron hook, and with the same do they angle at windows, about midnight, drawing therewith sheets, coverlets, or whatsoever they lay hold on, All is fish that comes to net.

4. A Rogue, whose very name doth shew his nature, and therefore he shall not need any further description.

5. A Wild Rogue is of the same nature as a Rogue, only this is the difference, that the one falls into this infamous and detestable course of life, either through laziness, death of parents, cruelty of masters, or the like, the wild rogue is bred up to it from his swaddling clouts, born a rogue, lives all his whole life a *rogue*, and disdains to take upon him any calling or profession whatsoever ; but as he lives, so dies a *Rogue*.

6. Priggers of Prancers are horse-stealers, for to prig, signifies in the canting language to steal, and prancer signifies a horse. The farmers

in the country, and gentlemen that keep horses, know these sorts of rogues too well, by dear experience.

7. Palliards, otherwise called Clapperdugeons, who go always with their morts at their heels, and to draw people the more to pity them, with sperewort or arsenic raise blisters on their legs, which they can cure again at their pleasure. When they come into the streets of a town or country village, they divide themselves, and beg one on one side of the street, and the other on the other side ; the purchase which they thus get they sell to poor tradesmen, or other labouring people, and with the money are merry at the bousing-ken.

8. A Frater is one that with a counterfeit patent goeth about with a wallet at his back, and a black box at his girdle, to beg for some hospital or spittle-house. He hath always a doxy whom he meets withal at night at some tippling-house, where they lewdly spend what was given him in the day by charitable well-minded people.

9. Quire Birds are those in whom the proverb is verified, Birds of a feather, Rogues together. They are such as formerly sung in such cages as Newgate, the White Lyon, or some other country gaol.

10. Abraham-men, or a Tom of Bedlam, is a man whom by his black and blue arms you may see to be much beaten to the world. He counterfeits madness, and by many fantastic tricks gets from silly country people bacon, and such other victuals as will fetch him ready money. He hath but two names for all people whatsoever, and that is Tom and Bess. No man shifts his linen oftener than he does his wenches.

11. Whip-jacks are such as travel about from town to town under the notion of shipwrecked seamen, with a counterfeit licence to beg, which licence they call a gybe, and the seals to it jarks. Their talk is all of sea voyages, but the end of their land voyage is for what they can get, and to rob booths at fairs, which they call heaving of the booth, at which they are very expert.

12. Counterfeit Cranks are such as pretend themselves to have the falling-sickness, and by putting a piece of white soap into the corner of their mouths, will make the froth to come boiling forth, to cause pity in the beholders. They stare wildly with their eyes to appear as if distracted, and go half naked to move the greater compassion. These cranks have likewise their meetings, and their wenches at command.

13. The Dummerar is cousin-german to the Crank, for as the one counterfeits the falling-sickness, so this counterfeits dumbness, making a horrid noise instead of speech by doubling his tongue in his mouth ; but if you give him nothing, he can then open his mouth to curse you privately. This Jack hath also his Jill, upon whom he spends his loure at the bousing-ken.

14. A Jack-man is one that can write and read, yea some of them have a smattering in the Latin tongue ; which learning of theirs advances them in office amongst the *beggars*, as to be clerk of their hall, or the like. His employment is to make gybes with jarks to them, which are counterfeit licences with seals, by which he gets store of money to make himself drunk withal.

15. The Patrico is their priest, every hedge is his parish, and every wandering rogue and whore is his parishioner. His service is only marrying of couples, by bidding them go together and multiply, and fill the world with a generation of vagabonds.

16. Irish Toyles are lusty rogues who go about with a wallet at their back, in which they carry pins, points, laces, and such like, and under colour of selling such wares commit many villainies.

17. A Swig-man is a degree higher than an Irish Toyle, as a tavern exceeds an alehouse, for he carries a pack behind him instead of a wallet, and is stored with more sorts of ware than the other, yet differs little from him in honesty ; they both pay tribute to the Upright man, as to their chief.

18. Glymmerars are such as travel up and down with licences to beg, because their houses have been consumed with fire, for glymmer in the Canting tongue signifies fire. They use a very sad tone in their begging, and tell a lamentable story how the fire destroyed their barns, stables, &c. by which lying tales they get store of loure to buy bub at the bousing-ken.

19. Curtalls are so called because they wear short clothes, being of the same nature as the rogues described before.

20. The last rank of this rambling crew are termed Kinchen Coves, being little boys whose parents were formerly beggars, but are now dead, or else such as have run away from their masters, and instead of a trade to live by, follow this kind of life to be lousy by. The first thing they do is to learn how to cant, and the only thing they practise is to creep in at windows or cellar doors.

Thus have I given you a brief description of the men, by which you may give a shrewd guess of the women ; for you cannot imagine if the one were Devils that the other would be Saints. Take them therefore in their own character ;

1. Of this sort the first of them are called Kinchen Morts ; their mothers carry at their backs in their slates, *id est*, sheets. When the morts beg, they use to prick these kinchens with pins, that by their crying they may move people to a speedier distribution of their alms.

2. Dells are young wenches that have not lost their maidenheads,

but being once deflowered, (which commonly is when they are very young) they then change the name of dell into doxy ; even as maids when they come to be married, lose that appellation, and are called women.

3. Doxies are such as have been deflowered by the Upright-men, and are after common to any of the brotherhood. They will, if they see convenient, for a small piece of money prostitute their bodies to any that will deal with them, and do too often murder those infants which are so gotten. They have one special badge to be known by, for most of them go working of laces and shirt-strings, or such like stuff, only to give colour to their idle wandering.

4. A Walking Mort is one that hath increased the world with lullaby-cheats or young children, yet was never married ; they are very dangerous queans to meet withal, being cunning in dissembling, and without all fear of God and good laws ; and are kept in awe only by the Upright-men, who oftentimes rifle them of all that they have.

5. An Autem Mort is another sort of these she-devils, and differs only from a Walking Mort in that she is married. For Autem, in the canting tongue, signifies a church, although that be a place she seldom comes at. They commonly walk with their wallets on their shoulders, and slates or sheets at their backs, and will pilfer anything that lies carelessly about houses, which they call in their language nilling of the ken. Their husbands commonly are Rufflers, Upright-men, Wild Rogues, &c.

6. The last of this ragged regiment are called Bawdy Baskets, which are women that walk with baskets or cap-cases on their arms, wherein they have pins, points, needles, and such like things to sell, going thus from house to house to sell their ware ; buy coneyskins, and steal what they can lay their hands on, driving three trades at once. They are very fair spoken, and will seldom swear whilst they are selling their wares, but will lie with any man that hath a mind to them. The Upright-men and these are in perfect league and amity one with another.

Thus have I briefly dissected to you this knot of vipers, who may very fitly be termed the Devil's black guard. Whose whole life consisteth of a continued act of all impiety, no sin but is frequently committed amongst them, especially that sin of lechery ; to which end you shall find sometimes together in a barn forty of these Upright-men, Rufflers, Clapperdungeons, &c. ingendering beggars with their morts. Adultery they boast of ; incest they laugh at ; sodomy they jest at, being all of the family of love or lust rather ; rope ripe, nuts for the Devil's cracking, and fit fuel for firing for his kitchin. But I have

dwell too long upon this filthy subject, I shall only give you a brief character of a canting rogue, and so return to the progress of my own life.

He should seem by his rambling mind to be begot by some intelligencer under a hedge, for he is wholly addicted to travel, and hath one especial privilege above most travellers, that he is never out of the way. He is not troubled with making of jointures ; he can divorce himself without the fee of a proctor, nor fears he the cruelty of overseers of his will ; for there is small danger of his children being cheated of their estates, by which means he makes not work for the lawyers after his decease. He leaves his children all the world to cant in, and all the people to be their fathers to provide for them. His language is always one and the same ; the Northern speech differs from the South, Welsh from Cornish, but canting is general, nor ever could be altered by conquest of the Saxon, Dane, or Norman. He will not beg out of the limit prescribed him by the Upright-man, though he starve ; nor falsify his oath, if he swear by his Solomon (which is the Mass) though you hang him ; and to shew himself a true subject of their commonwealth, he pays his custom as truly to his Grand Rogue, as tribute is paid to the Great Turk.

The Spring is as welcome to him as a warm bed to a weary traveller, for then begins his progress after a hard Winter ; and the sun which breeds agues in others, he adores it like the Indian. Ostlers cannot endure him, for he is of the infantry, and serves best on foot ; and if through sickness at any time he ride, his stage is but to the next town, and that in a dung-cart. He offends not the Statute against the excess of apparel ; the fuller of rags, the more fashionable for his calling ; and to go naked he accounts but a voluntary penance. Forty of them will lie in a barn together, yet are never sued upon the Statute of Inmates. He shifts lodgings oftener than men shift their shirts, and hath more change of morts and doxies than he hath of lodgings. If he were learned, no man could make a better description of England, for he hath surveyed it more exactly than the best cosmographer whatsoever, having travelled it over and over. Lastly, he can brag of this, that repairing of houses will never undo him ; and that though he eats and drinks every day, yet he shall not die one penny in debt either to the brewer, or to the butcher.

## CHAPTER XVI

*In prosecution of his begging, he steals a hen : is taken in the manner, and whipped, and imprisoned in the cage, from whence he escapes, and assists in the robbing of a house, where he gets a good booty and escapes, but his companions are caught, one hanged, and two transported : he hearing this, makes haste to London*

IT was the Spring of the year when I took this lazy trade of life upon me ; the harmony of the birds singing, and the variety of the flowers which beautified the verdant fields made me the more willing to embrace this sordid course, not thinking of a winter that would strike dumb those winged choristers, and invest the earth with a robe of snow instead of all her painted bravery. Custom had soon habituated me to a liking of lodging in straw, attracted the more by my amorous bed-fellow, and so long as I had my fill of ease, I could well be contented to fast from dainties. But for my life I could not bring my tongue to the right tone of begging, although I were habited fit for the purpose, with a dirty night-cap loathsome to behold, my face all smeared, my clothes set full with patches upon the whole cloth, a red clout upon my leg, and supporting my body with a staff as if I had been a cripple. Many a mile we rambled, yet keeping still in our own station, for fear of the Upright-man. But my counterfeit plea for begging was at last discovered, and to all my dainties I had whipping cheer added ; for going one day not far off from a farm-house, the straggling hens invited me to have a throw at them with my staff, and having struck one of them, I had forgotten my lameness, but very nimbly ran and took her up, putting her under my patched coat, where I had a bag sewed in that was a receptacle for all stolen goods.

It chanced that the farmer himself was then on the other side of the hedge, who undiscovered by me saw my activity in the stealing of his hen, and was resolved, though I put it up, that he would not. But I dreading nothing, thinking myself unseen, went directly to the house, and as soon as I came into the yard fell to my old trade, leaning on my staff, and drawing my leg after me, as if scarce able to stand, much less to run. Having gotten to the door, I began to set up my tone with a 'Good tender-hearted people, be pleased to bestow your charity upon a poor miserable wretch that is both lame and hungry ; one penny of silver to buy him salve for his sore leg, or one morsel of victuals to put into his belly that hath had nothing come in it this couple of days.' No sooner had I ended my maunding, thinking to mump the farmer

out of some money, or at leastwise some bread to my hen, but he having watched me, now seized hold of my arm, and told me, that though it might be true that I had not lately eaten, yet he saw I was resolved to be better provided for the future, and so turning back my coat discovered my bag, where was not only the hen, but some other provant I had lately purchased. I finding myself caught, would gladly have given him the slip, but some of his servants, as well as himself, stopped me. Without any more ado the Harman-beck was sent for, who being a neighbour was quickly come, and by this time I had a great train of boys and girls to attend me. I needed not much examination, being thus taken in the manner, but however they were all desirous to see my sore leg ; I was forced to let them do what they would with me, knowing there was no remedy but patience, and so I suffered them to unroll and take off the clouts and rollers that was upon it, when coming to the skin, that was as whole and as sound as a fish. But though my leg was well and whole, my heart was now almost broken with consideration of what they would do with me ; some proposed one punishment, and some another, but at length to the whipping-post I was led, where my doublet and shirt being stripped off, my back was so long laced with a cart-whip, that I capered and flounced like a horse in a quagmire, and I was as fast, too, being hand-cuffed so that I could not stir.

It was well it was the spring-time, for I lost blood enough to purge away the gross humours without the help of a surgeon, that office being supplied by a thrasher who took as much pains upon me as would have thrashed a bushel of pease. But at length there was a cessation, and a new parley began, wherein it was propounded what further course should be taken with me ; and considering that there was a kind of felony committed upon the hen, they advised and agreed to lead me to the next justice of the peace to have his judgment in the case, though I thought it unreasonable to suffer punishment first, and then to be judged. Yet it was to no purpose to complain, and all I could say would not prevail with them to let me go, but they would conduct me to the justice ; so that I having put on my clothes, my shirt stuck to my back and made me sensible that I had lost leather ; but for all that on I must. The justice living a mile off, the thrasher who had lashed me, and two or three others made holiday to attend me. When we came before the justice, he hearing that I had been punished already, was content at my importunity to acquit me from any other, and only to make a pass to send me home to London, being the place where I told them I was born. I not having power to contradict, was forced to consent to what was commanded, and that constable attending me

out of his liberties to another constable, left me ; this new constable, who now had me in keeping, not being willing to go further with me, for that night put me up in the cage, where I was locked up, but not so safely but I made shift to break out ; and travelling all night, by the next morning I was far enough off for them to overtake me.

All that day I concealed myself in a wood, and when night came I proceeded on my journey. But it so happened that on the second night of my travel, about midnight, I was overtaken by three persons who demanded where I was going ? I told them any whither. What was I ? I replied a wretched person whom fortune had persecuted, and therefore I was indifferent whither I went, or what I did. Hearing me say so, they retired a little to consult about their affairs, and then one of them coming up to me, demanded several questions of me of my late course of life ? To all their questions I returned them such answers as caused them to conclude me to be a rambler, and therefore fit for their society, and therefore they asked me if I were willing to hazard myself in enterprizing somewhat, that though it might be something dangerous, yet it should be very profitable. To this I answered, that they should soon find my willingness expressed in the boldness of my actions, and if seconded or assisted by them, I should act anything they would direct and appoint.

They hearing my resolution, soon consented to admit me into their society, and acquainted me with their present purpose, which was to rob a house not far from that place. They told me that I must be valiant and bold, not in fighting, for they knew they should meet with little occasion to exercise any weapon, but in entering the house, and performing other such matters as they should instruct me in. I told them I consented to what they should propose, and therefore desired them to tell me what part I was to act in this enterprize, and as for a part of the purchase, I should leave that to them, which I desired them to give me as I should deserve. Then one of these persons told me that he was very well acquainted in the house, and gave me an account of the several ways and passages into every room, and who was lodged in such chambers. In fine, I discovered that there was but two men, and three womenkind in the house, and he being a coachman, had lately brought the master of the house home with two hundred pound, of which he had a desire to rob him ; and therefore had joined these two persons with him in the confederacy. Being thus instructed, we proceeded, and arriving at the house, I was put in at a window, and directed how to open the doors, which I did. The coachman stayed below stairs, and we other three, by his directions, went up into the chambers. The doors we soon opened, and coming to the bedside where the

master of the house and his wife was, we drawing our swords (for I had the coachman's delivered to me) opened our dark lanthorns, and seeing the man and woman, without many words we bound and gagged them ; and they leaving me to watch them, went into the other chambers to do the like to the rest.

I being left alone in this room was not idle, but rummaged about and found a gold watch, a few rings, and twenty pieces of gold. These I secured for myself, and soon after my companions returned ; when taking the keys out of the gentlewoman's pocket, we soon found what we came for, the two hundred pound, and so marched off without any stay, or the least interruption. The coachman stayed below in the hall, where he had made a strict search, and had likewise plundered something from thence which after turned little to his profit ; but we all left the house with the doors open, and marched with the spoils of the field, bag and baggage, to a house about a mile distant, where they were so courteous as to give me fifteen pounds out of the profits of their adventure. I (being sensible that I was well enough paid, in regard of the gold and other things I had concealed) thankfully received it, and so left them, marching on further to the next great town, where the next day I understood a great fair was to be kept, and therefore I thought that place the most fitting to conceal myself in, and be freest from suspicion. I got in a barn and rested myself, taking some sleep ; but was much disturbed, being in great fear lest some misfortune might befall me. And to the end that I might be the freer from suspect, in case of a Hue and Cry, I went to a salesman's booth which was in the fair, and furnished me with a sad-coloured suit and cloak, citizen-like, that I might pass for such a one if occasion were. My old clothes I left behind me in the barn where I stripped myself.

Thus did I escape all danger, but my companions fared worse than I, for the covetous coachman not having anything else whereton to exercise himself, stole a looking-glass which was below stairs, while we were above, and to conceal it from the rest of his companions put it in his codpiece. When they had sufficiently stayed at the house where I left them, and had shared the prize, they went to go homewards, but being flustered with the bottles of wine they had for joy drank off, they made it so long that it was seven of the clock in the morning ere they parted, and then were they overtaken by the Hue and Cry, with a constable, who though he knew the coachman very well, and did not suspect him, yet seeing him and his two companions so flustered, and somewhat to hang out at the knees of the coachman's breeches, they made some stay, asking whether he had lately been at some wedding and had bride-laces, which he had put in his breeches. The coachman

being somewhat blanked at this discovery, knew not what answer readily to return. This caused them to examine him who they were that were his companions, and where they had been? They were all now deeper surprized than before, which gave so great suspicion that occasioned a search, and in the end they found what they sought for, (the money). That which hung out at the coachman's breeches were some ribbons that were fastened to the looking-glass. Upon this discovery they were all apprehended, carried before a justice, and upon examination being found directly guilty, committed to gaol.

This did I hear of at the fair that afternoon, as I was drinking in a booth. At the recital of this story, if any one had observed me, they might easily have conjectured that I was concerned therein; for I was possessed with so much fear that I looked like one rather dead than alive. But there was no occasion to suspect me, for the three others, my companions, being taken and with them the greatest part of the money, there was no occasion to make any further enquiry. Then did I bless my good fortune that I had left them so suddenly, and was so much out of danger, and that evening I proceeded further on in my way towards London. But being well furnished with silver and gold, I took up my quarters in a very good inn, where I had a good supper and soft bed, and slept very well, considering the trouble I was in. At this inn I stayed several days to hear what would become of my companions, for the assizes were then at hand. I received this satisfaction, that they being tried, were all cast for their lives; the coachman hanged, and the other two were to be transported. This was the end of my piece of thievery, and I did then resolve never to hazard myself again in such matters, lest I came off with as bad success as the coachman.

I stayed so long in this inn, pretending to wait the coming of a sister of mine, that one day who should arrive there but the maid-servant who lived with the plasterer I had served and, as I supposed, was the cause of his drowning. Now was I in greater fear than before, for I had lately escaped hanging for theft, and now expected it for murder; and I knew that this wench was malicious enough against me, and would rather injure me by her exclamations than secure me by her silence. I therefore intended to give her the go-by, but could not, for she had now cast her eye upon me and discovered me, and came straight up to me to speak with me. 'How now,' says she, 'You have made a fair ramble! Is it not time to return?' 'Well,' said I, 'be silent a little, and let me speak with you in private'; and thereupon taking her by the hand, I led her into a private room, where calling for some drink, I enquired of her how all our friends did, and more particularly for my master. 'Why,' said she, 'you know well enough

that he is dead.' At this word I was more dead than alive, neither was I for the present able to ask her any more questions.

The drink being brought in, she drank to me. 'Well,' said she, 'I am glad to see you here.' 'So am not I,' thought I: but recovering my lost senses, I demanded of her how long my master had been dead. She replied, a fortnight. 'Nay,' thought I, 'then the case is not so bad as I suspected,' and therefore I proceeded in questioning of her how he died, and many other questions. She answered that he died of a fever, which kept him not above fourteen days sick; and he being dead, she was now returning into the country to visit her friends.

Now was I fully satisfied that I needed not fear any danger, wherefore I called for a bottle of canary, which we drank off; and she related to me that he was not much hurt by the fall that I gave him, for he went again to work the next day, and had made much enquiry after me, but as yet in vain. I told her that I indeed doubted that he had been drowned by the fall which he had received into the water, and therefore had absented myself ever since from London, wandering up and down in several disguises. 'But,' said I, 'I will now go to London again, but never to serve out my time at that trade; for if I come upon a scaffold again, I shall be much frightened with the remembrance of that disaster.' She told me, that now indeed I was free to dispose of myself since my master was dead, and might choose my trade and master.

Thus did we spin out several hours of that day and night together, till it was time to go to bed, and then we parted. She the next morning proceeded in her journey into the country, and I pursuing my resolutions of going to London, likewise went forward; but by the way met with an adventure, which I shall relate to you in the next chapter.

## CHAPTER XVII

*In his journey to London, he overtakes a trooper and a wench: he lies with her and two more of her companions, and after this frolic he goes with them all to London*

I WAS now resolved nothing should hinder me from proceeding in my journey to London, and that I might get thither the sooner, I endeavoured to borrow a horse, but could not procure one, I being a stranger, every person was unwilling to trust me. But at noon-day staying for a bait, I happened into the company of a trooper, who was

likewise travelling to London. We dined together, and he asking whither I was going, I told him. He said he should be glad of my company. I said, that would be very pleasing to me if I might enjoy his, but I could not, because he was better furnished for a journey than I, being provided with a horse, and I on foot. He told me that inconveniency might be supplied, for there were horses in the stable to be let. I told him that I would give any consideration for the hire of one, and that he, if acquainted, might do me much kindness in procuring one for me. He seeing me full of money, quickly procured me a horse, engaging himself that I should leave the beast at his London quarters. My host being well acquainted with him, and he being to ride along with me, was contented : and I paying five shillings for his hire, had the horse delivered to me, and on his back I mounted, thinking myself to be some brave fellow. As we rid along together, we overtook a female creature, young and handsome, in somewhat an ancient decayed, but genteel garb. The trooper being a notable well experienced blade, soon fell into discourse with her, and found her to be a rambling baggage, whose journey was now intended for London, and would be glad of our company, were she accommodated with a horse. To that I offered her my service, and agreed that she should ride behind me ; to which she assenting, soon mounted, and now we merrily put on, holding a pleasing discourse with our female companion. I had a great desire to take a better view of her than I could, being thus on horseback together, and therefore persuaded the trooper to make a halt at the next town which we came to, where we all dismounted, and I saluted my lady, who kindly received my courtesy. The trooper, after some discourse, was well enough acquainted with the lady, having often times been merry with her and others, at the house where she lodged in London. He called me on one side, and told me that she was a person with whom he had been formerly acquainted, and so might I too, if I would, and if I had any desire thereto, he could and would assist me.

I told him he had done me many kindnesses in the small time of my acquaintance, and now he had offered that which exceeded all ; for indeed I was much taken with her beauty, and very desirous I was to enjoy her.

‘ Well,’ said he, ‘ let us be going from hence, and make you your bargain with her as you ride along by the way, and I will take such care in the business that you shall be entertained as man and wife at my quarters, and there lie together.’ I was infinitely glad of this his kind proffer, and thankfully accepted thereof, and so after some little longer stay, we again mounted our steeds and put forwards. According

to his instruction I courted my mistress, and without much difficulty obtained her promise to permit me to lie with her, and so we rid on till we arrived at the trooper's quarters, where he told his landlady that he had brought her some guests ; 'for this young man and his wife,' said he, pointing to us, 'will stay here all night.' 'They shall be welcome,' said the hostess, and so a supper was provided. As we did eat and drink with a very good appetite, my landlady did accompany us, who I found was very well respected, and familiar with the trooper ; and bed-time being come, which I had much desired, I and my lady went to bed, neither did the trooper lie alone, for our landlady was his bedfellow. How he spent the night I know not, but I am sure for our part we slept but little, for it was the first time that I ever enjoyed a woman naked in my arms all night, and I was ravished with delight, never having had so much pleasure. My bedfellow was well enough contented with the entertainment I gave her ; we discoursed of one another's fortunes, but whether she told me the truth of hers, I know not, but I disguised mine wholly from her, not thinking it fit to make her acquainted with my late adventures. She told me that the occasion of her late travel was this, that she and two women more of her acquaintance had been persuaded by three gentlemen to a ramble, and had gone down to such a city in a coach ; that they had for some time continued together as three men and wives at an inn, and there had enjoyed a full plenty of everything ; but at length the three gentlemen had basely left them to pay a great reckoning in a strange place, and all they had would not make the one half of it ; that they had for some time waited in expectation of the return of their friends, but in vain, so that at last 'it was agreed, that one of us,' said she, 'should go for London, and procure money to redeem the rest ; and the lot falling on me I have prosecuted the journey, and hope to raise money to relieve, and redeem my companions.' I, hearing this story was sensibly troubled thereat, and offered her my assistance, and she so far prevailed with me that I lent her five pound to send to her companions, she promising me to continue either there, or at any other place with me so long as I should please, and at our coming to her quarters at London to repay me my money with many thanks. To all this I agreed, and the next day she conveyed most part of the money to her companions by a coach that travelled thither.

Thus did I enjoy this lady for many nights together, and lying at rack and manger. The horse I sent back at the directions of the trooper, who likewise continued with his hostess, and only my purse paid for all ; but indeed we lived sparingly enough, the trooper being one of the honestest travellers that I ever met with. The coachman who

carried the money to the afflicted and distressed damoiselles returned, and with him the ladies, very glad of their safe return ; and very thankful were they, not only to their companion who sent it, but also to me of whom, she said, she procured it.

And now we all thought of removing to London, but one night more we lay at our old quarters, where I had the greatest frolic I was ever guilty of, for that night I kissed with all three of the women, and pleased them round, by giving each of them a trial of my skill. What now could I desire to enjoy further ? I thought myself to be as brave a fellow as the great Turk in his Seraglio, he having but his choice of women, which I now enjoyed to my full content. But morning coming, we took leave of our hostess and the trooper, and all four taking coach, soon came to London, where I took up my quarters with my three damsels, who made very much of me ; and indeed they were the honestest wenches, and I had the best frolic that I ever had in my life. But in time I was weary of this life, for what man can last out always ? And I finding my pocket begin to shrink, bethought me that it was fit to leave off in time, for all my silver was gone, and ten pound of my twenty pound in gold. But I selling my watch and rings raised ten pound more ; with this stock of twenty pound I was resolved to retire, and fit myself for some employment. My three ladies never offered to return me the five pound I had lent them, neither indeed could I handsomely expect it ; for they had been very liberal in their expenses, and had declined all other company to accommodate me. They heard of their three gentlemen who had trapanned them in the country, and so wisely played their cards that they gained all their money again, I assisting them, and pretending the man of the house had assigned the money to me. I scorned to pocket any of it, but gave it amongst them ; and so being resolved to take another course of life, I retired myself from them : and to the end that I might be fitted for an employment, I hired one who was well known therein, to teach me to write more perfectly than I could formerly, as also arithmetic. I likewise hired several books of a stationer, for which I gave him so much *per week*. These being chiefly knight-errantry and romances, I took much pleasure therein. I had a mind to diversion, and went to visit my damoiselles, and thus did I live the pleasantest life in the world ; but I had so much reason as to think that things would not last long as they were, and I had no inclination to stealing, more virtuous thoughts had now possessed me, and therefore a trade being the only thing that would maintain me, I enquired for one, and settled myself, as you shall hear in the next chapter.

## CHAPTER XVIII

*He being now come to London, puts himself prentice to a tailor : he gets acquaintance with prentices of all sorts, is with them at their tavern-frolics. He is employed by a scrivener to make clothes for a wench ; he goes with him to her, and returning, the scrivener promises him an account of that trade*

BEING now come to London, I was resolved not to be idle, but settle myself to some one trade, that I might be able to get a living. And having already had trial of several, at first a barber surgeon, then a tapster, a cook, a locksmith, tailor, baker, and plasterer ; and being still forced for some reason or other to leave them all, did now resolve to fix upon one that should do my business, and whereby I might at all times and in all places be able to live by my hands, for lands I had none. I considered of all the trades I had already been a practitioner in, and many others ; none suited so well with my humour as that of a tailor. Wherefore I sought for several masters, but they were all unwilling to take me for less than seven years, it being the custom of London that none can be bound for less time, nor be made a freeman till they have served so long. I was unwilling to bind myself on those terms, knowing my temper was variable, and did believe I should not hold out to serve such a term ; but after several enquiries and trials I did light upon a master who was willing to take me for five years. Only this I persuaded him to do in regard I already had a good hand in working, and being industrious in my employment, so that though I was bound for seven years, yet I had a writing under my master's hand that the last two years I should dispose of myself as I pleased, and yet he could make me a freeman at seven years' end.

My master was not only a tailor, but kept a broker's shop, wherein he sold all sorts of clothes new and old. He lived in one of the principal streets in the City, and was in good esteem with his neighbours, who were all persons of some quality, not of the meaner sort, but substantial tradesmen, as goldsmiths, grocers, drugsters, scriveners, stationers, &c. and I (being now well fitted with clothes, and having my pockets pretty well lined with money which I had still kept by me) was a fit and welcome companion to the best sort of apprentices, in whose society I did soon insinuate myself. Having money to spend equal with the best, I came acquainted with a whole gang of such blades, that all my former knowledge was nothing in comparison to what I soon experimented from them, for their masters being of the

wealthiest sort of citizens, and keeping country houses at Newington, Hackney, Stepney, &c. they often had opportunity in their absence to meet, and keep their club or general rendezvous, which was commonly every other night, at one of the taverns near adjoining. My master (who did well enough understand that I was frequently abroad, and in what company I spent my time) did not in the least oppose or contradict me therein, for I soon found that these young jovial blades, though apprentices, yet they were my master's best customers, for there was none of them but had a suit or two of clothes *a la mode*, which commonly lay at our house, which they put on when they had any frolic out of town, either at Christmas, Easter, or Whitsuntide, or at any other time, when they pretending some urgent occasions, would give their masters the slip.

Thus was I one of the gang, and had liberty to be with them so often as I pleased, by the connivance of my master, whose profit consisted in my acquaintance with them. I soon brought him some new customers, out of whom he could squeeze good store of money for making their clothes, and sometimes he made three or four suits at a time, yet had no money for his pains, but he was satisfied otherwise in commodities, which were more to his profit. The mercer paid his bill in stuffs, the draper in cloth, and the rest either in other good commodities which they had of their masters, or with which they were furnished by their companions. When any of them intended a new suit for himself, friend, or mistress, it was but summoning the brethren of the club together, and then the mercer brought his stuffs or silks, the milliner buttons, ribbons, and linings, for which they had in exchange such other commodities as the others could produce. There were only two trades that had little or no commodities to exchange, and these were the scrivener and bookseller, and therefore I wondered from whence they should get to be so fine as the rest; but I observed what they wanted in wares, was supplied in money, which was a commodity would command everything else. How they should get this money I knew not, for I could not imagine that in making of bills and bonds the scrivener could cheat his master of much money, or that the bookseller could sell many books by the by, and put the money in his own pockets, for I knew they were not so vendible a commodity as cloth, silk, &c.

But one evening we being at our general rendezvous, where we had good wine, and better company, being attended by two or three suburban females, who were the doxies of our comrades, the scrivener (having the finest out-side, being in his private suit of apparel, and having his pockets well lined with muslin of gold and silver) took occasion to court one of

the women not only publicly, but privately ; and though she were till then a stranger to him, yet he won her from her other friend. To induce her to be kind to him he called me to him and ordered me to provide her a new gown, and petticoat, of flowered tabby, and immediately calling to our mercer who served us all, gave him as much money as the silk was worth ; and all the engagement he desired from the Bona Roba, was that he might have the first taking up of the petticoat, and then if she liked her old sweet-heart best she might afterwards use her pleasure, either in admitting him or t'other to her embraces, or either of them as she pleased. To this they all three agreed, and the mercer who took about four pound for silk was ordered (by a general vote) to spend forty shillings of the money for that present reckoning, and all the rest went scot-free, and after a lusty cup of wine, some dishes of meat, and fiddlers, they for that time broke up their meeting.

This liberality, or rather prodigality of the scrivener put me into some confusion, and very desirous I was to know how he gained so much money. Wherefore I speedily procured the apparel to be made, and delivered it to him to his content, I so highly pleased him that he desired me to go with him to the lady's lodging who was to wear it. I accordingly waited on him thither, and she receiving him with much cheerfulness accepted it ; it was soon put on, and it was not long before they retired out of the room wherein I was, into another ; where I suppose she was so courteous as to permit him not only to take up the petticoat, and somewhat else to his liking, but to dispose of her at his pleasure, for they stayed together near an hour.

Neither was I left alone, but had the old matron of the house, and a young Bona Roba to accompany me, where we were not idle, but made the bottles of sack, and Stepony fly for it. When their business was over (and ours almost done, for we had so plied the liquor that our noddles were fuller of wine than wit) they briskly entered the room where we were, and without any coyness fell stoutly to drinking ; for seeing us near thirty one, they with full bowls quickly put us out, so that I was enforced to go to sleep, which I supposed I did for about three hours. Awaking I found my gallants wanting, but I believe they were not all at that time idle, for upon enquiry and search I found them in another chamber together, where I suppose she had fully performed the agreement for her clothes to the content of the scrivener, who now after a fresh bottle of wine, and payment of the reckoning which was no small one, hearty farewells given and taken of his mistress, her companion, and the matron we left that house, and taking coach ordered the coachman to drive to the next tavern to my master, where we called for a room, wine, and a fire.

He gave me an angel for my day's service, and shifting himself put on his ordinary, and gave me his best clothes to lay up at my master's, wishing me to acquaint him that I had been in his company, and that would be sufficient for my excuse. I thanked him for his kindness, and civility, and told him that his bounty had so tied me to him that I should at all times be joyful if I might serve him. 'As for my bounty,' said he, 'I shall for the future be more free to you, and for money you shall not want. I am always in capacity to furnish my friends, having the command of a great deal of cash, which I know well enough how to order to my own advantage, and it is but reason that I should dispose of some as well as my master, for it is in my power to strip him of the greatest part of his estate, and ruin him in his credit.' I being inquisitive after secrets, desired him to tell me how that trade (which I supposed, only consisted in the making a few small writings) could be so profitable. To this he answered that indeed it was true they made not many writings, but dealt in much money, and his master had an extraordinary way, 'for' (pursued he) 'if my master wants two or three thousand pound he can quickly command it, though he began with nothing, and indeed had every bird her feather, he hath no estate. But he hath such slights, ways, and confederates that he can do what he listeth. He hath one piece of brass hath yielded him two thousand pound.' 'That is much,' said I, 'and there must be more in your trade than I can imagine. I would be very glad to be acquainted with some of your mysteries, and since you have promised me your friendship, whatever you shall relate to me shall be surely and safely closeted up in my breast, and shall never by me be offered to your prejudice. It may be some of my advice in your affairs may be profitable, for I have had much more experience in the world than you imagine.' This discourse, and some other arguments which I used, induced him to give me a relation of many passages of his life, with much of the knaveries of that mysterious trade, which discourse he began to me in this manner.

## CHAPTER XIX

*The scrivener recounts the wagggeries he committed the first three years of his apprenticeship, and his master's first cheats by counterfeiting a seal*

**W**HEN I first came to prentice, my master (by reason of the wars, which caused a general deadness in trading) had but little to do. He being one of the confiding party, did thereby get acquaintance with several rich men, and in short time by reason of the pretended sanctity,

was entrusted by a usurer to put out five hundred pound, which he did to his content ; for he had a lease of a city company's which cost seven hundred pound assigned for security. My master never having dealt in money before, and now finding the sweetness of procuration, and making of writings, longed to be at it again. But though he had moneys offered him to put out, yet he could not meet with any security to content ; for personal security by reason of the casualty of the wars was generally disliked, and land in the country was for the same reason refused. Only leases in London, or lands about London, was counted sufficient and approved of, wherefore this company's lease, on which he had procured money did run much in his head, wishing for such another security, and projecting somewhat, which since he had put in execution, as I will tell you by and by. But I will first acquaint you how I behaved myself for the first three years of my time, whereby my master took so good a liking to me, as to communicate his secrets to me.

My master was always good natured and kind to me : but on the contrary, my mistress was cross and foward, so that I could seldom get a good word from her. She would employ me in several pieces of drudgery, as to carry burthens from London to our country house, and then I must bring back from thence fletten or skimmed milk, on which we must feed two or three days in the week, when my master would allow good roast beef, which she would send for away. I was even with her for her niggardliness, and when I came to the country house, I would usually get my share of the cream, and being a lover of the pies and puddings, steal some from her. One time I being in the larder, had a great mind to a baked-pudding that was there, but at first durst not meddle with it, because it was with other good cheer to be served up at the table to dinner, where were some guests ; but for all that, the loveliness of the pudding made me to take my knife, and turning it upside down, cut out one half of it, and so turning it down again, left it to be served hollow to the table. As I departed for London ere dinner was served, I know not how the maids came off.

At other times when I came to the country house, if the fruit of the orchard were ripe, then the gate was locked, and I was not admitted therein, but I would have my share by day or night for I once invited some of my confederates to church thither on a Sunday, and in the sermon time went with them and robbed our own orchard, which no body else durst attempt because of our mastiff. Nay, I went once from London at midnight, and having some of my mates with me I entered the orchard, and fetched out the fruit which I was sure should be of the best and choicest of all the ground, and gave it to my companions, and so we returned loaden to London.

And thus did I vex her for her niggardliness, and although my master did well enough suspect me, yet he would only laugh at my mistress when she was most passionately angry, and say she was but rightly served. But at length my master had a son, who when I first came to prentice was at boarding school. But in time growing up, his mother had a great desire to have him live at home and be a clerk. My master's employment increasing, I gained money, and bought me some fine clothes, and wore a watch in my pocket. At all which she was envious, and desirous that her son might enjoy what I did, and therefore bound he was to his father, and though this happened three years after I came, yet such was the injustice that I had done me, that he was not only placed before me in a seat, but I was commanded to make clean his shoes, and attend him, as if he had not been a servant. This, though, I was forced to comply with, yet I was resolved to be revenged of, and therefore set my wits to work. I did clean his shoes, but in the edges instead of greasing them, I anointed them with aqua fortis, and he putting them on, and going to the further end of London, the soles of the shoes fell from the upper leathers, they being so eaten by the aqua fortis, and he sat at the cobblers' stall whilst they were randed together again. He was of so covetous a disposition (like his mother) that though he had money in his pocket, yet he would seldom spend any at the alehouse, and therefore sat at the cobblers' stall two hours whilst his shoes were made fit for him to walk with. Then he came home and was soundly chidden by his father, my master, for his so long stay, which pleased me very well that he should be blamed for that fault whereof he had been so often guilty.

He being of a sneaking, peering humour, I could not be quiet for complaints he made of me, and by his applying himself close to his business, he would dispatch as much writing as I did, though I could when I listed, do twice as much in the time. When he had done, he would be making and mending his pens ready against business came in, but I would spoil all his pens by cutting one nib of them away somewhat shorter than the other, so that when he came to write, he had his pens to mend or new make. So curious he was that his ink must be in a particular standish by itself, whereto I would often put oil, so that it would not write, and then for his parchment, he would choose the best skins, and give me the worst being greasy. But I would in his absence grease his parchment by rubbing it with a candle's end. Many other inventions I had to hinder and cross him. I found two pairs of his gloves one time, and bestowed some cow-itch in all the seams on the inside of them, so that he putting them on, his hands quickly fell to itching, and he to scratching, till they were all bloody, and so hot, that he was forced to put them in a pail of water, and then he cut his gloves in pieces, that he might

see what was in the inside, which was no small pleasure to me. He being a trouble and vexation to my fellow-servants as well as to me, they assisted me in my wagggeries and contrivances against him. In his mother's absence at the country house, he kept the key of the cupboard and buttery, to hinder us from the better sort of victuals, but I soon got another key, and had my full share of every thing, and when missed anything, persuaded him the rats and mice bereft him of it.

When my mistress came to town she would have her lodging in the chamber over the kitchen, because she would hear if we sat up after her. It was a good while ere I could think of a way to cause her to remove her lodging, but understanding that she could not endure rats and mice, I got a great dead rat, and in the daytime put it into her bed between the sheets, so that she opening her bed to go into it, and seeing the rat, was so extremely affrighted that she immediately left her lodging and went into another chamber. But she doubting that we would sit up at nights after she was gone to bed, as indeed we often did, in company of her daughter, who was somewhat better conditioned than her brother, and had many junkets and collations, she called her son to watch. He being willing to catch us, would come down part of the stairs softly in his shirt to listen, but we discerning his practice, strewed the stairs with pease, and anointed the edges with soap, so that one night down he fell backwards, and almost broke his rib with the fall, and gave us timely notice to shift away for ourselves. His mother, hearing the noise, coming down herself to help him, was served in the same kind. I hearing of this, and all being dark, ran in my shirt and breeches as if newly awaked, and instead of helping them, went to the stairs and wiped and rubbed them, and conveyed away most of the pease, so that my master by this time being likewise up, and having a candle, did not distrust how they had been served, but helping them up, and I assisting my young master to go to his bed, the next day he concluded the house was haunted by spirits.

By this means we were rid of his watchings ; for after he was once in his chamber of a night, he seldom came out again to watch us. But he would commonly stay in the kitchin till he saw us all going to bed, neither would he permit me to come to the fire, upon which account we had a bussel, and I gave my gentleman such a fall, that caused him to remember a good while after. His mother remembered me the next morning, for he having acquainted her with the matter, she took upon her to revenge it, which she did in this manner. I according to custom coming to the cistern for water, to water the shop before I swept it, having one finger of one hand in the hole at the bottom of the bottle, and my other hand being employed in holding the bottle, and being stooping at the cock of

the cistern my mistress came near me, and there standing by me in a tub a parcel of dirty clouts wherewith the maids had newly washed down the stairs, she takes them up and slaps them about my face, so that I looked as dirty as a chimney-sweeper. Not contented therewith, she jould my head against the cistern. I thereupon standing upright, and feeling myself wet, faced her, who now opening her mouth, made a great noise with her passionate exclamations against me for abusing her son. I let her go on in her discourse, and apprehending a way to be even with her, coming very near her, let my finger go from the bottom of the bottle, and holding it over her, it ran all upon her, so that she then having a great belly soon felt herself wet through, and then she would have been at me again, but I shewed her a fair pair of heels, and ran away.

Thus was I still even with them both, and my master would seldom do anything but laugh at what I did, taking much notice of my unhappy wit ; for let her and her son do all they could, I would be sure to have my share of the best sort of the victuals. She was of that dirty humour, that at a Christmas when she made a feast, and a great deal of good cheer was dressed for her guests, she would then afford us nothing but a dish of stewed turnips, milk, pottage, or at the best, a leg of beef, and though much victuals were left in platters, and on trenchers, that she bestowed on the water-bearer or chair-woman, that they might report what a brave house she kept, not a bit was given to us her servants, unless she had kept it so long till it was mouldy or worse. Once I remember she promised us some plum-pottage, and at the time she made two pots full. I asking the maid wherefore so much was made she informed me, that one pot full was much better than the other. I being told which was the best when my master and mistress were at dinner, got a good basin full of the best, and set it by for myself, and then mixed the rest so that we had all alike.

But to lay aside all these fooleries, and now to the purpose. My master perceiving me of a pretty smart wit, and fit for his purpose, he employed me in getting of a seal made, the which I did, and it was like unto the company's, which I told you was to the writing, upon which we lent 500*l.* He did not tell me the use of it at present, but I soon found it out ; for not long after a deed was made, and the seal being put to it, my master caused one who was his confederate to bring it to our shop at such a time as he had a usurer in his company who wanted security for money. In comes our gentleman, and calling my master aside, asked him if he could procure 500*l.* upon such a company's lease ? 'Yes,' replied my master, 'if it be a good one.' Whereupon the lease was produced, and the usurer being there present looked on it, and liked it so well, that he agreed to lend 400*l.* upon it. This at first would not please

the gentleman, because he pretended he was to pay 500*l.* but the value of the lease being counted and reckoned at no more than 600*l.* he was contented at my master's persuasions to accept of 400*l.* upon that security, and my master promised him to furnish him with a 100*l.* more on his bond of another person, a friend of his. Thus this business was made up, and assignment or mortgage being made of this lease, the money was paid, and my master, as I soon understood, had 350*l.* thereof, and the gentleman 50*l.* and I was likewise rewarded with twenty shillings, which the gentleman gave me. This, said the scrivener, was my master's first beginnings in cheating, which indeed was but small to these many great ones which he soon after acted ; of which you shall have an account in the next chapter.

## CHAPTER XX

*He discourses of several of his master's cheats, whereby he gets his estate*

WITH this stock of 350*l.* my master set up all his knaveries, and being unwilling to venture it all in one bottom, he lent a 100*l.* of it in small sums to housekeepers, which they paid again by the week, and gave him at least 40*l.* per cent. for the use of it. If he lent five pounds they paid it by five shillings per week, and had but four pound ten shillings for their money, and my master making the bond in another man's name, he had commonly five shillings, and sometimes ten shillings for procuration, and sometimes I had a shilling or two ; thus did he dispose of some. Others he lent upon bottomry, which was thus. If he lent ten pounds he was to have fifteen pound for it on such a day, or the return of such a ship, which should first happen, and though there was no such ship in the world came home, yet the time would come, and then it must be paid. This being counted an adventure, he could take what interest he pleased, as it is customary with merchants to venture upon bottomry ; that is, on the bottom or keel of the ship and then for security of payment of the money, though the ship should miscarry, they are wont to insure it at the insurance office. But my master needed no such charge or trouble for insuring any ship, for he was sure the day would come, though the ship never did ; and thus did he make forty or fifty pounds in the hundred. He being once bit and sued in equity, afterwards took a more strict course, for he seldom lent any money thus but he would include in the condition of the bond a warrant to confess a judgment, upon default of payment ; and to be sure when the time came, and the money not paid, he filed his bond, which was

warrant to confess judgment, and thereby obtained a *scieri facias*, to take execution on the body or goods of the debtor, who little dreamt thereof, and then he seized all the penalty, to the undoing of some. He seldom lent unto any but he had two or three bound for security, and that he might not be blamed nor sued, he made his bonds and judgments in the name of one who was his confederate, and was a prisoner in the King's Bench, so that when the penalty was recovered, it was to no purpose to sue him.

And by degrees being now in credit, and having money of other persons to dispose of, he would seldom lend any but upon mortgages, because under the pretence of being paid for writings (which he would be sure to make large enough) he would sometimes take five pounds for procuring a hundred, and say, though indeed six per cent was as much as his friend the usurer would take, yet he was forced every six months to present him with somewhat that should be equal to eight pounds per cent. And withal, that he was at charge not only to employ one at first to enquire of the security, but he was at the charge of a coach to go to see the estate, and then he would reckon so much for his pains, so much for loss of time, so much for writings, and so much for expenses, and so much for expedition, and all this must be deducted out of the money. When the six months came that the money was due, then he must have the interest, and so much for continuation, and this was a courtesy if he let them go so. If the borrower came not and readily at the time brought the interest and continuation money, he had several ways to bring them in; for suddenly a declaration of ejectment was drawn up and delivered to the tenant or tenants in possession of the premises, who being frightened at the matter, go to the landlord, who sensible of the matter, hies him to us.

If this will not do, then an officer is feed to enter an action and arrest the borrower, who then is forced to come and comply upon extraordinary disadvantageous terms. After much entreaty my master may be persuaded to continue it, the interest-money being paid, as also continuation money, charge of declarations of ejectment (for which we will reckon five or ten shillings paid to an attorney, though it were done by my master, or me by his command). It may be twenty shillings, or forty shillings for the arrest, though it may be not above half a crown was paid for it, and then there must be at least twenty shillings or forty shillings to my master for his pains, and if the borrower be not willing to pay all this charge, then will my master see an attorney in earnest, and proceed upon the declaration of ejectment, and in short time get the possession of the estate, and thus put the poor borrower to ten pounds charge. If he refuse to pay this, he shall fare worse, for although in

equity the lender of the money can hold the premises no longer in his hands than till he is paid his debt, interest, and charges out of the rent, yet my master will so order the matter that the borrower shall never have the estate again ; for, pretending that the lender wanted his money and was forced to sell the estate to raise it, he will pass it away to another, a confederate, for the bare money, interest, and charges that is due on it, or it may be, five or ten pounds more. This is all the poor borrower can get in equity, which will cost him more the recovering than it is worth. Thus have we often had an estate worth two hundred pound, for only fifty pound and interest, and the poor borrower forced to be quiet, not having any remedy.

When an estate is mortgaged to us we seldom let it go out of our hands, for if the money lent be not brought and paid just on the day, then we put the borrower off till the next six months, refusing to deliver up the writings, and then it becomes forfeited, so that we force them to sell it to us, or give extraordinary fees to cause us to release our interest. Especially if we discover it to be sold to another we refuse to shew the writings, and so weary out the borrower with delays and pretences, &c. But this was but small game to what we after played, as I shall presently tell you. The 350*l.* being all put out in parcels, and though they often returned with profit enough, yet it was very hard to get 400*l.* together to pay the money that was borrowed for now it had been lent a year, and the usurer, though he hath never so good security, yet he loves to see his money sometimes, especially when he deals with a stranger, as the man was that borrowed it. Though my master might have cheated him of his money, yet he was unwilling so to give over, but proceed in his trade which had gained him so much. Wherefore my master, upon search and enquiry, found that the same company whose seal he had counterfeited had a parcel of land in the country, not far from London, which they had let to a wealthy citizen who had given over trading for some years, and now lived in the country.

My master getting the particulars of this land soon makes a lease, and with the help of his counterfeit seal, makes it authentic, so that without much trouble he procures a thousand pounds to be lent upon it by another usurer who lived private, and the business was so ordered that the usurer was well enough contented without seeing the land. My master gave his old confederate forty pounds to personate the borrower, and then he paid in the four hundred pound that was formerly borrowed, so that only he thereby engaged that usurer to him, who now had so good an opinion of my master that he soon made it up fifteen hundred pound, and desired him to procure him either good security, or a purchaser for it. All which was done in a fair way, to the usurer's

content, and my master's profit. Thus did our trade increase, my master getting much money, and many a crown and half piece came into my pocket, for he knowing that I was privy to the first cheat, did humour me very much, and took his son off from abusing me, and caused everybody that borrowed money to give me some gratuity for expedition, so that I had money enough, and the keeping of all my master's cash was committed to my charge.

My master had one rare contrivance lately, which I will tell you of whilst it is in my mind and thus it was. He had a kinswoman who had long lived with him, and some money he had of hers in his hands, which was a legacy formerly given her by another. This maid being courted by a shopkeeper in way of marriage, the match went forward and was agreed upon on these terms. The shopkeeper's father was to give him a hundred pounds in money to put him into stock, and my master was to give his kinswoman fifty pounds. This being agreed on, my master takes the young man aside, and thus discourses him. 'Young man, here have I agreed to give fifty pounds with my kinswoman, which gains you a hundred pounds of your father. Now, I having not ready money by me, must borrow this fifty pounds, for which you must be bound with me, and when it becomes due I will pay it. This I say you must do without acquainting your father, and so the business shall be done, and I pray be a good husband, &c.' The young man soon consented, the marriage was consummated, and all things went well for a while; but within twelve months the young couple having run out all, my master's kinswoman came again to her uncle to acquaint him with their condition, and desire his advice and assistance. My master was much troubled at this chance, for he expected the contrary, and intended to get back the fifty pounds for which end he had the young man bound, that he might be forced to pay the money, when in a condition. But seeing it was otherwise, he considered the matter, and wished her to send her husband to him, and be patient and make no words, and all should be well.

Her husband according to order came, and after several checks past for his ill husbandry he asked him if his father knew anything of his condition? 'No,' said the young man, 'I have kept it from his knowledge, and he thinks I thrive in the world, and is glad of it.' 'Well then,' said my master, 'you know I gave you fifty pounds, for which you were bound, and indeed it is still unpaid. Now, if you will be contented to pay that fifty pounds in, I will raise you two hundred pounds, so that you shall have fifty pound more in ready money, and then see how good a husband you will be.' To this the young man gladly consented, and my master soon after took occasion to meet and drink with

his father, and after some other discourse, they jointly talked of the young man thriving in the world, and were both glad of the match, and good husbandry. ‘But,’ said my master. ‘Now I think on it, there is now an opportunity of doing him much good if he had more money, and therefore you would do well to furnish them.’ ‘I shall not be backward,’ replies the father, ‘upon a good account, therefore I pray tell me the business.’ My master thereupon told him, that with two hundred pound more he might be bravely settled and furnished, ‘for the lease of the house is to be sold and I can get it for a hundred pounds, and that is a rich penny-worth, and the other hundred pounds, I would have him to lay out in furnishing his shop more plentifully, than now it is.’ ‘Truly,’ replied the old man, ‘this would do well, but I have no money at present, neither if I had, should I be willing to part from any more than a hundred pounds at a time.’ ‘Well for that,’ said my master, ‘if you please, I will manage the matter. Thus will I procure two hundred pounds for the young man. Nay, I have so great a love for him that I will be bound with him and you for it, and when it shall be due, you shall only pay a hundred pound of the money, and your son the other.’ To this the old man after some pause and a little consideration consented, the business was done, and the money paid. My master indeed being acquainted with the landlord of the young man’s house, gained a lease of it for eighty pounds, and made the young man allow a rool. and deducting the fifty pound he had formerly given him, he gave him the other fifty pounds.

Thus had my master his fifty pound again, and twenty pound for his pains in the business. When the money became due, my master’s confederate, the usurer, in whose name the bond was made, demanded the money of the young man, where there was none to be had, and the old man was willing to pay only a hundred pound of it according to contract. ‘Where shall I have the rest?’ said the usurer. ‘Why, truly,’ said the old man, ‘if my son cannot pay you, then let his wife’s uncle,’ meaning my master. But course was soon taken otherwise, and my master being first and principal in the bond, made no more ado but confessed judgment, and thereupon execution was taken out against them all, but served only upon the old man, who was forced to pay all the money. Thus my master, by being principal in the bond saved himself, regained the fifty pound he had formerly lent, and gained twenty pound, besides making of writings. ‘And this,’ said he, ‘will serve to help my kinswoman when I see occasion.’

I having heard him with good attention, and considering with myself my own petty rouqueries, and how inconsiderable they were in

comparison of what he had related to me, could not but burst out into admiration, and told him, that I saw the world was an absolute cheat.

And now I find that saying to be verified which I had often heard, that the world consisted but of two sorts, knaves and fools, and that the one lived by out-witting and cheating the other. If there were any honest men, they were such as only lived a contemplative life, and dealt not in this world, their whole thoughts being taken up in the contemplation of another. ‘Truly,’ replied the scrivener, ‘if you had known so much as I of all sorts of people (for we deal with people of all qualities and professions) you would conclude so indeed. As the poor man’s ability will not carry him high enough to cheat so much at first, so he attempting it, and being discovered, is quite lost. But if a rich man, or any who had success in knavery sets upon it to get an estate, it is soon compassed, and the folly and easiness of many honest borrowers enriches the knavish lender.’ Thus we both concluded, as sufficiently evidenced by the examples he had given me : and therefore I desired him to proceed, which he did in this manner.

## CHAPTER XXI

*He proceeds in discovering several considerable cheats of his master’s, whereby he grows very rich : also some cheats of his own, and so concludes*

MY master (continued the scrivener) being now possessed of a thousand pound in ready money, there fell out an opportunity of good advantage ; (and I have observed that there is no loss but profit enough to be gained in keeping five hundred pounds always in a readiness in cash, especially in our trade, where so many offers for sale of land and houses are daily made). The landlord of my master’s house was lately dead, and his son and heir being a wild blade, soon spent all the ready money his father left, and all the debts he could well get in. And now to selling of some of his houses he must go, and my master being known to be a moneyed man, and a scrivener, was thought the best customer. He therefore propounds borrowing five hundred pounds, but my master being now possessed of a round sum, and hoping to have a good penny-worth, was very willing to buy. The young man and some friends were unwilling, and could not agree upon terms, and my master at last consents to lend the money, provided he may have a mortgage of all that estate in that place, which amounted to two hundred pounds *per annum*, was worth three thousand pounds, and said he, ‘ You shall not need to



'The Extravagant Prentices with  
their Lasses at a Taverne Frolick.'



make me an absolute assignment or sale of it all, only a lease at a pepper-corn a year for one and twenty years. But to confirm it, and for a collateral security, you must give me a statute staple,' to which our young man and his friends consented. The lease was made, and a statute for a thousand pounds entered into, and the money paid and lent for six months only. The noise of this, and my master's other trading brought him into great esteem both with lenders and borrowers, so that his name being up, he may lie a bed till noon, and yet get money enough.

A purchase of land in the country was offered, and my master bought it for a thousand five hundred pound, of which he borrowed upon a lease of part of it. The six months quickly came about wherein his young landlord was to pay the five hundred pound : but (according to my master's expectation) he failed, and then it was to be sold. My master agreed to give two thousand five hundred pounds for it, and so they struck up a bargain. Five hundred he had received before, a thousand pound he made a shift to borrow upon the mortgage of the land he had lately purchased ; (for, though as I told you he borrowed five hundred pound of the money when he purchased the land, and gave a mortgage of part of it for security, yet he keeping the principal writings in his hands, concealed that mortgage, and now borrowed a thousand pound more of it) five hundred pound more he raised in ready money of his own, which was two thousand pound, and for the other five hundred pound, the remainder of the two thousand five hundred pound, his young landlord took his bond for the money, not questioning his security for five hundred pound, that could pay two thousand pound ready money, neither indeed had he occasion as yet for it. This being concluded, the money being paid, and writings sealed, my master would not remember to give up the statute he had for a thousand pound, but he had another now for five thousand pound for security of his bargain, and the young man never so much as desired a *Defeasance* upon the statute. But mark what followed. The youngster in short time, keeping riotous company, wasting his body as well as purse, died. His younger brother seized on his estate that was unspent, and among other things, on my master's bond of five hundred pounds, and soon after demanded it.

Though my master at first was nonplussed, yet he soon bethought him of a way how to discharge and acquit himself of it, and thereupon returned this answer. ' It is very true your Brother and I had much dealing, and I did give him such a bond which I am ready to pay to his executor, which you tell me you are, provided you pay me what he likewise owed unto me.' ' Why,' replied the young man, ' did he owe you any money ? ' ' Yea,' said my master, ' and whereas you produce a bond, which is indeed a very good speciality, I shall produce somewhat

that is higher, and indeed the highest security that can be given for any debt, and that is a Statute staple,' and thereupon he produced one Statute first, that was given for a thousand pound upon borrowing of the five hundred pound. 'Nay,' said the young man, 'I suppose that this was part of the money that was for the purchase of your dwelling house and others.' 'For that,' said my master, 'I can shew you a particular receipt for all the money under his hand and seal, and also a general acknowledgment in the deed of conveyance. Wherefore this money I must have you pay me first, and afterwards I shall talk with you further.' 'What do you mean by further talk?' said the young man. 'Why,' said my master, 'I mean to have of you all that your Brother owed me, which is much more than you think, for he and I had great dealings together for a greater sum of money than all this, as I shall further shew you,' and thereupon he produced the second Statute, which was for five thousand pound. This demand of my master's so vexed the young man, that he departed, and soon began his course at law against my master, but he took a wrong sow by the ear, for he finding whereabouts he intended on his two Statutes, was too quick for this youngster, and gained a *Liberate*, which he delivered to the sheriff, who served it upon all the estate of the deceased; so that by this means all that was unspent of the dead young man's estate (amounted in land to the value of four thousand pounds) came to my master's hands, and yet he says he is unsatisfied.

The young man, the brother of the deceased, cannot help it, for by this means he is bereft of all estate to go to law, and when money and means is wanting, friends are scarce. Besides, I know not how he can avoid it, his brother not having taken a *Defeasance*, as he ought to have done. Here was a matter worth playing the knave for, and would induce some men to leave off: but my master had so good success in his proceedings that he is resolved to proceed in them. The money that he borrowed on all the mortgages, both counterfeit leases and others, he soon paid off, and yet left himself worth above three hundred pound *per annum*, and money in his purse.

Thus having a good estate, and now being full of employment, both for buying, selling, borrowing, and lending, he always kept a good bank of money. If any purchase of land come at twelve or thirteen years' purchase, he buys it, because he knows of a customer that will give fifteen or sixteen. And thus he will gain five hundred pounds in a week's time. We lately had one business worth all the rest, and which hath now made him weary of getting money. A knight having a lordship in the country worth two thousand pounds *per annum*, comes first to borrow money, and grants a lease and Statute upon the borrowing of two thousand pounds. This my master lent himself of his own

money. The knight within a month or two being to marry a daughter, wants two thousand pounds more, which was likewise promised on the same security. By this time my master was somewhat drained of his ready money, and knowing that the knight would soon be with him again, he casts about how to raise more, which thus he does. He borrows 1500*l.* upon a lease of part of his purchase, of his dwelling house and others, and keeps the grand writings in his hand. He borrows a thousand pounds on his land in the country, and of another party he borrows fifteen hundred pound more upon a lease of part of his purchase of his dwelling house and others, keeping still the grand writings in his hands. Thus having eight thousand pounds ready money, he goes to the knight, and upon treaty, agrees to give him thirty two thousand pound for his estate, which price being concluded on, he borrows two thousand pound upon his dwelling house and others, and then parts from the grand writings and covenants that the estate is free of encumbrances, though he had twice mortgaged it in part. Thus having raised ten thousand pounds, he borrows twelve thousand pounds more upon part of his new purchase, and the knight is contented to take the other ten thousand pound in full of the purchase at two six months, and only takes my master's bond.

This was lately settled and agreed upon, and all writings made, and I doubt the knight will come short of his money for my master hath so many statutes which the knight never dreams of, having still given them without taking *Defeasances*, that I believe he will be cut off from his debt, and so must the usurer that lent my master the twelve thousand pounds upon a mortgage of part of his new lordship. For my master being resolved to make this a piece of wit, and to do his utmost to cheat them all, did the next day after the purchase was made, and writings sealed, cause us to sit up all night, and make an absolute bargain and sale of all that his new purchase to two friends in trust, for the use of his children, so that the usurer who lent his twelve thousand pounds, had not his writings of assignments sealed till a week or ten days after, and when the time comes for payment, he may be choused and defeated of all. My master being master of an estate of two thousand pounds *per annum*, may live and laugh at them all for their credulity, for he hath so ordered it that the law cannot touch the estate, it may only reach his person, and as for that, we know it is but a King's Bench matter, and there he may live all his life time, and spend like a lord, and when he dies his debts are paid, and his estate goes to his children. But if he hath success for two or three more such businesses as this last, he need not do so, but leave the cheat to the last cast, and grow infinitely rich, as I question not but he will.

Thus, said our scrivener, have I given you an account of my master's way to get money, and I have not been without mine. He would many times permit me to cheat a little, because I assisted him and was privy to his concerns. I have one way that brings me in twenty or thirty pounds *per annum*. For all deeds of bargain and sale are to be enrolled in six months after the date, either in Chancery, if it be land or houses out of London, or in Guildhall, if within London or the liberties thereof. I was once forced to trot to Chancery Lane four or five times for one deed before I could get it done, and when it was done, all that was to be seen on the deed was, Enrolled such a day and year in Chancery, *per me* such a one. I seeing that, learned to write the hand they use in endorsing, and for the future only writ it myself on the back side to shew our clients, and that was sufficient, for not one in a thousand is searched for, and this is only done in case the deed be lost, so that I now have got the trick of it to write on the back myself, and put that money the Register should have into my own pocket, and that is a pretty quantity, for an indifferent deed comes to twenty shillings, at so much *per roll*. Forty other ways have I to get money, and indeed I need not invent ways, for our trade is so great for procuration and continuation, and such like, that I get money enough more than I can well tell how to spend.

I will now, to conclude, only tell you a story or two, how I have initiated myself in this art of knavery, for my time being suddenly to expire, I thought it necessary to try some expedient how I might live hereafter, when I came to be for myself. Knowing that my master could not do anything at first without a confederate (some body to help and assist him) I procured the like. We had many indigent persons that came to borrow money, some gentlemen, others decayed and decaying citizens. Amongst the rest a master of a ship, who had made so many broken voyages that he could make no more, for he had wearied all his friends with holding parts of ships with him to their great loss. But he holding to the proverb, that a seaman is never broken till his neck is broken, was resolved to try his fortune one bout more, and had now with the help of friends made a shift to buy an old barque of near a hundred tons in which he was minded to go to sea, partly as a man-of-war, and withal to bring home prohibited goods from France. This man was an earnest suitor to borrow an hundred pounds upon bottomry, or any way, to victual and fit his ship. I finding him ingenious, after some conference with him, and he being willing for any undertaking, we concluded to go half snips in the profit of his voyage, and I would furnish him with money to his content. I soon persuaded an easy friend of mine, who had more money than wit, to lend our captain an

hundred pounds, promising him great profit, and indeed he was to have fifty in the hundred for that voyage, which was to be finished in two months, and I told him that he might insure his money at the Insurance Office, which he did accordingly. Our captain being furnished with a hundred pounds of the usurer, I made bold with an hundred pounds more of my master's, which could not soon be missed out of the cash, and with this the ship was so bravely fitted and provided with all necessaries that he was offered freights enough. At last he concluded with one to bring over some rich goods, and the times being dangerous at sea, by reason of men-of-war, he insured five hundred pounds upon the ship.

The insurers knowing this, and that the man who insured was a substantial merchant, mistrusted nothing, but likewise insured five hundred pounds more to the captain, because he had laid out much in fitting the ship, and did it as he pretended for satisfaction of the owners. All things being thus fitted, our captain leaving his policy or deed of insurance with me, put out to sea, arrived at his port, received the goods on board, but having a parcel of trusty blades with him, and some who had shares in the purchase, he put the best part of the merchandise on board a small barque he had hired for that purpose, and that being sent ashore to another port, he soon after ran his ship ashore in such a place as he was not likely to come off, and there she perished, he and his companions getting on shore with some small matter of goods in the longboat. He being arrived on shore, soon writ word to me how he had sped, and I being acquainted very well with the insurers, persuaded them to pay me the money he had insured first, upon some small rebate, and he on the other side selling the merchandise on shore, put it into other commodities and sent them home, and himself came home as a distressed passenger, and here the insurers paid for all. Such bouts as these they sometimes met with, and that so often, that nowadays when a merchant hath insured, he had need to insure on the insurers, and some have done so.

When our captain came home, we privately met and shared our profit, and by this I gained two hundred pounds for my share, and this was a good beginning. Though I hazarded to sea, yet there was less hazard then my master underwent in his first attempt in counterfeiting a company's seal, for should he have been discovered, sorrow would have been his sops. I have now and then had five or ten pound given me at a time for altering a will, and putting in more as legacy to one than the testator intended, and this I would venture on without much hazard, if the testator were sick to death. My master once made a will, and instead of another, made himself executor, and I and one

more of the confederacy were witnesses to it, by this means he gained near three hundred pound.

I have oftentimes had a piece or two given me to make writings in favour of one man more than another, for in a lease, if rent reserved be 100*l.* *per annum*, and there be no covenant for payment of the rent, when either of the parties die, if any rent be behind due to the lessee, it cannot be recovered by the executors, administrators, or assigns of the lessor, because there was no covenant between them on behalf of their executors, administrators and assigns. It hath been usual in all ancient leases to leave that covenant out as needless, but now people are grown wiser by experience.

In arbitration between parties there is much cunning and knavery to be used in drawing up an award, or final end. For the scrivener, if he be a friend to, or favour either of the parties, shall do it so that it shall be void, or not authentic, or not obliging to one of the parties, and yet the arbitrators who are commonly honest harmless men, think they have done their business, whereas they have only made more work for lawyers.

In counter bonds there may be much partiality used, as also in letters of attorney. By putting in 'his use,' for 'my use,' entitles the attorney to receive all to his own use without any account, and such a thing as this is often slipped over, or not understood, and many a good piece and half-piece comes into our pockets in a year for these actions.

It was like to go very hard with one of my master's acquaintances not long since, for he being skilled in counterfeiting of hands, did very artificially counterfeit a citizen's hand (with whom he had some small dealing) to a bond of 400*l.* to pay 200*l.* with interest at a day; and when the time came he asked him before some company to pay him that money that he then owed him. 'Yes,' said the citizen, 'I shall do it next week,' meaning a small sum which he did directly owe him, and did then pay him. But the other then telling him of his bond of 400*l.* and the citizen directly denying it, a suit was commenced, and trial was had at the King's Bench Bar in Westminster Hall, where the innocent citizen (seeing the confidence of the witnesses, and indeed his own hand, as he supposed, to the bond, which he could not deny but it was so, or very like) and having nothing to say, in a passion cried out in open court, to desire God to revenge his cause, for he was utterly and absolutely wronged. This being so solemnly protested, made not only the judge but the jury a little more inquisitive into the matter than ordinary, and called for some papers to compare the hand with other of his hand-writing, but no difference could be found therein. The bond thus passing about to every one of the jury, one of them

viewing the bond more narrowly than ordinary, craved leave of the judge to be discharged of his place as a juryman, and to be admitted and sworn as a witness. ‘For my lord,’ saith he, ‘I can say somewhat to the matter.’ His request was assented to, and he being sworn, began in this manner. ‘My lord, this bond here in court is pretended to be made, sealed, and delivered nine months since, when my lord, this paper whereon it is written, hath not been in England above four months.’ ‘How do you know that?’ said my lord. The juryman replied, ‘My lord, I am a stationer or paper-seller, and to all paper there are several marks whereby we know and distinguish them as pot, piller, crown, cardinals arms, &c. and my lord, this being such a sort of paper was made by a young man in France, whose mark is here, and none of it came over till within these four months.’ At this the judge was satisfied, all people wondered, the defendant rejoiced, and the plaintiff with his swearers were forced to sneak out of the court, and could not be heard of.

I once was called to make a will, and the party lying speechless, another there present dictated to me, telling me that the sick man he was sure would consent to what he said, which I believing, proceeded and finished the will; but when I came to have him sign it, I saw that he was dead. ‘Well,’ said the party that dictated, ‘if you will be ruled by me, this will shall stand, and yet nobody forswear themselves, and,’ said he to me, ‘you shall have a good reward for your consent.’ I being ready to receive money, promised him my consent. Whereupon saith he, ‘read the will.’ So I did. ‘Well,’ saith he, ‘you see the party doth not at all contradict what is here written, and now he shall set his hand and seal thereto,’ which he did by guiding the dead man’s hand. ‘Now,’ saith he, ‘if you be questioned, you may safely swear that you read the will to him, and he consented, or at leastwise did not contradict, and that you saw him with his own hand sign, seal, and deliver the same.’ ‘Well sir,’ said I, ‘if you are content I am’; and thereupon he giving me the promised reward, I subscribed as witness, and left him, who soon after by virtue of this will possessed himself of the estate. I had seen this trick of putting a dead man’s hand to writings done two or three times before, and so this was no new thing, and would not contradict anything that was to turn to my profit. I could tell you thousands of these cheats, and indeed, as one said, there is more mischief done with a dash of the pen than with anything else in the way of knavery and cheating.

Thus did our scrivener conclude his discourse, and we calling for another pint of wine and a faggot, drank and warmed ourselves, and so for that time parted.

## CHAPTER XXII

*The bookseller's prentice gives an account of his master's first tricks in cheating, by printing books that were other men's copies*

AFTER this conference with the scrivener, I went home, and as he told me, my saying to my master that I had been with him was sufficient, so I found it, for I was asked no more questions, but went to bed. There did I recollect to myself all that he had that evening told me, though I could not perfectly remember the several terms of art he used, as judgment, execution, *scire facias*, statute, procuracy, and continuation, &c., yet I was sensible of their meaning, and did very much wonder how any man could sleep, being guilty of so many crimes as he and his master were. Yet I found that they slept the better, or at leastwise fared the better, by reason of their great wealth. And then did I compare my forepassed life to what I had heard of them, and it was not worth mentioning, so that from that time I had a more charitable opinion for myself than formerly.

And since I had so good success with my scrivener, I was resolved to be a little more intimate with the rest of the society, especially the bookseller, that I might know how he gained his money. The next day I had my desire, for meeting him abroad, we went to an alehouse, and there did I discover to him part of my yesterday's actions with the scrivener, and thereby induced him to make me this following discourse.

Truly brother (for so we called one another) you have told me wonders, though so admirable that I could not have thought so much crafty knavery could have been committed by any man breathing, though I did believe that there was more than I understood, having always heard that it was a dangerous thing to squeeze wax, and that scriveners in general were cunning fellows. But that any man out of nothing should by tricks and subtle contrivances gain to himself so great an estate, and yet not run into the compass of the law, but now I see the proverbs verified, nothing venture, nothing have, and that a blot is no blot till it be hit, and give a man luck and throw him into the sea. And although I have thought my master a man cunning and crafty enough, and did believe that he who deals in books could not be outwitted, yet I see that a piece of parchment, with a seal to it, is better than a great many books, nay than a whole impression. But that I may give you some satisfaction in what you desire, I shall proceed in my discourse, and though I cannot tell you so many, nor so profitable

contrivances as you have related to me, yet those of our calling deserve not to go much behind, and we do our utmost good will to cheat, though it turns not to so good an account.

My master, when I came to prentice, had but a small stock of books, and those were all in his shop, with which, together with some paper, parchment, pens, and such like stationer's ware, he made a shift to pick up an indifferent livelihood. But he being of a reaching brain, and seeing there were very rich people, such as gained great estates and lived bravely of the same trade, he made it his business to enquire into their way. The most sort of books that we sold were testaments, psalters, grammars, accidences, and such books as we call privileged ware, and indeed were printed for the Company in general, and to be had of some of the stockkeepers, or masters of the Company, or at the Hall. And though our profit in selling these sort of books was but small, as not above twopence in the shilling, yet it was a certain commodity, and the sale sure; whereas other books, either of divinity, history, &c., were not so certain, though more profitable, as commonly bringing four pence in the shilling profit.

Thus did we continue buying books of other booksellers, as we were asked for them, and had occasion, my master commonly keeping to one man, because he could there be trusted and furnished with any book he wanted. It fortuned that a new book being printed, a small thing of about four or five sheets of paper, it sold so well that my master went often for them to his wonted place. One time they had none of them left, but desiring my master to stay, they would send for some; which my master did, but the messenger came back without any, and brought word that he should not have any more of them upon account or exchange, for he now held them at ready money, and that he would have, or part from none. 'Well then,' said my master, 'I will go thither and buy some myself.' 'No,' said the master of the shop, 'you shall not need, I will send for some this once with ready money, and, you shall have them cheaper of me than of him.' And so he did, and he received them and told me that if he wanted any more, he could be very well furnished with them within three or four days, and the other had been better not to have served him so. But the book selling very well, all my master's were gone that night, and I went myself to the bookseller who printed them for some, the which I had. But the next day I went again, he had none, and told me that I could not have any in a week's time. I acquainted my master here-with, who being called upon for some of them, went to his old place to see if they had any. They told him they had none at present, but to morrow he might have what number he pleased.

Accordingly the next day I went, and brought fifty of them with me, and then my master (beginning to suspect that which he afterwards found out) sent me to the booksellers who printed them, and he had none, wherefore he then concluded that the bookseller with whom he was wont to deal had printed them, though they were none of his copy, at which he wondered. The greater sort of booksellers did use to inform us that it was a most heinous and unlawful thing to print another man's copy, so that I think this was the first time that my master discovered this mystery, for the book continuing to sell, we sold in our shop above five hundred of them, so that my master beginning to consider with himself, reckoned that he had paid to his dealer above five pounds for these pamphlets, and yet got very well by them too.

Wherefore, not long after, coming into the company of a printer, he asked what it would cost to print 2000 of a book of five sheets of paper. The printer replied, 'ten pounds.' By this my master guessed that his dealer had gained half in half by him, for he had paid for 500, half what 2000 would cost. My master holding some further discourse with this printer over a pot of ale, he told him that he did work for such a man, naming the bookseller with whom my master dealt, and saith he, 'I lately did two sheets for him of a book he gained well by, for I printed 5000 for my share.' So that at length, after conference together, they concluded it was the same book my master sold so many of, and that he had printed it in three or four places for expedition, and that he could not gain less than 30*l.* by printing it. 'But,' says my master, 'how will he do to answer it to the other man whose copy it was?' 'For that,' said the printer, 'he will do well enough, for the other is but a young man, and lit upon his copy by chance, and though the law forbids such doings as the printing one another's copies, yet the great ones commonly devour and eat up the little ones, and will venture on it being but a small thing. It may be this young man is indebted to the other, and indeed it is a usual thing, and we do such jobs very frequently, especially for the grand ones of the Company.' 'But how comes it,' said my master, 'that some or other do not print their copies, as testaments, psalters, &c.' 'As for that,' said the printer, 'it is very dangerous, for if they were taken, it belonging to the whole Company, they would be sure to seize on it, and sue the party so offending. Besides, the books are too big for every one to venture on, and will lie too long in hand a doing, but sometimes such things are done, but in another way, as I can tell.' Thus ended my master and the printer their discourse of this matter, and my master desired the printer to call on him sometimes, and he would drink with him, and it might be have some employment for him, and thus they parted.

My master now understanding thus much of his trade, more than formerly, was resolved it should not be long ere he were doing somewhat. Thus pondering in his mind, he could not tell what design to begin with, for we sold very little but privileged ware, and those it was dangerous meddling with. Neither would my master's stock reach to anything considerable. At last resolving to play at small game rather than stand out, he bethought himself, and resolved to print the A B C, a little child's book of a sheet of paper. He knew not then what printer to entrust, for he durst not make use of the former printer, lest he should acquaint his dealer. But it was not long ere he lit upon one fit for his purpose, and to work he went, my master sending in paper; and so they were printed, delivered, and paid for, but when my master had them, he knew not how to dispose of them, lest he should be caught. That he might have the better pretence, he went and bought 300 of them of his dealer, and so laying them by, sold his own, and being acquainted with a primer-binder, he got him to exchange with him for primers and such like small books. He was rid of most of them to his great profit, for he gained, as I have heard him say, above five pounds by that job, which was then a great deal of money.

By this means his shop was better furnished with small books and paper, and now he had good credit with the paper-merchant, which before he could not have. Not long after, the printer who had printed the A B C came to him and acquainted him, that if he would venture a matter of ten pounds, he might be concerned in printing of a book that would turn to a very good account and it may be, get twenty pounds by the bargain. He having had such good success in the last, ventures upon this. It was a sermon that then sold very well, and he had another partner, and my master having some money by him, and pretty good credit at the paper merchants, he found paper, and the other paid for printing, and at two places it was done in a week. My master putting them out in London to the *Mercuries* and others at one penny a piece less than the ordinary rate, and his partner dealing with country chapmen, sent good store away into the country. And thus, though this was another man's copy, they sold all their books in a short time, and gained 25*l.* a piece.

'This was a good beginning,' said I to the bookseller, 'and I did not think your trade had been so profitable; but now I believe, that these courses being prosecuted, a considerable estate may be gained in a short time.' 'That you shall soon hear,' replied he. But the discourse being somewhat long, I shall for the present end, and prosecute the rest in the following chapter.

## CHAPTER XXIII

*He proceeds in the discovery of his master's ways in cheating, in preferring some copies, and other ways of getting copies*

MY master having now had some experience in this way of printing was resolved to play above-board, and get some copy or copies to print, that he might own. In short time he did, and glad was he to see his name in print, supposing himself now to be somebody. But these things did him but little good and sold but easily, he not having the way of preferring books and sending them to some country chapmen, and the rest of the booksellers, who endeavour to crush any beginner, would not sell his books unless they may have them at their own rate, would not sell any of them for him. Besides, now he gave money for his copies, the other costing him nothing: and though a book be never so good, they will not sell with some men, for the others will under-value and spoil it. As for example. If my master had printed at that time the best book of chirurgery, husbandry, cookery, or the like in the world, and though the book had been famous enough, so that every one desired it, and asked at any bookseller's shop for it, they would have said to their customers, 'Truly sir, there is such a book, but it is a foolish, idle thing, and of no weight, I have not any of them, and will not trouble my shop with them. But sir, here is another of the same subject, that is much better, and in great esteem with ingenious and knowing men.' If the customer replies he would have only that book and no other, for that it was recommended to him for an ingenious well-writ piece, then will he reply, 'Truly sir, I never heard any of your judgment before, till now I was never asked for them, but since you speak so well of it, I will procure you one.' And then it may be, for all this discourse he will shew you one, as if left by chance, or else send to his neighbour bookseller for one. Thus will he disparage other men's books, and prize his own, and many times put off some of his own, the buyer being so civil as to believe him.

This is a general maxim, that they will not offer, or prefer a book of any man's printing except their own, unless they have it either in exchange or at a low rate, and this is the cause that there are some books as considerable, and good as any in England, that did not sell at first for little better than waste paper, till some of the grand ones of the company get them all into their hands, and then they sell for three times the price they did. But to leave this discourse and proceed.

My master having now printed two or three things, did look upon himself as somebody, and though he had not such good success in

his last undertakings as before, yet he made a shift to get what they cost him for paper and print, and had many of them still by him to sell when he would, or exchange, but he having but two or three sorts of books, could not do much good upon that. He seeing this, and observing what books sold best, it being at the beginning of these late wars, found that factious sermons, and such like things would do the business. He thereupon bestirs himself, and gets acquainted with most of the factious priests about town, by often hearing them and frequenting their companies, and having learned to write short-hand, took notes of their sermons, which he collected together, and now and then he would get them to revise one of them, and print it. By this means, spending much time and money amongst them, he grew very intimate, and was become the general publisher of most of their sermons and controversies. This was that which brought him great gain, in a short time he could vie with the best, what he sold not for money he exchanged for books, and now he could command any book in all the company without money, upon account, as is the custom. His shop being well furnished, he gets a warehouse, where he bestowed his books in quires. Being thus furnished, he was first spoken to by some country booksellers, and then writ to by them and other, for several books, so that anything that he printed he could sell off well enough. For having good hap to print some very good selling books, they helped away the other that were not so good, and still were thrust into the parcel among the rest.

And now having some good authors, he would not accept of every one. As he formerly had sought for and courted authors to write books for him, now they (knowing his way of preferring and selling of books) followed, and courted him to print their books. If a stranger came with a copy to him, though never so good, he would tell them he had books enough already. But, however, if they would give him so much money, he would do it, and they should have two, or three, or six books for themselves and friends. Many a one did he thus persuade out of their money, being desirous to be in print. If he had a desire to have anything writ in history, poetry, or any other science or faculty, he had his several authors, who for a glass of wine, and now and then a meal's meat and half a crown, were his humble servants, having no other hire but that, and six or twelve of their books, which they presented to friends or persons of quality. When they have had success if they wanted any more books, they must pay for them. Further I have known some of our trade, that when a poor author hath written a book, and being acquainted with some person or persons of quality whereto he dedicates and presents it, the bookseller will go snips and have half

shares of what is so given him. My master being now gotten to the height of his trade, was soon called on to be one of the livery of his Company, which though it be somewhat chargeable at first, yet it soon brings in profit, there being many conveniences therein. For they have liberty to put in a sum of money into the public stock, and so great is their profit, that they have seldom less than twenty per cent, and then when they come to be stockkeepers or warden they have the disposing of the stock books, such as are testaments, psalters, &c. and putting them out to print, they often print so many over-numbers, that shall serve them as long as they live. In particular, there is no trade that I ever heard of that gets so much by their commodity for whatever they print; if it sells, they get eight pence in the shilling. For those that deal with country chapmen, they put off the bad well enough at one time or another, and if they are very bad, then a new title is printed as if it were a new book; and what with this and changing, they march off in time.

There was one preacher in London that my master was much respective to, for he had gained much money by printing several of his books (and though my master in outward appearance seems a saint, yet he hath his freaks, and will be merry with his friends, and be profane enough).

One Sunday, my master having been rambling in the fields, entered the City in the afternoon just as sermon was done, and seeing this parson going before him, he stepped forward, and overtaking him, salutes him thus, 'Sir, I am glad to see you so well. Indeed sir, you have this day taken a great deal of pains, and we are all beholden to you for your soul saving sermon.' 'How say you,' said the parson, 'what do you mean?' 'Why Sir, I thank you for your sermon you preached this afternoon.' 'Nay, now sir,' said the parson, 'I see you are mistaken, for I have not preached this day.' My master hearing this was wonderfully surprized. Not knowing what to say he left the parson and came home discontented at his error. We having several country chapmen, some whereof owed my master considerable sums of money, he took occasion to go into the country, and to be sure, he would make it worth his journeys, for at every considerable town he would buy some books, and sell them at the next, or send them up to London, and sometimes whole libraries. And he did take order with all his chapmen to acquaint him with all libraries or parcels of books that were to be sold, which if worth the buying he would have. He would also frequent the schools, and by drinking with the school-masters, and discoursing of books and learned men, he would get their custom to serve them with school books. There was one famous

country parson whom he much desired to be acquainted with, and to him he rode, telling him he was troubled in mind, and desired him to satisfy him in a case of conscience, the which he did. And then for his satisfaction, and to oblige him, he prayed and courted him to see him when he came to London, the which he did, and all this was to get the printing of his books.

If a customer comes into our shop to buy a book, he hath such ways of preferring and recommending of it, that they seldom go and not buy, for he will open the book, and if it be divinity, shew them one place or another, out of which he will preach to them, and tell them, that very saying or discourse is worth all the money in the world and if they do not like it when they have read it over, he will take it again. And so many of our trade will promise, but you shall hardly ever get your money again, you may chance to have them exchange it for some other book, which they will be willing to do if there be money stirring in the case. My master having had a book written for him by a poet, the author (not having the wit to make his bargain, and know what he should have beforehand) when he had finished it, desired payment for his pains. ‘Nay,’ said my master, ‘you ought rather to pay me for printing it, and making you famous in print.’ ‘Well then,’ said the author, ‘if you will not give me money, I hope you will give me some books.’ ‘How,’ said my master, ‘give you books, will you have me forswear my trade, and be a book-giver? I am a book-seller, and to you I will sell them as soon as to another, if you will give me money. Paper and print costs money,’ and this was all the author could have for his pains.

My master is now one of the grandees of the Company, and that besides the ordinary way gets him something. Not long since, he and others went a-searching, and finding an impression of unlicensed books, seized them, but instead of suppressing and turning them to waste paper, they divided the greatest part of them amongst themselves, and immediately my master sent some of them away to all his chapmen, and the rest we sell in the shop. It so fell out lately that a book being to be printed, my master repaired to the author to get the copy, but another of the same trade had been there before, to whom it was in part promised. But, however (out of respect to my master) the other being sent for, it was agreed that they should have the printing of it between them. Whereupon one printer was employed by them both to do the work. My master soon after sent for the printer, and tells him, ‘You must do me a kindness.’ ‘Yes sir,’ said the printer. ‘It is this,’ said my master, ‘I am to give away to the author some books, wherefore I would have you to print 200 for me above the number, and do not tell my partner, and I will pay you.’ ‘Yes,’ said the printer,

and so he did, and was paid for them accordingly. But the printer seeing the knavery of his employers (for the other had been with him, and engaged him to print the same number of 200 over, pretending some private use he had for them) he likewise printed 400 over for his own use, and publicly sold them, and neither of them could or would complain of him to the other, because they knew themselves guilty of the same crime.

One of the greatest pieces of profit the whole Company hath, is the printing of almanacks, for by that, I believe, they clear above 1000*l.* *per annum.* But a knavish printer lately outwitted them, for he printed a great number of almanacks, and though he printed but two sorts, yet they served for all the other sorts, only altering the title page, at the beginning, and the last sheet which we call the prog, or prognostication. These almanacks he affording cheaper than ordinary, as indeed well he might, he sold off a good number of them, which was to his gain and their great hindrance, but he is lately discovered, and how they will deal with him I know not.

In the late times of liberty, when every one printed what they pleased, if one bookseller printed a book that sold, another would get it printed in a lesser character, and so the book being less in bulk, though the same in matter, would sell it for a great deal less price, and so undersell one another. Of late there hath been hardly a good book but it is epitomized, and for the most part spoiled, only for a little gain, so that few books that are good, are now printed, only collections and patches out of several books, and booksellers employing the meaner sort of authors in spoiling another copies by such epitomies.

A young man being lately to set up, was a suitor to my master to speak to the company to lend him 50*l.* for a certain time without interest, as is customary, for there are several sums of money left the Company so to be disposed of, for the benefit of young beginners. My master knowing his power in general, particularly promised to effect his desires, provided that the young man would agree to lay out his money when received with him, telling him he would use him well therein. But whether he did or no, you may guess, for he kept not open shop above six months before he broke, and is now gone for a soldier, and the company in general likely to lose the money. ‘This,’ replied I, ‘is one of the worst acts I have yet heard of, if it were intentionally done, for it is an abuse of the donor’s will. But I see it is not material with some men, if they get money, how they come by it, but I pray, let me hear the rest of your story.’ ‘That you shall,’ said the bookseller, ‘but first let us drink,’ which he having done, and I pledged, he proceeded, as you may hear in this following chapter.

## CHAPTER XXIV

*The bookseller's prentice having discovered his master's way of cheating,  
now discovers his own*

'**T**HUS,' said the bookseller, 'have I given you a summary account of the most part of my master's dealing, and the main way how he gained his estate ; for at this time he hath a shop very well furnished with all sorts of bound books, and two or three warehouses full of books in quires ; he hath above 1000*l.* owing him by country chapmen ; some estate he hath in land and houses, and a very good stock in the hall, and all this is acquired in six years' time out of nothing. And in this account of my master's dealing I have acquainted you with the greatest mysteries of our trade.'

'But,' said I to him, 'I must confess you have told me those things I was not only ignorant of but what I could not have believed could have been done, and so great an estate could have been gained by the book-selling trade, especially from so small a beginning as an *A B C*. But all this while the mystery is not disclosed ; for though you have told me how your master gets money, yet I hear nothing of your gains, neither indeed can I as yet conjecture how you should be furnished with money ; for I suppose you keep an account of what you receive and pay, and that your master takes care to look into his accounts, that no great matter can be gained that way.'

'Tis very true,' replied the bookseller, 'he does so ; and as he is of a false knavish temper himself, so he is suspicious of me, and very vigilant and watchful over me. But do you think that I, who have observed all his ways and crafty dealing, cannot find a way to be even with him, and put money into my own pocket ? Indeed, he does allow of my knavery and craftiness in over-reaching of others ; for he in general is accounted the fittest servant of our trade that can outwit and over-reach his brother bookseller ; for it is not so much our keeping shop, and selling a few books to scholars, parsons, gentlemen, nor sending to country chapmen, for in that we use a constant price, and there is not much wit or craft to be used therein ; but the craftiest part of our profession consisteth in making an exchange note with other booksellers to the best advantage ; and there is our greatest prize. For if any of our chapmen send to us for books such as we do not print, and such as we are not at present furnished withal, then away we go to that bookseller who is best furnished with them, and desire to make a note with him, which he (being desirous to sort himself with some of our books) willingly

consents to. Then do we commonly pretend least use for those books we most want, otherwise we should be sure to go without them, unless we took many of other sorts, that were little better than waste paper. And so we, by telling our brother bookseller that of such a book they are almost gone, and the like, we put off the greatest number of our worst books and the fewest of our best ; and being indifferent of taking any quantity of those we most need, we commonly have most put upon us ; and so are furnished with what we desire. And in this way of exchanging books for books, we have the most occasion of exercising our wits, and many times receive commendations from our masters for so doing ; and when we meet with one another, the business being over, triumph over those we have thus outwitted.

' This business of exchanging brings us prentices acquainted with each other more than anything else, for this matter is commonly left to our management ; and on this acquaintance depends the greatest part of our profit. For though we can sometimes, when we take money in the shop, put up half a crown or a crown for a book that our master knows not of, yet that is but seldom, and little money is given us, unless it be by the better sort of customers, whose books we carry home, and then perhaps we may have a shilling or two bestowed on us ; but this is nothing in respect of our other profit, which I shall now tell you of.

' We trading for a great deal to chapmen into the country, do print very much, and sometimes one book is printed very often, and a number of 25 or 50 cannot be so discovered. Sometimes we are in fee with the printer, procure him to print such a number over for us, which he consents to, that he may do as many for himself : and then for the manner of our selling of them, it is by combination, confederacy, and correspondency, which some of us apprentices have with each other. For we have our warehouse as well as our master, and are furnished with much variety. Every one of the combination bringing some quantity to this joint stock of what his master printeth ; and then as occasion serveth we furnish each other.

' But the chiefest way of making money of these is by three or four young booksellers, who being newly set up do buy them of us, it may be two pence in the shilling cheaper than they can buy them of our masters. We have ready money, or at furthest when they have sold them ; and to this end we have commonly one of these booksellers in every considerable place of trading about town, and sometimes we employ a rambling bookseller to go a-birding, and offer them at places, and oftentimes our masters buy some of their own books of this ubiquitarian bookseller. And one or two being entrusted with management of the stock, gives

account to all the rest ; and so we divide the profit. At other times, we being employed by our masters to get in books for our country chapmen, we inform them that the book being out of print we cannot have it without ready money, and then we being ordered to get them (for our customers must be served) we have them out of our own stock, and put the ready money into our pockets. Sometimes I have gotten forty or fifty shillings by being partners with one of the young booksellers in printing a pamphlet ; and if it be an unlicensed thing, we sell them privately to customers in the shop ; if a factious thing, we have our factious customers ; if obscene or wanton, we accordingly are provided with those that buy them. And thus with these ways and some others which are too long to relate at this time, I can make a shift to spend forty or fifty pound a year, to keep my suit of private clothes, and to allow my wench eight shillings a week, to whom I constantly pay that portion ; and I think my share of the stock at present may amount to forty pound. And thus you see, that though so many thousands go through the scrivener's hands, and so few through mine, yet I can make a shift to get some money out of our paper, as well as he out of his parchment ; and I doubt not, but when I come out of my time, to do as well as the best of our trade ; for having learnt so much in this art, I question not but I shall put it in practice to my advantage.'

Thus did he put an end to his discourse ; and drinking a pot or two more of beer, having had some other merry discourse about the scrivener's wench and such like other matters, we parted ; he to go meet with some of his brother booksellers, to take account of their private stock ; and I to my master's about my ordinary employments, still ruminating in my mind of all the passages that these two blades the scrivener and bookseller had related to me ; and from thence did conclude that I should find all the rest of our clubbing brethren stored with the same discourses. Now I meditated on nothing more than how I might get money enough, for that was the only thing that made crooked things straight ; and if a man have enough of that, he may defy all men. It can make knees bow, and tongues speak against the native genius of the groaning heart ; it supplies more than oil or fomentations, and can stiffen beyond the summer's sun, or the winter's white bearded cold. In this we differ from the ancient heathen ; they made Jupiter their chief god, and we have crowned Pluto. He is master of the Muses, and can buy their voice ; the Graces wait on him, Mercury is his messenger, Mars comes to him for pay, Venus is his prostitute ; he can make Vesta break her vow, he can have Bacchus be merry with him, and Ceres feast him when he lists ; he is the sick man's AEsculapius, and the Pallas of an empty brain ; nor can Cupid cause Love, but by his

golden-headed arrow. Money is a general man, and without doubt excellently parted. Petronius describes his qualities :

*Quisquis habet nummos, secura naviget aura :  
 Fortunamque suo temperet arbitrio.  
 Vxorem ducat Danaen, ipsumque licebit  
 Acrisium jubeat credere quod Danaen :  
 Carmina componat, declamat, concrepat, omnes  
 Et peragat Causas, fitque Catone prior.  
 Jurisconsultus, paret, non paret : habeto ;  
 Atque esto, quicquid Servius aut Labeo  
 Multo loquar : quidvis nummis præsentibus opta,  
 Et veniet : clausum possidet Arca Jovem.*

The moneyed man can safely sail all seas,  
 And make his fortune as himself shall please :  
 He can wed *Danae*, and command that now  
*Acrisius* self that fatal match allow :  
 He can declaim, chide, censure, verses write,  
 And do all things better then *Cato* might.  
 He knows the Law, and rules it, hath and is  
 Whole *Servius*, and what *Labeo* could possess.  
 In brief, let rich men wish whatsoere they love,  
 'Twill come, they in a lock'd chest keep a *Jove*.

And to conclude, as it commands gods and goddesses, so all sorts of men and women are obedient to him that has the command of this god Money ; and therefore I was resolved to put in for a share of it.

## CHAPTER XXV

*The relater, with the scrivener and bookseller and their wenches, being merry in a tavern, fall out with other company, and are sent by an alderman to the Compter : the relater in revenge cheats the alderman of his scarlet gown, which is converted into petticoats for the three wenches*

I HAVING thus gained an intimate acquaintance with all these, my brother clubbers, did set forth my own good parts ; and they having been open with me in the discovery of their manner of living, and how they furnished themselves with money even to superfluity, I was as free to them in relating many actions of my forepassed life ; by which means they found me the more fit for their society. And I having passed through variety of conditions, as having been of several trades, and

informing them of several mysterious cheats which I had performed in them, they all took a very great liking to me. But there was none whom I so much affected as the scrivener and bookseller, because I found them the best stored with money ; and I often accompanied them to their wenches, where we had extraordinary treatment and such company as exceeded all the rest. For I had my lass as well as they, and though I paid nothing of the reckoning, yet my wench was often as well provided for as theirs ; for I furnished her with clothes equal to any of them, and then the less money served the turn.

We three being one night at a tavern with our wenches, where we passed a winter's evening in their pleasing society, our spirits being raised with wine and the harmony of music joined to our ladies' voices, in which they all three were very excellent ; it happened that their harmony begot a desire in the people in the next room to be attentive to our music. The scrivener desiring his lady to sing a particular new song alone, she consented thereunto, and performed it very well, with good applause. One person in the next room, who had given attention thereto, and had lately been in company with the singer, knowing her voice, was resolved by one means or other to see and drink with her ; and thereupon leaving his company he came into our room, and civilly asking leave, saluted the ladies, and took acquaintance with the scrivener's mistress. She being somewhat displeased thereat, in short time took occasion to tell her friend the scrivener that she was much troubled at this accident, and desired his favourable interpretation of this action, for she assured him, she only knew this person as a retainer to the house where she lodged, he coming to another lady there, and not to her ; and withal she desired him, if he thought fit, to affront and chastise him for his unmannerly intrusion. Her friend the scrivener being thus informed by his lady, called me and the bookseller on one side, and acquainted us with the matter ; so that we suddenly resolved to rid ourselves of this bold intruder. When we returned to the fire where we left our unwelcome guest and the women, we found him toying with them, and a little more bold than either they or we were willing to permit and allow of ; wherefore we gave him some angry words, which he being a bluff fellow retorted, and we striving to force him out of the room, he, single as he was, set upon us all, to the great affrightment of the women, who now began to squeak out. Our noise occasioned the rest of our guest's companions, who were in the next room, to come into ours, and there seeing their friend set on by us three, which indeed being odds, they fell on us to his assistance. Many blows were not interchanged before the master of the house and others (being called by the noise we made, and the clamours of the women) entered the room ; but all

they could do, could not part us, so eager we were in defending, as we thought, the honour of our ladies. So the constable was sent for, and we all seized on ; but refusing to be obedient, he forthwith caused us to be conducted to the justice, who was an alderman that lived not far off.

We being brought before his worship, being as yet hot as well with wine as anger, could not agree in our story, nor the occasion of our quarrel ; but glad we were when we saw that our ladies had slipped away, as indeed it was but time (for had they gone with us, I doubt Bridewell would have been their lodging, and they should have had rapping cheer). They having thus made their escapes who were the cause of our difference, and we every one contradicting each other in our discourses, the alderman made no more ado but sent us all to the Compter, both plaintiffs and defendants. By such time as we were well settled in our quarters, and had paid our garnishes, we all considering the matter, and at length conversing with our adversaries, put our quarrelsome business in a fair way to be ended ; for the occasion being a whore, we all agreed upon one tale to tell the alderman next morning. Being brought before him, and he finding no difference between us, supposing that it was only a drunken quarrel, was at length persuaded to release us ; but before we went, he forced us to pay our fees, and likewise some money to the poor for being drunk ; all which we made a shift to do, by borrowing of one another, and so we were discharged.

Thus was this business overpassed ; but though we made a shift to hide it from our masters, pretending some of our wonted excuses, yet the rest of the brethren of the club were acquainted with it, and we were soundly laughed at and our wenches applauded for their wit in making their timely escape, or else it would have fared worse with us as well as them, and our business must have come to our masters' ears.

This disgrace stuck upon us a great while, for our companions would often ask us when we would go and visit Master Alderman again. Wherefore I bethought myself of a trick how to be revenged of the alderman, and thereby cause the discourse to cease. I often going by the alderman's house, saw him standing at his door, and he had a common custom every afternoon to stand or sit there three or four hours together. I waiting my opportunity, went to the alderman, and asked if his maid-servant was within. ' Which of them,' said he, ' Nan or Susan ? ' ' Susan,' quoth I. ' Yes,' said the alderman, ' what is your business with her ? ' ' May it please your Worship,' said I, ' I was sent hither to take measure of her for some new clothes.' ' What, then thou art a tailor,' said he. I replied, yes, and so he sent me in. I being acquainted with the maid's name (and seeing the alderman engaged at the door, still talking with another person) asked for Susan. When she came to me, I told her that her

master sent me in to her, and wished me to ask for his scarlet gown, to mend it against a feasting day then approaching. She knowing her master was at the door, and believing my story, went for it (I in the mean time watching whether the alderman still continued at the door, for if I had seen him coming in, I would have made my excuses and departed), but as good luck would have it the maid came and gave me the gown, and went about her other business. I wrapping it up under my cloak went again to the door where Master Alderman was sitting, who asked me whether I had taken measure of his maid. I told him, yes. ‘What already?’ said he. ‘Yes, and please your Worship.’ ‘Then thou hast made haste,’ said he; ‘make her clothes handsome, she’s a good wench, and make haste with them too, and let me see that you work well, and thou mayst do some work for me, and in time thou mayst have good of the wench.’ I (being troubled with Master Alderman’s large discourse) only replied, ‘I shall, if it please your Worship’; and so left him, and went my ways to the next alehouse, where I applauded myself for my so happy contrivance and safe deliverance from Master Alderman’s impertinences.

After a little stay in this alehouse, and night coming on, I being thus fraught with this rich cargo, sailed to the tavern where we used to meet, and the gown being wrapped up in a cloth, I delivered to the drawer to lay up, and went up into a room, where calling for a faggot and pint of wine, I had not stayed long ere some of our club came, and in short time all the rest. We fell to merrymaking, and in our jollity some of our company nosed us with Master Alderman. ‘Well,’ said I, ‘I suppose that job might cost us twenty shillings a-piece, and though Master Alderman might put the most part of it into his pocket; yet how say you, if I can propound a way how to be revenged on him?’ My two companions, the scrivener and the bookseller, told me if I could do it they would give me twenty shillings a-piece. ‘A match,’ said I, ‘I’ll be judged by the company.’ Thereupon I told them the story, and how I had cheated Master Alderman of his scarlet gown; and to make good my word, caused it to be brought up, and shewed before them. Very well pleased was the scrivener and bookseller, and all the rest amazed at the boldness of my adventure, which was by all applauded for a great piece of wit, and my money was by them accordingly paid me. Then after a cup or two of wine, consideration was had what should be done with the gown, and how it should be disposed of, for we all knew it was hazardous and dangerous to dispose of it as it was. So after many propositions and consultations, it was at length generally agreed on that I should cut it in pieces and out of Master Alderman’s gown I should make three petticoats, which should be bestowed on our three Madonnas;

and this adjudged very fit and equitable, that they having endured part of the brunt, should receive the whole prize. This I assented to, and the scrivener and bookseller, in regard the gown was mine, gave me each of them twenty shillings a-piece more, for their share of the cloth ; and also they between them furnished me with rich gold and silver lace to be put upon my lady's petticoat, equal and alike to that which was put on theirs : and this was an end of the adventure with Master Alderman, of whom we never enquired how he and his maid Susan agreed about the gown.

## CHAPTER XXVI

*The relater and several others of the clubbing prentices assist the drugster in putting off of some of his commodities : he gives them gratuities, and relates a notable cheat by his master put upon an ironmonger*

**I**N this manner did we spend our time ; and though our masters gained more money, and daily increased their estates, yet we enjoyed the greater pleasure in each others' society. And now we being all acquainted with one anothers' ways, assisted each other in all things, and there was no want for ourselves or wenches, who were often at our meetings and assisted in our mirth.

I remember one evening, a young man, a drugster, who was one of our club, told us that we must all of us assist him in a matter he was about, and he should not only gain a good opinion of his master but we should have a piece or two to spend. We hearing convenience and profit agreed together, soon consented to do our utmost, and therefore desired him to acquaint us with the matter. He thereupon told us that his master had lately bought a parcel of drugs of two or three sorts (which did cost him about 1000*l.*) in hopes of great gain, for they were at double the price that he would afford his at. But they being too much for one man's sale, he offered to sell good part of them to some of the trade ; but they refused to buy, unless they might have them cheaper than he was willing to afford them, pretending that they had no need of that commodity, being sufficiently furnished with the same, although it was very certain that they could have none of it, there being none to be had in all London, till of late ' my master bought this parcel that came from beyond sea. Now my master being desirous to sell his commodity hath considered of a way how to make his brother drugsters come to him, and pay to him to sell it to them at his price ; that way is thus : He hath desired me to get some of my acquaintance to go to most of the drugsters in and about London, and pretending to be apothecaries and

others that need those commodities, to enquire for them, and bespeak quantities thereof ; and then he knows that not being able of themselves to furnish them, they will repair to him, and give him his price.'

' Oh ! ' said the bookseller, ' have you learned that trick ? I am very well acquainted with this manner of trade ; for we commonly use this sleight to sell our books : for when we have printed a book that we doubt will not sell without preferring, and more ado than ordinary, then we not only title it upon posts, put it into newsbooks, and use several other ways to make it famous ; but we sometimes send several of our acquaintance and friends to most bookseller's shops to enquire for this new book ; and they coming so one after another, at length Master Bookseller is persuaded to buy some of them. Nay, sometimes, the more to encourage the booksellers to buy some quantities, we allow our friends to lay out some money with them, and buy several of them ; and so the bookseller will commonly, if he sell one or two, buy six or a dozen ; and by this means our moneys come in again with profit.' ' Well,' replied the drugster, ' this course must we take with these drugs, or else they may prove a very drug to my master ; for he hath served some of our trade so many tricks already that they are very cautious how they deal with him. But this trick of sending friends to ask for a commodity he hath often used, but there happened an extraordinary chance sometime since, and from that experience he hath taken this course.

' For there was a person who is used to make syringes, which chirurgeons and others use to squirt withal in several distempers ; and this man being out of employment, made a great quantity of them, and laid them by him. But not knowing how to dispose of them, he be-thought him of this way of sending some friends to enquire for them. And so well did he manage his business that by employing persons to enquire of drugsters and apothecaries for them, he not only sold all he had made by him, but in less than a quarter of a year he took above 200*l.* for this commodity. And this my master took notice of, and I suppose made a precedent of, and now resolves upon the same course to put off his drugs ; wherefore I desire your utmost assistance herein, and I shall, when you please spend a piece or two in a collation.' All our club fraternity agreed on this and promised to be active here : and thus resolving on our next time of meeting, we parted.

I for my part, the next day accoutering myself in a country garb, went to several drugsters and asked for several drugs whose names I had gotten ; but amongst all, I more earnestly desired a good quantity of those that were to be thus put off, telling them I was a country apothecary, and should call three or four days after again, and lay out a considerable sum of money with them. I having done this for my part,

and the rest of our associates having been as diligent, we meeting three days after together, our drugster told us that his master had sold all his commodities to very great profit ; ‘ and therefore,’ said he, ‘ this collation and each of you a crown more to buy gloves is my master’s charge, and he desires you to accept thereof ’ ; which we accordingly did, being glad we had done so good service to him and his master.

I understanding by this that there were tricks and cheats in this trade as well as others, was desirous to be acquainted with the manner of their trading ; and he being but a novice, told me he could not tell me much of it, but he was very sensible that there was much knavery in that mystery, in mixing and sophisticating their drugs and getting the spirits of some of them away, and renewing it in others, as served to their profit. ‘ And,’ pursued he, ‘ I have one trick whereby my master gets some money in a year ; for it being customary to give a pipe of tobacco to any one that comes into the shop and desires it, I give them of that which is very good ; and they liking thereof, and the price, commonly buy of the same, and sometimes a quantity, desiring it may be still of the same they have tasted. The which I promise to do, and before their eyes take it out of the same box ; but the knack of it is this, it is for all that a different and worser sort of tobacco ; for the tobacco that I gave them as a taste, is only placed in one corner of the box for that purpose, and so it goes off, as if it were all of the same. And sometimes we put off a whole roll of tobacco in the same manner ; for the outside roll is of good Spanish, but all the inner part is Mundungoe, worth a groat a cart load.

‘ But this is nothing to what ways my master hath ; and he lately exercised his wits to a pretty profitable account, and thus it was. My master among other sorts of drugs had bought a quantity of dragons-blood, being pieces of wood, dipped, as is supposed, or rather pretended, in dragons-blood ; and this is good in physic and for other uses. This commodity not proving very good, my master had a great desire to put it off, but could not get anybody to buy of it. He had been not only with drugsters, but also with some ironmongers to sell it, for they use it about their locks, and other ironwork, to keep them from rust ; but no person was willing to deal with him about it. My master had a neighbour that was an ironmonger, whom he had a great desire to deal withal ; but he being a wary young man, and hearing that my master was a snap, refused all dealing with him. Some words passed that displeased my master, and therefore he resolved to be avenged ; and thereupon having designed his business, with the help of two confederates he thus put it in execution.

‘ He gave a small quantity of this dragons-blood to one of his confederates, who having full instructions, went to the ironmonger’s house,

and seeing him standing at the door, asked him if he wanted not some of that commodity, shewing the same to him. ‘No,’ said the ironmonger. ‘I was informed,’ said the man, ‘that you sometimes deal in it, and was recommended by a friend to come to you; and if you please to deal with me, I shall use you very kindly.’ To this the ironmonger replied that he needed not any of it. ‘But,’ said the other, ‘I suppose you sell of it to others sometimes, and may therefore do me a courtesy, and yourself too, for I have not a shop to sell it in, and am a stranger; wherefore, if you please, I shall leave this parcel with you, and you putting it on your stall may happen on a customer, which if you do, I can furnish you with more; and thus you, without laying out any money, may get some profit.’ The ironmonger hearing of this, and conceiving the man to be honest and harmless, consented to his desire, entertained the condition and the goods, and enquired further of the price. The man told him that he understood it was worth three shillings *per* pound, but he would willingly take two shillings eight pence, because he might have profit; and telling him that he would call on him in a week’s time, and they parted.

‘And thus the ironmonger having received the commodity, put some of it out every day on his stall, till at length a man coming by and seeing that to lie there, and the master of the shop at the door, asked him the price thereof. The ironmonger told him three shillings *per* pound. The customer desired to look further into it, desiring to know how much he had of it. ‘Truly,’ said the ironmonger, ‘I cannot tell, but I suppose, if we agree, I can furnish you with a good quantity.’ ‘Why,’ said the customer, ‘I will give you two shillings eight pence *per* pound for it, if you have 500 lb. of it.’ ‘Well,’ said the ironmonger, ‘call here a day or two hence, and I will resolve you, and it is like we may deal together.’ Thus at present they parted. But he came again the next day, and the day following, pretending great earnestness to buy the commodity. In the mean time the ironmonger waited and watched narrowly to see and speak with the man that left it there, but could not meet with him, for he stayed away on purpose; and this customer that came to buy was likewise the other of my master’s confederates, and sent by him for that purpose. At length the ironmonger standing at his door, saw the man who left the dragons-blood passing by his door, and called to him, and then discoursed seriously with him about the matter, as, what would be his lowest price, and what quantity he had? To both these questions he answered he would take two shillings six pence; and the quantity he had was 500 lb. The ironmonger hearing this, and resolving now to deal, told him that he thought it was too dear; but if he would take two shillings four pence, he thought he might buy all his quantity. To this

the seller replied, that it was too cheap ; but taking all and paying him ready money, he would do it. The ironmonger replied that ready money was two months. ‘ But,’ said he, ‘ if I deal, you shall have half down at the delivery, and the other half at three months.’ To this they both agreed. But the ironmonger being cautious, would not at present fully conclude, referring the ending the bargain to two days, in the meantime resolving to see if his customer came that was to buy ; and then enquiring the name and habitation of the seller, they parted.

‘ Long had not the ironmonger waited but his buying customer came by, and as earnestly as formerly desired to buy the commodity ; the which now the ironmonger agreed to sell at two shillings eight pence *per* pound, and to be paid at weighing ; and that he might be sure of his customer, he takes ten shillings in part of payment, and appoints two days thence to finish the bargain. Thus did the ironmonger reckon to gain 500 groats, which is 8*l.* 3*s.* 4*d.* Besides, he was resolved to have all ready money, and to pay but half. But he reckoned without his host, as I shall tell you ; for the seller of the dragons-blood coming the next day, finished his bargain, delivered his commodity, received his money, and took a bill from the ironmonger for the moiety of his money to be paid in three months. But now the ironmonger had the commodity, he might go look for a customer ; for he that left the ten shillings came no more, and the commodity lay still on his hands ; at which he was fretted, but could not help himself.

‘ My master having thus managed this affair by these two confederates, received the money, and had the bill assigned to him, giving both his confederates something for their pains.

‘ He having thus done the ironmonger’s business, was not contented with the profit alone, but was resolved to vex him ; and therefore when he passed by his shop he asked him if he would buy any dragons-blood. ‘ No,’ said the other, ‘ I can sell you some.’ ‘ I’ll buy,’ said my master. But when he saw it, and heard the price, he told him, No, he could sell him as good as that for 12*d.* *per* pound. At this the ironmonger was more vexed ; but not knowing how to help himself, was forced to rest contented. At length the three months came, and then my master was resolved to shew all his anger, and vex the ironmonger more, and therefore went himself to demand the money that was due. The ironmonger answered him that he owed him none ; whereupon he produced his bill, and a letter of attorney ; and then he too late perceived how he had been served. For my master told him that now he would be even with him for refusing to deal with him, and abusing him. The other said it was a cheat, and he would make him bring out the party that bought it, giving him ten shillings in part payment. ‘ That shall I do quickly,’

said my master, ‘but it will be small to your gain.’ And then told him the name of the man, and that he was not worth a farthing, and a prisoner in the King’s Bench.

At this the ironmonger being much more vexed than before, told my master that he would not pay him, and bid him take his course ; the which he did the next morning, and arresting him, soon brought the case to a trial, and having an absolute bill for payment of the money, cast the ironmonger ; who advising with his lawyers, went to Westminster for a Writ of Error, which he gained. But when he came back with it, thinking to stop execution, he found that he came too late ; for my master doubting some such business, never left till he served the execution, so that when the poor ironmonger came back with his Writ of Error, he found the bailiffs and my master in his shop, in possession of his goods ; and he being out of money at present, was forced to let my master have all his dragons-blood again at twelve pence *per pound*, and so in that and other commodities paying his debt and charges, and giving each other general releases (which my master earnestly insisted on, and without which my master would do nothing, the ironmonger being in a strait) they made an end of this bargain. And now the ironmonger, when he came to a second reckoning of his bargain, found that instead of getting 8*l.* 3*s.* 4*d.* he had lost 33*l.* 3*s.* 4*d.* besides all his cost ; and my master thus having gained by his commodity, sold it since to another for one shilling six pence *per pound*. And this,’ said the drugster, ‘is but one of my master’s ways to get money.’

This young fellow had taken a great deal of pains to discover every particular of his master’s late bargain. From what he had related I concluded the master to be a very cunning practitioner in the mysterious art of knavery, and therefore I was desirous to be acquainted with him ; and knowing that he was but a young man himself, and also desirous of acquaintance, I found no great difficulty to attain to my desires, which I soon after accomplished, as I shall relate to you in the next chapter.

## CHAPTER XXVII

*The relater and the drugster’s master come acquainted, being concerned in trials at Law : their several cases they relate to each other*

MY master having much dealing, had many debts owing him, and he was forced to sue some persons to get in his money ; and I having delivered a parcel of clothes, was subpœnaed to attend to testify the same in court, upon a trial which my master was to have with his

debtor. I attended the court when trial of the cause should be called, several hours ; and there did I meet with the young drugster, who was likewise waiting upon some such like occasion. We both having leisure, and his servant having told him that I principally assisted in putting off his drugs, he to gratify me, offered me a pint of wine. I accepted his kindness, and to the tavern we went, where he again thanked me for the courtesy I had done him ; and then he enquired my business at the court. I told him it was upon a trial of my master's, who sued one for money for a suit of clothes. ' That is strange,' said he, ' that any should refuse to pay for work when done.' ' True,' said I, ' but he pretends that there is somewhat more than ordinary in the case, as indeed there is, if well understood ; and knowing you to be ingenious, I shall relate it to you. A person had occasion to have a suit of clothes made, and would not entrust my master to buy the cloth ; but having enquired how much would do the business, my master told him five yards and a half, to make a suit and large coat. The other supposing that five yards would do the business, and the half yard be saved, bought but five ; and bringing it home, desired my master to cut it out before him ; and if there wanted any more cloth it should be supplied. My master seeing himself distrusted, was resolved to be even with his customer ; and to cutting of it out he went. First, he cut out the doublet, and then the breeches ; but instead of one pair of breeches he cut out two pair, persuading the customer that it was but one. And when he came to cut out the coat, there was a great deal of cloth wanting ; so that the gentleman was forced to buy a yard more of cloth, the which he saw cut out likewise. And though he was cheated before his face, could not discover it, my master serving him well enough ; for whereas he intended but to get half a yard of cloth by him, he now saved a whole one.

The suit was made up, and the gentleman wore it : but as yet not being fully satisfied, coming into company with another tailor, he asked how much cloth might be in that suit and coat. The tailor replied, five yards. The gentleman said he bought six, and saw it all cut out and put into the clothes. The tailor wondering hereat, told him that he would make him a suit and coat full as large as that with five yards. The gentleman agreed ; and more cloth was bought, delivered to the tailor, and the suit made accordingly. The gentleman not as yet having paid my master his bill, refused to do it, pretending he is cheated, but not knowing how ; and this day we are to have a trial, and I question not but I, who am my master's chief witness, shall be able to outwit the other master tailor, who is here in court ready to testify against us.' ' How do you mean to order your matters ? ' said the drugster. ' Truly,

said I, 'in one word, I will make oath that all the gentleman's six yards of cloth was cut out and made up, in doublet, breeches and coat, as indeed it was ; but I do not say how many pair of breeches. And I suppose, they not suspecting me, will not be curious in asking the question.'

The drugster was so well pleased in my relation of the story that he told me his case, 'which,' said he, 'is this. I have had some little misfortunes in the world, and people have lately called on me for money, more than I could well pay at present ; and one person particularly has been so outrageously foolish as to say that I was a bankrupt, and that I would never pay him. Now I have brought my action against him for slander and defamation, and hope to get so great damages against him as he shall be willing to forgive me my debt. And this will be a good leading card to muzzle the mouths of the rest of my creditors, who indeed are so civil as to come into court and testify in my behalf.'

'This case being well managed,' said I, 'may be very considerable with you, and turn to your profit and credit both.' Our wine and discourse being ended we both went into the court, where I heard his trial so well managed as he recovered 200*l.* damage. My master, with my evidence, recovered his debt, and then threatened to sue the gentleman for defamation. He hearing thereof, and seeing how great damages were given to one there present upon the same account, made his composition with my master, and gave him ten pound to put up the business. My master gave me 20*s.* to spend, which I did in wine and good company ; and the drugster having had this success, was now more contented than ever, and his credit grew high in the city, so that he was entrusted with some thousands. But he and I being after that very intimate, I persuaded him at a convenient time to give me an account of his life and actions ; I having formerly told him of many of mine. We being planted at a tavern, and no person to interrupt us, he began as followeth :

## CHAPTER XXVIII

*The drugster, in relating his life, discovers several cheats which he performed under the cloak of religion, as also how he cheated his master's sister of her maidenhead and estate, and several cheats in smuggling*

THOUGH the whole course of my life, from my infancy to this time, hath been a continued piece of knavery, I having been of many trades and most factions in religion, in which I have always been a very great stickler ; yet I shall not give you any account of my minority,

omitting all my actions till I came to about twenty years of age, when I had gained some experience in the world, and had learned how to play my cards to the best advantage.

I served an apprenticeship with a master whose whole family, consisting of himself, wife, sister, and four servants, was an absolute compendium of most religious factions then practised in England. He himself was a strict rigid Presbyterian ; his wife a Ranter ; his sister an Anabaptist ; three of the servants Independents, but of several churches and persuasions ; and I, though an Independent, being of all religions, yet was of none at all, but gave them all the hearing. With my master I was a Presbyterian, and would ordinarily accompany him in his long-winded prayers, which being filled with tautologies and nonsense, he esteemed, and often used, believing himself to be assisted with a Divine Spirit. Many absurdities he committed in his devotion, as praying for the reformation of his family, and pointing out a time when he should or would have a return of his prayers, at which time he would charge Providence with the fault ; he having strictly observed all the commandments in fasting, praying, relieving the brethren, and performing all other duties which Sir John his ghostly father had imposed on him. He would often recount the particular enormities of his wife and family, and how she lay out from him three nights together in a week, and where she was ; and would earnestly pray for either her conversion or confusion. Many other impertinencies would be commit, which would be too tedious to me to recount ; but in general, I found his zeal to be a weakness in his brain, and he was continually led about as Sir John Presbyter directed.

My mistress was likewise led about by those of her gang which were absolute libertines, affording themselves all manner of pleasure, and denying themselves the enjoyment of nothing they could purchase. She would pretend religion in all her frolics ; for she would say that no sin was imputed to the Saints ; and indeed it was no sin, unless she herself thought it so. That she or any other sister might lie with another brother was accounted a general maxim amongst them, especially if they chose their time when their husbands are asleep, which they termed to be dead, and therefore might then do it without breach of any commandment. She would be very costly both in her apparel and diet, alleging that it was not fit that the body, which was a sacred temple, should be coarsely clothed or fed. I had a great mind to have been of her religion, because there was so much freedom and enjoyments therein ; but my master kept me in a little too strictly ; and my mistress keeping company with the high boys, slighted the tender of my service. Thus having failed in this attempt, I made my way to my mistress's sister,

PLATE VIII



[ face p. 400



who was an Anabaptist. She I often waited on, by my mistress's commands, and at length was admitted to be one of the brethren in the conventicle whereof she was a sister. I professed a great deal of zeal for that way, and as my master often instructed me in Scripture, I soon from a proficient became a preacher, and was of great eminency amongst them.

Thus did I spend my time till my apprenticeship was out, and I was a freeman ; and then did I begin to look about me, to see what I might get for myself. For I had never undertaken this course of teaching but in hopes to gain my mistress's sister ; and she still put me off till I was out of my time, pleading tenderness of conscience would not permit her to give me any enjoyment of her before marriage, and that could not lawfully be done till my time was out. Which being come I freshly courted her, and she gave me the hearing, but still put me off, desiring me first to settle myself in the world. I now believing that she intended to delude me was resolved to play the same hand at cards with her ; and persuading her that I still gained somewhat of an estate by my dealings in the world, I spent some money on her, and taking my opportunity gained my ends upon her ; for pretending that I had lately made a bargain whereby I should get 100*l.* if I had fifty pound ready money more than my own, which was likewise fifty pound, she having money by her, willingly consented to lend me fifty pound, provided that she might see the disbursing thereof. I, then, thinking to kill two birds with one stone, readily consented ; and heartily thanking her, desired her to provide herself to go with me next tide to Gravesend, where I was to lay out the money. She did accordingly, and carrying fifty pound with her, I having raised such another sum, we took boat and made for Gravesend, where when we arrived I left her to rest herself at an inn, and went on board a ship that was newly come from the Indies, and bought as much indigo as came to 150*l.* I had it a very good pennyworth, but not so good as to persuade her that I should gain 100*l.* by it, which I had promised.

Wherefore that I might make out the matter to be plain to her, I engaged the seaman I had dealt withal to secrecy, and made this bargain, that I would pay him 100*l.* down, and pay the rest in two months, telling him that I was a great dealer. He believing me without much difficulty, not only consented to this, but also to say that he had but 100*l.* for all the commodity. We having thus agreed, went to my sweetheart's chamber, and there concluded our bargain before her ; who having some skill in the price of that commodity, did believe the bargain to be as profitable as I alleged to her, and freely laid down her money, which

together with my fifty pound was paid to the seaman, and the goods delivered into a lighter to be carried to London, and delivered according to order.

This affair being despatched I was resolved to drive the nail home a little further, and as I had got the money, so to get the maid ; wherefore I pretending expedition, told her it would be most convenient for us to ride home. She wholly confiding in me consented thereto, and a horse was procured to carry us double. Mounted we were, and so advanced on our journey ; but pretending some business, I made an halt at the next town homewards, where I did my horse the unkindness to prick him in the foot, that he might halt, and not be able to carry us through that night. This being done, we again mounted, and I fell to thanking my mistress for this great favour, not only in assisting me with her purse, but accommodating me with her company ; ‘and now,’ said I, ‘I hope you will no longer delay me the enjoyment of yourself, and the rest of your estate.’ ‘Truly,’ said she, ‘this day’s action hath resolved me of all doubts, and now I have so good opinion of you that I shall no longer delay our marriage than shall stand with your convenience.’ To this I returned answer full of love and kindness. Our horse by this time felt the effects of my work, for he halted so much, that we could only go a foot pace, and with much difficulty came to the next town, where we were forced to alight ; and it now growing late, and impossible to get to London that night, we resolved to take up our quarters for the present.

I having placed my mistress in a private chamber, went into the stable and soon removed the obstruction that hindered our horse from going, so that by the next morning he was well enough able to travel. I left him to the care of the hostler, and went up to my mistress, who expected me to supper, which I had ordered to be provided for us ; and that being ready, I invited our landlady to be a guest. Though our commons were but short, being only one chicken, yet I made a long grace, which according to our custom might amount to a prayer ; and I remember that among other matters I prayed that our horse might be so well recovered as that he might be able to carry us next day to London. Our landlady soon understanding what kind of guests she had, believing that she should get little by our company, was desirous of leaving it, which she did by pretending business, and so we had the whole chicken left us for our own eating. We hardly made or left any bones of it, so hungry we were.

Supper being ended, we went to the fire, and I designing my business, called for a quart of claret, which we burned, sweetened, and drank off.

By this time my mistress was so sweet upon me that we talked very familiarly and pleasantly, and oftentimes I interlaced our discourses with kisses and amorous sighs, to which I was welcomed, and many times invited. I then called for another quart of wine, which we likewise drank off ; and then I found my mistress was very full of the creature, so that she drew near to the bed, and at length cast herself thereon. I was not long after her, but lay down likewise, and first beginning with embraces and kisses, in a little time I gained possession of all my endeavours she lying as fast asleep all the while. But when I had done, and was again laid by her, she started up and seemed to be very angry with me ; but I supposing that it was because I had so soon done, catched hold of her and attempted to be at her again. But in vain did I endeavour it, for she then began to be angry, reproaching me with dishonesty, and using many canting terms which I omit. I told her, what was done could not be undone, and therefore comforted her and told her all should be well by our sudden marriage. Thus did I appease her, and we soon agreed upon every thing ; so that though I was appointed another chamber, which I pretended to lodge in, yet I lay all night with her.

The next morning we arose betimes, and mounting our horse, who was now well enough, we soon arrived at London, where for the present we parted. I having thus gained my ends of this woman, having part of her estate in my possession, and by the enjoyment of her person having the command of the rest, was resolved only to abuse her, strip her of what she had, and so leave her ; for I found no such sweetness in my night's lodging with her but what I might expect from another, having before that tasted woman in the enjoyment of two or three of our sisters, which passages I omit, and tell this to acquaint you how this woman undid herself by her covetousness, for had she not distrusted me with her money, I should have married her, but now my mind was otherwise bent.

I received my goods, and now my stock being much increased by this fifty pound, and the profit of my bargain, I paid the seaman, and proceeded in trading. And though I had little skill in foreign commodities, yet I ventured it all, neither did I want money, for instead of paying back the fifty pound to my mistress, I soon after had 100*l.* more, and yet she could not persuade me to marriage, I still pretending multiplicity of business. At length, all her portion, being 400*l.*, got into my hands, I only paid her with a night's lodging, which now and then we had together ; but as to marriage, I still pretended one reason or other to defer it.

I not only proceeded in my merchandizing, but continued in my

preaching at our usual conventicles, where I was become very famous, and a great disputant. But at length, I finding there was little to be gotten by them (and my principle being always to gain what I could) I became now almost weary of them, and willing to leave that congregation for another that courted me ; but I was resolved ere I left them to make some use of them, and get somewhat of them. I thus laid my plot ; I gave a bond to a confederate for 100*l.*, pretending that I owed so much to him ; I gave out that I would on such a day not only preach to my congregation but also dispute with any opposer on several articles. The time being come, I had a full auditory, and performed my preaching and disputation to the general satisfaction of all, and then appointed that the day next I would hold forth some other points, that had not as yet been disputed of, inviting all the congregation and all others that would come, to meet me in a larger room than that was wherein we exercised at present.

Thus having finished my discourse I dismissed my auditors ; but I was no sooner out of the house but I was seized on by a bailiff, in execution for 200*l.*, for my confederate who had the bond had brought it to judgment. I was then accompanied by two or three of my congregation, who much wondering at the business, desired the bailiff to have patience and go into the next house, which we did. The case being opened, I confessed the debt, withal alleging that I was not at present able to pay it, having lately ventured most of my estate to sea. Those of my congregation hearing this (and being much grieved that their pastor should be thus snatched from them, especially when he had deserved so well) sent for some more of their brethren, who were moneyed men ; and so among them they paid the debt, and I was discharged. But soon after this I left them, and they were forced to make a collection or gathering among themselves to reimburse themselves their money ; and my mistress, who had been all this while delayed by me with fair words, made her complaints to the brethren, but to no purpose, for she received no redress or satisfaction, I having now quite left them and their faction for another ; where by reason of my ability in preaching, I was entertained, and an accord made between me and my quondam mistress, I only giving her back fifty pound of her four hundred. We being now absolutely parted from one another, she receiving no other satisfaction of me, either for her many nights' lodging or money, than fifty pound, which she willingly received, believing me to be a beggar, my new congregation voluntarily raising that money for me for that purpose.

Thus was I quit of her, and had gained five hundred pound in my pocket, only under the cloak of religion ; and having such success, I in short time discovered myself to be rich by buying many bargains of

good value, paying ready money, and raised myself to so high a reputation that I won a widow of an indifferent fortune to be my wife, and so settled myself in the world.

As for my preaching trade, finding that it had already done me as much service as I expected from it, I left it, for I had now a wife and money, and for that end and to get them, I took it up and being provided with both I left it, but especially finding that it grew every day into disesteem, it being about the time of His Majesty's happy return ; when instead of a preaching fanatic, I quickly faced about, and leaving my congregational friends, I enquired out and procured cavalier acquaintance, so that I who a little before the King's coming home was used to wear short hair, and was modest and precise in my habit had now a large periwig, a great plume of feathers, and all other accoutrements accordingly, being still diligent on all occasions to associate myself with the captain and chief officers of the Trained Bands of our Company, into whose acquaintance and society I soon insinuated myself by my gallantry in my habit, and expenses in taverns being conformable.

Thus did I become a gentleman, and from a precisian a prodigal, nay, an antic, and every thing, that I might please all. Instead of a Prayer-book, or some other fanatical piece of divinity, I now carried in my pocket either cards or dice, and so great a love I had to Hocus Pocus that all their tools, *viz.*, box of counters, balls, cups, and other trinkets which are made use of in that mysterious function, were all my companions. Having learned confidence when I was a preacher, I was now the better emboldened to stare my spectators in the face, while I cunningly enough performed my feats of activity ; and such a readiness I had that I was accounted an able proficient. I spent so much time in these fooleries that I almost lost myself ; and now having a wife and family to maintain, I found my estate so far to decrease that I was forced to look after my business and fall to merchandizing. But having lost a considerable part of my estate which I had adventured at sea, I was resolved, as I said, to trust no more to that element, and not to let my estate go out of my sight. Wherefore I still, as shipping came in, went on board, either in the Downs, Portsmouth, or Plymouth, and there buying good bargains which the seamen newly come home would afford for ready money, I began to prick up again and have money at command. I then bought me a small pinnace or small pleasure boat, and with that went on board of ships, bought goods, and made a shift to stow as much on board privately that I saved much by the customs and other duties.

This trade I drove a long time, gaining much by stealing duties ; neither did I care what goods I dealt in, having customers of all sorts and trades, who knowing that I drove this trade, employed me to buy for

them, agreeing the prizes beforehand. But I was snapp'd one time, and all my goods seized for not paying duties, and an information put into the Exchequer against me. I finding that it would be but a folly to contend there, agreed with the informer, and he suffered me to cast him ; so that I got off for a sum of money, but I gained much experience thereby, so that I then began a new trade and would engage many of my friends to go and buy goods on board of ships ; and if they got them clear from the ship's sides it was enough, for I would come immediately in another boat, as if a stranger, and seize the goods as forfeited for want of the payment of duties, and so secure them from any other seizure. And if any other person came to seize them, I then pretended it to be my business, having made the first seizure ; but if we were not met with by another, then we passed clear without any more trouble. Nay, so bold and confident was I grown in this kind of trade, called smuggling, that I have had fifty and an hundred pound at a time given me to go over into Holland or France in a ship which hath brought much prohibited goods, which I have seized so soon as we came near any port of England, to prevent any other seizure ; and then putting an information into the Exchequer, have suffered costs against me, and all hath been clear. I gained not only much money by this means, but also the esteem of a cunning subtle fellow, and was employed in many such affairs, and sometimes in law suits.

I remember once I came into company with a very fair lady, who having an old cross-grained fellow to her husband, had not only lived from him for some time, but was so foolish as to be married to another person, who was a gentleman of much worth and merit. The lady's old husband understanding thus much, and more out of covetousness of gaining money, which he believed the gentleman would on this occasion part from than any love he bore his wife, hunted them out from one place to another, and the young gentleman refusing to comply with the old knight's desires, he was resolved now to prosecute her for life.

This story was told me by the gentleman himself, and the lady assured me of the truth of the matter, imploring my assistance. ' Well, Madam,' said I, ' come, be ruled by me, and I will disappoint your old husband, and you shall laugh at him.' Having considered the matter, I ordered her to go next day into the country, above 100 miles from London, and there to expect me and obey my further orders. This she did ; and I soon following her, and the assizes beginning the next day, I got a warrant to apprehend and bring her before the bench. She came, and I charged her with having two husbands. She denying, and I alleging the matter, she was committed, and an indictment brought in. But when she was to be tried I was not to be found, nor any person

else to prosecute her ; so that she was quit by proclamation. A copy of this process I took out of the court, and so she and I came to London, to the gentleman her friend, who gladly welcomed us, and now they live together in spite of the old knight, who attempting to trouble them, found it in vain, for she could not be tried for one fact twice.

This feat did I, merely out of my own apprehension and fancy, and it succeeding according to my wishes, and I had a considerable reward for my pains.

## CHAPTER XXIX

*The drugster sets two persons, his wife's brothers-in-law, at variance : he gets money out of them both : proceeds in trading, but adventuring too much, cannot pay his debts, and is therefore clapped up in prison*

I DRAVE this rambling trade for a long time, and gained enough by it ; but I was so prodigal in my expenses both at home and abroad, that I might be counted somebody, and sometimes losing considerable sums at gaming, that I began to go behind hand. And oftentimes, when I pretended to go to Gravesend, the Downs, or other places to buy some drugs or other merchandize aboard a ship, I went not far from London to a brave handsome lass that I kept for my private recreation. For though I had a wife, and she indifferent handsome, yet was she cold in her embraces, and still talking of the cares of the world, and propounding ways to get money. But my private lady was quite different, being wholly composed of love and sweetness, professing nothing more dear to her than my society ; and we had no other discourse but pleasure and enjoyments, in the greatest height we could imagine. This, though it were pleasant, was very chargeable to keep such a commodity for my own private use, so that I gained not much at the year's end ; and what I got over the devil's back, I spent under his belly, as the proverb goes. Wherefore my wife called on me to stay at home and apply myself to some settled way ; but that I could not do, for my stock was grown low and my spending as high as ever.

My wife had a father-in-law who was a citizen and a moneied man. Him I got into favour with and by my free entertainment of him won him to me ; for he having left off trading in London lived some miles off, and coming to London would often visit me, where I still welcomed him, and attended him abroad when he went to receive rents, or any moneys, and assisted him in all such things that I could, with much diligence. My stock being very low, I borrowed money of him to trade

with, and was very punctual in my payment, so that he put so much confidence in me as to lend me 100*l.*; and more I might have had had I requested it. As he and his wife (who was my wife's mother) often visited me at my house, so at convenient times I was a guest at theirs in the country, where I associated myself with the best gentlemen of the place, winning upon the affections of all, by my facetious and pleasant converse. I had great hopes of raising my fortunes by my wife's mother, who I hoped would outlive her husband, and then, at her death be able and willing to give me good part of her estate, but it fell out otherwise, for she fell sick and died before him. But it was my good luck to be there, and my wife being still near her, she gave her some rings and other things that were considerable.

The old man my father-in-law being desirous to bury his wife at London according to her request, went up with us, and being somewhat sick before, so soon as his wife was buried, was so surprized with a distemper that he took his bed and after ten weeks' sickness died at my house. During his sickness I bethought myself of what advantage I might make it, and endeavoured to please him in all I might; but he having two sons, I could not expect much of the estate, but was resolved by hook or by crook to have a considerable share, and to that end I knew no better way than to divide the two brothers and put them at difference. The eldest was a married man, and though of an easy temper, yet I knew was too honest to be wrought on to do any unhandsome action; the youngest being a young bluff fellow, was apt to believe anything I should persuade him to. Wherefore at first I possessed him with a jealousy against his brother, and that he would defraud him of his share of the estate if he did not take heed and follow my directions, which if he did, I would put him into a way to command his elder brother in every thing.

The young man being of a suspicious nature, easily believed me; and then I particularly advised him that the first thing he ought to do was to get the register of his age altered; for if his father should now die, and he not truly being twenty years of age, could not expect to have the possession of any part of the estate, unless he were one-and-twenty. Wherefore to the house of the parish register we went, and for the spending of one shilling, and five shillings in money we had the register book delivered to us; where I being well skilled in counterfeiting and imitating of hands, soon altered the register, putting his age out in one place, and writing it in another place two years before; so that the young man was now made half a year above full age. Then did we call the register, who gave us a certificate out of the book of the young man's age, and this we carried with us as authentic and to be produced on all occasions.

I having done thus much for the young man, he could not deny me anything I desired or requested ; so that the old sick gentleman being still weaker, and having his money in a trunk by his bed-side, I persuaded the younger brother (who had the key) to take some out and lend to me ; which he did. And that the old man might not see the action, I and my wife would stand by the bed-side before him, so that by degrees I got 100*l.* from thence. And when the old man died, though he left a considerable estate, yet was there not a penny of ready money. The elder brother knowing that he had foul play shewed him, began to be angry, but to no purpose, for he was forced to comply, the younger brother having possession of that trunk, and the keys of all others where all the writings were.

The old man being buried (and much excess and prodigality shewed in the expenses and costs thereof, which was done principally at my invitement, that I might gain repute by inviting as many friends as I pleased, and also drain my two young men of their money) the two brothers began to discourse the matter, the elder brother demanding possession of the estate, and a dividend to be made according to the Will of their father ; ‘ and,’ said he, ‘ Brother, your share must either be in my hands or else in the Chamber of London till you come of age.’ ‘ How,’ said I, ‘ till he come of age ? Sure, you mistake yourself, he is of sufficient age already ’ ; and thereupon produced the certificate, which though it was very punctual, yet the elder brother (who was near ten years older than his brother) and several others who were present, knew to be false. This was the first breach between them, which had like to have grown to a high flame ; for the elder brother applying himself to the register, upon search of the book, found the fallacy ; and indeed the register acknowledged the fact ; for which he, and the younger brother, and myself had like to have kissed Newgate, by order of the Lord Mayor, who being acquainted herewith, was highly incensed against us all, professing before the whole Court of Aldermen that this act was of high concernment, and might be prejudicial to the whole City. The elder brother was very cautious in prosecuting this affair, being tender of his brother’s credit, and therefore endeavoured by fair means to bring his brother to a handsome compliance ; which he effected in my absence, and so wrought upon his brother that the trunk of writings was sent for to a tavern, where they were for the present divided ; and the trunk with part of the writings delivered to him, with a promise to put a fair end to the rest of the difference.

When I came home and found the trunk gone, I stormed exceedingly ; and believing myself disappointed of my purpose, found out the younger brother, and schooled him so soundly that he, by my directions, went

back to his brother's house, and by a false token regained the trunk with the writings which he had new sent home. Thus was their difference enlarged, and likely to be worse ; but the elder brother so moderately complied with all mine and his brother's demands, though never so unreasonable, that a division and partition was made, not only of the estate, but some part of the goods, which being plate, and linen, and pewter, were delivered into my custody. And all the differences between the brothers being ended, I demanded of the elder brother satisfaction for his father's being at my house during the time of his sickness. He little expected this, for his father had given to me and mine an hundred pound, but that was nothing ; I owed him so much, and I must have more, and so I told him I would have, or mischief him ; not giving any other reason but that he had enough and I would have part. Thus did I hope to huff him out of his money : but he, though he was easy and good-natured (which I accounted next of kin to a fool) yet wholly refused me, affirming that I had no reason for my demands, for I had an hundred pound given me, and that I had not been at any charge, for his father had continually given my wife money to provide all necessaries, and that some of that was still in my wife's hands.

Though I knew what he alleged was true, yet I still persisted in my demands, and told him that so much I would have for the trouble of my house. He offered to refer it to two men. I long refused it, but at length consented, and tampered with his arbitrator, promising him a reward if he would answer my expectations. But contrary to my expectations he proved honest, and gave me but half what I asked ; neither would he have consented to that but that the elder brother himself advised him thereto, out of a desire of peace. This award I was much troubled at, and seeing I could get no more, was contented with what I could get of him ; but the younger brother I fleeced somewhat more considerably, getting out of them both, in legacy, money and goods to the value of three or four hundred pounds. With which stock of money, and a greater of credit, reporting of greater matters that were given me, I again fell to trafficking, and now dealt more considerably than ever. I went to public sales, where great quantities of goods were sold by inch of candle, and bought thousand pounds worth at a time ; and so considerable was I looked on that I was often employed by others to buy for them. I bought several parcels and sorts of goods, which I fetched away as I paid for them. At last I bought several parcels of goods to a great value, and fetched away most of them, which I sold to profit ; but one parcel of 500*l.* being a failing and decaying commodity, I left in their hands so long that it was much damaged. And unwilling, and indeed unable to pay for them, I was arrested, and

clapped up into prison, where I was forced to lie a great while, till I had spent and consumed most of what I had. At length, they finding there was nothing to be got by me, released me, I releasing my bargain; which I willingly did, but soon after repented it, for the price of that commodity rising, it soon amounted to great profit; and whereas I should have lost, I now might have gained, as they did by the sale of it, near 200l.

## CHAPTER XXX

*The drugster having failed in London, goes to live in the country, where by counterfeiting a sickness, and making a will, he gets into credit, and borrowing money falls again to trading*

THIS misfortune of my imprisonment did sensibly afflict me; especially, when I understood that instead of loss, I might have gained by holding to my bargain; but it now being past, could not be helped. I was reduced to such necessity that not only all my money, but my plate and best goods were sold; and not only my wife, but my whore parted from their rings and jewels to redeem me. When I was in prison everybody that I owed money to, though never so little, came upon me; and though I came off with my great action easily enough, yet many other little ones stuck close to me, which I was forced to discharge. I had now time enough to consider my forepassed actions, and to examine myself what I had done to deserve this affliction. I bethought me of the trick I first served my mistress's sister, in cheating her of her money and virginity; but that stuck not much upon me, because I thought her to be justly enough fitted for delaying me, distrusting me, and other bad practices I knew her guilty of. But when I considered the wrong I had lately done the two brothers, in first raising a difference, and then continuing it between them, and not only prosecuting the elder brother so highly myself, but putting another of my acquaintance (to whom I knew he was indebted) upon him to sue and arrest him, with all the disgrace that I could, by causing it to be done on a Sunday as he went to church, I myself attending; this consideration possessed me with an opinion that this judgment was justly fallen upon me for this cause, I being rightly enough fitted, being likewise myself arrested on a Sunday, as I was going to church.

But now being discharged of my imprisonment, I bethought me what course I was to take, and resolved that since I had suffered disgrace in the City, it were best for me to remove into the country, where I was not

known. Therefore I soon took a house of considerable value, and putting myself in a very good habit, and in equipage every way suitable, I and my wife, with most of my family removed from my London to my country house. I soon got myself acquainted with the best and wealthiest people of the place, and gave them very handsome treats and entertainments at my house, which they answered me with the like civility.

Though I had been a prisoner, yet I had played my cards so well in paying my small debts, and told my tale so advantageously about my great action, that I had preserved a sufficient credit with some of my dealers ; so that making up about fifty pound out of my wife's and wench's rings, jewels, and some plate, I was entrusted with 100*l.* worth of commodities, with which I set up another trade in the country. This turned to good account, for I seldom ventured on anything but it was effectual and to purpose ; and if I would wholly have bent my mind to get money, I might have had a good estate. But I affected pleasure equal to, and above profit, and though I was thus low in the world, yet I still kept my wench, whom I had now quartered in the mid-way between my London and country house, and therefore could lie with her commodiously enough, and tell my wife, if at my country, that I lay at the London house, and so on the contrary.

As I thus enjoyed my pleasure, so I now began to be more wary and look after profit, which I did to good purpose. But I now wanted a father-in-law who was a moneyed man, or some other friend who would furnish me with money ; and if I could but have produced three or four hundred pounds in ready money, I questioned not but to make extraordinary advantage. For this end I thought on several ways, and at length did hit upon one that did my business. I travelling in the winter, took an extraordinary cold that forced me to keep my bed for some days, and indeed I did so longer than I needed ; for I counterfeited an extraordinary sickness, and that I was much troubled with the stone and colic ; and so desperate ill I pretended myself to be, that my wife lamenting, and my children and family being in much disorder, I was persuaded to make my will. To this I consented, and the scrivener of the town was sent for. I then told him that by reason of my children's childhood, and my wife's incapacity to manage affairs, I was in a great strait how to dispose of my estate, which though it was considerable enough, yet if it were not well managed would soon come to nothing. Being in a strange town, distant from London, where my acquaintance lived, I knew not well what person to intrust as executor, 'unless,' said I, 'Mr B. of this town would do me the kindness to take that trouble on him, which I would willingly requite by a sufficient legacy, and my

wife and children would be bound to pray for him.' 'Sir,' said the scrivener, 'I question not but he will do it ; and if you please, I will not only ask him, but persuade him thereto.' 'I thank you kindly,' said I, 'and for this offer of your friendship I shall give you a legacy as a remembrance of me ; and therefore, I pray, take notice of the heads of my will, and then go with it to Master B. and shewing it to him, make this request to him in my behalf.' Whereupon the scrivener began, and I dictated to him what and to whom I would give ; which was 1000*l.* to my wife, 300 a-piece to my children, and several other legacies, amounting in all to near 3000*l.* and 100*l.* I gave to my intended executor, and 10*l.* to the scrivener.

This affair being thus ordered, the scrivener departed, and went to Master B., my intended executor, who being a well-moneyed man, and withal very covetous, was very glad of the matter, and willingly accepted of the offer, and within few hours came to me, and told me he was very sorry for my sickness, and wished my recovery ; but if he could do me any service living, or to my wife and children if I should die (which he hoped would not happen), he should be ready and willing both in purse and person to assist me. I then told him what I had done as to my will, and withal caused my account books to be produced, where I shewed and demonstrated how my estate stood, and in whose hands it was (having prepared false accompts for that purpose). He seeing the matter so plain, and hoping to get a fleece out of my estate, caused the scrivener to proceed and finish the will, which I sealed ; but during his stay with me at that time, and some other times when he visited me, I so counterfeited faintings and pain that he and all others near me did fully conclude I was no man for this world.

After I had managed this affair to the height, I soon recovered, and had now not only gained this old penny-father to be my friend, but by his and the scrivener's reports of my estate, had many others, who more than ordinarily respected me, and made me tenders of their service : all which I thankfully refused at present, as not having any need. Soon after this, I hearkened out a place, for which I was to give 1000*l.* and it being a good penny-worth, I engaged in it. I made a shift to raise two hundred pound of my own money, and that was all I was then able to do ; but pretending I had of my own five hundred pound in money, I soon persuaded my intended executor to furnish me with five hundred pound more ; and so paying seven hundred pound to my chapman, he took my word for three hundred pound more. This place put me in very great credit ; and now, as well my London as my country acquaintance looked on me with respect, supposing all to be true that had been discoursed of me. I did not long keep this place, but sold it for an

100l. profit, and so became master of more ready money than ever, with which I again came to London, wholly leaving my country house, and paying my country penny-father part of his money. And with that little of my own, and the rest that was left, and what I had gained, I took a house and shop in the place where I now live, and drive a trade equal to the best of my neighbours. Only I have had some dealings of late which have a little puzzled me, as I lately told you, when I had my trial ; but he that slandered me paying so dear as 200l. damages, will not only himself beware, but always teach others to hold their peace.

## CHAPTER XXXI

*The drugster now breaking in earnest, endeavours to cheat his creditors, and convey himself and estate into Holland, but is discovered and his estate seized, and himself stopped, but by assistance of the relater he gets off, and having a good sum of money, and the scrivener and his wench, all get away, and travel to the East Indies*

THUS did the drugster finish his story. I received satisfaction equal to whatever I had either in the scrivener, bookseller, or any other relation ; for I found that his actions had been different from theirs ; for what they did under the cloak of honesty, he did under that of religion, which I found was too often the covering of knavery. This discourse being ended, and our wine out, we parted ; proffering to each other all kind of service. Indeed, it was through his occasion, and to do him service, that I am come to this place so far from my country. I shall therefore give you an account of his last actions in England, which are as remarkable as any I have hitherto related to you ; as also somewhat further of the scrivener, who is our other companion ; and so finish this large narrative, which I doubt hath almost wearied you.

(I<sup>1</sup> being unwilling to hinder the traveller in prosecuting his story, had with much pleasure attended and hearkened to what he had said ; and though his discourse was long, and had taken up much time, yet I found so much pleasing variety, that made me ample satisfaction and amends. And being desirous to know the rest of their adventures, and what fortune or misfortune had brought them hither, I desired him to proceed, which he did in this manner) :

I was now acquainted with three persons, (*viz.* the scrivener,

<sup>1</sup> A parenthesis by the original relater.

bookseller, and drugster, an account of whose actions I have given you) that gave me full satisfaction, and put me into an absolute opinion, that there was not only knavery used in all trades and professions, but that most trades were composed of, and most estates gotten by over-reaching and knavery. I therefore resolved to look about me, and see what I could do in the world ; and having an intimate and familiar acquaintance with the scrivener, I was by him supplied with what money I desired, laying it out in clothes, which I bought at the second hand, and sold again to my profit, and so repaying the scrivener, who took no other interest than a pint or a quart of wine. I did light upon so many good bargains that I had gained a stock of about fifty pound of my own, and my master did not contradict or deny me in my dealing, because I assisted him in his profit, by bringing him customers of our club and acquaintance. I brought the scrivener and drugster to be acquainted together, and they liked one another so well that they contracted a friendship which had hitherto lasted ; and the scrivener was likewise assistant to the drugster in procuring him money at a pinch, which he honestly repaid him. The captain (which I told you the scrivener first adventured to sea withal, so much to their own profit, and the loss of the insurers) was now a person admitted into our society, and being now got up again in the world, became master of a good ship, and was often employed by the drugster, and others of his acquaintance, on several short voyages to Holland. At his return he was assisted in securing and conveying much prohibited and uncustomed goods by the drugster, which was to the very great gain of them both.

In general we all thrived very well, till fortune, who is always changeable, in short time turned tail upon the drugster, and had like to have crushed him to nothing. He being at the height of his trade, and studying now only how to be an Alderman, did drive a great trade, buying and selling much commodities, both drugs and grocery ware, and indeed any other merchandize whatever. Nothing came amiss to him, till at length he not only had a great loss at sea, but buying a great quantity of potash, intending to make a great profit by keeping them up, he lost 1000*l.* at a clap ; for much of that commodity coming in unexpectedly, he was forced to sell his at great loss. These two unlucky hits both falling on the neck of one another, shrewdly squeezed him ; but he being of a great courage, took little notice of it to the world, but still run on all that he could, adventuring a great part of the remainder of his estate to sea, which likewise failing, he was quite undone. But remembering that he had been in as bad condition formerly, and still made a shift to come off clear and creep up again, his credit being still high, he bought great quantities of goods upon credit, to pay at

three months. But not knowing how to bestir himself, being now got very highly in debt, and knowing very well that he could not make profit enough by those goods to set himself to rights, he thereupon bethought himself of conveying away what he had, and giving all his creditors the slip. He had two other inducements that moved him thereto, the one was his wife's death, which was lately happened, and the other was his wench's consent and earnest desire for him to do so, promising him to assist him in all she could, and also to accompany him in his voyage.

This being agreed, the place intended for his voyage being Holland, he sold as much goods in London at an under-rate for ready money, as he received 600*l.* for ; and the rest of his goods amounting to 1500*l.* worth was put on board a ship, which was immediately to set sail for Amsterdam. His lady was on board the ship, but in a disguise, virago-like, habited in man's apparel. He carried not his design so closely but some of his creditors got knowledge of it, and understanding the business to be desperate, took out a Statute of Bankrupt, and going on board the ship seized on all ; he being then at London, taking leave of me, the scrivener, and some other friends. This being done, the news came quickly to his knowledge ; for before we parted, two of his creditors, accompanied with officers, not only acquainted him with what they had done, but also secured his person. We were all surprized at this action, especially the drugster, who now appeared more dead than alive ; and though he was asked many questions, yet he knew not readily how to answer one ; and therefore they soon left us, carrying him away to one of their own houses, where they tyrannically kept him for some days, not permitting any person to come at him ; for though I attempted it, 'twas in vain. The scrivener and I being together, wondered at the action, and could not tell what should be the occasion of this sudden business ; for the drugster had not acquainted us with the bottom of his design, only telling us that he was to go a two months' voyage to Holland, and so return.

I then parted from the scrivener, and attempted to see and to speak with my friend the drugster, but it could not be at present ; but by often importuning and pretending business of consequence, in ten days' time I was permitted to see and speak with him ; when having secured and examined the chamber where he was, that none might overhear our discourse, he soon acquainted me with every particular of his business and design ; now did he relate to me that his wench was on board in man's apparel, and how he had given 100*l.* in silver into her custody. 'But,' said I, 'where is the other 500*l.*, for in all I heard you say you had 600*l.* in ready money ? ' 'That,' said he,

'I hope is safe, if my clothes are so ; and therefore, I pray,' said he, 'assist me a little in this affair, and enquire what is become of the wench and my clothes, and I doubt not but in few days to put all things right enough again.' I not only promised him to do my utmost, but went about it very faithfully ; and going on board the ship, found that all was gone ; but upon enquiry, heard that the young man that was to accompany the drugster in the voyage, was on shore at a house not far off.

Thither I went, and upon enquiry found out the party. I desired private speech with him, for she went for a man ; this was granted, and I discovering myself so plainly to her in every particular, she made no great difficulty to be as free with me, and told me that all was gone, clothes, and everything else, except her own box, where she had secured the *rool.* that was given to her. 'And,' continued she, 'my friend could not have employed any person to me to whom I would have been so free as I shall be to you ; for though you do not know me in this habit, yet I suppose, had I my woman's dress, you would soon remember me.' I then protested to her that I could not call her phiznomy to mind. 'Well,' said she, 'we have been more inward, and ere now lain together' ; and thereupon told me that she was one of those three that I lay with in one night, and had redeemed from pawn, as I have formerly told you, at my last coming to London. Upon this, though she was in breeches, I made bold to kiss her and embrace her. 'Well,' said she, 'proceed no further, there may be time enough for the rest ; let us now consult what is necessary to be done for our distressed friend ; for,' said she, 'if you and he desire it, I shall be willing to part from all the hundred pounds which I am yet mistress of.' 'Well,' replied I, 'you are the most generous and deserving woman of all your sex, especially of your quality, not only for what you now offer, but what I formerly by experience, and lately by his relations have understood of you.' 'Truly,' replied she, 'where I promise fidelity, I perform it ; and where I find worth, I will endeavour to deserve and requite it. And though I have lived wantonly, yet since I was entertained by this gentleman as his friend, I have been wholly constant, and will persevere therein so long as he is able, or I can otherwise handsomely contrive a way to subsist.' 'In this you are very obliging,' said I, 'but I hope you will not deny any old friend a courtesy.' 'Well,' said she, 'more of that hereafter.' From this discourse we fell to the matter in hand, consulting and contriving what was most necessary to be done for our friend's present accommodation. For the present we agreed all the money should lie in her hands, only she should remove her quarters to the place appointed.

This being done, I again repaired to him, and acquainted him with my proceedings. He was glad I had found her and the hundred pound ; but when I told him that the chest with his clothes was gone and secured from him, he was almost out of his wits, crying out that now he was miserable, and never till now. ‘ Well,’ said I, ‘ come, be contented, there may be a way found to remedy this evil.’ ‘ No,’ said he, ‘ never till I am again master of that chest with my clothes.’ Upon this he was silent, and soon after two of his chief creditors entered the chamber and told him that if he would be ingenious with them, that they would not only release him, but put money in his pocket, that he might trade again. ‘ For,’ said one of them, ‘ we have been at great cost already for the taking out the Commission of Bankrupt, and the commissioner’s fees for sitting hath already cost two hundred pound, and it every day runs up to more and more ; so that in fine, it will consume the estate unless you will assist us in making up your accounts ; for there are several that we supposed had owed you money, do put in for to have a share with us.’

Thereupon, they named two or three parties who had demanded money of them. To this the drugster replied that he owed no such sums as were pretended, and that one of them owed him two hundred pound ; he alleging this, and offering to prove it, they desired him to provide against the next day to appear before the commissioners ; and if he did justify this, they would immediately discharge him. This being agreed on, they left him, and he was now in somewhat better taking than he had been, and I encouraged him to bear up, and hope for the best. ‘ Well,’ said he, ‘ if I can but get my chest of clothes again I care not ; and I pray fail not to be with me to-morrow, and get my mistress to send me ten pound, that I may have occasion to use.’ We discoursed not much further for the present, but parted ; and I returning home to my master’s, asked leave to be absent for that night ; to which he consented ; and indeed, I had so much liberty, that I might stay out so long as I pleased, my master using me rather like a companion than a servant.

I now went to the drugster’s lady, and my quondam acquaintance, and informing her of my business, she freely delivered me ten pound. ‘ But,’ said I, ‘ this is not all, I must have somewhat else before I go ’ ; and thereupon called for wine, and we drank so briskly, that we were both pretty merry. And it being now late, she asked me where I intended to lodge. I said, with her. ‘ That must not be,’ replied she ; and indeed I had somewhat to do to persuade her to it ; but at length I did, and we lay together without any suspicion, she going for a man. We often interchanged many amorous embraces, and performed all

those dalliances that two longing lovers could expect, and made many protestations of a further friendship ; I telling her that I believed her friend the drugster would not be offended if he knew of our enjoyments, and would as well impart her to me, as he had done his chiefest secrets. ‘Well,’ said she, ‘if you gain his consent, you command mine, and I therefore leave it to your management ; and I suppose if you tell him of our former acquaintance, the greatest difficulty will be overcome.’ This I thought would be a ready way, as indeed it was : and since then we have had an equal enjoyment of her ; she having lain with one of us every night since, and during our voyage hither, and is one of those two in men’s apparel, and is called George.

But to return to my matter in hand. I the next morning parted from her, and with ten pound in my pocket went to my friend, who was going before the commissioners, whither I attended him ; and there he carried himself with so much freedom and ingenuity that he was set at liberty, and promised more favours. He then made it his request that he might have the chest with his clothes ; to this some consented, but others replied, all must be apprized, and till then nothing could be disposed of, and therefore they demanded the key of him. This he refused, but they told him that then they would break it open. He seeing there was no other remedy, promised to bring it the next morning, and then desired they might be apprized, and delivered to him ; and thus they parted, and after he and I had drunk a pint of wine, we also parted.

As I was going home I met with the scrivener, who being desirous to know how matters went with the drugster, would enforce a glass of wine on me. When I told him all the matter, and omitting nothing, we judged that his five hundred pound was in that chest with his clothes, and that now he would be stripped of it. ‘But,’ said the scrivener, ‘I wish he were master of that money, and then I should propound a way to him to leave them, by making him partner in a design which I have lately projected, and is now near execution.’

I needed not use many words to persuade him to acquaint me with his design, wherefore after few words, he opened to me the matter thus :

‘I have,’ said he, ‘lived in so full an enjoyment of everything here that I am weary of it, being tied to one place ; and my spirit being of a soaring rambling temper, am desirous of novelty and change ; and to that end I have some time since purposed, and lately contrived a way to leave England for some other place. And consulting with the captain whom you know, have resolved for the East Indies, whither he is now bound. And that I might not go away beggarly, (for I never

intend to return, unless very rich) I have contrived a way how to carry good store of money with me, which I am now plentifully provided with.' 'Yes,' said I, 'I know it is no difficulty for you to procure what money you will, having the keeping of so much cash.' 'You are mistaken,' said he, 'I intend not to wrong my master of a penny, but have done it otherwise, the manner thus :

' My master hath lately taken a journey into the country, and left the sole management of his affairs to me ; and resolving now to make use of my time, I have put my project in execution. I have been with one of our money masters, and told him that such a man, whom he knew to be a good man, that is, a rich man, wanted so much money ; this he readily consented to, and I had the money delivered to me, only giving him a bond, whereto I have counterfeited the name of him whom I told him was the borrower, and myself, with one more was a witness. This have I done with two or three, who I was confident would trust me ; and with two I have pretended they would borrow of one another two hundred pound apiece, and given each of them a counterfeit bond ; and I cannot choose but smile to think in what a case they will both be when the time of payment comes, and instead of receiving they will demand two hundred pounds of each other. It may be they will be so frolic as to go to law ; if they do, it will make good sport for the lawyers. By this means, as I tell you, I have raised fifteen hundred pounds, which I have all ready by me in good Jacobusses, and am ready in ten days to march off with my captain for the East Indies. Now if the drugster had his money in readiness, I should be glad of so good company.' I heard him with much delight, and from that very minute resolved to make one of the company, and then offered him my service, which he kindly accepted of, and promised me that I should share all fortunes with him.

I went back to my mistress and provided myself for my voyage. The next day the drugster bringing his keys, the chest where his clothes were was opened, and all in it was examined, but no money found. I remember at every parcel of clothes they took his eye was so fixed that I thought he would never remove it ; but at length all was passed over, and the clothes prized at twenty pounds. He earnestly entreated that he might have them ; but they replied, they could not do it without the consent of all, unless they gave so much out of their own pockets, and they had already lost too much by him. He finding that there was no way but one, took me with him to a tavern, and conjured me to do him one kindness, which was by all means to purchase these clothes at any rate ; giving me the ten pound I had brought him, and five pound more. He knew not what to do for five or ten pounds more,

which he advised me to give for the clothes rather than fail. It was too far to go to his lady's quarters, wherefore I out of my own stock supplied that want ; and then going to the creditors, with much ado persuaded one of them who had the keys, to sell me the clothes.

He would not consent to do this, unless I would give him thirty pound, which was ten pound more than they were apprized at. Though the demand was unreasonable, yet I was forced to consent ; and putting ten pound of the money into his own pockets, he willingly delivered the clothes to me, charging me not to discover what I gave. I did not much heed what he said, but gladly received the chest and key and carried it to the drugster, who with much impatience expected me. It being carried up into a private chamber, and the door fast locked, he unlocked the chest, and took out the clothes, and drawing his knife, unripped the collar of a doublet, where were several pieces of gold. 'Nay then,' said he, 'we are still safe, and I defy Fortune and all her malice.' In less than half an hour, with my assistance, we found out 500*l.* in gold, which was sewed up in several places about the clothes. This being done, I soon acquainted him with the scrivener's project, and my resolution. To this he likewise consented, 'only,' said he, 'I must not leave my honest girl behind me.' 'For that,' said I, 'I question not but I shall have some influence to persuade her' ; and thereupon I acquainted him with my former knowledge of her. 'Well,' said he, 'since it is so, we will continue her a friend to us both, and not entertain any jealousy.' In fine, we agreed not only in that particular but in everything else ; and the scrivener being acquainted with all our designs, we so ordered the matter that I, the drugster and our mistress, and the scrivener and a wench of his whom he had likewise put into man's apparel, did all come on board with all our treasure into our captain's ship, which was in the Downs, and bound for this place ; and so having good winds, good company, and every thing to our content, are all safely arrived in this place.

## CHAPTER XXXII

*He being now by the relater brought acquainted with the scrivener, drugster, and the rest of his companions, they enter into discourse about the several factious religions practised in England*

THUS did our relater finish his long story, which was so filled with profit as well as pleasure that I accounted the time I had spent in hearing him the best bestowed of any. For I gathered so much

variety of experiences that if I had any mind to prosecute my former course of life in cheating and roguing I might now soon profess myself to be Arts Master if I did but bravely follow those examples he had related to me : but if they were any wise improved, as I had a genius fit enough to be highly active, I might then outdo all example.

These were my first thoughts, but I had not much time to spend in contemplation ; but he having put an end to his discourse, I kindly thanked him for his great freedom used in his relation, and told him that since he had been so generous to me in unbosoming himself, I in requital did promise him a lasting friendship, and at our first leisure recount some of my life to him which I had hitherto concealed, that should give him satisfaction that I intended to use an absolute freedom with him.

Thus did we contract a friendship, and it was now time to eat somewhat, the best part of the day having been spent in his long narrative. Such as the house afforded we had, and after a repast, we concluded both to go on board of their ship to find out his companions ; he resolving to acquaint them with what had passed between us, and to let them know my quality, believing they would be well enough satisfied with what he had done, because they might have great occasion to make use of me.

In this resolution we were preparing to go to the ship when the scrivener and drugster entered the house, enquiring for their companion, who presenting himself to them, they desired him to walk out, that they might confer together. ‘ No,’ said he, ‘ let us take a room here and discourse, which we may do with as much freedom as anywhere else.’ He urging it, they consented, and having a private room and necessaries, after a cup or two of wine I left their company, on purpose to give my friend the tailor (who was called Gregory) the opportunity of acquainting them with what had passed between us. This I suppose he did in very few words, for within half an hour I was called for, and being kindly saluted by the two gentlemen, was desired to sit down and make one of their company. After a cup or two of wine more had passed, my friend Gregory tailor thus spake to me : ‘ Friend, I have acquainted these my two friends and companions with our late discourse, and by that they know that all their affairs are known to you also. I have told them what I know of you, and we are all sensible that your acquaintance may be very useful and necessary in all things, but much more your friendship. Wherefore, as you say I by my freedom with you have merited your acquaintance and friendship, so I desire the same room in your breast for my friends, who by

me desire it, and in requital you shall command ours. And whatever we have you shall be equally master of with ourselves.'

I made no long pause in replying to them that they might command my love and friendship, and in that my all, to render them the utmost testimonies that I could. And thus did we all agree to have a friendly correspondence, and to conceal nothing of our affairs one from another. We then drank off some more wine ; and though their two ladies and the captain were absent, yet we remembered them in our cups, and resolved the next day to dine all on board the ship. At my importunity I so far prevailed as that the women might appear there in their own female habits ; for it had now been a long time since I saw any European beauties.

We after this discoursed of many affairs of general consequence, as the manner of the countries, and governments both ecclesiastical and civil, in which we spent some time. But as all that can be said of that matter is already related in the second chapter of this second part ; I shall therefore here forbear it. But it wrought much upon the spirit of the drugster ; who having formerly been a great stickler in religion, was amazed that there was so good a correspondence in religion, which was as he imagined so barbarous. ' Well,' said he, ' I find that most places enjoy a greater happiness in their conformities in religion than our native country of England ; for there, instead of unity and loving conformity, they are rent and torn in pieces into many factions ; and that hath been the principal occasion of the effusion of so much blood as hath been spilt of late years. When I left England there was still a discontented party that was ready on all occasions to attempt a public mischief for their private interest, and only to maintain a private self-willed fancy, which they termed religion.'

' I myself was for a long time bewitched with a fanatic zeal ; and my master being a man of the same humour had instilled such principles into me that I had much ado to have any charity for any person that was in the right. But in time I finding a great deal of strictness in the precise practice, and that under pretence of much zeal there was more covetousness than in any other persuasion, I quitted that persuasion for another, and shifted so long that I found my life but one continued comedy of errors. In the end I went over to the episcopal party, and one of the most powerful reasons that I had to follow the independent persuasion, was a woman, my mistress's sister, as I suppose you have already heard.' ' Yes,' said I, ' this our friend hath given me satisfaction in that particular, and I very well approve of the revenge you had upon her. As for my own part, I was once a very great lover of the ramble myself, but left it out of a more generous consideration ;

for being in company with an orthodox parson, he told me that I was much mistaken in my opinions. He gave me such a character of a libertine zealot as I knew to be true, and wholly put me out of conceit with the faction.' They were now all desirous to hear what was said to that particular ; and therefore I told them I would recollect myself, and give them the best account that I could, and such a one as I believed they would conclude with me was not only ingenious, but true : and thereupon I began in this manner :

#### The Character of a Libertine Zealot

To describe him right is a task like that of the tailor who took measure of the Devil ; for there is nothing more like him upon earth than he. He is lined with covetousness and covered with hypocrisy, the root and cloak of all evil. Although at this time he carries a Bible, yet upon occasion he wears a sword ; so that it is hard to say, whether he be of the tribe of Simeon or Levi. He swallows contrary oaths faster than the eagles in the Tower do gobbets of flesh ; for the way to hell and the conscience of a libertine are two broad things. He condemns the lawful rites and ceremonies of the Church ; and is more ravished with the squeaking of a tithe pig, than with the music of organs.

He appears at his preaching (like Æsop's crow) in a dress of borrowed feathers ; for he preaches the works of other men, which are so much the worse for the coming out of his mouth, as wares for being second hand. But it would grieve your heart to see how he racks the ancient fathers when he makes his own confession, and mangles the modern divines more barbarously than the hangman did the body of Hugh Peters. I am sure poor Priscian gets many a broken head.

His eloquence consists altogether in railing, as though he had got his education at Billingsgate. In his discourse he runs on like a mad dog, foaming and open-mouthed, yelping at the reverend bishops ; and even accounts many of his own brethren, the sectaries, as mad as himself. Yet sometimes he perceives that his stuff is too short for the hour glass ; and then the wheels of his rhetoric move very heavily ; he then spends much time in humming and spitting ; and with the wiping of his nose makes many a filthy parenthesis.

As for his text, he handles that as Moses did his rod when it was turned into a serpent, he lays it down, and runs away from it. Yet his sermon lies all written before him ; for the poor copy-holder in divinity can do nothing without his notes. This his weakness he would have you think is his worth ; for he chargeth men of abler parts with

presumption. Yet when he prays, he shuts his eyes, preferring nonsense and tautologies before the divine liturgy. Vain wretch, that dares not speak to men without papers, and yet presumes to talk to God extempore ! As for his congregation, he saints or reprobates them according to what they give him ; and like a gypsy, tells good fortune to none but those that cross his hand with a piece of silver ; and by him, as well as by the Pope, you may be canonized for money. Thus he is a mere Balaam, that blesseth and curseth for reward. He that opposeth him, acts the part of an angel ; but he that submits to him is worse than an ass. If you consider his consistency, he is a kind of religious Proteus, that is now ready to fawn upon that power against which he hath so long barked. If, therefore, there be a Church in England which consists of men, surely the orthodox, faithful, constant ministers, are the doors, windows, pillars, bells and candlesticks ; and the rest serve only for weathercocks.

It is confessed, that at the beginning of this happy Restoration, he was a little stubborn ; perhaps expecting a second war ; but now (poor heart) he hath learned to pray for his Majesty : but if you could hear the language of his soul it is so as impatient heirs pray for their rich fathers. There are two sorts of men who having escaped a deserved pair of gallows pray for the King very strangely, that is a felon, whilst the executioner burns his hand ; and a traitor, whilst the Devil sears his conscience.

If you would know his name, you may find it subscribed to an ugly petition ; for where Bradshaw was a Pilate that condemned, he was one of those Jews that cried crucify. He professes sorrow for the Martyrdom of our late Sovereign ; but believe him not, for his hand helped to hale him to the block. In a word, he is at best but a state-crocodile, and one that is maudlin drunk with the King's blood.

No more, but if you chance to meet with a Hue and Cry, you may tell them that he was lately in a sequestered parsonage.

This character was hugely pleasing to the drugster ; and, indeed, he and his two companions, the scrivener, and Gregory the tailor did all conclude that it was very ingeniously true, and gave much satisfaction to them in that particular ; and they all agreed that the dissenters from the Church were the murderers of their Prince.

They all so well approving of what had been said of these varlets, I told them that I could likewise relate somewhat else of the same gentleman's composure, who writ that character ; and which I did conclude to be altogether as ingenious, and that it was a great novelty, having never as yet been in print. They being earnest in their desires

to hear me, I told them it was only the fifth fable of *Aesop* moralized ; and thereupon I began as follows :

The brutes would once go hunt : a nimble crew  
 Of those that dwell in dens and caves pursue  
 And take a goodly stag, who in his fall  
 Proclaims sufficient booties unto all.  
 Each beast being troubled with their hungry maws,  
 Were urging clients to their panting jaws :  
 ' Divide,' says one ; another cries, ' Cast lots ;'  
 With that the lion roars, ' Away ye Scots.  
 Who's that who says divide ? Pray be content,  
 The first part's mine, because most excellent ;  
 And but one part ? nay, then you do me wrong,  
 A second part is mine, because most strong ;  
 And if you dare give credit to my word,  
 My pain and sweat have merited a third.  
 Now there remains a fourth, which is but small,  
 And scarce worth speaking of amongst you all ;  
 Which you may give me willingly ; and thus,  
 Renew the friendship betwixt you and us.  
 Be wise therefore ; is it more safe to move  
 A lion's anger, or confirm his love ?  
 For if you shew the least unwillingness,  
 I'll make you know the senior of your mess.'  
 This said, the hunters were amazed thereat ;  
 They knew their distance, and they durst not prate,  
 But hung their tails betwixt their legs for shame,  
 And went away more hungry than they came.

' This,' said I, ' was the fable which, though it had already admitted of many paraphrases and morals, yet was never yet in my opinion so fit and aptly moralized, as in what I shall here recite,' which I did thus :

But take away the brutes, and clear the stage ;  
 Enter those mighty Nimrods of the age :  
 That cursed crew that hunted for a Throne,  
 And made a Babel in religion.  
 Lo here they come, that *England* did express  
 To be more brutish than a wilderness :  
 A wide-mouth'd yelping cur, with a long ear,  
 Of a Scotch brood, they call'd him —— :  
 Cerberus was his sire, and for his dam  
 A beast to whom *Adam* never gave name.  
 The solemn Covenant which he did take,  
 Hung like a pair of couples on his neck :

The which he soon shook off ; nay more, the dog  
Threw by his conscience, 't was a tedious clog.  
And then began the game : *Actæon's* hounds  
Ne'er gave their master half so many wounds,  
As these their King : it was a hellish brood  
That took the scent of none but Royal blood.  
Loud was their cry, and nimble was their race ;  
A sadder hunting far than *Chevy Chase*.  
But at the length, the Royal hart they take,  
Nor would they spare his life for Cæsar's sake ;  
But he must die, yet noble —— scorns  
His share, —— only got the horns.  
But like the lion, *Cromwell*, that great man,  
Made of *Behemoth* and *Leviathan*,  
Thus speaks ; ' And do you think, my friends, to share  
That prize in peace which I obtain'd in war ?'  
Divide the spoil, and then as General I  
Claim the first part due for my Excellency.  
A second part our able strength demands ;  
A third is mine, 'cause these victorious hands  
In all those fights wherein we had to do,  
Were the most painful and most prosperous too.  
Thus our activity, and strength, and worth,  
Have won three parts, there only rests a fourth ;  
Which we'll with love accept, but if denied,  
Our sword shall teach you better to divide.'  
Thus, as our Saviour's vesture, which might not  
Be cut in pieces, was obtained by lot :  
So our great *Charles* his power, which could not be  
Dissolv'd into an aristocracy,  
Was Tyrant *Cromwell's* share ; and now our whips  
Were turn'd to scorpions : Now the grand eclipse  
Began ; we saw no Sun for twice seven years,  
Only two fatal stars by turns appear :  
Protectorship, and Rumpship did prevail :  
*Nol* was the Dragon's head, and they the tail.  
But welcome *Charles* the Second, happy are we,  
That *Britain's* monarchy's restor'd in thee ;  
If *Cromwell's* life had put a period to't,  
It'd both begun and ended in a brute.

If they were pleased with the foregoing characters, this fable thus moralized gave them much more satisfaction, and highly contented them ; for the truth contained in it was undeniable, and it was expressed with much ingenuity, and they told me that certainly he that composed these two things, the character and fable, was a person very ingenious,

and able to convert any that were seduced in that faction, unless they were very obstinate, as most of that faction were. For having been rebellious to their Prince, they made that saying true, that rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, not to be repented of.

In this discourse of the several factions in religion we spent some time ; and the drugster being best acquainted with all of them, made a discourse of every one in particular from top to bottom. When he came to speak of them, he told us that he supposed there would now in a short time be some end of these growing factions ; ‘ Because,’ said he, ‘ that Quakerism is the last that is risen up, and it is now above twelve years since it began to be famous ; and though hitherto it increases, yet they have not found any other novelty from that, as at first there was out of the first religious faction ; but there is none that is produced by the Quaker ; so that it is hoped that will be the last of the factions. I have heard of one small faction that contradicts the Quakers, and that is one Muggleton’s sect, who together with one Reeve does pretend to be the two last witnesses that are to come upon earth. Reeve is some time since dead, but Muggleton surviving him, is a great enemy to the Quakers, and their chief opponent ; for they questioning his call, he for that cause damns them ; and so absolute he is, that he says, after he hath damned them they cannot be saved, not by Providence itself. He professes in one of his writings, being an interpretation of the 11 Chapter of the Revelations, that he and he alone can give a true interpretation of the Scripture, and unfold the whole counsel of God concerning himself, the Devil, and all mankind from the foundation of the world to all Eternity ; and this was never revealed by any of the sons of men, until now. Thus subscribing his papers, “ By Lodowick Muggleton, one of the two last Commissionated Witnesses and prophets of the only High, Immortal, Glorious God, *Christ Jesus.*” ’

We told the drugster that this Sect of Muggletons we had not heard of ; and I being very desirous to be further acquainted with this opinion, asked him if he had read his writings, ‘ Yes,’ said he, ‘ and there is as extraordinary matters and opinions handled and treated of therein as any sect that this last age hath produced. Nay, and more absolute he would make himself than all others ; but he more especially writes against the Quakers, in a manner condemning them all in general.’ I desiring to be more particularly informed of his writings, he granted my request, and proceeded as followeth :

‘ This book of his writing,’ said he, ‘ falling into the hands of one Edward Bourn, a Quaker, is by him despised and cavilled at ; for he said that he had perused it till he was weary with looking into it, for it

was one of the dirtiest and confusedest pieces of work that ever he saw. And many other particular cavils had he against it. Which Muggleton hearing of, is so much offended that he writes a letter to him, dated in August 1662, and there he thus concludes : " I write these lines unto you Edward Bourn, knowing you to be of the seed of the Serpent, and appointed to eternal damnation before you were born. Though you know it not, I do know it by your speaking evil of that doctrine which is declared by us the witnesses of the Spirit, by calling it deceit, confusion, and lies, with many more wicked speeches against the purest truth that ever was declared by prophet or apostle, because this is the commission of the Spirit, and the last witness of God on earth.

" Therefore, for these your hard sayings against the doctrine of this commission of the Spirit : In obedience unto my commission, I pronounce you cursed and damned, both soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men and angels, to eternity ; neither shall that light within you, nor any God, deliver you from this curse, but according to my word it shall be upon you, because you shall know that God hath given power unto man to curse you to eternity, and that there is a prophet of the Lord now in England."

This letter being thus subscribed, was printed and sent to the said Edward Bourn. Also another to one Samuel Hooker and W. S., both Quakers, wherein amongst other things he thus writes :

" First, I declare as I am a prophet and messenger of the true God, that the people called Quakers are not the children of the most high God, but for the generality of them they are children of the Devil, and are the very seed of the Devil, and were begotten by him. And I (as I am an ambassador ordained of God by voice of words) can as truly say ; that they are the seed of the Serpent, and so the children of the Devil, as Christ did to the Jews, when he said that they were Serpents, yea Devils, and the Devil was their father. So can I say by you Quakers, and many thousands more as well as you, that you were the children of the Devil, that were begotten by him, and not begotten by Adam, who never came through the loins of Adam, though they came through the womb of Eve. For this I know, Cain was the first-born of the Devil, and Adam had no part in the begetting of him. And from this Cain came the Jews that Christ called Serpents and Devils."

Much more he writes against the Quakers, and is as absolute in his sentence of damnation against these two, being almost in the same words as the former. His writings in general are filled with many strange opinions, and he is now the greatest enemy of the Quakers, telling them, that they are but some of the melancholy sort of ranters,

and by falling from ranting to quaking are now worse than before. For before they were in the wilderness, but are now returned back into Egypt, and so the further off from entering into the Land of Canaan.

‘ In one place he is pretty pleasant with the Quakers, for, saith he, “ The greatest things that ever I heard the Quakers do is to find fault with a piece of ribbon, gold button, or a bandstring, and such like, and to possess themselves with a melancholy spirit of witchcraft, and so fall into witchcraft-fits, to lie humming and groaning, which doth fright the beholders ; so instead of those merry Devils which they had upon the ranting score, where all was good, lying with their neighbour’s wife, deflowering virgins, cozening and cheating, and destroying every one in their outward estate, which did entertain them, now that Devil is cast out, they are grown in as much extreme on the other side ; for now they are grown so precise and exact for apparel and for words, no words must be placed out of joint, so that no man can almost tell how to deal with them. And this melancholy Devil hath cast out the ranting Devil, which makes them so proud and stiff-necked, thinking themselves that they are better than other people, when as they are worse ; for they are possessed with the spirit of witchcraft, which makes them two-fold more the children of the Devil than they were before ; which none can discover but this commission of the Spirit ; neither did I ever hear by any which heard the Quakers speak, that they did ever preach any sound doctrine, but only exhort people to hearken to the light within them, which is a very low and easy thing for every ordinary understanding to comprehend ; and this is the cause there is such a multitude of men and women fall into it, &c.” And thus did he proceed, his whole writing being to pull them down, and set himself up.

‘ Soon after the printing of these letters, I met with a Quaker, an acquaintance of mine, and asked of him whether he had seen these letters of Muggleton’s, which went by the name of *The Neck of the Quakers broken, or cut in sunder by the two-edg’d sword of the Spirit, which is put into my mouth.* He replied, Yea he had. ‘ What thinkest thou,’ said I, ‘ of those of your persuasion in general, and more particularly of those persons whom he hath damned ? ’ “ I think him to be a deluded person,” said he, “ for I have known him long, and also his fellow-prophet Reeve, who is since dead. And I remember this one passage, that one of our persuasion did calmly discourse with Reeve about many principal things of his judgment and opinion ; and though they did not agree to everything, yet Reeve said he believed he would be converted, for that he was confident he was of the seed of Faith,

and not of that of the Devil, only that his eyes were not yet opened, but in time they would." And thus they parted.

' Soon after, Muggleton (who was always more vigilant than Reeve) being affronted by some Quakers, according to his custom pronounced the sentence of damnation against them ; which the Quakers who had discoursed with Reeve hearing, and meeting with Muggleton, told him he had done very ill, in being so rash as to damn them ; and further, charged him with wandering up and down to make sects. To this Muggleton replied ; " It is not I, it is those of the Quakers that wander up and down ; as those that went to New England, and John Perrot unto Rome, to get the Pope and his Bishops to be disciples of Christ and where to be punished in his body : and when he came home again, to be damned to eternity, by me, for his pains ; because he went by the light within him, and was not sent by the voice of God without him. Therefore eternal damnation will be his reward for going without a commission from God ; and so will all the ministers of the Quakers. And whereas you say that my mouth is full of cursing, and that I shall reap of the same ; likewise you say that I am out of Christ's and the Apostle's doctrine, that said, bless and curse not, with many other sayings : As for my mouth being full of cursing, that is my commission ; neither do I curse any but devils, which are appointed for it of God ; and there is never a one that I have cursed that shall escape that curse which I have denounced upon them ; neither will God deliver them from it. For I do curse none but the seed of the Serpent, who had his curse denounced upon him and his seed, at the beginning by God himself."

' To this discourse of Muggleton's, our brother the Quaker making some angry reply, in contradicting what he had said, Muggleton did for that cause presently pronounce the sentence of damnation, alleging that he was of the seed of the Devil. " Thus," said the Quaker, " though Reeve said he was not of the seed of the Devil, yet Muggleton, his fellow-prophet, said he was, and therefore proceeded against him to damnation. Now whether he be damned or saved, judge you. And therefore," said he, " I think it matters not much what he says, because they thus contradict one another."

' And thus we parted, and I concluded that as it was no great matter what Muggleton said or did, so there was no great heed to be taken with what was, or should be said or done by the Quakers, I believing and knowing that what Muggleton had said of them as to their humours and falling from ranting to quaking, and such like particulars, to be true ; though I believed him, and all other factions to be alike deluded and mistaken in the general.

'And,' continued he, 'though this Muggleton's opinions and doctrine be thus strange, and he a very considerable, unlearned fellow, being by profession a tailor; yet he hath gained many to his belief, who give him much respect. But he takes no money of them, only he gets his writings printed, and distributing them among his people, they pay him for them. But in the main he works at his trade for a livelihood; and he hath, as well as the Quakers, suffered imprisonment, but hath been released and favoured, as I have heard, by some persons of honour, who are well-willers to him.'

Thus did the drugster discourse of the factions, and we with him did hope and conclude that since there was no greater a growth in faction, there having been no new ones for some years last past, that it was more than probable that they would consume and moulder away of themselves.

The forenoon being spent wholly in the large narrative of the adventures of my now fellow-companions and guests, and the most of the afternoon in this discourse, it was time now to think of parting; and they being mindful of the entertainment they were to give me the next day on board of their ship, being out of my house furnished with some necessary provisions, all parted from me.

### CHAPTER XXXIII

*He is treated by the travellers on board of their ship, where he sees the two women travellers: he invites and entertains them at his house, where upon enquiry and discourse, he discovers the two women to be of his acquaintance when in England*

MY company being thus parted from me, I began to consider all the passages that had been this day related to me; and after a serious contemplation of them, I concluded that I might place this day as the most remarkable in all my life. For I was acquainted with so much variety of experiences as I had in a manner been hitherto wholly ignorant of; what had happened to me in the former part of my life, having been trivial in comparison of what I had now lately heard; and I concluded that if I should have travelled to all parts of the world to have found out companions fit for me, I could never have been better accommodated with those that should have been so agreeable to my natural inclination, than those whom fortune had now brought to me. I had long since made it my resolve to make my life as comfortable as I could, according to the old saying amongst those of my quality, Though a short life, yet a merry; and I saw Providence had put such an

opportunity into my hands that I had all things provided for me, and nothing before their arrival was wanting but such a society. For I had a plentiful estate, but that gave me little content, being without the usual society of wits ; and I now was likely not only to enjoy that in a full measure, but also there was some female company, the two lasses in men's apparel, who I understood were good girls, and such I hoped as would not prove hard-hearted and deny one of their countrymen the usual civility of their enjoyments. I did not much question it, because indeed I was so much in favour with Venus that I was hardly ever refused that courtesy by any of her votresses.

I told my wife there was a great likelihood of much profit to be gained by these guests, who were resolved to take up my house wholly for their quarters ; and therefore I ordered all things to be provided in ample manner for their constant entertainment ; for though I was now rich enough, yet I knew not how soon fortune might turn tail upon me. Therefore knowing that my guests were all well provided with money, I was resolved to put in with them for a share of it. But I had no thoughts of wronging them, or putting any trick upon them ; for it is accounted a very great crime in the greatest proficient of roguery to cozen or cheat his fellow-thief, and a thing seldom done amongst them. I had now some thoughts of leaving my black wife and that country ; and when my new acquaintance should leave this place for another, as I suppose they would, then to go with them, for there was nothing there that gave any great invitation to stay in it, my inclination leading me rather to visit some European country.

These considerations took me up some time ; and night coming on, I betook me to my cot, where I took my ordinary repose. The next morning being come, I apparelled myself the richest that I could, that I might add some grace to my person, being to visit two of my country-women, in whose favour I was desirous to get some place. Being thus accoutred, I went to the seaside, and with the help of a boat was soon aboard the ship ; where I was welcomed by the captain and the rest of the company, and by them conducted into the great cabin, where was no other company but the two women ; who now being apparelled in their woman's habit *A la mode d'Anglois*, I was very well pleased, not having for a long time seen any thing so acceptable and pleasant. I had not forgotten our English fashion of saluting them, neither were they backward in rising and meeting me in order thereto. That done, I placed myself between them. I soon began a discourse to them which I knew would not at all be displeasing, and that was commending their beauty, telling them that if the present emperor of the country, the Great Mogul, did but understand what a treasure he had in his country by their

arrival, that he would quickly secure it to himself, and hinder the prosecution of their voyage any further. To this they replied that they did not believe he would see anything in them that should merit such an esteem ; ‘but,’ added one of them, ‘if he should do so, and be never so desirous of my company, yet I am better satisfied in the society that I am at present in possession of than if I were courted and served by the greatest Prince upon earth.’

To this so generous speech, I replied that those persons who had the honour to be her servants were in that very happy. These compliments being passed, drink was brought, and after that victuals, which we had in great plenty, there being no want of anything that could be had at the best man’s table in England. All the dishes of meat were dressed in the English fashion, by a cook of that country. After dinner we fell again to discourse, the women being very desirous of novelties, and to be acquainted with the customs of the country, especially of those used by women. But when I told them of that custom of the better sort of countrywomen, how they usually accompanied their husbands in death by burning their living with their husbands’ dead bodies, they were not very well pleased therewith, accounting it great folly. ‘For,’ said they, ‘it cannot possibly do their husbands any good, and that they should so destroy themselves out of a compliment is foolish. To pass through, and accompany a husband or friend whilst living in all dangers, is what is befitting ; but there being no remedy for death, nor no present enjoyment after death, thus to cast away themselves, is ridiculous.’ We allowed of their opinions as grounded upon reason. I asked them how they liked our men, the inhabitants. ‘Not at all,’ said one of them, ‘as a husband or bedfellow, but if there were no other man to be had, we must be contented with them rather than none, as you are with the native women.’

Various were our discourses in which we entertained one another with much pleasure, having a lusty bowl of punch still standing by us, which as we drank off, we renewed, and at some of our frolics one of the great guns was discharged.

I had eyed both these women very curiously, and did imagine that I had formerly seen them, and had some acquaintance with them. I knew one of them more particularly by the tone of her voice, but it having been so long since I had seen either, I could not call them to mind ; I did not at all think it convenient to ask them any particular questions, referring that to a greater privacy.

I being now acquainted with most of their transactions, they asked my advice in disposing their money, and selling their commodities, and what to buy to turn to the best advantage. To all these questions I gave them

the best answers I could, to their satisfaction ; and now night coming on, I desired to leave them, and invited them all to my house the next day. They not only concluded on that, but agreed that the women should constantly take my house for their quarters, it being more convenient than on board of the ship, they coming in their men's apparel, and I providing for them with all privacy. To this I agreed, and after a fresh cup of wine, and my ordinary salutes to the women, I left them and went home to my wife, who at my desire provided all things necessary, not only for the next day's entertainment, but for the future conveniency of my lodgers, who were not to be known to her for other than men.

The next day they came, and we were again all merry ; but some occasions calling away the men, the women were left along with me. I was now resolved to enquire whether they had never known me. They both replied, not that they at present knew of ; but they both said that certainly they had seen me in England, but at present they could not remember where ; wherefore they prayed me to give them some account of my condition and quality when I lived in England. To this I replied that I had been indeed of all conditions, and a very rambler, and it was a great chance, but if they had been in any public house of entertainment that I might have seen them there. To this they both answered that they had for some time been public enough in entertaining gentlemen in their company with much freedom. 'But,' said one of them, who was the scrivener's mistress, 'I have certainly seen and known you before I undertook any such courses, for if I be not mistaken, you are the man did first deceive me, and therefore, I pray, tell me if in your travels in England you did not light into a farmer's house, and did some kindnesses or discourtesies to his daughter, and then left her.' I hearing her say this, after some small pause, recollect ed myself and seriously viewing her, concluded her to be the very farmer's daughter whose maidenhead I had bereaved her of, and in requital left her and gave her no other satisfaction than a paper of verses. I now being resolved in my opinion, ran to her and embracing her, begged pardon for that affront, telling her that it was only one of those many youthful tricks whereof I had been guilty. She at first out of offence of the affront that I had done her, could not forbear weeping ; but I gave her so many good words that in fine she was well enough satisfied, and lovingly permitted me to embrace and kiss her.

The other woman hearing that my acquaintance with her companion began with the loss of her virginity, mused and blushed and very strictly beholding me, said, 'And truly, if I be not mistaken, I purchased my acquaintance with you with the same loss. But I was deceived by you in a more subtle manner than this my companion ; for she knowing you to be a man, permitted you to her bed, as she hath formerly related to

me. But if you are the person that I mean (as I now think you are) you became my bedfellow by a mistake ; for not only I, but many others of the family, believed you to be a woman.' I hearing her say this, fixed my eyes upon her, but could not yet perfectly remember her ; but to the discourse she made I gave this answer ; ' Truly, Madam, I have been often guilty of female frauds ; and during the whole course of my life, I endeavoured chiefly to have the company of a female ; and I hope if you were one of those with whom I lay at a boarding-school, where I went for a servant-maid, that you will forgive me that fact ; for if it were not there, I then cannot tell where I should have so much happiness as to enjoy you.' ' There it was,' replied she, ' where I lost my virginity and honour, and which I have so often repented of ; for I was then well beloved of an indulgent father, who for that fact cast me off ; and ever since, I have been forced to wander like a vagabond, and by infamous courses to gain a livelihood,' and with this she wept.

I was much amazed at these two adventures, and indeed pitied them both, but more especially the last, whom I had so long since deceived ; and seeing her tears, I kneeled down to her, begging her pardon, and telling her that what was passed was not to be prevented or helped, but if she pleased, I would for the future be her humble servant in assisting her in what I might. To this she told me that she knew there was no remedy for what was passed ; but that the remembrance of that first misfortune could not but sensibly afflict her, but she should throw off that sorrow, and make the best of a bad matter ; and thank Providence that since it was no better it was no worse. And as she had hitherto been well enough contented with her condition, so she intended to frame her spirit and mind to be so for the future ; and that now she had the satisfaction she had often desired in seeing that person who first tasted and cropped her virgin flower. Her companion did likewise say that it was the greatest satisfaction she had ever received since the loss of my company, that she had again found me ; for notwithstanding my base and abrupt leaving her she had still preserved a more cordial love for me than for any person she had ever since then enjoyed. The other said the same, and though I was partly unknown to her when I lay with her, as being disguised in woman's apparel ; yet she still had me in her memory, and often wished for the sight of me. And from this discourse we all concluded that though a woman had many husbands or servants, yet she seldom loved any man with so much affection as him with whom she first tried and tasted the effects of love, and who had her virginity.

' Well, Ladies,' said I, ' I am so much bound to you for preserving an affection for me, who have so unworthily deserved it, that I shall dedicate the remaining part of my life wholly to obey and serve you.'

'As for that profession of your love now,' said the drugster's mistress (who was the youngest, and her who had I enjoyed at the boarding-school), 'it matters not much, for we have had experience enough in the world to shift for ourselves ; and neither are we unprovided of those who, you know, are our servants, and who will take care for us, and save you that trouble.' 'No trouble at all,' replied I, 'but an honour which I pray you to bestow on me to serve you in any degree.'

They were very much surprized, and so was I, at this adventure, and I thought it was best to talk no more of it at present. Wherefore I called for some wine, and such banqueting cheer as I had, and desired them to participate of it, which they did ; and so I at present diverted them from that profound melancholy wherein they were brought upon this occasion. At length they again reassumed their jovial temper ; and beginning to be a little frolic, I assisted them in that humour. But I was very earnest to know their adventures, being, as I supposed, somewhat concerned therein, they being both with child by me when I left them. I therefore begged the satisfaction to know what did become of the fruit of our enjoyments, those children which I suppose they had by me ; for I told them I was not insensible of the condition I left them in, when I parted from them. 'Truly,' replied the drugster's mistress, who was named Mary, 'I know not at all what became of mine since it was born.' 'And,' said the other, who was the scrivener's mistress, and was named Dorothy, and had been the farmer's daughter, 'I know but little of mine since it was a year old.'

I was desirous to hear of both of them their several fortunes, or rather misfortunes since I first knew them ; and they agreeing to give me that satisfaction, it was concluded that Mrs Mary, with whom I had first to do, should first relate her story. Therefore she began as followeth :

#### CHAPTER XXXIV

*Mrs Mary relates how that she, being got with child at the boarding-school, is renounced by her parents, but provided for by her aunt, where she lay in of a daughter. After which she is courted in way of marriage by a gentleman, who hearing of her mischance, instead of marriage only abuses her : and being engaged in a quarrel about her, leaves her to shift for herself*

IN the discourse that I shall make to you concerning those accidents or misfortunes that have befallen me, I shall neither be reserved nor tedious, but plain and short ; for I have no reason to disguise any of my

actions to two such persons, who are so generally well acquainted with the general affairs of the world, and who have such a particular knowledge of me. Though I must needs confess I received very much pleasure in the first embraces I had with you ; when, though I supposed myself in bed with one of my own sex, yet I found the contrary, and then tasted the pleasures of a male bedfellow. Though the sweets of that converse were delightful at the time, yet I have through that one occasion suffered many crosses, and been accompanied with much affliction and trouble which soon overtook me.

I was very young, not being above sixteen years of age, when I first lay with you ; and so innocent I was at that age that I did not imagine that I should have found so sudden an alteration in my body as was thereby occasioned ; neither did I conceive what would be the effects thereof till some of my other companions, who had lain with you before me, were discovered to be sick, and the occasion of their distemper being enquired into, it was found they were with child, and then I did guess myself to be in the same condition.

I suppose you were not ignorant of what you had done, and therefore took your flight ; but though you contrived your escape cunningly enough by putting on men's apparel, yet it was observed, and you were followed so narrowly that we supposed you had been taken, but it proved otherwise. ('Yes,' replied I, 'when I made my escape I made for London, and being habited in a suit of clothes of my mistress's son's, I was fearful of being discovered and known by them, and therefore meeting with a young man of my acquaintance, I remember, I persuaded him to exchange clothes with me, and so I escaped ; but I would gladly know how he came off.') Truly, replied Mrs Mary, that story was somewhat strange, for the constable who seized him had orders not to make much noise in the matter, but only to secure him in his own house ; which he having done, came to our boarding-school and acquainted our mistress that he had secured the party. This being known, my mistress sent her son whose clothes were stolen to the place ; where instead of finding our maid Jane (for by that name, I remember you went, when you lived with us) he saw a strange young man in his clothes. Though he was told you had his clothes on, which he yet saw before him, yet he knew you well enough not to be so mistaken ; for the party that was in that habit was nothing like you. He therefore thought that all that had been reported to him was false, till he had made a further enquiry of the young man your friend, who was first asked where he had those clothes. He not knowing any reason he should deny anything of the truth, freely and fully acknowledged that he had them in exchange of his own, of a young man his friend ; and being asked many other

questions, as whether he knew you ? and knew you to be a man ? and where this exchange was made ? he fully resolved his examiners of all questions, and proved the exchange of clothes by the people, of the house where the exchange was made.

My mistress's son being returned with this answer to his mother, it caused great wonder in all who were not privy to your disguise, but there being about seven or eight of us who were knowing of that secret, and were known to lie with you, we were all privately examined and some of us having been sick for some time before, and now strictly examined of the cause, and whether we knew anything of your disguise, and whether you were man or woman ; we could not hide or deny our knowledge thereof.

Upon this discovery our mistress (though she was termed a very discreet person) was so outrageous that we thought she would have lost the ordinary use of her senses ; and several revenges she propounded to take of you, not thinking you were escaped her power. But when she understood that you were gone, she caused all privy search and enquiry to be made after you, but to no purpose. The young man, your friend, who had been secured was discharged, as being found wholly innocent of the crime ; and neither was he deprived of his clothes, but had them freely given to him, and a good sum of money promised him if he could find and secure you : but though much endeavour was used to find you, yet I could never hear anything of you till this late encounter.

But to proceed in my story. Our mistress upon second thoughts resolved to keep this business private for some longer time, to see how many of those seven or eight with whom you had lain would prove with child ; and it was not long before she found that five of the number were pregnant, whereof I was one. How she ordered the matter with the rest I know not ; but for my own part, my father being made acquainted with my misfortune wholly refused to take any care or notice of me, neither have I ever since seen his face ; for though I suppose he loved me well enough, yet I had a mother-in-law who might persuade him to slight me, and made use of this occasion to throw me off. But though I was thus cast off by my father, yet I had an aunt who was sister to my own mother who came and visited me ; and finding that what was passed could not be helped took me home with her to her house, where after the usual time of women's breeding and bearing children, I was delivered of a daughter, which was soon after its birth sent further into the country to be nursed. I suppose it was carried thus privately in hopes to solder up the crack that might be in my reputation, which though it did for the present, yet it soon after brake out again.

For a young gentleman who lived in the next town to that where my

aunt dwelt, having seen me, fell deeply in love with me, and often waited on me at my aunt's, and took many opportunities of meeting me abroad. Though I liked and loved him well enough, and could have been pleased to have entertained his love with liking at the first offer of it, yet I was commanded by my aunt to stand off and be coy in my entertaining of him, lest, as she said, he might by my freeness suspect me of lightness ; for the matter had been so privately carried in my lying-in that it was not known to him nor any, but some few in the house ; and to all others I passed as a virgin. I taking this advice of my aunt, gave him but indifferent entertainment ; so that he, who was passionately in love with me, devised all ways he could to woo, please and win me ; and to that end he presented me with many gifts, as marks of his affection. All things were now brought to a very good pass, and my aunt had so prudently managed this affair that my father was content to part from a considerable sum of money for my advancement ; which was to the full satisfaction of the gentleman who courted me.

There wanted nothing now to conclude this affair but the accomplishment of a few days, in which all writings were to be sealed, and the wedding to be consummated ; when all was undone, and I undone, by the treachery and perfidiousness of my servant-maid. For she having received gifts of the young gentleman, and I having angered her in a trivial matter, she, to be revenged on me, did acquaint my suitor with my condition, and that I should not die of my first child, for he should be a father the first day of marriage. Although, at her first declaring this matter to him, he could not give credit thereto, yet she affirmed the same with so many and so earnest asseverations that he was confirmed in that belief, and therefore enjoining her to secrecy and assistance, and to that end presenting her with somewhat that was considerable, he left her. And now being resolved to deceive me as I intended him, he ordered his affairs accordingly, and to that end he caused some delay to be used in the writings.

We being now, as I thought, as good as man and wife, I entertained him with much freedom, and he courted me with less observance, coming now closer to me in his salutes and embraces. I was so pleased with him in all his actions that I became wholly at his devotion, and therefore, without the consent and knowledge of my aunt, we went together out of the town to a merry-making of several of his acquaintance, where we stayed somewhat late ; and he having caused me to drink to a good height, made a halt by the way, and we went into an inn of his acquaintance, he pretending somewhat was amiss in one of his horse's shoes. Here we having privacy, he attempted to be more free with me than ever, and prevailed so far with me that he had the examining of my placket,

with more freedom than modesty would allow of ; but though he would have proceeded further, yet I refused it. He seeing this desisted, and we again remounted our horses and he conducted me safely to my aunt's.

But although it was very late, yet she sat up and expected me, and expressed herself very angry with him for keeping me out so unseasonably. He did not well relish her words, but replied somewhat tartly to her again ; which increased her anger and raised it to some passion, and so in anger they at that time parted, he riding home to his own house. I was likewise sufficiently scolded by my aunt ; but I excused all with soft answers, and pleading obedience, which I thought I was bound to pay him, seeing our marriage was so soon to be celebrated.

My lover was resolved to make use of that day's experience of my easiness, and my aunt's anger, which he was well enough pleased should continue, and therefore forbore coming to visit me ; but he sent a messenger to my maid (who had betrayed me) to give him a meeting. She obeyed his summons, and there and then was my ruin contrived ; for it was agreed between them two that she should persuade me to be ruled by him in everything, without acquainting my aunt any more with my proceedings ; and a letter was written, wherein he expressed a continuance of his love, and desires of mine. For a proof thereof, he desired me to provide myself to meet him at a place appointed ; which I did, and there we concluded to go for London together, where he promised to marry me without any more delay. I believing him in every thing (being persuaded thereto by my treacherous servant) took only some few necessaries with me, and so went to him. And thus leaving all, went with him to London, where, when we were arrived, he went to some lodgings which he had provided, as he said, for himself and wife. I was at first contented with the discourse and name of wife ; but when bed-time came, I was not fully satisfied to go to bed with him ; which though I at first opposed, yet in the end, after many protestations of his next day's performance of marriage, I consented to, and thereby agreed to my undoing. For the next day, instead of marriage, he went out in the morning, leaving me only with the landlady of the house, and returned not in two days ; and then he pretended he had been in great vexation, for that the morning he left me, he being going to speak with a priest to marry us, he was met with by a person to whom he was a little indebted, who basely trapanned and arrested him, and he was forced to be in the custody of bailiffs ever since, till he had persuaded a friend to lend him some money, which together with what he had of his own, he said he had paid to his debtor, and so was discharged. ' And now,' said he to me, ' I have sent home for some more money, which I know will be brought

me in two days' time, and then I shall put an end to this business of our marriage.'

Although I seemed discontented with what he told me, and did begin to believe that he would abuse me, yet I knew it was to no purpose to be very angry, and only caused him to give me fresh protestations of the honesty of his contentions, and that as soon as ever his money was come, he would fulfil all my desires.

Thus was I forced to be contented with what he said, and to comply with him in all his desires ; for we lay together. But I kept within doors very privately, refusing to be seen by anybody till such time as our wedding should be over.

But though two or three days and a week was now passed since he pretended he had sent into the country for money, yet there came no return ; at which I was very much discontented, he also seeming dissatisfied. I then told him that I had brought a small sum of money with me, which I supposed would be sufficient to pay the charges of that occasion. He asked me how much I had. I told him about 10*l.* I remember he was somewhat blank, and at a nonpluss at this proposition ; but he soon recovering himself, told me that he expected 100*l.* to be brought him, and that would be little enough to defray all the charge he intended to be at ; for he proposed to lay it all out in clothes for me and himself, that we might appear the more splendidly, not only to some friends in London, whom he proposed to visit soon after marriage, but also in the country whither he intended in short time to return to demand my portion, and settle all things according to the agreement of our friends. As for the small sum of 10*l.* he told me I would have occasion to lay it out in trivial things on that occasion.

Thus was I put off at this time ; and indeed so often afterwards that I in plain terms told him that I supposed he intended to abuse me. He being resolved to stand the brunt of all my exclamations at this time, did not endeavour, as formerly, to pacify me, but rather provoked me to say more, and be more angry with him, which I was, and reproached him with the abuse he had done me. He having heard the utmost of what I could say, in short told me that he was the abused party ; for should he marry me, as he intended, he should have a greater charge to maintain than I had told him of, for he had understood that I was mother of a child ; and so the abuse that I would put on him was double. I was so surprized with what he said that I was more dead than alive, and could not for a long time speak to him ; and when I attempted it, I knew not what to say for myself, for he directly told me that he was acquainted with every particular of my misfortune. Thus having said, he left me.

Many and sad were the thoughts I entertained in my mind, and I

perceived myself to be miserable ; for to return to my aunt I knew would be to no purpose, I having thus abused her in my last leaving her. Therefore I concluded it was my best course at present to comply with the desires of my lover, not knowing whom to flee to for refuge ; wherefore at his return home, I began to him in tears to lament my sad condition, begging his pardon for what was past, clearly confessing the truth of all my former misfortune, and that I would for the future be very obedient and constant to him in all things. He gave me the hearing of what I said, and told me all should be well ; but I could never find him after that inclinable to marry me, only putting me off with one pretence or other ; and having a full enjoyment of me already, cared for no more. And now to content and please him, I must not only entertain several of his friends at home at our lodging, but also wait on him abroad ; and instead of wife, I passed for his cousin.

Amongst other persons that came to visit him there was a gentleman of good quality, who being of his intimate acquaintance, was frequent at our lodgings. He taking his opportunity to find me alone, made a tender of his love and service to me, and offered me his assistance in every thing I should command him. I finding that he understood somewhat of my condition already, and believing it would be to no purpose to conceal anything from him, did make him an exact and true narrative of my misfortunes. He was much troubled at the recital of things so strange, but did comfort me the best he could, promising me his best assistance in putting his friend on to perform his promise of marriage ; ‘for,’ said he, ‘I know little reason he hath to deny or refuse it. For your first misfortune at the boarding-school was so subtle a business that you cannot well be blamed for it.’

This gentleman accordingly did endeavour to possess my hoped-for husband with that opinion, and to persuade him to marry me, but all in vain ; for he had now all the sweets he could expect from me, having lain with me now for above a month together, and in that time I endeavoured with all the artifice I could to give him all possible content. But he was now cloyed, and therefore told his friend that for his mistress he intended to keep me, but never to have me for a wife. I was near distracted when this answer was told me ; but the gentleman did again comfort me, promising that he hoped in short time to put all things to rights again. I seeing it was to no purpose to be angry, resolved to bear all things with patience, and seem to be frolic, which was to a good height ; and this gentleman seeing me in so merry a humour was desirous to put in for a share in the pleasure of my enjoyments, and to that end now courted me indeed. He had been so civil to me in these late transactions that I could not handsomely refuse him anything ; but, however,

I for some time held out against all his loving importunities ; but he having an absolute freedom in our lodging so waited his opportunity that he won me to his embraces, and had a full possession of me.

Thus was I enjoyed by two men ; but my last lover was very cautious in keeping his enjoyment from the knowledge of his friend, and we took opportunities in his absence to renew our pleasures. But at length we grew so bold in these practices that my first lover discovered us, and watching his opportunity by hiding himself in the chamber, he took us in the manner. He discovering himself, used many outrageous speeches to me and my companion, as, that he abused him in persuading and urging him to marry with one who was his prostitute. The other flew out into high expressions ; and being valorous enough, they drew their weapons, and before I could get any to interpose and hinder their fight, my new lover was wounded, and that so desperately that he fell. The other seeing that, and supposing him killed, fled, and so left me. My wounded friend being visited by chirurgeons, recovered a little, but desired to be removed to his own lodgings, lest he might be prejudiced by the various reports that would run upon this occasion ; I was likewise willing to have it so, as thinking it most convenient.

Thus was I left alone, and I, who lately had two lovers and servants, was now left without any ; for my old friend came no more after me, and my new servant, who was wounded, was forced for his health sake to be carried into the country.

Now did I find myself truly distressed, for I wholly retired myself, not seeing any man, and was only accompanied by my landlady and another ancient woman who frequented her house. In vain did I await the return of either of my lovers ; and almost all my money was gone in diet, and for payment of lodging. My landlady proposed several ways and courses for me to take, as to send to my first friend who brought me thither, which I did, but could not hear of him ; she would have had me send to my aunt, but I wholly refused so to do, being resolved to bear with any necessities rather than again to apply myself to her.

The other old woman, who, I told you, frequented our house, did then put in some words to the discourse, and my landlady leaving us together, she told me that if I would be ruled by her she would so order matters that I should want for nothing, and live the pleasantest life in the world. I who was now miserable enough, was well enough pleased to hear of pleasure, and bid her say on. She thereupon told me that it was great pity that so delicate a beauty as mine should be closeted up, and that I should spend that time in tears and lamentations which might not only be a pleasure to myself, but many others who would love me with a great deal of passion ; and, whereas hitherto I had only been reserved

to serve the pleasures of one man, or two at the most, and for that I had only reaped sorrow and trouble, that I might command many, who would not only please and serve me, but I should command their purses by having money enough at my own disposal. Many words to this purpose she uttered, and many arguments she used. Though at the first I did not understand what she aimed at, yet by several questions which she answered me, I found she would have me prostitute my body for my pleasure, and to gain a livelihood ; and in fine, should get my living with the hands I sat on.

Though I had tasted man, as first with you, and afterwards had two at a time, my two late lovers, and by that was induced to desire more of the same pleasures, yet I was extremely unwilling to prostitute my body to every fellow that should bring money in his hand ; and this I supposed I must do if once I undertook that course. Thus I reasoned with this old woman, but she told me, No, I should not do so, for I should only have my choice of what and whom I liked, and few of such would be profitable enough to maintain me in a splendid garb. To this she gave me so many reasons that I, consenting to leave my lodgings, went with her to the place where she conducted me.

### CHAPTER XXXV

*She gives an account of her being entered into a bawdy-house, where she received great profit by the sale of her maidenhead*

I BEING now come to the place intended, was entertained by a grave ancient matron, in whose face might be seen the ruins of no common beauty ; and the defects of that being occasioned by age, was sufficiently supplied in a deportment and garb that was not common, though it were very pleasant. She gave me many welcomes, and told me that she had a very great respect for me, having heard of my misfortunes, and hoping that she might put an end to my sorrows and afford me fresh pleasures. She had to that end employed that ancient woman as her messenger, to persuade me to leave that house of mourning wherein I was, for hers, which was a palace, nay, a paradise of pleasure, wherein I should be accompanied with all manner of contentment. I told her I should be willingly obedient to her commands, in expectation of those pleasures she promised. Several other discourses we had, whereby she gave me instructions how to behave myself ; 'and,' said she, 'since you intend to make one of my family, I shall give you an account of my manner and method in governing the same.'

' My house,' continued she, ' being frequented by persons of all qualities, it is therefore necessary that I should be furnished with women who should be proper and fit for their respective accommodations, for the servants and pages must be sometimes served as well as their masters. I therefore distinguish those women that belong unto me into three several sorts and distinctions ; and because I intend to make use of you only in the first and principal, I shall therefore be more particular in my discourse to you of that.

' You are, therefore, to know that as my house is well enough furnished with women to accommodate my ordinary guests, so I have several who are kept abroad, who serve for the extraordinary accommodation of my best sort of guests, and those are such as are so squeamish stomached that they will not see one face above two or three times. With these a maidenhead is a very great dainty, for they lay out with me for one, sometimes a quarter or half a year together. Now, though I know you have parted from yours already, yet I question not but to make a good merchandize of yours, and get a good round sum of money for you and myself ; and if you will be ruled by me in everything, I shall so manage the business that you shall not have to do with above two or three in a twelve months time, and they shall be such as shall not only maintain you in a brave garb and equipage, but you shall gain many jewels and a good round sum of money.' To this discourse I replied that I hoped she would perform what she said, and in expectation thereof I should dispose myself to be wholly directed by her.

This, I remember, was our first discourse to this purpose, and she ordered me a lodging within a few doors of her house, where I had such another as myself for my companion, and we were very well accommodated with everything. My habit was somewhat altered, for I was now put into the most exact mode that was then in best esteem. According to her directions I carried myself in every thing, and once a day I waited on her, or else she came to me. I had not been there many days before she told me that there was an opportunity to begin my business, and therefore she advised me to go the next day to a play, and set myself out in the best manner that I could. But she advised me by all means to decline drinking or entertaining any discourse with any person, though I should be importuned thereto. I promised obedience to her commands, and my companion, who was my bed-fellow, attended me to the play-house, where by giving great attention to the comedy that was acted, I did not mind those who made it their chief business to gaze on me.

The play being done, I went out, but was stayed by two gentlemen (who by their habits seemed of quality) who offered me their service to wait on me. I at first answered them with silence ; but they seeing I

had no other company but my bed-fellow, were very importunate to have me accept of theirs. I told them that they were strangers, and therefore durst not admit of their kind offer. Having said thus I called for a coach, and though they still importuned me to accept of their company, yet I absolutely refused it, and so caused the coachman to drive home. That evening was I visited by our matrona, who told me I had done well, for she had an account given her of my deportment ; ‘ for,’ said she, ‘ it is not unknown to me that you were offered the service of two gentlemen, one of which is a person who is a retainer to my house, an old beaten soldier, and several such we are forced to keep correspondence withal, that we may have new guests brought to our house. The other gentleman,’ said she, ‘ is one who hath a long time laid out for a fresh bit, and he was carried to the playhouse on purpose to see you ; whom I gave my correspondent his companion so just an account of that he could not miss knowing of you. They both followed your coach to your lodgings, and have since been at mine, and my young coxcomb is very much smitten with your beauty, and offers anything that he may enjoy your company. I have promised him my assistance, but he must come off well first ; and I question not but to manage him so as in few days you shall find the effects of his love in some noble present. Therefore,’ said she, ‘ fail not to be directed by me, and I doubt not but you will reap much pleasure and profit.’ I having promised a just compliance to her desires, she departed, leaving me in the company of her bed-fellow, who that night entertained me with a large account of her adventures.

I remember she told me that when she first came acquainted with our matrona she was picked up almost in the same manner as I had been ; and that in less than two months her maidenhead was sold six times, for which she had gained in presents to the value of fifty pounds ; ‘ and I suppose,’ said she, ‘ our matrona gained above as much more in money. Since then my first customers have but rarely visited me ; and she having no more customers for my maidenhead, I now pass for a merchant’s wife, and am often sent for in that name ; and I seldom miss a day without one or two customers, who entertain me as such a person.’ She being thus free with me, I thought good to ask her some more questions, as how she paid for her diet and lodging ? and from whence she had clothes ? To this she answered, that for the first half year her diet was paid for by the matrona, who indeed had all the money that was gained by her ; and as for clothes, she had them first of all lent or given by her, and since given her by those who had to deal with her. ‘ And now,’ said she, ‘ I pay for my own diet, and have all the money that is given me ; and all the profit she hath is in selling her wine and

other things she vendeth at our collations ; and now and then, I suppose, she gets half a piece or a piece from a new customer by procuring me.'

I was somewhat satisfied with this discourse, and the next day I was visited by the old woman who brought me first acquainted with our matrona, who brought me a letter from my amorous gallant. I remember, it was stuffed with compliments, and all the happiness he desired was to see me once more at the playhouse. In this affair I taking advice with our matrona, it was resolved I should return no answer ; but however, within two days I again went to the playhouse, where I was no sooner seated but I was attended by my gallant, and now I could not decline his company. During the play he treated me with all manner of fruits, and such things as could be purchased there ; and the play being done, he offered me a farther treat at some other place. But I refused that, as also any further converse with him, and again calling for a coach, I went home, refusing his company and being very shy and coy to all his proposals, which though many, yet prevailed not upon me.

The next day I had another letter sent me, as also a diamond ring of twenty pound price, as a present. I accepted of both, and then promised within two days to meet him again at the playhouse, where my gallant came richly accoutred in all his bravery. I then entertained discourse with him, and the play being ended I, at his earnest importunity, accepted of a treat he quickly provided for me at the next tavern. I then told him that I durst not stay, for I expected my uncle to come and visit me that evening at my lodging, who was to bring me news out of the country about my father. He being desirous to please me consented to my departure, I promising to give him another meeting at a place we appointed the next day, and thus we again parted. I was now so far engaged with him that I the next day again met him, and he then courted me for enjoyment ; but I seeming very angry, he to pacify me gave me a gold watch, and then I permitted him to embrace and kiss me ; and though I contradicted his proceeding further with me, yet he found by me that in time he might arrive to it. In this apprehension he was very prodigal in his promises of what great things he would do if I would permit him so great a happiness, he oftentimes wishing himself a single man (for he was married) that he might make himself happy in so brave a wife as he knew I would be. These discourses and others which he used, and those many strict embraces which he gave me, did somewhat move me with the titillations of the flesh, and I had much ado to continue inexorable ; but remembering how I had been deceived formerly, and withal knowing that I had not our matrona's order as yet for fruition, I therefore contradicted my own thoughts and wanton desires, and refused to let him

PLATE IX



[face p. 448]



proceed to any other satisfaction than what he could get by kissing and embracing me, and handling my breasts and neck ; and so we again parted, I being still attended by my bed-fellow.

We were no sooner come home but she was sent for by our matrona, to whom she gave an account of our actions. But that was not all her business, for when she returned home, and we were in bed together, she told me that she had been at the sport with a brave gallant with whom she had received great pleasure, for he was newly come to town, and willing enough to have continued the sport longer but that it was late, and therefore they had referred a continuance of the pleasures to the next day. And that she had not only pleasure but profit, for he had given her three crowns, and promised to be more beneficial to her during his stay in London.

This discourse of hers, the remembrance of what she had been at, and what I might have received if I would, did very much fire me, and I then took up a resolve not much longer to delay those pleasures I had now so long been without ; and thereupon being visited the next day by my servant (and having the permission of my matrona so to do) I entertained him with somewhat more freedom than formerly, and went with him to the house of our matrona, as if a great stranger there. And now was I doubly courted, not only by him, but her, so that I permitted him enjoyment, and he so well pleased me that at his further earnest importunity I consented to lie with him all night, where I satisfied him and myself in all those amorous sweets that two willing lovers could receive or give.

Whilst I was thus occupied at our matrona's house my bed-fellow was not idle ; for she understanding my place would be void, was resolved to have it supplied, and therefore summoned her country gentleman, who very readily attended her and for that night was her bed-fellow. He was so pleased with her company in the night that he desired it the next day at a frolic at a tavern. She accordingly attended him, where a plentiful dinner was provided, there being four or five gentlemen and two women besides herself. Dinner being ended, and some quantity of wine drank off, they all began to be merry, and therefore a noise of fiddlers were called, and they all fell to singing and dancing, in which they spent some time ; and the other two women being likewise ladies of the right stamp, they did by turns leave the rest of the company and retire by couples into a private room, where they had the conveniency of a bed, and thus they spent most part of the day. Night drawing on, reckoning was called for ; but it being a large one, all the gentlemen were dissatisfied, not being willing to pay so dear for their pleasure and to have such sour sauce to their sweet meat.

The fiddlers being paid, they resolved to put a trick upon the vintner for his reckoning. The fiddlers now playing their last lesson, the gentlemen, one after another, made their several *exits*, leaving the three women to pay the score ; who for some time waited the return of the gentlemen with money, but in vain.

The master of the house understanding how he was likely to be served, came up to the women and gave them such a lesson as made them sing *lacrimæ*. They made many apologies and excuses, but in vain ; money or a sufficient pawn he would have before they went. They considering the necessity of the business, resolved to leave some of their rings and suchlike moveables for their enlargement. Agreeing on the manner, they were now considering the matter, what, and how much should be left, when two or three men entered the room, and bluntly asked for the women, naming them by their several names. Not only they, but the master of the house was of opinion that they were come with money to redeem them ; but their errand proved not so pleasant to the vintner : for these men declared themselves to be bailiffs, and their business was to arrest the three women at several actions, and to that end produced their warrant. The women were much troubled and began to exclaim that they owed no such sums ; but the officers who were not to be baffled, told them they were their prisoners and must along with them. The vintner now put in, and demanded satisfaction, and would have the women leave some pawn for the reckoning ; but the officers told them that they had best keep what they had for occasion for it upon which they might have account of the arrest ; and for the reckoning, the vintner must take his course at Law. The vintner for some time opposed the officers, and said he would be paid first, and although a constable was sent for, yet to no purpose, for the warrant being produced, they were permitted to march off with their prisoners ; and a coach being called for they all crowded into it, ordering the coachman to drive towards the gaol.

The women used many arguments to the bailiffs, who now having done their business, seemed, only at the request of the women, to attend them to a tavern whither the coachman had orders to drive ; and there they were conducted into a room where instead of bailiffs and a prison they had the company of their day companions, who now kindly welcomed them, and acquainted them of their frolic, and how all this was only designed to cheat the vintner of his reckoning, who had formerly put tricks upon them. All parties being now well pleased, they spent that night in the tavern together, and my companion coming home the next day, acquainted me with this story.

## CHAPTER XXXVI

*In prosecution of her extravagancies she comes acquainted with a young gentleman, with whom she acts several frolics, occasioned by seeing plays acted*

THIS, continued Mrs Mary, was my beginning or entrance into my public profession, and indeed, I cannot well call it public, for I was private and reserved ; not admitting any more servants but this one, in one month. Indeed, in the first half year I had but three, but they were so bountiful that I had wherewithal to satisfy myself in everything ; having in jewels and other presents to the value of 100*l.* Neither had I anything to pay for diet or lodging, the charge of that being always born by our matrona, who I found had gained above 60*l.* in money for procuration and assistance in winning me ; besides a great deal more money spent at her house in collations, and entertainments for me, which were very frequent and costly.

The trade for maidenheads falling, the price being so great, I was now forced to fight under another banner ; and though I did not pass for a maid, yet I was accounted in the next degree, for I passed as the mistress, or lady of pleasure, of a person of quality, who kept me as a great rarity for his own diet. Indeed, I did not much deceive my first customers upon that account ; for whereas I went under the notion of belonging to one person, I did belong to but three ; and I was forced to play my game pretty cunningly to please them, and not give them suspicion of one another. They being all introduced into my acquaintance by our matrona or some of her agents, she did help to manage my affairs ; and when she knew I was to accompany or lie with one of my sweethearts, she would tell the other, if he or they desired the same, that it could not be for the present, for either I was waiting on my uncle, or some other relation, or otherwise employed that I must be excused at the present, but against such a time she would endeavour to procure me to accompany them. This was her tale, or mine, when more than one importuned me with their visits, and by this means did we both gain money, and I rings, necklaces, watches and new gowns, and sometimes some gold to spend, or play away. But in time these three growing somewhat weary or tired both in their bodies and purses (but especially in the last), they by degrees left me, seldom visiting me ; and when they did, they would desire their pleasure on free cost.

Although I could not be so ungrateful as to deny them that which

cost me nothing, and which I had equal pleasure in, yet I saw it was time to look out for other better customers ; and therefore, as I told you, I passed as the mistress of a person of quality, and was sent for to our matrona's house, whither I would pretend I had stolen out, but durst not stay, lest my amorous master should return and want me. Several persons I enjoyed at this rate, and much ready money was coming to me ; for they with whom I had to do, understanding I was a professed lady of pleasure, knew well enough that I would not be contented to pleasure them without a reward, and therefore they gave me money.

But now the case was somewhat altered, and I must now pay for my diet, for our matrona had, as I told you, a certain custom or rule which she walked by, which was this : that at the first she paid for diet and lodging as long as the maidenhead customers lasted ; for all that time she took the money, and the woman the presents, very little money coming to their hands ; and indeed it was not by our rules thought honourable or convenient that a price in money should be given on that account to the party herself. But when they came under the notion of a lady of pleasure, and virginity was gone, then it was accounted reasonable and indeed necessary, that the party herself should receive money for her better support, and then she must be at the cost of her own diet ; and this was my case. And my companion and bedfellow, who had been in this condition for some time, and had passed, as I now did, for a private lady, a merchant's wife, and several other titles and qualities, was now grown so common, and her face was so well known to all our matrona's better sort of customers, that she would serve no longer in that degree ; but must go a step lower, and go home to our matrona's own house, and there serve in common, for all gentleman customers that came.

Thus, as I was removed one step lower than I was, so was she, and it was not long ere I had a pretty young thing brought to be my companion. And though her virginity had been parted with above a twelve month before (as she confessed to me), yet she was to succeed me in my place, and act the part of a virgin, as I had done.

I now began to bethink myself of what I had been, and what more I was to be, and run through. I found that I was already at the second degree, and that in short time I must follow my late companion to the third, and be enforced to go home to our matrona's house, and there prostitute myself to every drunken fellow that brought money in his hand ; to be slabbered, tumbled and tossed, as he pleased. This, I say, went against my stomach, and I was much troubled at it ; nay, I saw that some who had been in as high a place and degree as myself,

were in bad condition enough ; for there was one, who was my late companion's bedfellow before I came, and was at that time called into the house to make room for me, this woman being very frolic, and withal negligent of our matrona's commands, which were to sweat, bath, and purge, and use other remedies to drive away all distempers ; she, I say, being negligent, and wanton, and keeping an open stable for all horses, gave entertainment to a running nag, which so paid her that she was soundly peppered, not with a horse pox, but as bad or a worse disease, which stuck to her so soundly that notwithstanding our matrona's diligence, she was fain to go under the surgeon's hands. Nay, and those that did escape this, were in time put to bad offices, as to attend the rest, and when their money was gone, they served the grooms and skip-kennels that attended their masters to our house.

These considerations, I say, made me think of a remedy to take in time ; and therefore I was resolved to order my matters so as never to come into our matrona's house but provide for myself before it should come to that point. Therefore I purposed to accept of the offers of the next good customer that came, that would take me from the condition I was in and provide for me ; for it was a usual thing that we had many offers by several persons to take us away, and keep and maintain us privately.

I had now every day more variety of servants than formerly ; for now I had done trafficking for my maidenhead I was more free and open, and to be courted and treated at a cheaper rate ; and now I was at my own disposal, whereas before I was still watched by our matrona, or my companion, who had it in charge from her to give an account of all my actions ; and the same charge had I given me over my new-come bedfellow. All that was expected from me was always to be ready at my lodging, to come when sent for ; but I had this in general, and so had all the rest of our companions, not to permit any man to exceed kissing and feeling, till 3 or 4 bottles of wine were first drank.

These, and many other maxims we were instructed in, which I shall omit, and only give you an account of two or three frolics I was a party in, whilst I professed this quality, and so conclude.

Among other servants or sweethearts that I had, who were my constant customers, I had one, a young country gentleman, who being heir of a good estate, was brought up to London and placed in one of the Inns of Court. But instead of studying Law he applied himself to a more soft and effeminate study ; the art of love and courtship. He had read Ovid's *Arte amandi* at home in the country, and could repeat many lines out of it, and he had read some other pieces of poetry ; but his fancy was not drawn to the height till he had not only read some

comedies but also seen them acted ; and then he was so taken with them that he spent his time commonly, every afternoon, in seeing one acted. He being a guest at our house (being introduced thither by one of our hectors) and his pockets being very well lined with crowns, our matrona thought me a fit mistress for him ; and he being a handsome young fellow, I willingly accepted him for my servant. He being (as I told you) well skilled in Ovid's *Art of Love* would often make use of several of his expressions, to persuade me to his embraces.

Though he needed not use these arguments to induce me to permit him to enjoy me, yet I was well enough pleased to hear his poetry ; and I being no novice in the school of love, did withstand him, knowing that the mind is most eagerly bent on that which is forbidden, and therefore, like a torrent, it overflows and becomes more impetuous by opposition ; and I had read so much poetry as to remember, that

She that is willing to love me ;  
To her unwilling will I be  
*And,*  
Proffer'd pleasures I defy,  
Give me her that doth deny.

He making use of his poetry, made me think of mine ; and therefore I was the more coy to him ; but still held him in hand and gave him certain hopes of an absolute enjoyment. This vein of poetry was not only pleasant to me but profitable ; and he fell into one of the finest humours that I have heard of ; for I attending him to the playhouses very frequently, we one day saw a play called *Philaster*, or *Love lies a bleeding*. The play being done, we went to a tavern, and there he highly commended the action, but above all things the women's parts. He was very much pleased with Arethusa's constancy and love to Philaster ; but that which tickled him most was Megera's acceptance of Pharamond's courtship. For though she were a great court lady, yet she accepted his gold which he presented her, and was so kind as to attend his pleasure in his lodging. 'Now,' said he to me, 'though I have tendered you my service, and am willing to make you a present of all I have, yet I cannot induce you be so kind to me.'

I now hearing him at this point, was resolved to accept him and his present (for though he had been some days in my company, yet he had bestowed nothing considerable upon me), and therefore I told him that it was true, the Lady Megera did accommodate Prince Pharamond : but he did first present her with somewhat that was considerable, to induce her to it ; and though I had a very great respect for his love, yet there was somewhat more than love to be tendered, as he might now very well understand by this late passage.

My yonker (who I suppose had never tasted woman, but with his mother's chambermaids, or some such creatures) knew not what belonged to women of my profession, but being now awakened, as it were, out of a dead sleep, quickly drew 5 pieces of gold out of his pocket and made a present of them. You may be sure I was not coy nor cautious in receiving them, but quickly put them up ; and, for the present, thanks was all I returned, delaying him in his desires till we came to our matrona's quarters, where we had a plentiful supper. And I having now acquainted her how I had dealt with my young man, it was thought reasonable that he should have a night's lodging for his money ; neither did I refuse it, but agreed to all he asked me ; and I so well pleased him that I persuaded him out of a diamond ring worth 5*l.* more.

I am the more particular in my relation of my acquaintance with him, and the means of our closing by seeing a play, because of the advantages I gained on him afterwards by the same occasion. For the next day we again going to see a play, it happened that it was the *Siege of Rhodes*, and then he was as much taken with Roxolana as he had formerly been with Arethusa, and highly commended that part. I perceiving his fancy, told him that I supposed he would be very glad to embrace Roxolana in his arms. 'Yes,' said he, 'that I would, though it were at the expense of 20*l.*' 'Well,' said I, 'give me the money and I will so order the matter that you shall receive that satisfaction.' 'Nay,' said he, 'but I doubt you will be offended thereat.' 'No,' said I, 'it will be as much to my content as yours.' He hearing this, without any difficulty agreed to give me 20*l.* which was sent me that evening. I told him the next day, that in one week's time he should receive the content he expected, and to heighten his expectation I refused to let him lie with me in the meantime.

In this week's time I so ordered the matter that I got a tailor and other persons who were used to make the habits for the players, to make me a habit in all things like to that of Roxolana. This being done, I acquainted my young gentleman and told him that for his better satisfaction he should see the so famed Princess at our quarters, where he might have more freedom than at any other place. He was herewith very well contented, he habiting himself in the richest garbs he had, and a large collation was provided to treat his expected mistress. All things being thus fitted on his part, I put on the provided habit ; and instead of his expected Roxolana, entered the room where he was. I was attended by two or three who bore up my train, and had set myself out with so many jewels, both good and counterfeit, and was indeed in all things so like the Roxolana he had seen, that he doubted not but I was the very same and was much surprized at the matter ; and although

my face was as lovely as hers, yet I had added somewhat thereto to appear more beautiful.

Our matrona seeing him somewhat amazed went to him, and rousing him up, asked him why he did not salute me ; ‘ for,’ said she, ‘ though her habit is not English, yet you see she is of this country, and will admit of the ordinary salutes.’ He being now quickened up approached me, and gave me the ordinary salutations, which I accepted, and at his request I sat down by him. ‘ Well,’ said our matrona, ‘ hath not Mrs Mary performed her promise with you ? ’ ‘ Yes,’ said he, ‘ to admiration ; and if before I desired this lady’s company at the first view, I am now much more pleased than I expected ; and as I have a very great esteem for this lady, and intend to continue it, yet that shall be no prejudice to Mrs Mary, whose great love and kindness to me in this particular action I shall always remember, and largely requite.’ ‘ Well Sir,’ said I, ‘ and what love you bestow on her shall be very acceptable to me, and I shall endeavour to retaliate the same.’

My young man had not till now heard me speak, and, though he did, he could not distinguish me by my voice, so great a difference was there in my habit from my ordinary dress that he did not so much as suspect it ; but hearing me speak with so much affection for Mistress Mary, he replied, that since I was so much a friend to her, he was the better satisfied in what he had desired ; and he wanted nothing to content him so much as her presence. ‘ Well,’ said our matrona, ‘ if that be all, you may have that satisfaction quickly ; nay, and you have it already ; for she is in this room.’ He hearing her, looked earnestly about, and though he gazed much in my face, yet he could not discover me. But my greatest business being now done our matrona could no longer forbear, but fell into a very great fit of laughter, and so did the rest of the company ; neither did this make him sensible of the matter till our matrona taking him by the hand, caused him to take me by mine, and told him that if he desired Mistress Mary’s company there, he had it ; for she was the same party with that lady, and had only put on that habit to give him the content and satisfaction he desired.

Although at first he could not credit what she said, yet looking again earnestly upon me he discovered the matter ; and then he said, ‘ Ah, Madam, I did not imagine that you could be guilty of so pleasing a fallacy ; but I am very well satisfied therein, and am now more glad that you have found out this way to please me than if I enjoyed the very party herself.’

To this I answered, that I hoped I should as well satisfy his desire in enjoying that Princess whom I represented, as if he had in his company the same person who acted that part at the theatre ; ‘ for,’

said I, 'it is only her habit that makes her appear so like a Princess ; and I, being now in the same dress, may as well pass as she ; and as for face, and other parts, I shall not give her any preeminence ; neither, I hope, will you, if you look on me with an impartial eye.'

My friend was very well satisfied in what I had done and said, and now coming more near to me, we fell to our collation with much freedom. I was attended by several whom I had appointed to that purpose, and demeaned myself so majestically that, as they all told me, I might very well pass for the very person whom I did represent ; and my gentleman was so extremely well pleased that I thought he would have lost his eyes in gazing at me. Our collation being ended, I and my attendants danced and spent much time in such kind of divertisements ; but I saw that my friend was impatient till bedtime came, that he might have me, his beloved Princess, in his arms. We were waited on with all manner of state, and had music attending us, not only all the time we were up, but also when we were in bed ; they being placed in the chamber adjoining to our lodgings, where they played for two hours' space after we were retired.

The strength of imagination was much, for as my bedfellow imagined that he had a Princess in his arms, so I conceited myself to be little less. Great was the pleasure I received from and gave to my bedfellow, for we were both in the flower of our age, he being about twenty and I eighteen ; we had both equal desires, and thought of nothing but pleasure ; we banished all other passions, to make way for that of love according to the poet :

Fair Venus never goes to bed,  
To those that are with sorrows fed.

### CHAPTER XXXVII

*Her friend being forced from her by his friends she meeting with one of her old acquaintance, falls again to trading, till in the end she meets with the drugster, who kept her for his private use*

ALTHOUGH I was well enough pleased with my night's lodging, and so was my bedfellow, yet, as the longest day, so will the longest night have an end. No pleasure is lasting, neither would ours continue, for the morning being come we were again called up by music, but being glutted with that we ordered them to retire. I first arose out of our bed and going to dress me in my ordinary habit, my bedfellow did forbid it, and entreated me to give him the satisfaction and delight to

see me again in my Turkish dress. He having pleased me so well, I was contented to pleasure him in a request that was so indifferent, and therefore dressed myself accordingly.

He was so well pleased with me in everything, that taking me in his arms, I remember, he sighed ; and I demanding the reason of that passion, he told me it was out of the extremity of the love he bore me, and which he desired above all things to continue. Indeed I liked him so well that I could have been well enough contented to have been his wife, and have left all the world for him, for he was of so easy a pliant nature that I could have wrought him to anything. And therefore being desirous to make use of that opportunity, I desired him not to be melancholy, for all that I could serve him in, I should readily do. He finding me so free with him, told me if that I would wait the death of his mother, he would make me his wife, and in the meantime would entertain me and provide for me wholly as if I were so ; but he durst not marry me till his mother was dead, she having a great power over his estate, his father who was lately dead, so ordering it ; and beside, he was not as yet of age to demand it. I being desirous to close with him (not only out of a desire I had to leave that course of life I then led, but also out of pure love I bore him), soon agreed to be wholly disposed by him, and desired him therefore to be constant in his affection, and take some time to consider how to dispose of me, and I should readily consent to it, for he knew as well as I that it would not at all be convenient for me to remain where I was.

This was our discourse, and then we went from our chamber into another room, where we were expected by our matrona and some others of my companions. The next day we also spent in frolicking and mirth, but the whole charge of it was not borne by my friend, for several of our matrona's friends and clients did participate in the cost as well as the mirth, which was very high, and lasted all the day and night ; and then tired, though not satisfied with such delights as Bacchus and Venus could afford, we having imitated the Empress Messalina in our debauchery ; of whom the poet saith

The Imperial Strumpet, with one maid stole out,  
In her night hood, and having cast about  
Her black hair a red periwig, she got,  
Into the stewes—  
There many thirsted for encounters tried  
Departed tir'd with men, not satisfied.

This frolic being at an end, I and my friend began to be serious, and in short time after he provided me a private lodging ; and I making up my pack of clothes, jewels and money which I had gained, and

which was considerable, left our matrona and now retired myself and resolved to be very honest, and absolutely constant to my friend ; who continued his love to me in a very great measure.

But at length all the money that he brought to town with him, and all else that he could get or procure, was spent (for he had not spared anything I desired to content me) ; and which was worse, his mother came to town to visit him, and upon examination he could give little account how he had spent his time and money. Wherefore it being concluded that ill company was the cause, his mother laid out very diligently to discover what company he kept. Though he abstained from coming so often to me as formerly, yet he either sent, or came to me every day. That he might not be absolutely out of favour with his mother, I furnished him with what ready money I had, and he in requital promised me a continuance of his love, and a retaliation of my kindness, and, which was more than all, he engaged to marry me (notwithstanding all the oppositions his mother or friends could make) if I would stay till he was of age, and had his estate in his hands. I had this promise from him, not only by word of mouth, but also by writing. But all these promises were quickly vacuated and void ; for his mother, by her extraordinary diligence, found out his haunts and discovered his coming to me ; and followed the tract of my actions, and life, so that she found from whence I came, and who I was. She then soon concluded that I had been the chief occasion of his mispending his time and money ; and now she mustered up all her wits to prevent his ruin : which she supposed would be inevitable if he continued any longer a correspondency with me.

To this end she called her son before her and examined him in the presence of all those of his relations and friends which were then in Town. She laid the business so plain and home to him, but though he could not deny the matter, somewhat of the manner he did ; for whereas she reported me an absolute prostitute, he alleged me virtuous and modest, as indeed well he might (for I had, ever since my first acquaintance with him, been constant to him). But it being proved from whence I came, and how immodest I had lived, it was sufficient argument to make out what I was, and that I could not be a fit wife for him. She was a very discreet woman, and one who had known the world, and I suppose was well enough acquainted with that saying of the poet,

If Modesty and Women once do sever,  
Farewell their name, farewell their fame for ever.

And therefore it being evident enough what I had been, she from thence concluded what I would be. In fine, she so scolded her son

and ordered the matter, that he was contented to relinquish my company ; and because she would be sure he should do so, she never left till she had got him in the mind to travel ; and so putting him in an equipage befitting his quality, she sent him for France.

Thus, when I thought myself near the greatest happiness I ever yet arrived to (which I earnestly hoped, and expected, by being married to this young gentleman) was I stripped of all joy and comfort in his sudden and absolute departure from me. His mother and friends were so strict with him that they would not permit him to take his farewell of me ; I only received a short letter from him, wherein he complained of his ill fortune in being thus forced from me, but more especially at the manner of it ; for he had not the opportunity nor power to be civil to me in reimbursing me with the money I had lately furnished him with ; for his mother gave him no more ready money than he should have present occasion for ; promising him to supply him with more by Bills of Exchange when he should arrive at the place he was designed for ; and then he promised that I should hear further from him.

This was the substance of his letter ; and indeed I could not well complain of him ; for what money he had lately received of me had formerly been his own. But I was now reduced to a very bad and low condition ; having no ready money that I was forced to sell some of my jewels ; and for a while supplied my occasions with the money they yielded me, I living a very solitary and retired life ; and all my pleasure was in reading plays, and romances, in which I spent much time and took great delight. I waited long in expectation of letters from my friend, according to his promise, but whether he sent and they were intercepted, or whether he forgot me, or no, I know not ; for I never after that heard of him.

Being somewhat weary with this solitary life, and finding no effects of my friend's promise to send to me, I began to consider what course I was to take. I was very unwilling to visit my old matrona again, but one day, walking out, I was met by one of my old sweethearts, one of those whom I had known in her house. But I saw by his habit, and afterwards by the strength of his pocket, that he was but in a low condition, and was more ready to receive than give. He fastened on me for old acquaintance sake ; I was forced to drink with him, but he ingenuously told me that hector was not in field, he had no money in his pocket ; wherefore I (though money was not very flush with me, as having had a long time of vacation) not only paid our reckoning, but at his entreaty doubly horsed him by lending him (or I may rather say giving him) two half-crowns.

This put him in stock and heart, and he gratefully acknowledged my civility, telling me he would requite it, and talking of thousands he was to receive. He was very earnest to know my lodging, but I concealed that place from him, and, as I thought, parted from him warily enough, and went many ways about before I went home. But he dogged me, and seeing me housed, waited lest that might not be the place ; but after a sufficient stay he was better satisfied, for I came no more out, and so he went to his quarters.

This my old acquaintance, as he had formerly been bit and had others lived upon him, so now he only lived upon others ; and though it was not above a twelve month since he was very gallant and spent very highly with me, yet he had made haste and consumed above 3000*l.* He was young enough, and as wanton and desirous as ever of my company, but he knew very well I would not consent, unless there were money in the case. He being destitute of that necessary commodity, therefore sought out for one who was better supplied with it. He needed not to look long, neither did he, till he found one who was now, as not long since he had been, better stored with money than wit, and as desirous of pleasure, being willing to purchase it at any rate. Him he tells of a rare purchase, a lady whom he had the happiness to be acquainted with, that was rarely handsome, of an excellent good nature, and he questioned not but she might be flexible. The moneyed gallant did not ask many questions but desired by all means to see this celebrated beauty ; for he doubted not but she must needs be handsome whom the other so cried up for beautiful. My old acquaintance was as willing as he to attend him to this lady, which was myself ; and therefore to me they came, and believing that confidence was the best way of speaking with me, he boldly asked to see and speak with me, pretending great business, not so much as questioning whether I lived there or no. The people of the house believing him one of my intimate acquaintance, directly brought him and his friend up into my chamber.

I was somewhat surprized at the sight of him, but after the first salutes he took me to one side, and privately told me all his design ; and that this party whom he had brought was a very well-moneyed man, and much might be squeezed out of him. Although I was not yet resolved to fall to my old trade, yet now he was come I knew not how to put him off, wherefore I indifferently entertained. I may very well say indifferently, because I was yet cold in my desires and had very little appetite ; however some bottles of wine being sent for, we drank them off, and my young gentleman being warm in his gears, began to talk a little boldly. But it was to no purpose, for I forbid all actions,

and at that time he only purchased a kiss. But (that I may draw a period to my discourse), I did not long continue so cold to him, for he bringing meat in his mouth, good store of gold in his pocket, which he willingly and freely gave me, I permitted him to take all the pleasure he could receive by me.

Thus did I renew my old trade, and my old friend who had brought this new acquaintance, finding some benefit and profit in the case (for he had money of his acquaintance, whom he had brought, as also of me, neither could I at convenient times deny him the pleasure he had formerly tasted with me), he, I say, having both pleasure and profit, turned broker for me, and brought me several merchants, who trafficked with me for pleasure. I commonly afforded them a good pennyworth, though sometimes a dear one, for I would not deal with every ordinary fellow, and therefore was paid the better by those who were my customers.

But let me do what I could, I saved little or nothing at the month's end (year's I will not say, because I was weary of this trade in six months' time), for I now had not only myself but my old acquaintance and new broker to provide for. For he finding that most of my profit came in by those he brought me, would be very bold in demanding a share with me; and his expenses were so high, which he pretended was only to bring me of the better sort of customers, that I was now poorer than ever. He now became so impudent that he would not only command my money but my rings and other jewels, which he would sell or pawn as he listed; and, indeed, it is the fortune or misfortune of all those of our quality to be troubled with some such fellows, hangers-on as these, or else we should or might in little time gain sufficient estates; but, as I say, commonly what we got one way, these followers spend the other, so that at length all that we are likely to purchase, if we have not a great care, is only a disease, which may stick long enough by us.

I being fearful of this, for my friend or hecator, I may call him both, was now grown so intemperate that he kept all companies (and if I refused him money, or a night's lodging he would go to any other common woman, the first he met withal, and so afterwards coming to me, I might be spoiled), to prevent this, I privately left my lodging, and hearing of two of my own sex and quality that were going a progress into the country to take a frolic, I made the third, and had a man as well as they to attend me, and, as I expected, to bear my charges. But we all reckoned without our host, for we were basely trappanned by those who went with us, and left in pawn for a reckoning that was considerable. We were in a strange place, many miles from London,

and much distressed, but at length a resolution was taken that one of us should go to London and fetch money to redeem the rest. It fell to the lot of one of my companions, who being on her journey, had the good luck to meet with honest Gregory, our now companion, and he very liberally relieved us by sending money to us, whereby we had the freedom to come to our companion and him, who attended us.

She being come to this part of her relation, I told her that I heard it already by Gregory, who among other passages of his life acquainted me with that.

'Well, then,' replied she, 'if you know that account, I have little more to acquaint you with, for not long after my arrival in London, I fortunately met with my honest friend the drugster, and he liking me for a mistress, and I him for a servant or master, which you please, agreed to obey his pleasures, he providing for me, which he hath hitherto done in a very plentiful manner ; and I on the other side, have been as constant and obedient to him.'

### CHAPTER XXXVIII

*Mistress Mary having finished, Mistress Dorothy begins her story, wherein she relates that having left her friends in the country, she comes to London ; and entering to service lies with three several men, by whom she was got with child, and so orders the matter, that all three pay well for it*

I HAD given very great attention to Mrs Mary's story, and Mrs Dorothy (who, with me, had been the only auditor) told her that she had received a great deal of satisfaction ; 'for,' said she, 'though I have formerly heard many of your particular actions, yet I never received a perfect account till now.' 'Nay,' said Mrs Mary, 'this account is far from being perfect, and is only such passages as I could at present call to mind ; but, indeed, they are the most remarkable, and by them you may guess at the rest.'

I was very well pleased with what I had heard, and being likewise desirous to be acquainted with the adventures of Mrs Dorothy, requested her to relate them to me, which she did as followeth.

Old friend, said she to me, you have great occasion to love and respect me, for the great love I have borne to you and your memory ; for after your departure from my father's house I was very much

afflicted for your absence, and I did believe that you intended marriage to me, as you protested ; and though my father and mother had often doubted of the reality of your intentions, especially after you had so unworthily left me, yet I still persuaded them that you would return. You know well enough that my father was not ignorant of our privacy, he having surprized us in the manner, and you then promised to make me amends by marriage ; but all the satisfaction I received was a copy of verses, and 20 pieces of gold. In the one you expressed your wit, in the other your generosity, for I very well knew that you might have omitted both, and not have sent either. But I suppose you were more skilful than I, and knew that I was with child by you, and therefore sent that money to defray the charge I should be at on that occasion.

This piece of civility of yours did put me into good hopes that you would return ; and I accordingly persuaded my father and mother. But time convinced me of my error, and also made it more apparent that I had been sporting with you ; for my belly swelled so that my mother soon resolved me that I was with child by you.

I was very melancholy upon this occasion, but my mother endeavoured to comfort me (for I being her only child she had a great deal of love for me) ; and knowing what was passed could not be helped, she took order to conceal and keep the knowledge of my misfortune from being publicly known and discoursed of. Wherefore I, at her desire and directions, kept within doors, pretending a sickness, which indeed was not wholly counterfeit, in regard I much grieved for your absence. In this condition I spent my time till the time of my deliverance from child-bearing came, and then I was brought to bed of a boy, which was no sooner born but it was taken and carried from me to a town three miles off, to be nursed by a woman whom my mother had for that purpose provided ; and this was done to conceal the shame that I should or might sustain if it were known that I had a child, without knowing who, or at least where was the father.

So soon as a month was expired I went to see the child, the sight of which put me too much in mind of the father ; and I was then again sensibly afflicted at his absence. Methoughts in that infancy there was so much resemblance of my beloved deceiver that I kissed the infant not only for its own, but for the father's sake. I then returned home again, and now after so long a time of retirement, I began to recover not only my strength, but some additions to my beauty ; so that I having had two or three suitors when a maid, who had forborne visiting me by occasion of my illness, they now again renew their suits. But if I had some dislike for them before, now I could not endure them in my company, they were such absolute hobbinolls. Though I was not

satisfied in their frequent visits, yet my father and mother pressed me not only to accept them, but also their suit, and make choice of one of them for a husband, alleging that you would never return, and it would be not only safe but necessary in time to bestow myself. This discourse did much disturb me, and I was so often troubled with my suitors and disturbed and vexed by my father and mother's importunity, that I resolved to quit both by leaving them, and therefore purposed to go to London, that I might not be troubled with the importunity of my father and mother, nor the troublesome visits of my sweethearts.

In pursuance of this resolve I fitted myself with all necessaries ; and that I might not wholly distract my parents by my thus leaving them, I writ a letter of excuse and left it for them ; and so walking to the next great town, attending the coming by of the passage coach, in that got me a place to ride to London.

I continued for some time in the inn where the coachman set me down and the rest of his passengers ; but knowing it would be impossible for me to continue long there, I gained acquaintance with the maid of the house and told my tale to her as well as I thought convenient. She understanding that I was willing to serve, and wanted a place, and I acquainting her with my abilities, as that I could sew, wash, and starch, and do most necessary things required of a servant, she soon procured me a place in a house that entertained many lodgers.

I spent a quarter of a year's time very privately and honestly in this service, but then our house being full of lodgers, one of them cast a wanton eye on me, and being well pleased with my face, began to court me very familiarly. Although at first I opposed him and gave him nothing but slights and denials, yet he managed his business by presents which he gave me, and making use of all other opportunities, that he gained his will of me, and I again entered the lists in a loving combat. He took many opportunities for enjoyment, not only in the day time but sometimes we spent whole nights in our amorous sports ; and though my master and mistress did not discover anything of the matter, yet another gentleman, who was also a lodger and lay in the next chamber to my friend's, watching me, found out my haunt. Therefore he (being as amorous as the other) was desirous of sport, and became a suitor to me upon the same account. I absolutely denied him, for I thought it was enough to have to do with one man, and was resolved to venture myself no further ; but he taking the opportunity of the other's absence, first treated me with wine, then presented me with a ring. But all this would not do till he in plain terms told me that he knew very well I was not so hard-hearted to every one ; for were Mr such a one (naming my friend) there, I would not deny him the

courtesy. I at first made strange of this story, and denied it, but he falling into plain terms with me, and telling me that he had watched me such a night when I lay with him, I could not then deny it, neither did I long deny or refuse him what he desired. So that he likewise took his pleasure with me ; and having obtained his desire at that time, he made bold with me so often as he listed, when the other was out of the way.

I had now two bedfellows, so that I could seldom lie alone, one of them would still bespeak me ; but the first of them did not know of the second though he knew very well of the other. Though I had sport enough with these two, yet it was not long ere a third man likewise put in for a share with them, and that was my master's brother. He was a very pretty young man, and one whom I could well enough love for a husband ; but he looked a little higher than to marry a servant-maid ; but as a mistress he courted me. Many attempts he made in vain ; but time that bringeth every thing to pass, made me flexible, and I likewise gave him possession of the thing he desired. He took much pleasure in my company, and was very respectful to me, often presenting me with linen and laces, and sometimes a crown or an angel came from his pocket, as well as from the other two, who well fed me with money, which I still pocketed up. But as I got money, so again I got somewhat else, a great belly, and which was the worst, of my three friends I knew not which was the father ; but if I am not mistaken, I believe it was my master's brother.

But I was resolved the other two should help to father it or else pay for it ; and therefore I soon told them all three, as they had occasion to deal with me, in what condition I was. My first and oldest friend was most troubled at it, being as he thought the most concerned, because he knew not of any else that had to do with me ; he was somewhat startled at it lest, as he said, his wife should come to know it, for he was a married man ; and although his wife sometimes came to town and would lie with him, yet he would sometimes before he went to bed to her take his opportunity to have his pleasure with me. He, I say, was troubled at the news, but that did not hinder us in our purposed night's lodging, only in the intervals we considered what course to take. At length it was resolved that he would provide for me the time of my lying-in, and afterwards for the child ; and in earnest of the charge he soon gave me 20*l.* to provide me with necessaries.

I having now done with my first customer, was resolved to get something out of my second : but he still gave me the hearing, presuming on his knowledge of my having to do with the first. Yet, he would not on this occasion advance anything, intending to shirk off,

because no body knew what trade we did drive together. I perceiving his intention, was resolved to be even with him, and it may be outwit him ; and that he might not distrust me I seemed no ways dissatisfied, but gave him as much freedom with me as ever. But to carry on my design, I thought good to break the business to my master's brother. Wherefore, I likewise acquainted him with my condition, and told him in plain terms that I was with child by him. He could not deny the fact, nor make any excuse, not knowing of my dealings with the other two ; but he was likewise very much surprized. But I doubting he might put me off, took the opportunity of telling him this news when we were in bed together, knowing there I should have time and convenience to discourse it.

He knew not what to say, and indeed was very cold with me, and I was forced to help him out ; for he was then a suitor to a young gentlewoman, and was fearful that this business would hinder his fortunes ; and though he loved me well enough, yet he was unwilling to marry me, for that would prove so disadvantageous to him. He supposing that nothing but marriage would content me, was much troubled and could not tell what answer to give me ; wherefore I was forced to break silence and told him that as I loved him so I would shew him sufficient proofs of it ; for I would not that my love should ruin him, as I knew it would if the world should know what had passed between us ; and though nothing could satisfy me but marriage, yet I could be content to waive that, and propose somewhat else of satisfaction. ' Nay, then,' said he, ' if you will be so kind to me, propose your own terms, and take them.' I hearing him thus generous, it was not long ere we concluded upon terms ; which were these, that he would give me 20*l.* down to bear my charges in the time of my lying-in, and if the child lived he would give 50*l.* more to any person whom I would appoint to take the child and provide for it. These terms I was well enough satisfied with, only I considering that he would hear of my lying with the other, because I intended to discover that to him and have his assistance therein, and then I doubted he would suspect me, and it may be refuse to pay the 50*l.* when due, therefore I was resolved to have him seal a bond to me for payment of it. I urged him to do it out of this consideration, that he was to be married, and though he now loved me well enough, yet when he had a wife, he would haply slight and forget me, and so refuse or neglect to pay it. He was content to hear my arguments ; and though always protesting a continuance of his love to me, notwithstanding all the wives in the world, yet he consented to give me bond according to my desire.

Thus every thing being agreed on, we again renewed our pleasures,

and spent that night as we had done many before. But morning being come, I arose and so managed my affairs that I that day had a bond sealed to me for payment of 50*l.* to be paid in 6 months. I also within few days received of him the 20*l.* he had promised me.

Thus did I order my matters with my first and last customers, and I gave them their wonted satisfaction of lying with me so often as they pleased. And so I did to the other, my middle customer, but do what I could, I could not bring him to any considerable composition ; and though he were the best able, yet he offered me the least, and intended to come off with a trifle. However I gave him his wonted freedom with me, but purposed ere long to be even with him, as I was.

For one night being in bed with my master's brother, I having very well pleased him, he talked of his little Hans in Kelder, the boy in my belly, wishing very well to it, not in the least doubting but it was of his own begetting, and using many words to that purpose. 'Well, Sir,' said I, 'it is very true it is yours, but if I would have been as free with others as I have been with you, it might have had more, if not another father' ; and thereupon I proceeded and told him how that I had been often importuned by Mr such a one (his brother's lodger, and my second bedfellow). 'Well,' replied he, 'I am the more beholding to you that you have accepted of me rather than him ; but though I am not at all dissatisfied in what I have done, I wish he had been the father for your sake as well as mine, for you may compel him to marriage, or else get a considerable sum of money from him.' 'As for marriage,' said I, 'I doubt I should hardly draw him to it, but some moneys I might get of him, and would yet, if you will but consent to it and assist me therein.' To this he answered that in anything I should desire he would not be wanting, and therefore he bid me propound the way, and he would not fail in his assistance. I then told him that I knew but one way to do it, and in that I must play the disloyal wag with him, to do that which I had no mind. 'For that matter,' said he, 'you shall have my consent, and I think I guess at your meaning, which is, that you must agree to let him lie with you ; wherefore since it will be so advantageous to you, let him do it ; for I am sure he can do me no great wrong, for notwithstanding what he can do, the child will be all mine, of my own getting.'

He being so free to it, and agreeing to all things according to my desire, we resolved that I should permit my second sweetheart to lie with me ; but I should so order the matter that he should take us in the manner, and then we would agree to act the rest very well. I now having laid my plot very well and orderly, I appointed my time when I would lie with him and agreed to leave the chamber door open, that

he, rising early the next morning, might (pretending some business) enter the chamber and find us in bed together.

Our plot being thus laid, and my second sweetheart desiring it, I promised to come to bed to him about midnight, which I did. But my master's brother knowing of my design, was resolved to have the first carving of me, and that he should only have a buttered bun, and therefore caused me to lie with him all the former part of the night ; but midnight being past, he permitted me to proceed in my adventure. I was expected by my bedfellow, and accordingly entertained ; but I, minding the design I was about, awaked early in the morning, and so ordered the matter that my bedfellow likewise threw off his drowsiness to encounter with me in our nocturnal pastime, which when he had done, I began to discourse him, reasoning the cause with him, and desiring him to resolve me what he would do for me in that condition I was, and what provision he would make for me. He gave me indifferent answers, and I grew passionate with him, and on a sudden the chamber door opened, and my master's brother entered the room. I seeing this, left off speaking and crowded myself close down into the bed, as if pretending to hide myself ; but he coming boldly on, bid my bedfellow good morning, and asking him a question, came nearer the bed-side, and drawing the curtains, said, 'What have you a bedfellow ?' 'No,' said he, 'not I.' 'Surely,' said the other, 'you have, for I am mistaken if I did not hear some other tongue than yours.' The other denied it, but he knowing well enough what he had to do, soon found out where my petticoats lay : 'How,' said he, 'surely you have a bedfellow, and that a female one.' The other being thus surprized, knew not what to say ; wherefore my Mr Brother proceeding, said, 'surely I should know these coats, for, if I am not mistaken, they are our maid Dorothy's.' I finding myself discovered, now appeared, and in the first place begged his pardon, and that he would not acquaint my master and mistress with it. He seeming very angry soundly rated me and my bedfellow, and said he, 'This is not the first time that you two have lain together, for I have long suspected you and have watched you.' 'Truly Sir,' said I, 'it is true this gentleman hath long known me, but I pray you make no more words of it at present, and for modesty's sake leave the chamber, and I will anon satisfy you further in every particular.' My bedfellow likewise requesting the same, he very civilly left us, shutting the chamber door after him. My bedfellow was much surprized at this sudden accident, and I seemed to be so ; and quickly getting my clothes, arose and left him, retiring into my own chamber, leaving him to consider it.

I having now done my business by having a witness of my lying

with him, was bold with him to know what I should do in the case ; 'for,' said I, 'my master's brother will certainly acquaint my master and mistress with our actions, and then I must leave the house, and whither to go I know not, nor who will entertain me.' He argued that the other, my first sweetheart, must provide for me. To this I told him that I believed that he would do somewhat for me, but he had a wife, and could not do what he listed, whereas he, on the contrary, was a single man, and rich enough. And he still endeavouring to put me off and lay all upon the first, I in plain terms told him that if he continued to say so, I would wholly deny my dealings with the other, and though he should avouch it, yet he would not be believed, he being himself a guilty party, as could be proved by my master's brother ; and therefore it would be judged by all that he, and he alone, was the father of the child, and would be forced to marry me, or at least provide for me and the child. I having told him my resolution, left him to consider of it, and then my master's brother came to him, and he and I together so ordered the matter that he gave me 20*l.* down, and gave me bond to pay 50*l.* more at the birth of the child.

This, said Mrs Dorothy, was the first of my adventures.

And this shall be the last I shall relate to you in this part, referring the prosecution of hers, and others' adventures to a third part.

## PART THREE

### CHAPTER I

*Mrs Dorothy rehearses how she cheats her lovers ; who, being with child, made all that had to do with her contribute to her expense in lying in and recompence her lost honour : she goes into the country to lay her great belly : in her journey she falls into the acquaintance of a crafty old woman (alias a Procurer)*

MRS DOROTHY having thus given me an account of her first adventure, I received much satisfaction in the relation, and told her that I found she was much improved in cunning since my first acquaintance with her ; for I had enjoyed her without much advantage to herself, for she had a great belly, with little profit, not knowing who was or where to find a father : whereas now she had her choice of three, and money enough to boot whereby to purchase a handsome provision for herself and child.

‘Yes,’ replied she, ‘I did not intend to be caught again ; for then it would have been my own fault, you having experienced me in the fallacies of your sex ; and therefore, as I told you, I made my bargain with all my three friends as politicly as I could ; and, upon second thoughts, altered somewhat of the terms I had formerly agreed upon : for whereas my first customer had given me twenty pounds in hand to provide me with necessaries during my time of lying in, and had agreed to provide for the child when it should be born : I told him I had provided a nurse for it already that was willing to take all the charge, and discharge him from any further trouble, upon payment of forty pounds more : to this he easily consented, and gave bond in to me, in the name of a friend of mine ; whom I told him was the party that would make provision for the child.

‘Thus did I settle matters with the first ; and with the second I continued my bargain of having twenty pounds down and fifty pounds more at the birth of the child. And my master’s brother and I continued our old bargain of the like sum, of twenty pounds down and fifty pounds more to be paid at six months ; neither did I discontinue my familiarities with any of them, for I managed my affairs so cunningly that some nights I lay with my first customer without the knowledge

of my master's brother, from whom I endeavoured only to conceal it, and not from my second, for he (as I told you) was privy to my dealings with him, and by that means only first gained his ends upon me : sometimes I lay with my second customer, but it was with some regret, for I had the least affection for him of the three ; but now since he had bled some of his yellow-pieces and given me what I desired of him, I could not well refuse him his desires of me, neither was he so shy as formerly ; for he valued not though my master's brother sometimes discovered us, for he knew that our dealings were not concealed from him, and therefore he was the bolder. But with my master's brother I was more free than ever, he having as much again for his money as either of the other ; neither was it perceived by either of them ; for he, having the command of the house, so ordered it that my lodging was nearest to his ; and therefore we had the more conveniency to come at one another.

We drove this trade for some months, till in the end, my master's brother gaining the goodwill of his sweetheart, he was married to her, and then he for some time fell off. But he had not lain with his wife above a fortnight but he became weary of her embraces, and renewed his love again to me : I at first withheld him, and used arguments to dissuade him from any such course ; but all would not do ; for he told me he found but little pleasure in the cold embraces of his wife ; neither had he married her but for her estate, which was considerable. Many other arguments he used to persuade me, who was not altogether unwilling ; and so we again renewed our former pleasure ; but we were necessitated to be very private, and only now and then to have a private meeting in the day-time, for he was to accompany his wife in the night. But as privately and craftily as we carried ourselves, we were at length discovered : for my second customer, after he had paid for his pleasure, was more desirous to have his pennyworths out of me, and still importuned me to interviews so often that I much grumbled at him ; and he, being a wary fox, still dogged and watched me, and that so often that at length he found me and my master's brother in our strict embraces ; he being both glad and angry, without any [by your leave], entered the room where we were (the door being only carelessly put to), and without any words approaching the bed whereon we lay, drew the curtains, and said : ‘ Well, Master John (for so was his name), that sauce which is good for the goose I hope will be good for the gander ; self do, self have ; I hope, sir, since you have put in for your share in the pleasure, you will be share and share like in the charge.’ ‘ Well,’ replied Mr John, ‘ it shall be even as honest Mrs Dorothy will have it,’ and thereupon removed ; and, sitting upon the bed, I began to give

him bad words, calling him jealous coxcomb ; and he again flew at me, telling me that I was insatiate, and that twenty would not serve my turn ; and that now he found the reason of my slighting him for Mr John ; but if we would not do him justice, he would be revenged on us both. To that Mr John replied, asking him what he would have. ‘I would,’ said he, ‘have my money and my bond again ; for I see, and find, there is little reason that I should pay for other men’s lechery ; you make me provide for a child that, for aught I know, hath twenty fathers.’ ‘Well,’ said I, ‘you have had too much for your money ; and if you are grieved, amend yourself.’ ‘So I will,’ said he, furiously going away out of the room.

He being gone, Mr John and I fell to consulting what was to be done in this affair ; and, after many propositions, we at length agreed that it was most convenient for me to be gone from my service, and to leave London for some country habitation ; lest this angered coxcomb should mischief us, by discovering our practice to Mr John’s wife, or some else that was worse. I was willing, and ready to take this course ; but I told Mr John that moneys would be wanting to make a handsome provision for me ; for, as affairs now stood, there was no expecting any money from my angered customer but what should be forced from him. ‘That is true,’ replied he ; ‘but so soon as the money is due, for which he hath given you bond, I will take course with him, and compel him to pay it ; and in the mean time *I will furnish you.*’ This was that which I aimed at ; and I, knowing that he had lately received a large sum of money for his wife’s portion, with much ease gained him to pay me the fifty pounds down for which he had given me bond, and, being provided with moneys, and making up my pack (which was much improved since my coming), I prepared for my departure. I as yet knew not what country to retire to, but was resolved not to go back into my own ; and therefore consulted with Mr John about the place ; who still hankered after me, resolving I should not go far but that he might easily visit me ; appointed me a place about ten miles from London : and, because he would not be suspected of going with me, nor of being any ways privy to my departure, he permitted me to take my journey without him, he promising in a few days to take the opportunity of giving me a visit.

Thus did I leave his brother’s house, but not so abruptly but that I had the leave of my master and mistress ; whom I told that, my father being sick, had sent for me immediately ; and, to that end, a letter was framed by Mr John, and brought me by a porter.

Being now coached for my journey, I in short time arrived at the inn where I was appointed to stay till Mr John should arrive, and make better provision for me ; where an adventure befell me which is worthy of

your hearing. For among the rest of the travellers there was an ancient woman, who took great notice of me, looking towards my apron, and eyeing very diligently my belly ; which although it was now somewhat greater, being about three months gone with child, yet I had endeavoured, by busking it down and using all other means, to hide it. But the old woman was not so dim-sighted but she discovered the fraud ; and having been a good one herself in her time, quickly smelt out the matter ; and believed, and guessed the cause right, as it was. My thin chops, and sharp and whitely looks gave evident testimonies of what disease I was sick of. And looking more thoroughly upon me, and examining the features of my buxom countenance, she conjectured right, that some good fellow had got up my belly at London, and I was going into the country to be lightened of my burthen. She having a while considered with herself that I might be very useful for her in an affair she had then in hand, was very pleasant with me, desiring my further acquaintance. I was not shy for the matter, but knowing that I had money enough to bear me out in any cross adventure that might happen, was resolved to see what the old woman meant by her familiarity. She first gave me joy of my great belly, to which I replied, she might be mistaken. ‘ Well, well,’ said she, ‘ it matters not, whether I am or no ; but if it be not so, I wish it were. And methinks it is a pity that you should be sick of any other disease, for I have so much skill in physiognomy, that I can tell that you are of a more jovial temper than now your countenance shews for, and it is very unfit that one of your years and complexion should want the pleasures of a fit bed-fellow. But I suppose you are not ignorant of those enjoyments, and have a husband with whom you have experienced the sweet of a married life.’ ‘ Truly, Madam,’ said I, ‘ you are much mistaken ; for I never yet entered into that honourable estate of matrimony.’ ‘ Well, that matters not much,’ replied this good old one ; ‘ but I have missed of my aim if you are ignorant of what I have told you ; and although you may have no husband, yet I believe you have a friend, who has been dabbling with you, and swelled your belly. If it be so, you are not the only she that is guilty of that pleasing crime ; for I myself have been good in my time ; and still have a colt’s tooth in my head.’

Thus did the old dotterel initiate her acquaintance with me ; and had well near put me to the blush, but that I turned my face aside, and gently wiped it with my handkerchief. And then I told her she was very pleasant, and that a little in the extreme considering the publicness of the place (there were more guests in the room) and our small acquaintance. ‘ As for the place,’ said she, ‘ I must confess, as we are not all one woman’s children, so we ought to be somewhat careful ; but I

shall make amends for that by desiring you to withdraw into a more private place ; and as for the short time of our acquaintance, I question not but we shall quickly set our horses together, and I hope our present meeting may be advantageous to us both, especially, if it be as I yet expect it.' 'What do you mean ?' said I. 'That is,' replied she, 'if you be with child, and such a gamester as I wish you.' I was much amazed at this woman's confidence ; but however, she having been so open with me, I resolved to be as free with her ; hoping her words might prove true, and that some benefit might be made out of her acquaintance. Therefore advising her to leave that room for another more private, she soon obeyed me ; and having entered, and causing a good fire and wine to be brought, we sat down together, not without my receiving some salutations, and strict embraces from my ancient, but to me new, acquaintance. After we had each of us washed away sorrow with a cup of the best canary, the old woman being now more bold than before, again took me in her arms, and laid her hard hand upon my belly. It so fortuned that at that very instant the child gave a gentle turn in my belly ; which she quickly felt ; and then cried out, 'Well, Daughter, you see I was in the right ; therefore since I have discovered somewhat, I pray tell me the rest of your condition, and I question not but you will receive much profit by your discovery.' I was resolved to be very free with her, and acquaint her with the chiepest of my adventures, still concealing so much thereof as should or might be convenient to be made known ; whereupon I thus began :

'Mother (since you will have it so) I shall make a free confession of my crime ; hoping you will be merciful in the penance you shall impose, seeing, as you say, I am not the alone guilty party.' And thereupon I recounted to her how that I being born in such a country, and desirous to see fashions, went up to London, and there happened into a service, where my master's brother falling in love with me, after some courtship (he promising me marriage) we came to enjoyment ; that he, notwithstanding his promise married another, who indeed exceeded me in fortune, as I her in beauty. But my sweetheart soon after marriage came to me, and repented of his bargain ; but since that was past could not be remedied, I was forced to be contented ; and indeed, I having a great love for him, permitted him still to lie with me, so that in the end I was with child by him ; and then we consulting what was most necessary to be done, it was at length concluded that I should leave my service and retire into the country, till I were rid of my great belly ; and to that end and purpose I was now come into the country, expecting him in short time to follow me. Thus did I give her a short, though somewhat true, account of my fortunes ; and when I had done, she thus replied :

' Well, Daughter, since your condition is as I judged it, and indeed hoped it to be, I shall play the chemist, and extract golden fortunes to you out of your own desperate misfortunes ; for I doubt, as your lover hath once been false to you, so he may prove the second time ; and now he hath sent you a journey, he may leave you to shift for yourself, and to look for another father for your child. But, daughter,' continued she, ' if you will be ruled by me, you shall not only have a rich father, but a great fortune for your child, and, perhaps, so much ready money for yourself as you will not only give me thanks, but reckon this our meeting to be the most fortunate accident of your whole life.' ' I thank you very kindly,' replied I, ' for your fair offers, but I shall desire you to explain yourself further ; and I suppose I shall put so much confidence in you as to be ruled by you ; although I do not in the least doubt that I shall be put to those extremities you imagine.' ' So much the better,' replied she, ' but, however, that I may fit you for those purposes I have designed, and partly propounded to you, I shall give you an account of some part of my life and adventures ; and thereupon she thus began.

## CHAPTER II

*The old woman relates to Mrs Dorothy where she was born in an ale house : how educated in all manner of debauchery : how she had a bastard, which she murdered : is after marriage gotten with child by a Moor, and persuades her husband it was his notwithstanding, it being conceived so by the strength of imagination : her husband growing jealous of the black Moor, fights him, and they kill one the other : a strange adventure between her lover and a Frenchman, with a windmill*

I WAS born (said she) at Portsmouth ; a seaport town very well known, not only to most English men but also to many strangers. My parents were of the ordinary rank, keeping a fuddling school, or house of good fellowship. I was educated according to the custom of the place, to learn to read, and sew ; in learning of which having spent two or three years, at the age of eleven I was taken home to sit in the bar and keep the scores. I was well pleased to be at home, because there was great variety of guests, especially merry drunken sailors, who, when they had liberty to come ashore, would lustily booze it and sing and dance, all weathers. And to that end our house was still accommodated with a blind harper, who picked up a merry living. I taking pleasure in music, and my father thinking it would advance his trading, bought for me a

pair of virginals, and hired a man to teach me. I giving my mind to it, soon learnt some tunes, which I played to the merry sailors, whilst they pulled off their shoes, and danced ; and sometimes I gaining a tester or groat for my music, was so encouraged that I quickly took all the instructions my master was able to give me. I likewise learned some songs of him and some of the sailors ; so that in little time I was well furnished with fat and lean songs ; so we termed the bawdy and others. Although I soon understood what was meant by bawdy songs, yet I was yet too young to have experience of them ; however, when my auditors laughed, and sometimes hugged and kissed me, I had some kind of notions that were very pleasing to me ; and although my mother sometimes told me of the hateful name of whore, and how much it concerned me to keep my maidenhead, yet I resolved that if it were long ere I were married, yet it should not be so before I tried what it was to lie with a man. However I followed my mother's directions, in frowning and scowling on those who forced a kiss from me.

But, as I had designed, so it came to pass ; for at the age of fourteen years, a sailor, who of all other sort of people I liked best, gained my good liking. He newly came home from a boon voyage, and was full of half-crown pieces, and took up his quarters at our house. My father seeing him so flush was resolved to milk him ; and therefore permitted him to keep me company, though he saw he was very familiar in hugging and kissing me. I likewise had a great mind to some of his money, and therefore begged some of him to buy gingerbread, sugar plums, figs, fruit, and such like liquorish things ; he believing that as I had a liquorish tooth so I might have a liquorish tail, refused me no money I desired ; but I being somewhat modest in the smallness of my demands had but little that ways by fair play ; therefore I bethought me how I might be mistress of more. Therefore I was resolved at the next opportunity to pick his pocket, which I guessed would be no difficult matter to do, in regard he was oftentimes much overtaken with the creature. Therefore, to the end I might effect my desires, when we were met next together I drank pretty smartly with him, and conveyed some strong waters into each cup of his beer ; and so in short time he being somewhat tipsy, desired me to sing him a song, which I performing, he was quickly, as I supposed, fallen asleep. I sat in his lap, and as cunningly as I could slipped my hand into his pocket ; where I gathered up three or four half-crowns. Sleepy as he was, he observed me, and while I was at my work he was at his ; and as slyly he conveyed one of his hands into another place. Having not as yet been at that sport, I squeaked out, which made him rise and me withdraw my hand, and both of us leave our prizes. I blushing for anger that I was so doubly catched would have left the room ; but he

taking hold of me desired me to be quiet, and told me, what was done on his part was but in jest, as he supposed what I did was, and that it was but *quid for quo*.

I having by this time gained some confidence was, at his entreaty, content to stay longer with him, and sung another song ; which when I had done, he gave me four half-crowns (a greater sum than I was ever till then mistress of) and told me, since he knew what I would have, he would give it me, as he hoped I would do the like. To which I replied, I knew not what I might do in time, if he continued his kindness to me. Thus did I encourage him to be liberal to me, in hopes of his desired reward ; and thus neither of us (knowing one another's minds) was long backwards without enjoying our desires. He giving me some money and a ring, I permitted him to enjoy me as fully as he could wish or desire ; and many rencounters we had together, both at home and abroad, as time and place would permit. But as the longest day will have an end so had his money ; and then my father perceiving that it was low ebb in his pocket, began to be more wary and circumspect of him, and to watch him and slight him, lest he should gain anything upon me, and run into his score ; and so he might lose as much in the shire, as he had got in the hundred. The old woman, my mother, being somewhat suspicious of me, still watched us with much wariness ; and he not having money to treat me abroad at other houses, as formerly, we were fain to have all our sports at home when we had conveniency ; and there we were so narrowly put to it that we were oftentimes in danger to be catched.

When my sweetheart could get any money he would treat me abroad ; and one day having been walking with me, he committed one of the greatest extravagancies I ever heard of. He had drank very hard and was now almost flustered, when coming by the windmill which is near our town, the wind blowing somewhat moderately, there was a Frenchman, who challenged some English sailors to shew some feats of activity ; among other exploits, he took hold of one of the wings of the windmill, and holding fast, was carried round therewith, lighting very orderly on the ground upon his feet. This was a wonderful, and we thought desperate attempt, and he much bragged of it, daring any Englishman to do the like. My sweetheart being with me, and desirous to gain my esteem, and being somewhat pot-shaken, makes no more ado but likewise takes hold of one of the wings of the windmill ; which by reason the wind blew more freshly than it had done lately, caused the mill to go more swiftly than ordinary, and he not being able to hold fast, was thrown off. But though it was a pretty way off, yet to his good fortune he was not thrown to the ground (which would have broken his bones) but into

a pond of water ; and there he being very skilful in swimming, soon recovering himself, swam to the shore ; and not forgetting what he had done, cried out, ‘ Now let any Mounsieur of ye all do the like.’ All there present did much applaud him ; some attributing that to his design and skill which indeed was by chance ; and truly, it was a good chance for him that he broke not his neck ; but he then escaped any further danger.

Some merchants being there present, were so surprized with the manner of the action that they gave him ten shillings to drink ; he being thus rewarded for his folly, thought it his best course to go home ; where we being come, and my father made acquainted with the matter, and that he had money in his pocket, make much of him, and persuaded him to go to bed ; and my mother procured him a sack posset, which we all eat of at his bed side. But little did they think that this was a kind of a bride-posset, for, although we were not married that day, yet we lay together that night ; for when they were in their bed, in went I to his, where he expected me, having before enjoined me to make use of that opportunity, which I did, to both our good intents ; for we enjoyed one another in full freedom of all delights. This was the first and last time I ever lay with him ; for not long after, his coin being spent and a voyage presented itself, he shipped himself and away he went for the East Indies ; we promising a constant continuance of our affections. But he being gone, it was not long ere I found a strange alteration in my body, being taken with pukings, and vomitings, such as young married folks are used to have ; whereupon I concluded that I should soon have a great belly, which so fell out ; but before that, I had a husband to father it.

Our house being public we entertained all comers ; amongst the rest there came a sailor who had had the fortune to meet with a prize ; and he for his own share had two hundred pounds sterling. This was so tall a fortune as was unusual to be the possession of an ordinary sailor ; and he chancing in at our house, my father was very desirous to rid him of his money. He acquainted my mother with his purpose, and told her that this fellow would make a very good fortune for me, their daughter ; and they might by means of this live more plentifully than ever. The fellow soon expressed a great deal of love for me, which my mother taking notice of, told me of her own and my father’s intentions, and bid me prepare to entertain his love, for they designed him for my husband. She advised me to be free and courteous to him, but by no means to let him proceed further than the ordinary civility. I promised her all obedience, and she was very diligent and watchful over me. My sweetheart was very sweet upon me, and would fain have been dealing

with me as merchandize, bidding very fair for me, but I resolved to have all or none ; would not let him have a bit, but what was lawful. He being thus stopped was the more earnest ; and at length, rather than lose me, agreed to have me at my own terms which was marriage ; which at length was fully agreed upon. But my qualms increasing, as did my belly, my mother suspected somewhat was the matter, and therefore took me strictly to task ; and so wrought with me that I confessed I had been sporting with my former sweetheart.

This news much startled her ; but she who had passed many such brunts, soon found out a remedy, and told me that if I would be wholly ruled by her she would still warrant the business should go on prosperously enough ; ‘for,’ said she, ‘I will direct you to carry yourself so as the loss of your maidenhead shall not be discovered ; and as for your great belly, we will, when you are married, send your husband to sea before your time of delivery : and in the mean time, we will manage all matter cunningly enough.’ My mother having thus encouraged me, I prepared for the wedding day, which was soon after appointed ; which being come, and night also, we went to bed ; and there my bridegroom going about to enjoy me, I counterfeited all kinds of simplicity. I cried, sobbed, and screeked out ; and he had much ado, with puffing and blowing and sweating, to possess himself of me. I had all the marks and symptoms of untouched virginity ; and the more to beguile him, notwithstanding all his fair words and endeavours, I made so great a noise as raised my mother, who coming into our chamber, found me in swoon, from which she soon brought me by rubbing me with vinegar, and other remedies ; and she persuaded me to be patient, and desired him to deal kindly with me, using this proverb ; ‘Gently, John, the girl’s young.’ She left us, and then with somewhat more patience I permitted him to take his pleasure with me.

Thus was I married, and came off with all credit imaginable. But afterwards it did not proceed as we expected ; for my husband being very fond of my company would not by any means be persuaded to leave me for the sea ; but intended, now he had gained money enough, to live on shore. This resolution of his was very unpleasing, but I was forced to be contented, and to provide against the time of my delivery of my great belly, which now came on apace, and indeed was somewhat sooner than I expected ; for I was taken one day with a sudden pain, which much troubled my mother. For my husband was in the house, and hearing my cries would needs force his way into my chamber, where I was accompanied by my mother, who was instructing me what to do. On his approach to the bed my pains increased, and a child was born into the world ; but, that he might not discover the fallacy by the crying of the

PLATE X



[ face p. 480



child, I smothered it ; and lying still for some space, my mother persuaded him to depart. He being gone, my mother fell to work, and removed the child, playing the midwife in the best manner she could ; and all being buried, and I put into order, she told her son-in-law that these were extreme fits of the colic, and would, now they had begun, continue for some days. Wherefore she desired him to take another lodging, and let her lie with me. To this he hardly consented ; but at length, at both our importunities, he was content, and in ten days' time, I still every day counterfeited fits of groaning, but he seeing I sensibly amended would no longer forbear lying with me.

Thus did I escape this misfortune, and came off with flying colours, without the least suspicion, so that I was encouraged to proceed in further rogueries ; which was the ruin of my husband, and in which I had like to have been involved. I told you our house was for all guests ; and now by the addition of my husband's money, which was employed in my father's trade to increase his stock, our house the best furnished, was the best customed house in the town. Amongst the rest there came a person of honour who had been a traveller, and among his attendants a Negro, or black man, which he had brought from Guinea. This blackamore was reported by his master and others to be the son of a prince in his own country. I looked on him with an affectionate and smiling countenance ; which he perceiving, and also that I was handsome, much desired my company ; and being master of money enough to spend on me, he had many opportunities of courting me. At the first, I examining what I was about to do, drew back, thinking it a very strange thing to be kissed by a blackamore, but use brought it into custom ; and I endured not only that, but also methought I had a mind to taste of his flesh, persuading myself that there would be more than ordinary satisfaction in that enjoyment ; and he finding me coming, so prosecuted his suit that it was not long ere I enjoyed him. I must confess much to my content, for nothing but his sparkling eyes was to be seen in the dark, which indeed were as shining as two stars in a clear night ; and he was as much delighted with me ; so that we promised to take all opportunities for enjoyment. The lord's business kept him there so long that we had so much sport in jest as turned to earnest ; for I found myself to be with child, and I did absolutely believe that my black friend was the father of it. This consideration put me into a deep melancholy ; for we carried our business not so privately but that we were taken notice of and suspected by my mother ; but much more by my husband, whose extreme love to me was converted into as extreme a jealousy ; and he looked on my black friend with a great deal of horror.

I finding myself with child, and doubting it was by him, a fancy

possessed me that I should bring forth a blackamore like the father. This, I say, put me to a very great *non-plus*; and I endeavoured by all means to blind my husband, and take all suspicion from him. I told him I believed I was with child; this pleased him; but I also added, I doubted I should not render him completely satisfied, for that I had a very great fancy that the child would be black, and I could give no reason but that the sight of my lord's blackamore was deeply imprinted in my fancy. I told him I had read the Story of a black queen and king, who had a child that was white; and being so born was thrust out of the king his father's dominions, for no other cause but because he was white; and the queen his mother hardly escaped the fury of her husband, who shrewdly suspected her guilty of adultery with some white man, because the child was so. This, said I, was the crime laid to her charge; and it seemed so reasonable to him and all his nobility that notwithstanding the queen was always esteemed to be a virtuous woman, yet she hardly escaped with her life.

But at length a wise man of that kingdom coming to the court, and hearing of the matter, and that the queen was banished as well as her son; he, said I, walking about the Court, and coming into the king's bed-chamber, there saw the picture of a fair white woman, which had, as great rarity, been presented to the king. He then remembering the unfortunate case of the queen, did really believe that the sight of that white picture had occasioned the queen to conceive and bring forth a white child. Being thus convinced and persuaded in his own opinion, he was not long before he persuaded the king to the same; and the queen having been always of an unblemished reputation, it was concluded by the king and all the nobility that the queen was innocent. And thereupon the banishment was repealed, and both received home with great joy, state, and honour; and this son, after his father's decease, was crowned, and reigned king of the place. 'Now, sweetheart,' said I, 'this being so, and fancy having so strong an operation in the womb by only the sight of a picture, I cannot but imagine that the real presence of one may work much more and greater effects, especially since I find a very great inclination not only to love, but long for black things; black cherries, I affect extremely, as also damsons, sloes, and black-bullies; I chiefly feed on black puddings; and it is not very long,' said I, 'since I longed for a black hat, and did eat it up every bit; and now I have lately had a great desire to a dish of buttered charcoal.'

This discourse wrought variously with my husband, who, although he did somewhat suspect me, yet would he take no great notice at present, but told me that surely this was but fancy, and would in the end amount to nothing. I was content with his answer; but knowing his mind

stood thereto bent, I first propounded, that the blackamore should depart our house, or else that I might remove from home to some other place, to see if by his absence the fancy would leave me. To this he willingly agreed ; and in regard to move for the blackamore's departure until his lord went also would not only raise suspicious discourses, but turn to our disadvantage, by reason they were good guests ; we therefore resolved that I should remove four or five miles from home ; the which I did the next day. But my departure was not so secret but that I gave notice thereof to my beloved blackamore, who promised not to be long before he took the opportunity of giving me a visit ; the which he did unseen of any, I letting him in at a back garden door. And thither he usually came to me once in two or three days. We sometimes spent some hours together in a banqueting-house in the garden ; and at last grew so bold as to spend whole nights in bed together ; so that my husband, who sorely suspected me, was resolved to watch my waters ; and one evening missing the blackamore, who was then come to me, he at midnight departed ; and coming to the back door whereat the blackamore entered, he finding it open, entered, saw the candle in my chamber, and I believe could hear our voices, but knew not how to enter without great noise. Wherefore, now resolving in his mind what to do, he waited till the morning, walking about the garden ; but as the blackamore had some affairs of his lord's that morning to dispatch, he arose early and left me. I shut fast the door, and left him ; no sooner was he down, but my angry husband with a drawn sword meets him ; he seeing and knowing him, guessed his purpose, likewise quickly draws ; and they running upon one another's swords, soon bereft each other of life.

### CHAPTER III

*The old woman relates that her husband and black friend having killed one another, she removes her lodging, and is brought to bed of a young blackamore, which she likewise murdereth : and then again removing her quarters, and passing for a maid, is married to a young inn-keeper, who, instead of her, had a maid servant for his bed-fellow : both being sleepy, she sets fire to the house, and then pretending to fetch water at the well, tumbles her in, where she is drowned*

' **T**HUS,' said Mrs Dorothy, ' did the old hag give me an account of her mischievous beginning ; and indeed, in the prosecution of her story, she acquainted me with so many horrible actions that I was

aghast ; and wondered that the earth did not open to swallow up a wretch so monstrously wicked. But I think,' said she, 'by what I have said, I have told you enough to know her, and therefore shall pass over the rest of her actions in silence.' ' Nay,' said I, ' Mrs Dorothy, since you have begun to give us so fair an account of the foul actions of this your wicked acquaintance, I shall desire you to take the pains to proceed therein.' ' Truly,' said Mrs Mary, ' although I have known many wretched people in my days, yet I never heard of the like ; and I suppose by what you have already recounted, that all you have further to say will be both remarkable, admirable, and pleasant (if we may account that pleasant which is so mischievously and wickedly witty) ; and therefore I, as well as our friend here, desire you to continue your relation ; and if you will take the pains, we will have the patience to hear you to the least particular.'

Mrs Dorothy being thus requested by us both, replied that she should be content to grant our desires, but then we must have a great deal of patience, and pardon those impertinent ignorances that she should be forced to recount, in relating so many notable and various adventurous actions of another. We told her we should willingly attend, and excuse her in all ; and thereupon she thus continued.

Although, said this old trot, my husband, and my black friend had quickly dispatched their business, by thus dispatching one another, yet they were neither so sudden nor so silent but I both heard and saw them tilt at one another with their swords, which were bathed in each other's heart blood. And so they fell, grinning at each other with horrible countenances, and they lay so close together that they could catch hold of one another, and fight with their hands, their swords being sheathed in one another's bodies. But this contest could not, neither did it last long, their hearts being suffocated with blood, and so in short time they both expired ; which I discovered by the noise of hollow groans. And thus, continued she, was I deprived of a friend and a husband. I was started at the present, but considering what was to be done, went to bed and lay there till some of the house came and bounced at my chamber door. I suffered them to continue knocking for some time, as if I had been asleep ; but they growing more furious by reason of my silence, were ready to break open the door, when I jumped out of my bed, and in my smock opening the door, asked them what was the cause of their violent knocking. They replied, they were glad to see me alive, which they much doubted, by reason of my silence, and having seen such a doleful sight as was then in the garden. I seeming ignorant of all, desired them to explain themselves, and acquaint me with their meaning ; they were not long then ere they had told me that my husband and the

blackamore who quartered at my father's were both dead in the garden. I was amazed, ran then to the window, and there beheld what I too well knew already ; and then cried out, and in lamentable and furious manner threw myself on the floor, tearing my hair, and making great lamentation. By this time the constable and other neighbours were come, but could not get any thing out of me to discover any knowledge of the fact. I seemed a stranger to all ; and so the bodies being removed, word was sent to my father and mother, who quickly came thither. But finding me, as the rest, to pretend ignorance, nothing could be done ; but the people conjectured variously, and though they could not accuse me as the murderer, yet I was shrewdly suspected to be the cause, they judging the truth as it was. But however, I was without the compass of the law, and therefore escaped all trouble.

Their bodies were soon after buried, and I thought it absolutely necessary to abscond myself, lest (the time of child-bearing being near approaching) I might be further discovered by the complexion of the child, which I did verily believe would be black. And therefore I left my father's house, and went to an obscure village about ten miles off. I took up my lodging with an old woman of my mother's acquaintance, pretending a great melancholy since the death of my husband, and therefore avoided all company. I had all along attempted to destroy the child in my womb, and to that end I had taken Savine, and many other drugs and potions, and using to jump, and leap, and wrastle, to cause myself to miscarry, but all in vain. So that in fine, I was forced to use the same remedy I had done, and smother the child so soon as it was born. I had all possible conveniences to do it, for the midwife lived at some distance, and although it was somewhat black, it was taken to be so only by reason of its struggling for passage, and wanting a midwife. I caused it to be quickly nailed up in a box, and so with little trouble passed over the difficulty of this affair. My mother soon came to me, and accommodated me with everything fit for my condition, so that it was not long ere I perfectly recovered ; and I having no mind to return to my father's nor to stay in that place, caused my mother to provide me with a gentle habit and money in my pocket ; and being thus fitted, went twenty miles further, to the house of another of my mother's acquaintance ; and having been so unfortunate with a husband, was resolved not to own that ever I had been married, but to pass for a maid ; which I might well enough do, not being yet above eighteen years of age. My beauty then was so charming that I quickly gained many adorers ; and it being given out that I was a virgin, and of a good fortune, had many suitors in earnest, that wooed me in the honest terms of marriage. Having the choice of several, I was the more coy ; but in the end, there was one, who was an

inn-keeper, whose father being lately dead, had left a handsome competency. Him I accepted of, but with great jealousy and suspicion of myself lest he, a cunning youngster, should discover the want of my virginity. I was sensible it would be no difficult matter for him to find me out, but I was resolved to try my wits and prevent his discovery. To this end I delayed my marriage for some time, till I could bring my matters to pass ; which, said I, I did in this manner.

There was a servant-maid in the house, whom I usually had for my bedfellow, and with her I was very free in all my discourse, acquainting her with all passages between me and my sweethearts ; and many pleasing discourses we had upon those occasions, and commonly we spent some hours every night when we were in bed, in these conferences. I asked her which of my sweethearts was the best, and likeliest to prove a good husband ; she and I both jumped in one mind, and she seemed to rejoice at the good fortune I was likely to enjoy in having so handsome and accomplished a person as he was with whom I was to be married ; saying, that of all men breathing, she never saw one whom she thought she could love better ; and adding that she would give all the money in her pocket to have my place on the wedding night. Well, thought I, are you there ? I'll be with you anon. 'Truly,' said she, 'I am a perfect maid, not having yet had to do with any man ; and for deed, nay, for thought and word, until this time was a pure virgin ; but methinks, since I saw your sweetheart, I have such pleasing imaginations that I could willingly experiment the effects ; but,' continued she, 'I hope you will take all this in good part, and not be jealous of me, for I shall not in the least injure you, no, though your sweetheart should desire it. Besides, my quality and condition is so much beneath yours that it would be but a folly to expect it : but shall wish you all happiness with your beloved bridegroom.' She having opened her mind thus freely to me, it was the thing I only aimed at and above all things wished for ; and therefore that I might now strike while the iron was hot, I thus replied ; 'Come, come, do not counterfeit more modesty than needs, but tell me truly and sincerely ; if I can find a way to compass your desires and be therewith content, and willing, will you obey me in what I shall desire of you ?' 'This is a strange proposition,' said she, 'and I believe far from your heart to do, and only to try me farther ; but I pray let us talk no more of this matter.'

I quickly answered that I was now in earnest, and would (if she would swear to me to be secret) discover a secret that was of the highest importance, and that then all things would be as she had wished. She wondering what I meant, and being desirous (as all women are inquisitive after secrets) to discover mine, soon made many protestations and vows to be

secret in whatever I should impart to her ; and thereupon I told her that indeed about twelve months since, being in my father's house, a gentleman of quality lodging there and having divers times courted me ; and I always refusing to hear him, and being very obstinate, notwithstanding all his endeavours by presents, and otherwise ; he, I said being wholly impatient and resolved to venture all for my enjoyment, took his opportunity and came to bed to me. I feeling him near me, cried out, but in vain, for my lodging was at too great a distance from any body's hearing ; and so in the end, notwithstanding my striving, and struggling, he had his will of me ; and indeed, to tell you the truth, the danger of the brunt being over, and I well knowing that what was past could not be recalled, was, in the end, willing a second, or third time to permit him the same enjoyment ; and so he went away in the morning well satisfied, and I better pleased than when he came to me. I was resolved to keep this from the knowledge of my parents, and did so, though he offered me marriage, which would have been advantageous enough for me, he being, as I said, a person of quality. But however, he continued his practice with me all the time of his stay at my father's, which was two months ; and then he departing, promised a sudden return, and that he would then discover himself to my father, and request me in marriage. I trusted to his fair words, and permitted his departure ; but he had not been long absent ere I perceived myself to be with child. I kept this from the knowledge of all, so long as I could ; but in the end, my mother suspecting me, charged me so roundly that I confessed the fact. She thereupon took the best remedy she could, and unknown to my father sent me away to a friend of hers, where I lay in of a child, which soon after dying, and I recovered, I again removed hither, where what hath befallen me you already know as well as I. 'And now, my dear friend,' said I, 'the case being thus, you may do me a great kindness, and please yourself, as you say, by taking my place on the wedding-night ; and he lying with you in my stead may be deceived, and take me for a pure virgin ; whereas otherwise I am in much doubt to be discovered, in regard that not only I have lost my maidenhead, but have also lately had a child.'

My bedfellow gave diligent attendance to what I had related, and after I had satisfied her how she should behave herself in every respect, she consented to take my turn. My business being in this forwardness, I quickly consented to clap up the bargain with my sweetheart ; and the wedding day being come, we were accordingly married. And at bed-time I went to bed with my bride-groom, but feigning modesty, commanded all to depart the room, which they did, leaving one candle burning. I seeing the company gone, leaped out of the bed to put the

candle out ; which I did, and then, according to appointment, the maid, who was ready in her smock behind the hangings, quickly got into the bed, and enjoyed my place. I stayed in the chamber, and could well enough discover all passages between them, and how she made some faint resistance. But not long it was ere they fell asleep, and slept so long that I was at a very great stand what to do, lest daylight should come ere she should awake, and then be seen by my husband, and I disgraced and lost for ever. I ruminated in my mind many ways ; at last I was resolved to proceed to violence, and hazard all, rather than lose my credit ; and therefore seeing they still slept on, I went out of the chamber into the next, where with the help of a tinder-box, I struck a light ; and getting a torch and lighting it, set fire on some part of the house, which soon increased to a great flame. I then made no great difficulty to make a noise, and cry out ‘Fire, fire.’ This was soon seen, smelt, and heard by my drowsy bedfellows, who both arose ; and I being there, caught hold of him, as if I had lain with him ; and his bedfellow being now a little come to herself, and seeing me, began to consider what she was to do ; and ran where her clothes were, put them on, and then came to help me to mine.

My husband and all the rest of the family being thus raised, ran about for water to quench the fire. I being left alone with my husband’s bedfellow could have found in my heart to have killed her with a sword there in the chamber ; because she had been the occasion of all this mischief ; and the thoughts of that, and remembering what hurt she might do me hereafter in discovering my secret or, at least, in being my rival. These considerations made me resolve to dispatch her into the other world ; and therefore desiring her to go down with me into the yard to fetch water at the well, she did so ; where I spying my opportunity, in the absence of the rest of the family, as she was stooping to draw water, turned her, head forwards, into the well ; where, before any came to help her, she was dead. I pretended to bewail her misfortune, but the fire, by the assistance of some neighbours, being now quenched, we all retired into that part of the house that was unburned ; where every one lamented, not only the misfortune of the fire, but that of the maid’s death ; in which I alone was principally concerned.

## CHAPTER IV

*She being at home with her husband is courted by gallants, one of which cuckolds him : she is outwitted by her gallant, and cheated of a gown, and three rings : she is courted by another gallant, and they study a revenge on the first ; which she executes, by appointing the first to come to bed to her, where her husband, by her appointment, was in her stead, who taking him in the manner, soundly whips him : in the mean time she is in bed with her new gallant*

THE next day after our unfortunate wedding-night, all persons concerned began to reckon up their losses ; in which, neither I nor my husband suffered but little ; for he had nothing there but the clothes on his back, and I only had mine and a trunk of clothes and linen, which were safe. Our landlord lost some of his goods, and an hundred pounds would not repair the damage the house had sustained by the fire. He therefore complained much of his losses ; but his lamentations were not equal to those of an old woman who lived in the town, and was the mother of the unfortunate maid, whom I had so treacherously and ungratefully murdered. I was almost as joyful as she was sad, that I was rid of so dangerous a rival, whom I had entrusted with my greatest secrets.

The disorders of this house caused us to quit it sooner than we intended ; for that very day we removed to my husband's habitation, which was not above four miles distant, and there we lodged, where that night I received those embraces from my husband which were very pleasing to me, and then all things were as well fixed as I could desire. My mother's coming was every day expected, I having given her notice of my transactions by letters. She came in few days, and that not empty-handed ; for she brought an hundred pounds in ready money with her. This, she told her new son-in-law, was but part of a greater sum my father and she intended for my portion. Although my husband expected five hundred pounds with me (I having given out that I should have so much) yet he was content with this for the present ; and this money was part of what was left me of my first husband's. During the stay of my mother we kept open house ; and giving up ourselves to all manner of mirth, I found my husband to be but an easy coxcomb, and one whom I thought I should out-wit, and over-rule. He was much inclined to gaming, and, as the fortune of the dice went, he sometimes won and lost again as often ; at which he would be somewhat waspish and griping. And what he lost by gaming he would get up again out of large reckoning

and tricks he would put upon his guests, who now were more in number than formerly. For it being given out that he was married, and that to one that was handsome, all the country came in upon us ; especially all the roaring lads, who spent highest, came to see and present their service to their landlady ; and as a citizen's shop is never so well furnished as when a handsome wife is placed in a varnished seat, even so is an inn-keeper's bar ; and doth draw in customers, all in hopes to have a lick at her honey pot. And although a woman be never so chaste, and the guests find it so, yet if she be but handsome her company is still desired.

But you know my temper so well that you may guess I should not hold out a seven years' siege if I were but once bravely assaulted ; but withal, I resolved to be as cunning as all my observations had taught me, and not be like a glove for everyone's drawing on. If I had any servants, I resolved they should be of the best ; and those I counted so, who wore most money in their pockets. I had my choice of several of that kind ; and though I still counterfeited a great modesty, yet I was treated, and regalia'd both at home and abroad. There was no sport or diversions but I made one of the company ; no fair near our town but I visited, being conducted thither by one gallant or other ; where I had several fairings presented me. I had my husband's consent to all my actions, for I still acquainted him with all ; and when I was carried to any place, I told him every particular, and caused him to meet me at the place and time appointed ; without which I pretended a mighty unwillingness ; and this I did, that he might put the greater confidence in me.

This trade I did drive for a long time without joining issue with any of my gallants, and they gained no more upon me than a kiss, or a languishing look, which I sometimes cast upon them to cause them to believe that in time they might arrive to the height of their desires. And for these my kind looks I was as kindly rewarded ; they presenting me with gloves, scarfs, hoods, rings and cabinets, and such like womanish toys, and all in hopes that they might toy with me, as in fine they did. I had several of these gamesters, but one above all the rest was most in my favour, he having been the most prodigal in expenses upon me. I gave him full freedom with me, and I cornuted this as well as I had done my other husband. He spent much of his time in gaming, and was very earnest at it with his guests ; and while he was at his game, I and my gallant were at ours. My friend, for his greater pretence of freedom in our house, would humour my husband and game with him, and lose his money ; for indeed my husband was at that sport the better gamester, although my friend pleased me better at the other. By these extravagancies of his, and his losses at gaming, he in time came to a low ebb of

money in his pocket, and was necessitated to withdraw, and lessen his expenses ; so that he was not so welcome home or my husband as he had been : for I was of the old woman's opinion, ' No longer pipe, no longer dance.' As he avoided expenses I shunned his company, and having friends enough who desired to be my customers, I endeavoured to be rid of him. He still continued his wonted freedom, desiring my company abroad ; and so confident he was grown that he would ask my husband's leave, who had not yet refused him. And a comedy being to be acted at a town not far off, he gained my company to go with him. I had other company that I liked better than his, but I could not shift him off, although I very much endeavoured it.

The play being done, he desired to treat me privately, which I accepted of, having a design to manage that was newly come in my head, and which was this. I had seen a gentlewoman at the play, who had a new silk gown of a pretty colour and fashion ; I was resolved to beg such another of him, and in case of refusal, to break with him totally. I therefore took my opportunity, and when he desired his wonted freedom with me, I told him he was mistaken, and I absolutely refused, and forbid him turning up any more coats than he was willing to pay for. He asked what I meant by my discourse and refusal. I told him, unless he would give me such a new gown as I prescribed to him, he should have no more to do with me. My gentleman was as blank as a bell-founder, and his courage was somewhat cooled at my demands ; so that he soon arose, and walked up and down in a musing posture. At length he spake and made some excuses and pauses : but I being resolved on the question, told him that he had forborne his pension a great while, and therefore I was resolved he should be the more liberal, and that I would to try his love by performing that request ; if he would not grant my desires, I would also refuse him his ; but if he would give me such a gown, he should still oblige me, and have the first taking of it up. ' Come, come,' said he, ' you and I will not fall out for such a matter as that, and you shall have it, or anything else that is in my power, or indeed that you can wish for ; and within these three days I will send it you, on condition that I may have a full night's lodging with you.' ' Well,' replied I, ' be you so good as your word, and I will order the matter so, as you shall have your desire.' And thus we having clapped up a bargain, concluded the discourse with two or three kisses ; and so after a considerable repast, we returned home, and there we parted ; he to contrive how to be so good as his word, and I to order my husband's absence that we might lie together, as I had promised.

My gallant examining the matter, found that at present the strength of his pocket would not be sufficient to accomplish his desire, and

therefore he supplied that defect by the strength of wit. He visited the gentlewoman who was owner of the gown, and being of her acquaintance, he requested her to let him have her gown to shew a tailor to make such another by for a sister of his. His desire being modest was the sooner granted ; and a tailor of his acquaintance received it of her, and immediately at his commands brought it to me. I accepted it with a smiling countenance, and giving him a small piece of money for his pains, dismissed him. Soon after my friend likewise followed ; and my husband being absent, we concluded that night to devote ourselves wholly to Venus. And he being used to lie at our house, it was no great difficulty for him to quit his bed and come to mine, where we spent all that night in all those amorous enjoyments that we could devise. But he thinking he had paid dear for his night's pleasure, was resolved to have something more into the bargain ; and that he might engage me another time, if I fell out with him, as he foresaw I would. Wherefore he taking his opportunity when I was asleep, slipped no less than three of my rings off from my fingers, and put them on his ; and early in the morning he left me and my bed, and went into his own. And having before contrived how to play his cards, he went to the tailor, and advised him to come to me, and tell me he had forgot to finish somewhat that was very necessary, and had been omitted to be done in the gown, and therefore he was come to fetch it, that it might be mended, and he might have no disgrace by his work. I being without all suspicion, and seeing indeed there were some defects, which he shewed me, delivered it to him, desiring him to make haste with it, because I intended to have it home before my husband's return, and then to tell him that my father had sent it me.

But I reckoned before my host ; for although I waited two or three days, and sent to the tailor and asked my false friend, yet I could have none but idle excuses and flashes ; so that in conclusion I found myself cheated ; for as I understood afterwards, the gown was sent home to the right owner, whom I saw wear it the next Sunday ; and then knew it, by some particular marks to be the same. This passage vexed me to the heart ; but I was three times more angry when I missed my rings, and upon examination found that he had beguiled me of them ; and, indeed, for further confirmation, I saw them upon his fingers. This extremely perplexed and enraged me ; so that then I converted all my love into hatred, and studied nothing so much as how to compass revenge. He finding that I was angered, refrained my company at present, and that gave opportunity to another, who had long time courted me at a distance, to lay a closer siege to me ; and he so far prevailed with me, what with gifts, treats and presents, that I promised him that in

short time he should reap the fruits of his desired harvest. But I was resolved to make him instrumental in my revenge upon my abuser ; and to that end I thus broke the matter to him.

' Sir, your friendship and love I very much esteem ; and believing you to be sincere, and one in whose breast I may repose trust and confidence, I shall discover somewhat to you, that may for the future be of good consequence to us both. It is this : I believe you have not been so dim-sighted but you have observed more than common familiarity between me and Mr such a one (naming my abusive lover). Some presents he hath given me, for which he expected more freedom with me than I was willing to impart ; but I still kept him at a distance, although he pressed hard upon me to enjoyment ; which I not thinking fit at present to permit, he began to clamour. At length through his importunities, I consented he should lie with me at such a time, on condition he gave me such a silk gown as I named. To this he agreed, and sent in the gown accordingly. Now it so fell out that I could not perform what he expected, and therefore delayed him for a few days longer, till my husband should be absent, promising then to keep touch with him. But whether he not believing me, or else the necessity of returning the gown, which he had but borrowed, as I since found, one or both these reasons induced him to be false to me, and by a while he got the gown out of my hands. And he was not content with doing that only, but he also intending to abuse me further, when we were toying together, cheated me of three of my rings ; which he as a trophy of his victory, and my weakness and shame, still wears on his fingers. And I fear he is so prodigal and lavish of his tongue as to brag to his acquaintance, that he had those as my gifts for unhandsome service done me.'

Thus did I disguise the truth of my dealings with my abusive lover, and having given my new one this account, desiring his assistance in a revenge. To this he quickly answered, that as for the gown I had been so out-witted in, he would make up that loss by giving me another ; and so he would also for the rings, if I pleased ; or else compel my abusive lover to deliver them ; and in all things else he would vindicate my credit. I replied to him that I would not have any compulsion, for that would make too much noise ; but rather have his assistance in my revenge, which I had thus contrived.

I would have him possess my husband with jealousy against my abusive lover, and leave the rest to my ordering, which I managed thus. I gave my abusive friend more freedom, and shewed a kinder countenance than I had done of late, and that only to draw him on, which I did with much ease, for he had a great desire to be friends with me. And upon our first convenient parley, he confessed himself guilty, and

made some trivial excuses, which I admitted of, as I did his love, in hopes to gain my rings, and a revenge. As for the rings, he returned me one, and promised the other two the third night following, when I agreed to lie with him, promising so to order the matter that my husband should be then out of the house. After this parley we parted, and my new friend had so dealt with my husband, in discovering my abusive friend's freeness and privacy with me, that he now became absolutely jealous, and intended to make me sensible of his anger. But I knowing where the shoe wrung him, was before hand, and the next night told him that if he did not take some speedy course, I was in danger, and he too, to be abused by my abusive lover ; 'for,' said I, 'he hath gotten two of my rings, and shews them abroad, reporting he had them of me, as tokens of my dishonour ; and to me he will not deliver them, unless I will promise him a night's lodging. Now,' said I, 'if you have a mind to save my honour, your own, and revenge us both on him, I will thus do ; I will seemingly consent that he shall come to bed to me to-morrow night, and to that end, I will have you pretend to go out of town ; but instead of your going, I will go to such a friend's house, and there I'll stay. You shall lie in my bed, and at the hour I will appoint him he will come to bed to you, when you and your friends, and servants, I hope taking him in the manner, will so handle him as he shall have little cause to boast of his night's lodging ; and you and I shall be sufficiently revenged on him for thus attempting my chastity.'

To all this discourse my husband gave very good attention ; and it corresponding with what he suspected, he now wholly quitted any suspicious thoughts of me, and agreed to execute all I had propounded. So when the time came, my husband pretended to lie out, and took his leave of me and my abusive friend, who was glad of his absence. I made haste with him to bed, telling him about ten a clock he might come safely into my chamber and bed, which he knew well enough not to mistake the way. I then left him, and taking horse, went to my new friend, who expected me at our appointed rendezvous, where he presented me with the desired gown, and I, according to my promise, gave him a night's lodging with me, which was much more pleasant to us both than was that of my abusive friend ; who at the hour appointed went to my chamber and into the bed where my husband was expecting him. He believing it was I, began his embraces, and other actions, declaring his intent ; with that my husband leaped out of the bed, and four good old women, my friends, who were hid under the bed, discovered themselves, and having a dark lanthorn, lighted the room, and fell to work. First, they tied his hands and feet to the posts of the bed's head and feet ; and then each being provided with a good handful of birch laid

on lustily, till he roared sufficiently ; my husband making offer to geld him. But when it came to that point, he begged so heartily that my husband consented to his desire, only he paid the two rings he had of mine, as ransom for his jewels.

## CHAPTER V

*Her abused and whipped lover vows revenge, which is done in part : afterwards he is killed, yet kills his rival ; the manner how, with other things very remarkable*

NEVER did the canicular days infuse into dogs a greater madness and fury than did this whipping in love's school enrage the mind of our sufficiently jerked amorist ; which for the present (whilst under his chirurgeons' hands) he durst not express ; for all that he could do was to supplicate them not to deprive him of what would make him stand as a neuter between the sexes of human generation ; which they granted him.

With much hazard and greater fear, escaping their hands only in his shirt, without shoe or stocking, he got out into the streets ; and being overjoyed that he was secure, but had the black mantle of night to conceal his shame, and convey him home, without the knowledge of the town inhabitants, ran through the streets with all speed imaginable. But, by the way meeting with a sharp stone, it so hurt his foot that he was compelled to slacken his pace, and lamely limp to his lodging. The clock had then struck twelve (an hour wherein supposed bugbears walk, to frighten children) when he could see just before him two women, whom a third had raised from their warm beds by her incessant cries proceeding from the intolerable pains she then endured (being ready to be delivered) to hasten to call up a fourth, *viz.* a midwife. Haste on both sides had made them so carelessly heedless in their way that they were within a spit and a stride of each other, before they could discern one the other. My cheating, and cheated lecher perceived the women first, which put him to a stand, what he were best to do, either to go forward, or backward ; they, on the other side, seeing a thing all in white stand opposite in their way, judged it to be the troubled spirit of the lately deceased husband of this woman they were going to fetch the midwife for.

He, on the other hand, resolved to go forward ; and they, seeing him approach them, screeking out, ran back as fast as they could ; who being

stopped by the watch, and demanded why they made that hideous outcry, made answer they had met the Devil, or some thing like him. Condemning the women's idle and causeless fears (as they judged) they advanced forwards, armed with bills, halberts, but principally with an unparallelled resolution. My gallant had stepped into a by-corner, when the woman cried out, to secure himself from what might ensue that unexpected alarum, fully resolved to run home to his lodging directly, with what speed he might. He started out just as the watch were advanced within half pistol-shot of him ; the sudden surprize confirmed them in the women's report, so that, without consideration there was not one of these desperate kill-devils to be seen, but such as with a too precipitate haste, lay tumbling in the kennel, one over the other. This accident gave new wings to my lover's feet, which were so benumbed with cold that he very much stood in need of such Icarian practices, Dædalian inventions.

In conclusion, with much knocking, he made a shift to get in. His landlady (who was a widow) seeing him in this condition, charged him home, asking, where he had been ; how he came thus to lose his skin ; whether he had been robbed ? Though wanting garments, yet he would not be without a cloak to hide this venereal enterprize of his, and therefore replied, that falling into ill company, it was his ill hap to fall into that damned itch, that tickling humour of playing ; that having won something, and like to win more, they would not let him play longer, but seizing him, stripped him, and would have done I know not what, had not his flight procured his safety.

His loving landlady believing that he was thus really abused, conducts him to her own warm bed, and like a kind friend would not let him lie alone, for fear of catching cold. But his breech was so sore he could not lie on his back ; and so troubled were his thoughts he had no mind to lie upon his belly. His landlady finding him so backward, imagined the cause to proceed from his being too forward abroad with others, and gathered by too many apparent symptoms that she was much deceived in his pretended continency at home ; and being heartily vexed to be thus disappointed of her expectations, she leapt out of bed, telling him angrily she had more lodgings and lodgers in her house, and would not be beholden to him for either ; and had she known so much before she did let him in, as she hath done since, she would have tried how the cooling julep of standing in the street all night in his shirt would have wrought with his feverish concupiscence.

Nettled he was to the purpose to hear his landlady (who had ever since their first acquaintance borne him a more than common kindness and respect) thus taunt at him, but his thoughts were so absolutely taken up

with a subject of another nature that he returned her not one word ; which so exasperated her spirits not to be replied unto that laying aside discretion, with her modesty she was resolved to ring him a peal in the ear-rattling rhetoric of Billingsgate. ‘ How now,’ said she, ‘ is it not enough that my servants, from time to time, have sat up late, or rather early, but that I must be disturbed from my rest to give repose to a restless stallion ? Shall my roof prove the protector to such cater-wawling night-walkers ? Is it not enough that I have furnished you continually with money, but you must ungratefully make that the common procurer of your private veneries abroad, and those gaudy clothes I gave you must be the gentleman usher that must lead you to them ? Are all your former respects come to this ? Are your hot pretences grown so cold at home that nothing can warm them but a fire in another man’s chimney, made there at my expense ? ’ She would have proceeded, but that her clamorous tongue interrupted her by raising one of her lodgers, who came down at that instant to know what the matter was ; when my ‘ come rogue,’ not enduring her raillery longer, rudely bid her (rather than gently desired her) to go to bed ; begging that she would not trouble him after that manner, charging her with incivility for disturbing him from his rest.

The gentleman that came down the stairs hearing this, and judging she had prostituted those kindnesses to one that scornfully refused them, which he had so frequently solicited her for, partly for pleasure but principally for profit, had not the patience to check her for it in any other place than these down-right ; outrageously bellowing forth, ‘ Am not I the oldest guest in your house, and not a penny in your debt ? Have not I pampered you at home and coached you abroad till I have not had a wheel in my pocket for your extravagant delights to move further on ; and have afterwards stabbed my credit, that you might deliciously feed and satiate yourself on the blood of the grape ; then, when few refuse to give themselves satisfaction I have attempted to enjoy what you now prostitute you kept me at that distance I knew not whether your breath stunk or not. Nay, I have made use of critical minutes to purchase my desire, more especially when I could see by the flaming of your eyes, what conspiracy wine and wanton discourse had formed within you, to fire the fortress of the most resolved chastity. And shall you now be bid to go to bed ? Be begged to retire from your sated lover’s embraces ? How can you stand thus impudently in your smock in a man’s chamber, and yet be commanded to be gone ? Come, you forget yourself ; your dark lanthorn delights have dazzled the sight of your reason ; and let this (kicking her with his foot) ‘ light you to your own chamber ’ ; and withal laying hold on her, would have

forcibly thrust her out ; which rude carriage of his made her cry out aloud, fearing some further mischief.

This out-cry so startled my gentleman in bed, that not enduring to hear his landlady so grossly abused, got up and closing with him, threw him ; and having no other weapons but their fists, pounded one another to some purpose. The woman fearing what mischief might ensue, put her head out at the window, and cried 'Murder !' as loud as she could bawl. The watch (hearing murder cried out) came running to the house with all speed (not dreaming they should see again that spirit which had so lately frightened them) and perceiving a great bustle in the house and the same horrid noise continuing, they broke open the doors, and entering, found two men scuffling in their shirts, having blooded one the other sufficiently (this bleeding excused very well the other blood that came from the firked back and breech of my gallant) I say, finding them in this bloody condition, they doubted they had injured one another with some sharp instrument. They needed not to search farther than their hands, having neither of them more clothes to conceal anything than what modesty commanded. Notwithstanding they were parted by the watch, yet they could not hold their hands off one another ; which caused the watch to interpose again. Now they resolved to secure them that night from further mischieving one the other at the watch-house, and so commanded them to put on their clothes ; which the one quickly did, but the other could not. It would have been worth all my revenge to have seen in what confusion he stood at that word of command, or to have known what the watchmen thought when they saw their prisoner could find no clothes.

Though their wonder was great, yet they resolved to have their curiosity resolved ; and therefore asked him where were his clothes, and how he come, or how he could be without them ? By the way, surely there was not much wit in that constable and his watch ; for had they had any they might have concluded (from the posture they found those gentlemen in) that they were a couple of mendicant poets who had but one suit of apparel between them, that when the one went abroad a-wheedling, the other was forced to lie abed a-staring, and disputing who should next scout abroad to find out the enemies of famine, and not agreeing upon the point, fell together by the ears. But to return where I left off, the constable having interrogated him as aforesaid, he endeavouring to excuse himself and palliate the scurvy usage of his revengeful mistress, answered him that walking that afternoon, it was his mischance, by a push of that gentleman they found him fighting with, to fall into a common-house (pox on his witty allusion), and that having no suit than that, he intended to have lain in bed till it had been cleansed

and dried ; that the gentleman aforesaid would not let him rest, but came into his chamber, and with scoffing and irritating expressions provoked him to rise and endeavour to be rid of his trouble.

The other told the constable that what was said was a greater lie than the devil could invent ; that the cause of the quarrel was his endeavouring to hinder his lechery that night, by preventing his landlady from going to bed to him. The woman hearing this, replied they were both of them a couple of confounded liars ; and (that she might make one of the number) told them that they intended to have ravished her, and that the one breaking up her chamber door, the other followed, and fell together by the ears, who should be the first actor in their damned design ; to prevent which she was compelled to cry out ‘Murder !’ upon which they withdrew out of her chamber, and went into one of their own. ‘Where,’ said she, ‘you find them like a couple of malicious dogs, fighting for that morsel neither of the curs is ever likely to taste of.’

This forgery was more semblable to probability, in the constable’s opinion, than anything else he had heard. Wherefore, not to spend further time in examination, he charged his watchmen with my two gentlemen, and so inconsiderately rash he was that he vowed they should go with him ; and had carried them in that very condition, had not the woman of the house interceded that she might clothe his nakedness as well as she could for the present. Hereupon she furnished him with a petticoat of her own, having no other clothes that would fit him. Instead of a cloak, she helped him to a red rug ; and to crown all, she clapped upon his head her straw hat. Had it been daylight, it would have been worth twelve pence a-piece to have seen this Slavonian, whose garb, for strangeness, the barbarous world might admire but never imitate. I do not hear that he overslept himself that night ; nor can I believe that the morning gave his eyes great satisfaction in viewing the preposterousness of his habit ; and his twinklers looked, as I am informed, as if they had been employed in nothing all that night but on looking on the phantasms of some of his dead and damned acquaintance.

I slept but little myself, that night, partly, by thinking how this revengeful plot of mine would take effect, but chiefly by reason of my unsatisfied bed-fellow, who kept me waking, in spite of my teeth. However I arose early, and being but a little way distant, soon got home ; where arrived, I understood from my husband that my rings were restored, that he had left me his breeches, as owning me his master ; and so he might well acknowledge, for he was never so whipped for being a naughty boy as I caused him to be. And well he escaped so, having like to have left behind him a most precious remedy against several female distempers ; a recipe as infallible against all manner of

obstructions as ever was applied to any chalk, or oatmeal eater, since Eve lay in with Cain in her first child bed.

Immediately after I heard of the rest of that night's incomparable adventures, and how he was secured, and had a particular account of the pleasant dress he was in, never did anything tickle me more than the relation how amply and fully I was revenged of him. Yet I could not but entertain a thought that might incline to pity him ; but it would extend no further than to send him his clothes, and withal a letter, to give myself the plenary satisfaction of laughing at him ; the words and sense were to this purpose.

SIR,

I am much troubled that one of your age and experience should prove so mere a *novice* in *Love's school* as to be guilty of an amorous *erratum* that should deserve the lash. I see now you are a mere *baby* in our sex, and ought to be whipped again into a better understanding. What trust that woman whom you have abused ! Why, a child of the *first head*, in the *nonage* of amorous matters, in the *hanging sleeves* of courtship, knew this as a *maxim*—that if Love, though never so fervent, be once by abuse converted into hatred, the woman is indefatigable in her revenge till *death* hath put an end to the controversy. Henceforth be better advised from me how you behave yourself before your little *sparkling goddesses* (as, wantonly, you are pleased to call them) ; if you will preserve your good esteem and be daily cherished with their soul winning and ravishing smiles you must not relax in your offerings ; but if by slighting, cozenage, &c. you instigate their incensed *deities* to revenge, nothing but an absence as distant as the two poles shall protect you from their subtle and speedy revenge. And now, thank me Sir, that mine hath fallen so slightly on your shoulders, having given a stripped simmar for the gown I should have had. I am sorry, though, I had not secured your *witnesses of manhood*, that they might have been *testimonies* continually by me, to assure myself you will not for the future abuse my love by fondly affecting another. Lastly, hearing that you are clad as if you were sent *Ambassador* from the *Northern Witches* to their *Emperor* the *Devil*, I thought fit to send you some clothes (in lieu of those rings you left with my husband) which are more suitable for human conversation. But let me advise you, haunt me no more in them, lest I conjure you out of them again and the Devil into you. Be wise, and have a care of being amorous, when penniless.

Your abused, in part revenged, &c.

I commanded the messenger to observe his carriage in reading the letter ; who told me, all the madmen in the world put altogether could not in their most extravagant gestures have expressed madness so to the life as he did. However, he was not so mad but that he did put on his clothes, which upon old acquaintance so complied as to fit him to a hair. Soon after he was discharged ; and now invoking the Devil to

be of his cabinet council, he walked into a solitary place that he might hatch mischief, that is be revenged on me, my husband, or any else that he supposed might be his rivals. He was quickly furnished with a mischievous design agreeable to his desire ; and how could he otherwise, for there are millions of hellish imps of the worser sort who continually attend the motions of the malicious and revengeful, to execute the commands of such who care not how they precipitate others and themselves into ruin and destruction.

This stratagem he contrived, by the help of a little credit he had yet surviving. He puts himself into a new riding garb, mounted with sword and pistol ; having gotten a periwig of a colour clean contrary to what he usually wore ; having for the better carrying on his plot procured a false beard, with a black patch on one of his eyes ; in this disguise, the most discerning eye of his most intimate, and familiar friends and acquaintance could not have discovered who he was. In this equipage he rides out of town some half-score miles, only to dirty his horse and boots ; and leaves a letter with a friend to be delivered to my own hands, in these terms :

MADAM,

Or rather Mad-dame, for she that is madder than you was begotten in *Monte Gibello*, where troubling the sulphurous womb of that burning mountain, was belched into the world and carried on the back of a whirlwind to disturb the inhabitants thereof. Think not I will trouble myself to answer particularly every flouting invective, the which your letter is stuffed withal, but shall tell you in general you are too dangerously wicked for my acquaintance ; and he that intends to contract a friendship with *Hell* must first shake hands with you. Your eyes will be his light to guide him ; your cheeks and breasts are his highway ; and your mouth the gate or entrance thereinto. I do not intend to buy repentance at so dear a rate as ever to see you again ; therefore your threats were needless. I am not yet fallen in love with my winding-sheet that I should court death, or hug a contagion. My sense of smelling is indifferently well recovered of its late distemper, and can now distinguish the scent of sound bodies from putrefaction. My eyes, too, have regained their sight and can plainly see the she-devil in you, maugre all the paint and *fucus* that is on that daubed face of thine. Prithee, name me not at any time, lest thy breath for ever poison my memory ; and to that intent, forget that ever I had a being ; and so wishing thou never hadst one, I take my eternal farewell of thee, &c.

This letter he sent me to the intent I might believe he was so far from revenging himself on me that he never intended to see me more ; by which means he facilitated his purpose. In prosecution thereof, late in the evening, he came to town and directed his course to our house. Upon his alighting, he seemed much tired, which we verily believed, his horse being all of a foam ; and desiring his chamber might be

shewn him, it was done accordingly ; and order being taken for a sack-posset, he supped it up, and laid his head to rest. He lay abed somewhat long the next day, pretending indisposition by reason of his long journey ; but getting up, he seemed somewhat pleasant, calling for a pint of sack for his and his landlady's morning's draught, assuring me that as a stranger [and I could not perceive him for other] he would not be indebted for any civilities he should receive in my house. I, on the other side, seeing him so forward to part from his money, gave him a considerable lift by my usual way of spunging. Dinner time approaching I asked him what he would have ; who ordered me to provide variety of what was in season ; not imagining that table on which this meat should stand should so soon prove the stage on which a bloody tragedy must be acted.

A little before we sat down to dinner I sent for my friend that lay with me that night I acted my revenge to participate in our good cheer ; who coming, we sat down together, there being no other than this disguised gentleman, my husband, myself, and friend.

We did eat and drink freely ; about half dinner this gentleman seemed to be very officious in helping me. 'At last, Madam,' said he, 'I will help you to one bit more, which you shall not refuse for my sake.' I returning him thanks, in an instant he whipped off with his knife my husband's ear, and laid it hastily on my trencher ; and turning his head quick about, 'Be not angry, Sir,' said he, 'you shall have bit for bit' ; and thereupon endeavoured to cut off my nose. But I was too nimble for him, and by running out escaped the danger. My friend observing what had passed, being too suddenly done to be prevented, stepped from the table, and drawing, bid the disguised rogue draw too, or he would pin him to the wall for this matchless piece of villainy. Whereupon he did, but behaved himself so ill that my friend wounded him desperately in the body at the first pass. Concluding he had received his mortal wound he resolved not to die alone, wherefore he made a full pass, and so running upon his adversary's point, each died at once by the sword of the other.

I soon returned with a long train of Myrmidons whom I had instructed how to chastise this insolence ; but Lord ! what a confusion was I in when I saw the two combatants lie dead on the floor, and my husband gazing on them motionless, like one converted into a statue for the loss of his ear ; which he should have lost, by right, long before that time.

Some more busy than the rest stirring their bodies, the false beard of the disguised fell off, by which he was known who he was ; and because it was everywhere known through the town how this gentleman had

spent what he had on me, and was abused for his pains, I was immediately cried out upon as the authoress of all this mischief. I endeavoured to excuse myself by relating what he had done ; *viz.* the cutting my husband's ear off and the endeavouring to cut off my nose, but this allegation signified little. Searching his pockets they found a note, or letter, sealed, and seeing it was directed to me, they then, without my consent, break it open, imagining they should find therein the mystery of this tragical encounter. But all they could discover was only his intention of cutting off my nose, and my husband's ear. The lines were these which follow.

Insatiate strumpet ; perjur'd painted whore,  
Who hast the vice of all thy sex, and more,  
Devil, nay worse ; for thou canst by thy face  
Make men apostate in the state of grace.  
By thee I fell ; then did my *Pagan* knee  
Oft render worship to thy devilry.  
I (being converted) idols won't allow ;  
Down must the *Dagon* of thy face I vow.  
See where it lies ; that idol, once ador'd,  
Must be for want of it, by all abhor'd.  
Thy husband lends an ear, then let thy nose,  
To *sister-sense* her wretched state disclose.  
And then consult thy glass ; see thy fair face  
Is vanisht, and Death's-head stands in the place.  
Thy lips some *nectar* sipt from I suppose  
Will be exclam'd on, fogh, they want a nose.  
And may thy sparkling eyes, which me did win,  
Be thought to kindle from a fire within.  
May ulcers seize thee, for the wrong th'ast done,  
And living rot without compassion.

The rumour of this sad disaster ran swifter than a torrent through the Town ; insomuch that our house was so crammed with people that our servants were forced to quit their employments to give room to the inquisitive incomers. A chirurgeon was sent for to dress my husband ; and a coroner to sit upon the other two that were slain. Glad I was that I had the opportune excuse to leave the company and attend my husband ; by which means I avoided the hearing so many thousand accriminations that were laid to my charge. In the mean time the jury found their deaths happened by manslaughter ; and so thereby, though we were present, we could not be found accessories.

The noise of this accident did also fly into the country, not escaping the ear hardly of any one guest that frequented our house. Report had rendered the fact so horrible, and my husband and self so notoriously

accessory thereunto, and now all our former wickedness and roguery was drawn up in a long scroll, and this last added in capitals to make up a complete sum of villainy. By which means we had little resort to our house, and our house rent being great, and our trading small, my husband and I were now necessitated to put our heads together, by some other means to patch up a future livelihood. ‘Thou seest,’ said he, ‘the more serious and reputable sort of people shun our house, as if old Beelzebub were there sitting abrood to hatch those diseases which should be the destruction of the universe. And therefore, to be revenged of their thus slighting us, I will meet them abroad, and what money they forbear to spend with me, I will compel them to lend and more. Though I am not stout and resolute enough of myself to do this, yet thou knowest Humphrey our tapster is a strong fellow, and hath a good heart; he and I, fear not, will do the business.’

For my part, I must needs confess I questioned not Humphrey’s performances, having made trial thereof. I ever fancied to try experience, and marking what a rough-hewen fellow he was, all bone and sinew, with a face like a tanned bull’s hide, I could not be quiet till I had found the difference between this man, nerved with wire, and others that were clean limbed and straight slender bodied, jointed like Bartholomew babies, with quaking custard faces. But there was so vast a disproportion between them that were I widow, and were courted by a knight worth five thousand pounds a year, with a handsome fair whitely face, I should hardly be persuaded to accept of a ladyship but for the sake of his revenue.

To be short, Sir Philip Sidney’s cowards were not much ranker than my husband; but, thought I, if he hath courage enough to look a man in the face and bid him stand, Humphrey hath strength and valour enough to compel them to deliver. Wherefore I persuaded my husband by all means to go forward with what he had propounded. I was the more willing to it in hopes that he would be taken some time or other; and as he was marked for a knave, so he might be hanged for a thief, and so be freed from an impotent husband. He seemed well satisfied that I assented to his proposal, and looked upon it to be a good omen, and promised success to his undertaking. ‘On the other side,’ said he, ‘you must not be idle at home; you know there is now none but the debauched that resort to our house, and therefore suit their inclination, if aught can be gotten by so doing. Your daughter is young and handsome, let her be the sign to attract; but pray let me have you furnish yourself with other utensils. The boy, too, is no fool, who, by observing your carriage and direction, hath very ill spent his time if he cannot tolerably pimp as well for others as his mother.’ ‘Well, well,’ said I, ‘husband, you are

merrily disposed ; look after your business, I shall manage my own well enough, I warrant you.'

My husband and his tapster committed many robberies in a little time : and very few but what were on our guests ; who freely discoursing their affairs over a glass of wine after supper, many times discovering what store of money they carried with them and for what purpose, gave them a fair opportunity in the morning to set on them, and deprive them of it. Nay, so little suspected he was of robbing, that several have returned to our house after he hath robbed them, and made their complaint to him how basely they had been abused ; it was always his care (and indeed therein he shewed the utmost of his prudence) to return home with all the speed he might possibly, after he had robbed any ; by which means, he and his man robbed a long time secretly.

It was generally their good fortune to meet with such as durst not fight them ; a thing that travellers generally, and justly, are to be condemned for ; who, with easy parting with their money not only shew how meanly spirited they are, but encourage the thief in his robberies. Whereas, on the contrary, would they shew themselves as desperate and as resolute as their assaulters, it is my opinion they would quickly turn tail, as not daring to venture the hazard of the dispute. But to return, though my husband succeeded so well in his attempts, by meeting with none but cow-hearted fellows ; yet once, waiting with his man in a thicket early in the morning, for the passing by of a gentleman that had lain the night before in our house, who had a considerable sum of money in his portmante, there travelled by another in the dawning of the day, whom, by a mistake, my husband assaults. The other drawing a pistol, fired it at him, but missed him ; however, the report had like to have done as much mischief as if the bullet had passed through his body, for with fear he fell from his horse ; and had like to have saved the hangman a labour, by breaking his own neck. Our tapster seeing his master fall, and verily believing he was killed, by that was resolved to revenge his death, had not he seen another come riding to him (which was the gentleman they lay in wait for) which made him alter his purpose and ride away, for the preservation of his own life. The gentleman supposed, too, that he had really dispatched this pad, not seeing him move all this while (which he confessed to me afterwards, he politicly did to the intent he might be exempted from fighting, and securely see the event of the combat). The other two that came to his assistance judged the same, and advised him to ride away with all speed to the next justice ; not only to avoid the present danger, 'for,' said he, 'this other rogue is rid away to get some more of his fellows, to make a further attempt ; but you will also receive the thanks of the country for destroying such caterpillars that eat up the

fruit of their land.' Setting spurs to their horses away they galloped to find out the next justice.

My husband perceiving they were gone, got up, and mounting rode full speed home, without so much as once looking behind him. Coming home, he found me almost drowned in tears and half frightened out of my wits ; not so much for sorrow of his death (which news I had privately sent me by our tapster) but for fear, as soon as it should be known who this slain thief was, I should have my goods instantly seized on, and my doors shut up. I was in a room by myself, getting some plate together, with other choice portable things ; and coming to the stair-head, with an intent to convey them out of the house, met with my husband full butt ; whose face being pale and wan, by reason of his late great fear, possessed me with so strong a conceit that this was his ghost, that the fright made me shriek out, and letting fall what I had in my apron, I retreated. This sudden surprize so amazed him that he stood, indeed, like an apparition at the chamber door, and had not the power to come in. This increased my belief, however, I plucked up my spirits, and boldly asked him what he was, and what he came for ? He sneakingly, in a low voice, (for he was more than half dead) answered he was my husband, and that he came to see me. ' My husband,' said I, ' is dead ; and if thou be his damned ghost, I conjure thee by all that is good, depart and trouble me not now, since whilst living I could never be content, nor at quiet for thee.' Not speaking one word, he turned his back upon me and went down stairs. I never believed myself a conjurer till now (although I have been called witch a thousand times) and indeed I knew not what to think of it (comparing altogether), whether this was a phantasm or not. But troubling my thoughts no further about that matter, I took up what I had dropped and getting into the yard, would have marched off with what I had in my lap, had he not hastened after me, and holding me fast by the arm, told me that he was not quite dead, though almost frightened out of his life, and therefore begged me I would not remove anything that might tend to his prejudice ; and if I would walk in, he would tell me his whole morning adventure.

The two gentlemen coming to the justice, amply declared what an eminent piece of service they had done their country by killing on the place one paddler, and putting to flight another ; and that if his worship pleased to summon a quantity of the parish, to defend them if occasion should require, they would shew them the place where the dead lay. Hereupon there were a great many that offered themselves freely to go along ; but coming to the place, found neither man nor horse, nor the sign of one drop of blood. The country people finding themselves thus abused, and not know what the design of these two gentlemen might be

in putting such a trick upon them, laid hold on them and carried them back to the justice ; who being informed that there was not the least appearance of what had pretendedly been done, asked them the reason why they thus abused themselves and others with mere forgeries. To which they both replied that their eyes had seen what their tongues related, and concluded that other padders, confederate with this, had carried off the body of their brother, that they might avoid suspicion. The justice and others were of the same opinion, and so the gentlemen were dismissed.

Our tapster hearing that his master was in health, returned home, resolving for the future never to hazard his life with so great a piece of cowardice ; and to speak the truth, it was high time to leave off, since they were shrewdly suspected by the whole town to be highway-men, they being seen so often together on horse-back, both early and late.

My trade, however, diminished not, for I was taken notice of all the country round, to be a dealer in secrets and ready money commodities. Nay, there were not a few honest men's wives that would not stick to trust me in the disposal of the whole cargo of their reputation. Nay, I was so excellent at my art, that neither privateer nor publican would act any difficult matter without my advice. I could pimp, if occasion served, most incomparably ; and I was looked upon as the best procuress in all our country ; which I would not have been but that I was so much tired with my daily, nay, hourly visitants. For though age and time have conspired to ruin the glories of my face, I can assure you, the remains may inform any they were good. Being so generally noted not only for my beauty but my art in pandarizing, a song was composed on me by some rhyming doggril or other, which I will sing you thus, and so finish the story of my former life's actions :

At the Sign of the Swan  
There liveth a man,  
I go not about to deceive you ;  
Ten thousand to one,  
If you come, he is gone,  
That his wife may the better receive you.

Lovely brown is her hair,  
Her face comely fair,  
Her waist you may span, 'tis so slender ;  
Negro black are eyes,  
Passing white are her thighs,  
All the allurements of *Venus* attend her.

Her twins of delight,  
 (Which are always in sight)  
 Her breasts which are whiter than snow,  
 By their panting do beat  
 An alarm to the seat,  
 To combat her lovers below.

With her smiles she invites  
 To taste her delights ;  
 Which I would, if I durst so presume ;  
 But I fear she hath fires  
 Which will quench my desires,  
 But my body to ashes consume.

She's an excellent *pimp*,  
 The *Devils* best *imp* ;  
 She's a *bawd*, she's a *whore*, that's too common  
 If you intend for to fly  
 Hell's flames, come not nigh ;  
 She's a thing, that is worse than a *woman*.

## CHAPTER VI

*Mrs Dorothy goes with her new acquaintance, who persuades her to accommodate a barren gentlewoman, a friend of hers, with her child, as soon as born : a character of this gentlewoman, and her amorous practices : the manner of her being robbed by one of her gallants : he is apprehended and executed : Mrs Dorothy is delivered of a boy, who is made heir to a great estate, and she highly rewarded for her consent*

THE old woman having thus finished her story, she addressed herself to me, saying, ‘ Dear heart, you see how free I have been with you, not concealing from your knowledge any remarkable passage of my life, though never so infamous or scandalous. Aye, and though our acquaintance is very young, yet put your confidence in me and question not but that I shall so assist you in the management of your concerns that you shall have cause to thank me as long as you live.’ Hereupon she acquainted me that there was a gentleman not far off, well known to her, that had been married a dozen years and upwards to a very beautiful and well proportioned gentlewoman, yet had no issue by her ; that for want of an heir the estate after his decease would fall to the younger brother ; that it was a very great grief to the gentleman, but especially to his wife.

This gentlewoman knowing me to be a person fit to be advised withal about matters of this nature, often sent for me to her house, where some years since, I counselled her to make trial whether she or husband was in fault. In order thereunto I have helped her at times to the enjoyment of at least a score of several lusty young persons. And because I would take the surest way, she never had more than one at one time, and him not above a quarter of a year together ; he then frustrating our expectations, I counselled her to make trial of another.

The first I made choice of for her was a proper young flaxen-haired man, tall and slender ; a delicate young man he was indeed, whose complexion (being sanguine) furnished him with more heat than is in any other temperature ; which made his hair like fine threads of gold, twirl in rings, or rather you might call them the lines and hooks with which the little wanton god of love did usually angle for female hearts. Had you seen them, you would have sworn that they were sufficient to catch the heart of a Vestal maiden, or the most resolved votaress to chastity that ever had a being. His eyes, quick and nimble and penetrating ; he had a strong fancy, a quick invention, and a most incomparable utterance ; and his carriage and deportment was incredible winning ; whose single touch of the hand was sufficient to have thawed the most congealed-frozen temper in the world into affection. Notwithstanding all these allurements and promising properties, with near upon an half year's mutual converse with each other, she found her expectations frustrated.

Being resolved to make further trial (for she would not be convinced that she was either defective or barren), she consulted me how she might be rid of this her amorous hot-spur and have some other in his place, of a different constitution ; alleging that she being of the same complexion, she verily believed her impregnancy proceeded thence ; saying further, that she had heard several physicians and others strongly affirm that the grand reason why several woman have no children was the too near affinity of their husband's complexion and constitution to their own ; and that on the other side, none more infallibly enjoyed the fruits of their labours, the offspring of their bodies, than such whose corporal temperaments were dissimilar or different.

Understanding her humour, I was resolved to comply with her in whatsoever she desired (being so profitable a friend to me). But I knew not how to displace her sanguine complexioned gallant, who grew by this time a most passionate lover. At length I bethought me to persuade him to solicit her waiting gentlewoman, making him believe that she was ardently in love with him, and that she had a good sum by her, which would infallibly be at his devotion. My credulous young

gamester greedily swallowed my advice and followed to a hair my dictations. Having won her (for I know not who could withstand him) he came to me and informed me of the time and place that he should commence those delights they intended to continue as long as life lasted. Being joyful of this opportunity, I addressed myself to my mistress, giving an account to her of her friend's new courtship, and when it should be consummated ; advising her to watch them and catch them in the act, by which means she should be freed from his future addresses, and likewise confirm her maid's secrecy and fidelity to her. All which she performed, by threatening her maid to turn her away and shame her to boot if ever she associated herself, or entertained him again in her house ; and calling him false, faithless man, and I know not what, banished him for ever from her presence for his inconstancy.

The next dick I picked up for her was a man of a colour as contrary to the former as light is to darkness, being swarthy ; whose hair was as black as a sloe ; middle statured ; well set ; both strong and active ; a man so universally tried and so fruitfully successful, that there was hardly any female within ten miles gotten with child in hugger-mugger, but he was more than suspected to be father. Yet this too proved an ineffectual operator. She now began to suspect herself of barrenness ; but being prompted with hopes, and strangely induced by the sense of pleasure which she reaped in the variety of her amorous confidants, she resolved on a third, a gentleman of her own election, who having been a considerable time a student in the Inns of Court, was returned into the country to enjoy that plentiful estate his lately deceased father had left him, the ancient seat of his ancestors. He was of stature so low that he could but just take the upper-hand of a dwarf, being only elevated by the pole above him. She was fain at first to court him, instead of his courting her ; and indeed, I could not see how he could presume (without her encouragement) to caress a giantess, so much taller than himself.

There was not so great a disproportion in their bodies as there were conformity and agreeableness in their wills, and the soul of his which was cooped up and confined within too narrow limits, became more active and vigorous ; so that attacking her with a lively and sprightful courage possessed himself of the garrison without a tedious siege of a 12 months' courtship. His hair was of a darkish brown, or chestnut colour, not handsome enough to be a woman, yet too fair to be a man. Though he was not tall, yet nature expressed no irregularity in his formation ; being symmetrical, or proportionably composed from the lines of his face you might have collected capital letters enough to have spelt a gentleman ; and not an action or expression of his (excepting this of his too intimate familiarity with another man's wife) which did not

largely declare the immensity of his soul, and the virtues that thereunto belonged.

So dearly she loved him (that notwithstanding he did not answer her expectations in making her belly swell), she so doted on his company and converse, that she gave her husband too many palpable causes to suspect her honesty and integrity towards him. Not but that for the sake of an heir (which he questioned whether he should ever get himself) he would be content to wink (as he hath done several times) at the freedom his wife hath taken with several others besides himself. But looking on my little dapper squire to be too little for that purpose, and that would come short home, he took an occasion to affront him, that it might produce a quarrel that should eloign him from his house and further intimacy with his wife. However, though he had low and undervaluing thoughts of this gentleman, by reason of his stature, yet he found him in field full as tall as himself in true valour, being (as we say) mettle to the back. It was the hap of this gentleman to be desperately wounded by the lesser, and so dangerously that it was supposed his wounds would end all the future differences between them ; however recovering this combat separated them eternally.

My mistress was so well acquainted with the loss of her gallants that she was not much troubled to be deprived of the society of this last ; but all her trouble was to get another in his room. She applied herself to me again, her undeceiving oracle, and received her accustomed comfort, that in a little time I would procure her another that should out-throw the rest at least a bar's length. I was not long in the procuration, for there was a gentleman that frequented our house who spent his money very freely, yet had not a foot of land, neither had he any trade or tools but the highway, sword and pistol to bring him in a lively hood. He was a lusty well-set man, and red-haired ; a complexion that hath often gone throughstitch. I had often tried him myself, and therefore I could the better recommend him to a friend.

One day (his stock being low, and he at that time in our house) he desired me to lend him half a piece. I being glad of this opportunity, told him I would, and withal desired to confer with him in private. He joyfully accepted my motion, thinking I had some secret design to take my accustomed use for the loan ; but he was strangely surprized, and even distracted with excessive joy, when he heard me tell him what a mistress I had provided for him ; that he should have his belly full of sporting, and be liberally paid for it too. We appointed the day when I should introduce him into his new mistress's acquaintance, but with this condition, that I should share with him in his gettings. It was concluded on, and he posseſed of his treasure, to the full content of

them both. My house was now his constant receptacle, or dormitory, but when he was in the embraces of his mistress ; and he was very honest in giving me my share, my half part, and commonly spent the rest to my advantage of what he had received ; and to the intent the more might come into my pocket, I advised her by all means not to starve his service but encourage him often with sums of money. Urging, moreover, that the poor gentleman could not but be at great charges in maintaining himself in a strange place, exiling himself freely from his own habitation, to be near at her command ; beside the great expense he is daily at in costly broths, jellies, with other provocatives, or restorers of decayed nature.

I needed not to have tempted her to liberality, she being naturally prone thereunto ; always extravagantly rewarding kindnesses of this nature. She began now to grow very pensive, and unusually melancholy, to see all her swelling hopes thus dashed, and was not so sociable as she used to be with her friend ; which gave him some cause to suspect her inconstancy, or that she would speedily desert him and accept some other. This put him on the contrivance to save something, that might be a support to him, if his salary should fail or at leastwise keep him alive till his country contributions, or padding incomes should supply his profuse and unnecessary expenses.

Whenever he came, she entertained him with such an undeserved frankness that she concealed nothing from him that might either please his fancy, or satisfy his curiosity. Understanding she was admirable at her needle, he desired her to shew him some pieces of her art, that he might by the applauding of the one admire the other. She readily condescended to what he propounded ; being glad he had demanded a thing which came within the verge of her power to please him withal. Opening a large cypress-chest, she shewed him great variety of excellent pieces of her own hand-working ; and withal he discovered several bags crammed with other pieces, which he had a greater mind to handle ; which I conceived she shewed him out of mere ostentation, telling him withal that as long as one penny was in them his pockets should not be unfurnished with money, and that when all those bags were emptied, her husband's annual estate would quickly fill them again, and six times as many.

This assurance of having his constant stipend continued, prevailed not in the least on this caret-pated villain's ingrateful designs ; but he resolved with the first opportunity to make himself master of those sums, although he knew he must unavoidably lose his mistress thereby. The next morning she sent for him to acquaint him that her husband was gone some twenty miles off, and that he would not return in five days,

having 300*l.* to receive of such a man, naming the place where he lived. This damned dog hearing this capered for joy, which the poor innocent believed, proceeded from his thinking what a long time he had to enjoy his mistress uncontrollably ; whereas it was otherwise, for now he knew how to kill two birds with one stone.

However, that she might not mistrust him as guilty of any treachery, he behaved himself so pleasantly and his caresses were so agreeable that his mistress esteemed herself the happiest woman in the world in the enjoyment of the person of so facetious, and most accomplished lover. Nay, so fond she was of his company that she was resolved to make the most of him in her husband's absence ; and therefore caused him to lie in the house, not enduring him out of her sight, till the day before her husband's return, at which time he walked out. What feastings, junketings and jollitings together there were in that time none are better able to conceive than such who, with their large purses, have enlarged hearts, caring not how dear the purchase is so that the pleasure be great, though not of two minutes' lasting. You must understand that I went snips with him in these delights, as well as in his profits ; I had a liquorish tooth still in my head, and therefore would not be out of call to participate with them in their viands, and banquetings. Indeed, I was ever an excellent smell-feast.

The day wherein he went abroad, as I told you, was the cursed time in which he procured assistants to carry on his hellish plot, which had like to have proved my utter ruin. It seems he appointed them about four of the clock in the evening to come to the gentlewoman's house, where (as before) we were all making merry ; and knowing the strength of the house, there being never a man at home, the groom being gone with his master and only a foot-boy left, he appointed only two that should manage the design beside himself. Knocking at the gate, and the foot-boy opening it to them, they instantly seized him, both binding and gagging him. Having bolted the gate, they advanced into the house, and seeming very peaceful, they mounted the stairs, having secured those who were below in the same manner as they had done the boy. As soon I saw two men entering the chamber where we were, I concluded that we were betrayed, and that the principal traitor was our supposed friend. I hereupon opened as wide as my jaws would give me leave ; which one of the rogues perceiving clapped a gag within my mouth, and so kept them at that gaping distance. The rogues might have had some consideration before they had served me thus, as knowing I had few teeth to barricado my gums from the injury they might receive from that confounded instrument which stretched my mouth asunder.

The good gentlewoman, seeing how barbarously they handled me,

did not question they would exercise the like cruelty next on her ; to prevent which she fell on her knees, beseeching them not to abuse her, and throwing them the keys of what they looked for, bid they take what they pleased. Her accursed villain had the impudence to view the tears run down her lovely cheeks without the least remorse or pity on a soul so dearly loved him ; he only raised her with his hands, assuring her she should receive no other injury than the loss of what money she shewed him, and his eternal happiness ; ‘for I know, Madam,’ said he, ‘how insatiate you are, how variable, how changeable upon the slightest occasion. I am not insensible what variety you have already tried (the more to blame me that inforced him), and how many more you intend may be sufficiently drawn from your unsatisfied humour and inconstant nature. And now, if you love your life, stir not till we are gone ; and thank our lenity that we have not secured you otherways.’ Taking up the money, every one carrying a part ; ‘hold,’ said one, ‘we have forgot something yet ; that lady’s hands must be tied lest she un gag that serious and now silent matron there. Her hands and legs must be tied too, lest she talk or walk to fright us.’ Having so done, ‘come now, let us go,’ said the red-headed traitor, ‘it is high time lest that old witch swallow one of us ; don’t you see how she gapes ? God b’you, good madam, you are bound to be constant now. Dear partner,’ (pointing to me), ‘farewell. I thank you for your pro curation money,’ and so away they went.

In less than half an hour the gentlewoman had with her teeth set her hands at liberty, which soon gave my hands, feet and tongue the like ; and descending the stairs, we found the maids and boy bound and gagged. Having loosed them she whispered her boy in the ear, I knew not what, but it was to fetch a constable, which he did in an instant. And whilst I was condoling my friend’s loss and misfortune, I was apprehended by her command and conveyed to gaol, there to bewail my own too rigid fate.

I cannot much blame her suspicion of me, since there were arguments too many and strong enough to persuade her I could not be innocent, and therefore what ever I alleged in my justification stood for a cypher. I sent for my husband, with many other friends, but none of them could prevail with her from sending me to prison ; seeing there was no remedy, I was resolved to endure my confinement as patiently as I could.

These three rogues had their horses not far off, ready saddled, which they mounting, rode directly in that road where they were sure to meet their prize ; and as the Devil would have it, they waited not two hours before they could perceive two riding directly towards them, and soon after could discern them to be the gentleman and his groom. The

first was of an undaunted resolution, but weakly, by reason of a chronical distemper that had a long time afflicted him ; his man, by his bulk, shape and looks, appeared like one that could teach a Guy of Warwick to fight and give a precedent of such valour, as only became a Royal Champion to own. The gentleman was first commanded to stand and deliver, which he did, but it was a pistol, which he discharged without any execution ; they fired at him again ; and wounding him in the sword arm, he dropped his sword, and whilst he was submitting to their disposal, his man sets spurs to his horse and most valiantly ran for it ; getting to the top of a little hill, not far distant, where turning his horse head most manfully about, he had the confidence to look on, whilst the thieves robbed his master.

The gentleman seeing himself thus deserted by this lubberly cowardly hog-driver was ready to burst with anger ; but knew not how to come at him to be revenged ; and therefore begged the robbers, in lieu of what money they had taken from him, to do him the kindness to baste his man soundly that stood on yonder hill as a mere looker on. ‘Aye, aye,’ said the one, ‘I will give you that satisfaction myself alone,’ and so setting spurs to his horse, rode up to him, and complemented him no otherwise at first than with the flat of his sword, which notwithstanding made his sides and shoulders smart to some purpose. This great looby took all this with incredible patience ; but the pad by chance cutting him ; ‘nay, now,’ said he ; ‘flesh and blood is not longer able to endure’ ; and with that drew a broad two edged Scotch sword, and handled it so well that he cut this fellow off his horse. The other two seeing their fellow over-matched, advanced with all speed and both assaulted him at once ; but he seeing them approach and being now blooded, made ready to receive them by drawing a pistol, which he fired so luckily that the shot deprived him of one of his enemies more, and he had now no inequality of number to oppose him. Success had so fleshed him that he fought more like a Devil than a man, laying about him backwards and forwards ; so that he disabled the third, which was the first plotter. Had his master been able to fight, and there had been as many more against him, he so behaved himself that there was no work for any to do but himself. Thus did this one man, who had never fought before (and therefore like an horse, knew not his own strength till it was tried) conquer three that were accounted cocks of the Hectors.

The gentleman searching their portmanteaux, and finding 400*l.* was amazed at so considerable a purchase ; and securing it, with this surviving rogue and their horses, rode directly to the next justice. There leaving the booty in his hands for the present, the prisoner had

his *mittimus* drawn up and was sent to the same gaol his landlady, the hostess was in. Notwithstanding all those disguises he made use of to seem another man, he was known by me and received from me a whole broadside of just reproaches ; which had like to have sunk him deeper than the pressures of his present misfortunes could do. ‘ What,’ said I, ‘ did you not live too much at your ease ? Had you not but too much plenty, which took you off those desperate courses, or might have done, which would without doubt have brought you to the gallows in the end ; but having so little regard to your own welfare, I could not expect much from you as to mine ; though gratitude might have commanded you to have studied my preservation, although you should hourly hazard your own.’ Instead of applying smooth and soothing answers (which might have been as cordials or balsam to my wounded mind) he gave me this corrosive, this choke-pear, that if I would not hold my clack which dinned his ears worse than the cataracts of Nile, he would declare before the bench, upon his trial, that he would never have done so foul a fact but by my instigation ; and that if I held not my tongue, he assured me that (since he knew that it was impossible for him to escape with life) he loved me so well that I should die with him, to bear him company in the other world.

Perceiving what his desperate resolution was, I thought good to alter the scene of my chat, and beg him to be patient ; assuring him that what I had said was not out of any ill-will, but to make him sensible how much I was his friend at all times ; and that my own imprisonment (for his sake) troubled me not so much as the danger that he was in ; and that he might accuse me, if he pleased, and so endanger my suffering with him ; but I charged, withal, his conscience with my innocence in and ignorance of what he and his accomplices had acted, contrary to my privity. It was some comfort to hear him then acknowledge before a great many witnesses that I was no way accessory to his guilt ; and when the assizes came, he acknowledged upon his arraignment, that none abetted or were concerned in what he had done and there stood arraigned for, but himself and two others, which were slain in the contest. Whereupon I was discharged by proclamation of Court, none coming in against me ; and he received sentence of death, which was accordingly executed three days afterward. He then again at the gallows declared to the spectators my innocence in his robbery.

This confession of his, I thought, would as well reintroduce me into the favour of the abused gentlewoman, my former friend, as by his suffering death give full satisfaction to her enraged revenge. In order thereunto, after my gaol delivery, I sent her several letters to pacify her passion, and employed several friends to acquaint her with the

reality of my former fidelity, and present integrity. At length they so far mediated with her in my behalf that she sent for me (when her husband was abroad) and in the walks of her garden discoursed me largely as to whatever had passed between us, or anybody else by my means. ‘And now,’ said she, ‘this last unhappy and unexpected villainy from a friend you procured me, and one I dearly loved, hath tied up my hands from ever enjoying the like opportunities again. For my husband finding that the purchase he took from the thieves was but a pig of his own sow, his own money, and knowing the principal robber to be the person I often treated at our house with much civility, shrewdly suspected that I not only consented to the robbery, but would be easily induced to believe to his death too, were it not for the great loss he knows I should receive by his death if he should die without issue. However he is much more cautious of me than he used to be, taking his money into his own custody, and he sets a watch over me to observe what company I keep abroad or entertain in our house. Therefore, if ever you intend to redeem your former credit and estimation with me, study some project how I may carry on the design afore propounded, of having an heir, that the estate may not pass to the next brother. The man I cannot but hate, for several weighty considerations. The crookedness of his disposition, and the unsuitableness of his humour to mine, were sufficient to make me not love him; but his insufferable wicked practices, both against me and my husband, make me absolutely detest the very sight of him. When I was first married,’ quoth she, ‘I thought myself as capable of conception as any she that ever wore a head; and my husband being then healthful, and actively vigorous, soon confirmed me in the opinion of being a teeming woman. It seems I was with child, though I knew it not; and finding a great change and alteration in my body, I was so ignorant as to believe I was breeding some ill humours, which, if not timely purged away, might engender a disease that might prove my death. My husband’s brother (which was wiser than myself in that point) knew very well I was breeding young bones, the growth of which would infallibly lift him out of all his flourishing hopes of enjoying his brother’s estate. Therefore, out of a seeming tenderness and vigilant care of the preservation of my health, followed my own persuasions with his damned advice; and at the end I was induced to take a vomit to clear my stomach, he telling me for certain it might be very foul, since I was so frequently troubled with puking in the morning, and vomiting after dinner. An apothecary of his own procuring (with his devilish instructions) made up the composition which, without imagining the least harm, I easily swallowed, which wrought with me so strongly that having nothing left within my

stomach for it to work on, I thought it would have brought up my very heart within its appurtenances. The devil of a physician all this while seemed to comfort me, by saying, "Be cheerful, Sister; this will clear you" (and so it did of what it should not) "and cleanse you of those malignant humours which so much prejudiced your healthful constitution." And that he might make sure work of me, counselled me to take a purge, and that would carry all downwards, and then my business was done. I, poor easy fool, was quickly drawn to it, and the second time swallowed that which the next day made what I went withal prove abortive.

'I had often seen, but more especially heard, that this doctor was no sooner gone from his patient but he was immediatly in the company of my brother, which made me, with a great deal of good reason, conjecture, they plotted no good together. Wherefore I got two doctors more to visit my husband, who plainly told me, at the first sight (both agreeing in one opinion) that he was poisoned. Hearing them say so, I could not forbear, but in the agony of my spirit cried out, "I know the murderers; and their lives shall here, for the loss of his, make satisfaction in part and in full by their damnation hereafter." They desired me to be patient, assuring me that they would use their utmost skill to overpower the poison; and doubtlessly he had died, had not these two eminent artists bestirred themselves to purpose. In a little time they raised him on his feet (which made his former doctor betake himself to his, having not been heard of by us since); but they could not assure me how long it would be ere he would be down again; "for," said they, "he will be an infirm, impotent man, as long as he lives."

'If, now, my hatred to my husband's brother be not justly grounded, do you judge; and I hope Heaven will not be offended with me in finding out some way to dispossess him of his hopes in having the estate, who robbed me of my fruitfulness, and would have deprived my husband of his life.'

'Madam,' said I, 'there is just now a plot come into my head, which if you please, shall be put in practice, and that is this. Since your husband is thus infirm, and you barren, this must be the only way which must crown your desires. I will immediately go upon the search for some young thing with child, whether she be wife, maid, or widow, it matters not; whom with large gifts, and larger promises I will persuade to part with her child, when born, and you shall lie in with it. Let me alone to the management of all; but first, let me find out a person suitable to our purpose, and I will warrant you to carry on the rest to your full satisfaction. I will instantly for London where I cannot miss of subjects enough of this sort, out of which I may pick and choose.'

She liked this proposal so well that she would not suffer me to stay a minute longer with her, but that I should instantly leave her and make myself ready for my journey. And thus far have I travelled in order to the finishing thereof, when I met so blessed an opportunity of falling into discourse with you, which I hope will tend to both our happinesses, if you will be ruled by me.

Thus, said Mrs Dorothy, I heard the whole relation of herself and others, with great attention : and thought it was now my cue to speak, which I did in this manner, not only cautiously, but with much seeming reservedness. ‘ Mother (for so, by the disparity of our age, I make bold to call you) the account you give of your self is so monstrously wicked that I know not whether, with safety, I may interchange any further discourse with you ; neither can I but take notice of your subtlety, and matchless craftiness, as well as your unparalleled debauchery, and wantonness. You may very well excuse me, if now I stand on my guard and warily entertain a parley with you ; since you are known to be an old soldier in the wars of Venus, and so may fight too cunningly for me, that am but a stripling upon any such account. However, make your proposals (and if I may be assured you pump me not to entrap me) as I find them feasable and profitable for the future, I shall accept them and be ready to be serviceable to you, and your design.’

The good old gentlewoman, as one transported, by hugging me in her arms interrupted me, saying ; ‘ Daughter, mistrust me not in this affair, and try whether I will not in a little time make you as happy as your own wishes can make you,’ and thereupon she asked me how long I had been with child, and whether I could be content that, by another’s owning it, the child hereafter might be owner of an estate (it seems born to), the tenth part whereof none of my ancestors ever yet enjoyed.

‘ It is confessed,’ said I, ‘ my own weakness and female frailty betrayed me to unlawful embraces of a handsome young man, whose subtle solicitations could not be withstood by a nun, much less by me ; and yielding, I now carry both the sin and the shame of those stolen delights about me wherever I go. Though it was my ill fortune thus to lose (by one throw at play, inconsiderately) a thing of that value, my maidenhead I mean, yet it was some comfort to me that it was a gentleman of no mean worth that won it ; and I questioned not but the offspring would be like the father, as well in the comely proportion of the body, as gallantry of mind. Being thus fully persuaded it will prove so goodly a person, it will the more trouble me to part with it to another ; that if I should do any such thing it is not for necessity ;

for, as I had money considerable of my own before my deluding lover came acquainted with me ; yet, to compensate that single kindness, he hath so showered his gold and silver on me since that my wealth may procure a match considerable enough, though my face carried in it no other invitation.'

'Come, come, daughter,' said the old woman. 'Something hath some savour ; and although you have enough, yet more will do no harm. Besides, your child will be well looked after, well provided for (which you may see when you please) and you, rid of that incumbrance, will be in a better condition for any one to solicit you in marriage.' Being thus convinced by the subtle arguments of this cunning matron, I condescended to whatever she would have me to do ; and so, without further delay, the next morning we rode together to the house of this old gentlewoman ; where alighting, she had no sooner provided a necessary room for me, and given order for my supper, which was extraordinary, but her impatience immediately hurried her to the gentlewoman, her friend. And being out of breath, she told her, as well as she could, that she had effected the business beyond expectation ; but because she would not leave me too long, begged her excuse, promising the next morning a full account of all her proceedings. That night was spent in all the jollity imaginable, fowls of all sorts, and the choicest of the season were provided ; wine flowed so plentifully through every room of the house that I wonder it did not reel into the streets. I am sure the servants would, had not a noise of music held them by the ears, whilst their legs capered like a pair of drum-sticks. Although they took but little repose that night, yet my hostess got up early to wait on her correspondent, who had not slept that night, for the eager expectation to hear how her desires were accomplished.

But overjoyed she was when she saw the old woman approach, who taking her aside in one of the walks of the garden, asked her how she had sped, and in what manner. The old woman was as much transported with joy as she. 'Have patience, and I will tell you,' said she. 'In my way to London I met with several that had nibbled on the bait of concupiscence ; but they were such flounder-mouthed, draggle-tailed, dirty pusses that I would not venture upon any of them. But at length, coming to an inn on the road, I accidentally fell into the company of a gentlewoman (which is this that I have now brought with me, to be serviceable to you) who by her deportment informed me that she was not meanly extracted ; and by those wanton torches in her face which Nature had drawn to allure and captivate hearts, I guessed she was not unacquainted with the masculine gender. And as I imagined, so it proved ; for I have so wriggled myself by discourse into her concerns,

that I soon made her unravel the bottom of her secrets. To be short, I found her every way fit for our purpose, and by an extraordinary device, I have made her ours ; and that you may satisfy yourself farther, I will bring her to the park, a mile from your house, where I shall desire you to meet us in the afternoon.' Hereupon she departed and acquainted me how she had opened the way to consummate what we had agreed on ; and so having dined, we went to the place appointed, where the gentlewoman was already come to meet us.

The gentlewoman seeing us at a distance, made up to us, but was strangely astonished when she saw a person so unexpectedly handsome, and in a garb which as much exceeded that which she wore as the face she saw excelled most others that she had seen before ; and therefore thought it requisite to make her address as to a person of no mean quality. Yet thinking again, should she do so, I might think she mocked me ; (for had I been nobly born and bred, I would never have condescended so low as to prostitute my body to the unlawful embraces of some hot-blooded gallant, and afterwards mercenarily expose the infant to the disposal of a mere stranger) therefore familiarly thus she spake ; ' Sweetheart, though I never saw you before, I am not unacquainted with your affairs, and am much troubled that so good a face should be so deluded and grossly abused by any promise-breaker of them all ; but since what is past cannot be recalled, I shall endeavour to redress your misfortunes, after this manner. You shall lodge with a good old gentlewoman, not far off, a friend of mine. But be sure you keep yourself private ; and when you have a mind to take the air and enjoy yourself you shall not want a coach to carry you whither you list, so it be far enough off. Your provision at home, with all things necessary, and your expenses abroad, shall be at my charge ; all that I shall require of you is, that when you cry out in labour your child may be at the disposal of your landlady, whom I constitute your guardian. If in the interim you want anything, let me know it, and you shall be supplied, and enjoy yourself as freely as if you were empress of the whole world ; and when you are discharged of your great belly, you shall not want a sum to make you a good portion for any honest man. Be not seen in the town, and do not come to our house, but be ruled by your guardian ; and assure yourself this, your child shall be my child, and what estate I have, or my husband, shall be his.' And so she took her leave of me, cramming my hand full of Jacobusses, as the earnest of a better penny.

I was forthwith conducted to this house which was intended for my lodging privately, where I was entertained according to instruction, with much respect and gallantry. A maid was there ready provided to

attend me, and there was nothing wanting in my entertainment to make my life comfortable and my looks cheerful. Here did I merrily pass my time away, being often visited by my old hostess, daily puzzling each other's invention what we should have for dinner ; what recreation in the afternoon ; what for supper, and what advertisement afterwards ; how to make our pleasure more poignant by diversity, and variety. But the greatest difficulty lay in our cunning projections of going abroad, which we knew we must carry with a world of secrecy, or spoil all whatever we intended to do.

In the meantime, the gentlewoman (understanding my true reckoning, which was three months gone with child) calculated her time accordingly, and gave out she was with child. Every one admired at the news, having not had any in so long a time of marriage, and knew not whether they had best give credit to the report ; her husband would not be induced to believe it by any means, looking upon it as incredible, nay, almost impossible ; but that which most of all favoured what she would have credited was her being troubled at that instant with some hydropsical humours, which had so swelled her belly that she had much ado from persuading herself that she was really with child. Her husband perceiving this, from an unbeliever became a convert, and by his belief wrought all the neighbourhood into the like persuasion. But that which knocked the nail on the head, was the opinion of the midwife (a creature of the gentlewoman's, made absolute to her devotion by gifts, and promise of future rewards) which proclaimed it everywhere as a wonder, that one after so many years, having never borne a child, should now at last conceive.

Neither was the kind and over-indulgent husband backward in spreading ostentatiously his glory, that he should at last be called father, when all the glimmerings of those hopes were quite extinguished. His joy made him so rash and inconsiderate that he bespoke gossips, and concluded upon a name for it, though he knew not whether it would be born alive, male or female. On the other side, the seemingly overjoyed woman provided clouts for the bantling, and all other things necessary, which an over-busy lullaby could invent. So many wet nurses were sent for that they came tumbling to the house by dozens ; and so many faults were found with them that they trooped off again as fast. One was disliked for her hair, it being of a red colour, and therefore her milk was looked upon as too hot, rank, and venomous ; every one giving in their verdict that she should not be wholesome, since the Turks were accustomed to make the rankest poison of the flesh of slaves that were red-haired. Another was too tall, and therefore slothful and unactive, being not talkative enough ; a third not

clear skinned, nor well featured, having a cast with the eye, which might be the ill pattern of directing the child's eyes amiss ; a fourth had a too indulgent husband, whom they feared one time or other might curdle the child's milk, and so endanger its health : a fifth had had formerly sore breasts, and they doubted from thence the milky-way might be polluted ; a sixth was too melancholy inclined, which they judged would not only prejudice her suck but deprive her of the talking qualifications of most nurses, who look upon the impertinent nonsensical tittle-tattle to their children to be the basis of all their future learning. With much ado, they at length pitch upon a lovely brown woman, full grown, well-featured, quick-sighted, clear-skinned, middle statured, with breasts little and round, her blood circling them in the pleasant blue meanders of her veins. Now lest they should lose her if she went out of their sight, she was hired and entertained into the house immediately, although her mistress had five months to go of her supposed time.

Though her husband was ecstasied with joy, his brother was moved by a contrary passion, his folly making him shew it in so unseemly a way that every one now concluded him that which they only surmized before, a villain that had both studied and practised the ruin of his nearest relations ; and he was often accused and upbraided for so doing that he was forced to leave the town, and since is gone to a cousin of his living in Barmudus.

My time began now to draw nigh, being grown so big I could not with convenience stir abroad, and too restless to stay at home. As I felt any pain, I caused my mistress to be acquainted therewith, that she might be so too ; if I felt myself much disordered, I sent away her confidant presently to alarm her ; who acted her part as artificially as I did it really. These outcries of hers made the whole garrison continually stand to their arms ; there being about her continually the midwife, wet nurse, dry nurse, with many neighbouring assistants ; the maids below ready at command, and a man midwife, if need should require, with so many instruments ready fixed as would with the very iron set up a blacksmith, and all for the strangeness of shape, surpassing any rarity in Tredescant's collection.

After so many false alarms, a true one came at last, carried by our confidant aforesaid, with my child in her lap ; whose very appearance was watchword enough for the gentlewoman to express the pangs of childbirth, which she did then in a more violent manner than before, imagining something more than ordinary. She approaching the bed asked her loudly how she did, and how she felt herself, and at that very instant clapped the child into bed to her ; who immediately shrieking out,

the midwife ran to her, where seeming to be busied about her a while, at length takes the child from her and doing with it and her as is usual. The news of her happy delivery was conveyed to the husband, who was near at hand, attending, and with tears lamenting the sad pain his poor wife underwent for him ; but the joyful tidings of having a son born, wiped away all those tears, and so animated his feeble carcase that he would have entered the room before it was either civil, or convenient, had he not been stopped by mere force. I shall not trouble you by relating what an universal rejoicing there was through the whole house, but only inform you that before the expiration of a month the child was christened, being as lovely a child as could be born of a woman, not any limb or part of his body which did not promise to exceed his true father in everything. The gentlewoman being up, as soon as she understood I was well and fully recovered, appeared abroad in public, whose happy delivery was by all congratulated. And to gratify me, she sent me an hundred pieces of old gold, desiring me to remove my quarters and to engage my tongue eternally to conceal the secret.

I now thought it high time to send to my two gallants, who were obliged to me in bonds, the one to pay me forty pound and the other fifty, upon my delivery ; they being both assured of the truth thereof, delayed me not, but sent me my money by the first conveniency, which added to my late purchase ; and what money I had before, made up to weighty a portion for so light an housewife as myself.

## CHAPTER VII

*Mrs Dorothy relates several passages in the inn : as, how the host drew guests to his house, and then cheated them : the boy by his example, attempts to cheat, but is taken in the manner ; is beaten by his mistress ; but is revenged of her and his master ; is turned over to be corrected by the under-hostler, but is wittily and pleasantly revenged on him*

I WAS now (continued Mrs Dorothy) rid of my great belly, and instead of that had a great bag of money ; and my child being thus provided for, as I have told you, I retired from the place where I had lain in private, now to appear in public at the house of my very good friend, the old crony, part of whose adventures I have already related to you. And since you have not thought me tedious in the discourse I have already made you, I shall give you an account of some such

transactions in her house, during my stay there, which, I believe, will be no less pleasant than what you have already heard.

The whole family consisted of herself, her husband, a son of about twenty-four years of age, and daughter about nineteen, a chamberlain, a tapster or winer, an hostler, cookmaid, scullion and two or three boys who were employed under the others. They were all alike, knavish enough, all guilty of such unparalleled knaveries as I have rarely heard of. And knowing of one another's tricks, they out-vied one another, striving and contending which should exceed in roguery ; and so sly and cunningly they carried it that 'twas difficult to discover them, especially when they all joined together to cheat or abuse anybody ; but when they fell out among themselves, they made excellent sport in acting the revenge they took upon one another. My landlord loved his pleasure and profit so equally that he made it his business to contrive how to join them together ; and although he commonly had the best custom of any house in the town, yet he would practise ways to gain and bring in more. Among other ways, he used this for one : he would take his horse in an afternoon, and ride out some ten or twelve miles, and so return home again ; but he seldom came home but he brought guests with him, which he would take up by the way, thus :

If he saw a parcel of travellers, who he thought to be good fellows and fit for his purpose, he would then enquire which way, and how far they travelled. To this they commonly answered directly ; and if they were for our town, then he would join with them ; and soon after, his second question would be to know if they were acquainted at the town, and at what inn they would take up their quarters. If they were strangers, and by that means indifferent to the place where they should lodge, then he told them that the best inn in the town was his house, but not naming it to be his, or that he had any interest in it, but only that he knew there was a good hostess, who had a handsome daughter that would use them well. He seldom missed with this bait to win them to agree to go thither with him, and accordingly to bring them home with him. But if they would not agree upon the place, and he saw there was no good to be done, then he would pretend some excuse to stay behind them, and would wait for such company as would at all points be for his turn ; and with them would he enter the house as a stranger. Indeed he would call the chamberlain, hostler, and tapster, by their names ; but they, who knew their duties, would in no case shew any duty to him.

Then would he, as being acquainted in the house, tell his fellow-travellers what provisions there was for supper, and would be sure to draw them up to the highest bill of fare he could. If the hostess, or

her daughter's company were desired, he would be the forwardest to call them, and only treat and converse with them as of some small acquaintance. After supper he would endeavour to draw on the company to drink high, and use all possible means to enflame the reckoning ; and when he saw they were well heated with wine, and the fury of their expenses was over, he would pretend, out of good husbandry, to call for a reckoning before they went to bed, that they might not be misreckoned or stayed from the pursuit of their journey in the morning. To this they would commonly agree, and the sum total of the reckoning being cast up, he would be the first man that would, without scruple, or enquiry into the particulars, lay down his share, and by his example the rest would follow. If any did question the dearness of the victuals, or the quantity of the drink, he would by one means or other take them off, protesting that the hostess was too honest to misreckon them, and that he had kept a just account himself, and was well satisfied. Or else he should be as cautious from parting from his money as any of them ; and then they, not distrusting him further, would by his example pay the shot. Thus would he many times, by his crown or six shillings share, misreckon on them sixteen or twenty shillings ; especially if they came to high drinking. Then the reckoning being paid, they went to bed, he retiring with his wife, and he would lie abed in the morning, and let them march off alone. But if they, in the morning, did fall to drinking again, taking a hair of the old dog, then would he up and at them again, make one at that sport, and many times put them out of capacity to travel that day, and so keep them there to his profit and their expense ; he shifting his liquor, and in the end, shifting himself out of their company, when he has seen his conveniency, leaving them to pay roundly for their folly. If they enquired after him, my hostess would pretend he was a chance guest, as they were, she had only seen him the last year, or such like ; and thus he would force a trade and enjoy his pleasure and profit by joining them together ; and this course did he frequently use when guests came not in of their own accord, so that our house was seldom empty.

As mine host, who was the head and chief of the house, had his tricks, so had the rest of the family theirs, even the least in the house ; for there was an unhappy boy who was sometimes with the maid in the kitchin, sometimes with the tapster, attending guests in their lodgings, and other times with the hostler and horses in the stable. This boy, though he was little, was witty ; and seeing that every one had their tricks, he cast about how he might have his, and have some profit in the adventure. So one day, mine host being abroad, and the tapster

out of the way, he drew the drink ; and not only the beer, but carried bottles of wine to the guests, and seeing them in a merry vein, he thought to try his skill at misreckoning them ; and for six bottles which he carried into them when they came to pay, he reckoned them eight ; and though there was some questioning of the truth, yet he justified it and stood to it, that he had the reckoning he demanded.

This being his first considerable attempt in this nature, for he had gained two shillings for himself, he was resolved to keep the prize for himself ; and therefore putting that up in his pocket, he delivered the rest at the bar, the reckoning being wiped out.

But the company falling into discourse, in short time called for more wine, and then the tapster being returned, he officiated in the boy's place, turning him into the stable. More wine they had, and staying longer than ordinary, and falling again to drinking, they quaffed off the other half-dozen bottles of wine, and then calling to pay, the tapster, thinking to put his old trick of misreckoning in practice, told them, there were seven bottles to pay. But one of the company who was more cautious than the rest, had made his observation, and every bottle that was brought in he unbuttoned a button, and so was able to aver and justify that there was but six ; and withal, the rest of the company believing him, they all fell a-ranting, vowing that they would pay for no more, and farther alleging that they were misreckoned one or two bottles in the last reckoning. The tapster, although he was guilty as to himself, yet he did not believe them as to the other reckoning, because he could not imagine that the boy would be so bold as to attempt to cheat them, and therefore he huffed as high as they in justification of the boy and himself ; and such a noise they made that the hostess went in to know the cause of that clamour. They at first were so hot on both sides that they would not hear her speak, neither did they speak reasonably themselves ; but in the end she understood the matter, that they were wronged of one or two bottles by the boy, and one by the tapster.

She hearing the matter, did not so much stand to justify and vindicate the tapster, whom she did imagine was guilty, but as for the boy, she was very confident that he had not wronged them, and when the heat of their anger was somewhat over, she examined particulars enquiring how many bottles they paid for. They said eight. She who had not so soon forgotten what she had received, averred that she had but six shillings for wine, and therefore it was a mistake. They still alleged eight, and she six ; till now nobody could end the controversy but the boy, who was sought after, and in short time found in the hay-loft asleep, or meditating how he should bestow his purchased treasure.

But being found, he was without any questions there immediately led away before the gentlemen and his mistress, who were to be judges of this matter of fact. The question was soon stated to him, and he too well understood the matter, which he stoutly denied, but there was quickly such clear evidence appeared against him that he was found guilty ; for he not dreaming or mistrusting any such matter, had not conveyed the money away, so that the pockets being searched, there the two shillings were found, to the great shame and confusion of the small delinquent. This was to the great amazement of the guests, his mistress, and the tapster ; but the money being laid down, and two bottles being brought in for it, the gentlemen were well enough pleased, and made no further enquiry into the other bottle, which the tapster had likewise misreckoned them, so that he escaped without shame or punishment. So did not the boy, who was not only ashamed, but was ordered to be severely punished, and therefore the next morning was fetched up by the under hostler, (one who was not so wise as the boy, though in growth he was much bigger) with a cat-of-nine-tails, which gave so great an impression on the poor boy's buttocks that he was resolved on a revenge, which he effected, as I shall presently tell you.

This boy was now looked on as an errant cunning rogue, and one who without good looking to would be too wise for them all, for he had presumed to misreckon two shillings in six shillings, and put it all into his own pocket ; whereas the tapster, who was a proficient in cheating and licensed therein (but with this proviso, that half of what he gained thereby was to be paid to his mistress), only endeavoured to misreckon one shilling in six. So that, I say, the boy was narrowly watched, and had many a blow on the back and box on the ear, more than formerly ; he who knew he had deserved it, for he was guilty of many petty wagggeries, was forced to bear, but however he made provision against it. For his mistress using to pommel him on the shoulders with her fist, he one time took a paper of pins, sticking them with the points upwards, placed them between his doublet and cassock ; and his mistress striking him, as she was wont to do, did light upon the pins, pricked her hand till the blood ran down her finger ends, and the boy running away, she could not imagine how this was done, for she saw nothing upon his coat that should cause it. So the boy getting away, removed the paper with pins, and there was an end of the matter for that time. The mistress finding she had suffered by striking him on the shoulders, would come no more there with her bare hands, but used a cudgel, if it were near her, and if not she would use to flap him on the mouth with the back of her hand. And one time, he being in the kitchin, and she running after him to strike him, he claps a knife,

which lay near him, into his mouth, with the edge outwards. She not seeing that, but endeavouring and intending to give him a great blow, did so, but to her cost, for she cut her knuckles in such piteous manner that the blood ran down abundantly ; and now it was no fooling matter, but chirurgeon's work, wherefore one was sent for, and the boy ran away to his wonted dormitory, the hay-loft.

The mistress took her chamber, and towards evening the master came home, and bringing with him some guests, he soon missed his wife, and thereby knew the occasion of her retirement, and it was not long ere he saw the boy, the author of the harm ; he therefore took up a cudgel and ran hastily after the boy, who fearing the danger, betook him to his heels and ran cross a dunghill in the yard. The master being eager to pursue, did not take the same course the boy had done, who had passed over a board he had laid there on purpose, but the master missing of that, went on one side and fell into a great filthy hole, which by reason of much wet and rain was there slightly covered ; and had he not been helped out by the hostler, he might have stifled. He having recovered his feet, left the pursuit of the boy and was forced to be conducted to bed, which was to his great grief and damage, for he had spoiled his clothes, wet himself, and, which was worst of all, he by this means was disappointed of his purpose in making a prey of his guests he had brought in with him to that purpose. But the tapster and others did their best in that behalf, and the boy was again committed to the disciplinacion of the under-hostler, who by the command of his master, almost flayed the poor boy's buttocks.

The boy was now revenged of his master and mistress, who finding him so unlucky, had no great mind to meddle with him, neither did the boy study any revenge upon them ; but so often as he saw the under-hostler, who had now twice been his tormentor, his blood would boil, and all his study was to be even with him ; and thereupon he watched for all opportunities, and it was not long ere he found one.

There was meat at the fire to be roasted, and he was ordered to look to and wind up the jack, which was made to go by a stone weight, which was fastened to pulleys, and when the jack was wound up, the stone weight being on the out-side of the house, was drawn up two storys high, to the eves of the house. The boy observing this, and that the jack-weight was down, and seeing his enemy the under-hostler in the yard, just by the jack-weight, he lifted that off from the hook, and conveyed it under the girdle of the hostler, just behind, he not perceiving it. When he had thus done, he ran into the kitchin, and wound up the jack. The hostler being none of the wisest, wondered what it was that first of all held him by the back, and afterwards drew

him up from the ground ; but it was too late ere he discovered the truth, for he was now hanging in the air. His girdle was of strong leather, with a great brass buckle and thong, which he could not possibly undo ; neither durst he attempt it for fear of falling, and therefore he was in short time drawn up to the top. The boy not thinking this revenge enough, seeing nobody came proceeded further, and taking a parcel of wet horse-litter and some dry hay, he placed it just underneath the hostler, and set fire to it, which made such a smother and smoke that the poor hostler was almost choked ; wherefore he roared out most hideously. The boy having done all he intended, said, ‘ Now remember the cat-with-nine-tails,’ and so ran away. By this time the hostler made so much noise, and the jack being forced by weight to go faster than ordinary, all the household ran to see what was the matter, when, in short, there was found the poor hostler hanging between heaven and earth, and with coughing and roaring he purged forwards and backwards, but most backwards, as his girdle forced it downwards by pressing and griping his stomach, so that he was in a most lamentable pickle. And so great was the astonishment of all the beholders that he was come down almost to the bottom ere the smoking hay was removed or he relieved ; but at length down he came, and thus ended this adventure.

### CHAPTER VIII

*The boy learns and practises vaulting and tumbling ; the maid-servant attempting to do the like is entangled, caught in the manner and laughed at : she puts a trick upon a puritanical churchwarden ; and makes the boy, by another trick, to lie in bed and lose his dinner ; he is revenged on her by a gunpowder plot*

MRS DOROTHY putting a stop to her discourse, gave us convenience and leisure to express our satisfaction by our laughter, in which we continued for some space ; and then rehearsing and commenting on what she had told us, we again renewed our laughter, she joining with us in the same exercise. When we had put a stop to our mirth, she thus continued :

Truly, Friends, I did think I might a little divert you by my relation ; but I see you are pleased much better than I expected, and if you are so well contented with this which is but a taste of what I can tell you, I am sure the rest would be much more delightful.

The poor under hostler being thus descended from his place of

torment was almost in as pitiful a plight as one taken down from the gibbet half-hanged, to be quartered. He had as little motion or sense ; for he was almost suffocated with the smoke that ascended and flew up his nose and down his throat ; and as malefactors do (as they say) piss for fear or some other cause, so had he done ; and not only so, but we could perceive somewhat else of a yellowish colour, that had soaked through his breeches, run down his stockings, so that few would touch him. But at length the hostler, his superior, considering his condition and former good service, took him up and carried him to his bed adjoining to the stable ; where, with the assistance of *Aqua vitæ* he was soon brought to his former senses. Our young rogue in the meantime lying in the hay-loft over him, laughing at the rougery he had done, the groans he heard the poor fellow fetch were as so many instruments of music to raise his laughter to the higher pitch.

This rogue, who wanted nothing so much as roping, or a good cat-of-nine-tails, now escaped without either, there being nobody in the whole house that had any mind to meddle with him ; he was threatened by some, whilst others only laughed at him, and he went merrily about his business. And to conclude, much company coming that day to the house, and the particulars of the adventure being told them, they sent for the boy and hostler ; and after several questions and much laughter, they made them drink to one another and become friends.

The boy being thus freed from punishment set his wits at work how he might employ his time to the best advantage, and be getting of money as well as the rest of the family did. Soon after, there being a fair at our town, among other fooleries that attended it there were a parcel of rope-dancers and tumblers. Our boy was master of so much money as to see them two or three times ; and having very much affection to that quality, he purchased acquaintance with such another crack rope as himself, who was a very nimble and active youth at the art of vaulting. Him he invites to our house, and treating him with such as the house afforded, by all means desires his instructions in that nimble mystery. He soon assented, and our boy being ingenious and very willing to learn, soon attains to the knowledge of this mystery ; and taking all opportunities of practising, could soon leap through a hoop, vault over two or three joint-stools, tumble on the ground in various manners ; and being pretty proficient, had money several times given him by guests that came to our house, for shewing his tricks. By virtue of his money he would brag and vapour as well as the best in the house ; and the rest of the servants seeing his gain, would attempt to do the like, but many times came off with the breaking of their shins.

Amongst the rest, the cookmaid had a mighty great itch to learn and practise some of these tricks belike, supposing that if he, who was a boy, did get so much money by them, then she might gain much more being a maid ; and that she might as well do them as he, the obstacle of petticoats she removed by resolving, when she had learned, to have a pair of breeches and doublet for that purpose, and she questioned not but to get money enough, it being a greater novelty to see a woman in breeches. But before she purchased them, she resolved to practise in her ordinary habit, her petticoats ; and did so when she had convenient time and place ; so that she likewise could perform somewhat in that practice. One time, most of the other servants being abroad, she was sent into the cellar to draw a gallon pot full of claret wine. She believing it would be some time ere it were full, by reason it ran only through a small cane, whilst the pot was filling she lies down on her back, and resolved now to try whether she could put her feet in her neck, in order to practise some new trick of tumbling. She soon put one there, and with some difficulty likewise put the other, when she had so done, she could not possibly undo what she had done, her feet were as fast to her neck, as if they had grown there ; and though she tumbled and tossed, yet it was all to no purpose, for she could not by any means disentangle or disengage herself from the posture she was in. She, finding herself in this condition, knew not what to do, for the pot was now full and the wine ran about the cellar, and with tumbling about she had made her coats to fly about her ears.

At length she resolved to cry out, hoping her mistress or some other of the females of the house might hear her and come to her rescue ; this resolution she put in execution, and cried out amain, ‘ Help ! help ! ’ We were all in the room over her, and therefore soon heard her voice, but not knowing what was the matter, mine host at length said to the boy, ‘ Sirrah, run down into cellar and see what is the matter there.’ The boy did so, and after some little stay came up again, and cries out, ‘ Oh Heavens ! Master, I think our cookmaid is murdered, for I went down, and there lies her body without a head, and a great deal of blood about her (which was the spilt claret).’ ‘ But,’ said his master, ‘ are you sure her head was off ? ’ ‘ Yes, yes,’ said the boy, ‘ come see how it is cut off from the neck ; and yet,’ continued he, ‘ I cannot think she is yet dead, for she moved her hands, and still cries out, but her head I cannot find.’ Mine host hearing of this strange matter soon ran down into the cellar, which was not so dark, nor he so dim sighted but he discovered how the matter was. The only thing he did was to stop the wine from running out, by putting the spiggot into the faucet ; and so returned up to us and told us that the boy

was a little mistaken, but such a sight had he seen as was very unusual ; and thereupon desires us to descend into the cellar and see what he had done. No sooner had he said so but our curiosity likewise induced us to go down, where in short time we likewise had the satisfaction of seeing this strange sight. ‘ How,’ said I, ‘ this is some monster ? It would do well to keep it in this manner till the next fair, and then we may gain more by it than all the tumblers did.’ ‘ A pox of tumbling,’ said mine hostess, ‘ I believe this came from that exercise.’

We thus having spent our verdicts, helped the wench to disengage herself, and put her in her wonted natural posture ; but when she was so, she was not come to her self, so much was she spent with struggling, and her joints were so out of order that we were forced to lead her up stairs, and put her to bed.

She was mightily ashamed at this mischance, so that we could hardly persuade her to be seen by anybody. But the boy was as well pleased as she was troubled ; it was honey and nuts to him to tell the guests how the cookmaid could do some feats of activity as well as he, and then relate to them in what posture he found her. Much sport was made upon this account ; and although the wench was shy at first in being seen, yet in time she bore it out bravely, when the guests gave her money to talk with her about this adventure.

By this means the wench became a great enemy to the boy, and did him many shrewd turns, but durst not meddle with his body politic, dreading the danger she should run into by the harms of others who had been his persecutors. Wherefore she was forced to let him alone as to matter of action, only now and then she would exercise her wit upon him, in which she seldom came off but with the disadvantage. She was famous for her trick of activity, by which she got money, but much more by another, which she soon after effected, and came more clearly off with it.

It was then in time of rebellion, and all observations of Christmas, Easter, Whitsuntide, or any holy-days, were by the factious accounted superstitious, especially any observation of Christmas. Therefore, the more to cross the desire and humour of those who would observe the feast of Christmas, the men then in power commanded a strict fast to be on that day kept and observed, with penalties on all those who should dress any victuals ; and although the town, and especially our house, was of another persuasion, yet such was the prevalency of the faction that it was strictly observed, and it was given out that the officers of the town would search houses, to find and punish offenders. Our cookmaid hearing of this, was resolved to put a trick upon the officers ; who about the middle of sermon-time came, attended with a guard,

to see and examine our kitchin, where they found not the jack a-going, yet they found a good fire, and the pot a-boiling. ‘How now,’ said Master Churchwarden. ‘How dare you break the laws by dressing victuals on this day? What have you in the pot?’ Quoth the maid, ‘Nothing but plum porridge?’ ‘How,’ said the Churchwarden, ‘Superstitious porridge? This is a very great offence, and deserves great punishment, to do thus in contempt of the laws; I will see your master fined for this, and severely punished.’ ‘Well,’ replied she, ‘but I pray, Master Churchwarden, be not so angry, but be pacified; which I know you will be, when you see further what is in the pot, and with what the porridge is made. And lest you should mistake I will shew you.’ Whereupon she went to the pot and took out a large pair of ram’s-horns, and said, ‘Look you, Master Churchwarden, this is the meat; how like you it? I hope so well, that you will taste of the broth yourself without scruple of conscience?’ The case was so plain, and Master Churchwarden was so sensible that he was jeered, that he made all possible haste out of the house, threatening what he would do to the wench, who now only laughed at him; as did some of his attendants, who knew the churchwarden was very sensible of the affront, his wife being one of those who wore cork-heeled shoes, which made her pass for a light huswife, as indeed she was.

This trick which our maid put upon the churchwarden, raised a great noise in the town and country, and brought all the cavaliers to our house, who gave her somewhat to her box, so that she was very happy in this project, and our host had very great custom.

But still the boy and wench could not agree to set their horses together; for his business was to be up in the morning with the first, and help her make her fire; this he could not endure, for he loved his bed mightily well, and would rather want his belly-full of victuals than sleep. He had liberty to lie abed on a Sunday so long as he pleased, because then they had few guests; wherefore he would constantly lie by it till dinner time, which he knew by the jack going; for so long as the jack went so long would he lie, but when that was stopped, he thought it was time to rise to dinner.

The wench observing that he observed this custom was resolved to put a trick on him, and therefore one Sunday, though dinner was dressed by twelve o’clock and eaten by one, yet she let the jack go on till four o’clock afternoon. The boy lay listening to the jack’s going; and hearing that go still on, gave himself to laziness and took many a sweet turn, which she laughed at heartily. At length she stopped the jack, and immediately the boy arose, and came downstairs (for he lay in a small loft over the kitchin) to see what was become of the roast.

But he found none in the kitchin, nor hall, nor nobody in the house but the wench ; who seeing him search about for his dinner, and asking her questions about the affairs of the belly, could not answer him for laughing. But soon after the family returning from church, he discovered his own mistake and her roguery. For this he resolved on a revenge, which he had upon her the next day, when, a considerable dinner being to be dressed, he was called up in the morning to make a fire. He did so, and was more than ordinarily diligent, for he laid a row of cinders, then fresh coals, then a row of gun-powder, then a row of cinders, then more gun-powder, and so cinders, till this pile of building was erected. That done, he slightly kindled it and departed, going on an errand out of the town. The wench not knowing, or distrusting the intended mischief, hung on her pot and both the spits of geese, capons, and other fowls ; but before they were a quarter roasted the train of powder took. With that up flew the pot, and both the spits, with all the fowl, took a second flight. The wench was amazed, and the dinner spoiled, for the ashes and cinders had made all the fowls of a sad colour ; so that the wench stamped and swore as if she had been bewitched.

## CHAPTER IX

*The maid is outwitted by a country fellow in an eating wager, and so is her master, mine host ; who makes himself whole again by another eating wager ; three women drink off eighteen gallons of Rhenish wine at one sitting, and the manner how*

MRS DOROTHY pausing, and we laughing, gave her the convenience to consider of what she was to say further ; wherefore in short time she thus proceeded.

The poor wench was at a great loss to think that the guests must lose their dinner ; and she could not for a long time think how this came about, nor distrust that the boy had been concerned in it. But at length, the mist being removed, her eyes were opened, and she believed the boy to be the author of this mischief. But since it was done, and what was past could not be prevented or helped, she bethought herself how to proceed ; and therefore, her mistress coming into the kitchin and seeing the state of the matter, they likewise called me and the daughter to assist in the remedy. Whilst the wench made the fire good, we fell to washing the fowls from the foulness which the cinders and

ashes had caused ; but when that was done, we had a further and more tedious work, to pick out several corns of powder that were fastened into the skins of the fowls. At length, with many hands, we likewise performed this work, and with an hour's loss the dinner was in as much forwardness as it had been ; and at length, it was dressed and eaten ; but the guests tasting and seeing some remains of the gunpowder, my host excused it well enough by telling them that those fowls were shot by an accident.

Thus was the dinner eaten, and much wine drank off before the boy returned ; but so soon as he came in, mine host took him by the hand, and led him into the room where the guests were still a-drinking : and first desiring silence, and then their pardon, he told them this was the gunner that had shot all those fowls they had eaten, at one shot. ‘ How,’ said they, ‘ he is an excellent marksman.’ ‘ Yes truly,’ said mine host, ‘ but he had a strange kind of instrument to do this execution ; and I pray, gentlemen, do you examine him how it was done.’

The guests thinking there was somewhat in the matter that was pleasant, desired the boy to acquaint them with it. He seeing how matters went, and believing no harm would come to him, in plain terms told them all. They were strangely pleased with the boy's discourse ; and he having told them the manner how he did it, they desired to know the cause, wherefore ; to this he replied it was because the maid had cheated him of his dinner by letting the jack to go, as I told you.

The rehearsal of that adventure pleased them as much as the other ; and the maid was called in, who confessing all that the boy had told them, the guests made them friends and gave money to each of them ; advising the wench not by any means to fall out with the boy, and so they dismissed them.

Thus had we much pleasure by adventures which every day fell out between this boy and somebody or other, but I will leave that to tell you of somewhat else, as considerable and pleasant. Our cookmaid, though she were pretty cunning and witty, was yet sometimes outwitted ; for one day an ordinary country fellow came into the kitchin ; and calling for a flagon of beer, sat down by the fire to drink it and thus he began with the wench. ‘ Here is good drink at your house, but I wonder you are not as well provided with victuals.’ ‘ Why,’ said she, ‘ so we are ; for here is good meat at the fire,’ shewing him a piece of roast beef that weighed above a stone. ‘ Yes,’ said he again, ‘ the meat may be good, but there is but a little of it.’ ‘ There is enough for you,’ replied she. ‘ No, but there is not,’ said he. ‘ How,’ said she, ‘ can you eat all this ? ’ ‘ Yes, that I can,’ said he. ‘ I'll lay a wager of that,’ said she. ‘ What you

dare,' said the man. She would have the wager be a quart of wine (for she was resolved against money wagers). 'Nay,' said the man, 'a pint is enough for me with this meat, and so much will I lay.' She thinking that the less she laid the less she should lose if she lost, and being very desirous to see this great wager of eating performed, agreed to his terms, and thereupon he fell to lustily, and did eat considerably, but far short of all, so that he consented his wager to be lost, and the pint of wine was called for. He seizing on it first, put it to his nose and drank all off ; and throwing down sixpence for his pint of wine, and twopence for his pot of beer, was departing, when her mistress, mine hostess, enters the kitchin, and seeing the fellow departing, asked who must pay for the meat. 'Not I,' said the fellow. 'Nor I,' said the wench, so that a controversy arose between them. But mine host and some company coming in, ended it by adjudging that since the countryman called for no meat it was not fit he should pay for it, and he not paying, the maid must, which she did, but was laughed at for her folly.

But she was not the only overreached person in the house, for it was not long ere mine host himself was finely caught. There came three men who, although they were neighbours and famous for eating, yet mine host not knowing them, they thus overreached him. They came to sup and lie there that night, and therefore went into the kitchen to see what was for supper. There was capons, pigeons, and sparagus. 'Very good meat,' said they. 'Now, mine host, what shall we give you a-piece for our supper of these three sorts of victuals ?' He asked how much they would have dressed. They asked him the same question, how much he would dress. 'Why,' said he, 'I will dress three capons, three dozen of pigeons, and fifteen hundred of sparagus.' 'Very good,' said they ; 'but if this be not enough, we expect to have more.' 'That you shall,' said he ; 'but you shall sup first, and I hope there will be enough for myself and family when you have done.' 'For that, you must adventure it,' said they. 'Well now, your price ?' Said mine host, 'I will have three shillings four pence a-piece, that is ten shillings in all.' 'Content,' said they ; 'make haste that we may drink afterwards.'

Thus was the bargain made up, and the fowls laid down to the fire. In the meantime the three travellers fetched a walk, to get them (as they said) a stomach to their supper ; which in convenient time being ready, and they returned, they thus began. Each of the three took a capon whole on the trencher ; and cutting them into pieces, they made one mouthful of each wing, another of each leg ; and scraping all the meat from the carcass into two or three mouthfuls, the capons were invisible. Then they drank each his cup of claret, to whet their appetites ; that being done they fell to the pigeons, and cutting each pigeon into four

quarters, they eat them, bones and all, at four bits. Then they drank again and fell to the sparagus, which was in short time bestowed where the rest of the victuals was. Mine host seeing them so quick at their work, stared at them, and they calling for another glass of wine, drank to him and told him that he must provide more victuals or lose his wager. He being angry at both their propositions, at length thought it was better to let them have more meat than not to be paid for what they had, and be laughed at into the bargain. Wherefore he replied they should have enough ; and calling for the cookmaid, commanded her to dress the same quantity of victuals. She staring on the guests, they bad her go down and make haste, for they wanted their supper. Down she went, and did accordingly ; and whilst supper was dressing, they walked and smoked, in their chamber.

In time the other course, consisting of three capons, three dozen of pigeons, and fifteen hundred of sparagus was brought up, and in as little time as before it was eaten up, as the former had been, to the great cost, loss, and confusion of mine host ; who stared now worse than he had done. However he again asked them if they would have any more ; to this they readily replied, Yes. He again called, and the cookmaid being come up, was commanded to dress the same quantity again, and that quickly. She replied she could not, for all the fowl that was killed was eaten ; and it would be a great while ere she could kill, pull and dress the like quantity ; besides, there was no more sparagus then to be had. They told mine host they must have their bargain, or he lose his wager. He replied, if he could not furnish them with that, yet they might have of any other sort of victuals. They said they would have that or none, or else a third way come to composition. To this mine host gave ear, and asked what composition. They told him that though they could give a dispatch to more victuals, yet they would for once forbear further eating, and exchange their victuals for drink. So they reckoned what their other mess of victuals might come to, which being computed to ten shillings, they desired ten shillings' worth of wine. Mine host shook his head at this, and said they did him too hard, which they confessing, and a little further discoursing on, it was agreed that they should have each of them a quart of canary, in full satisfaction of the wager. This they had, this they drank off, and so went to bed, where they slept more soundly than mine host, who with all his family went supperless to bed. And he was extremely vexed that he should be outwitted and overreached by three bumpkins. But what could not be cured must be endured, it was but a folly to complain, self do, self have, and now he remembered the wager between the cookmaid and countryman, and had no cause to laugh at her any more.

Night being spent, part in sleep, and part in these cogitations, he arose, and so did his guests, who honestly paid their shot, though not half so much as their reckoning came to. And at departure they told him that if ever he had occasion for an eating wager, if he would send for any of them they would do their weak endeavours to assist him as much to his gain as this had been to his loss ; and thereupon acquainted him with the places of their dwellings. And indeed it was not long ere he had occasion to make use of them ; for a person of quality, being to travel our road, sent his boy before to our house to bespeak a supper ; the boy, having mistook his master in his direction, instead of a couple of capons and a dozen of larks, which he had ordered him to bespeak, bespoke a dozen of capons and a couple of larks. Mine host did somewhat distrust the boy for his directions, when he spake of a couple of larks, and told him surely he was mistaken, he must have two dozen of larks. ‘No,’ said the boy, ‘my master is but a small eater, and the dozen of capons and the two larks will be enough for him and his company, which is but one gentleman, besides himself.’ ‘Well,’ replied mine host, ‘however I’ll provide two dozen of larks ; and if your master will not eat them, I’ll have them myself.’ To this the boy consented, and the fowls were ordered to be dressed accordingly. Mine host was very sensible of the mistake, and that the boy should have bespoke but two capons and a dozen of larks ; but the boy being so confident that it was a dozen of capons, he was resolved to dress them, and that his master should pay for them. But lest they should be left on his hands, and deducted for, he bethought on a way to have them dispatched ; wherefore he dispatched away a boy to one of his three capon and pigeon eaters, desiring him to favour him so far as to come that evening to his house ; for he did believe he might do him a kindness in some affairs relating to the teeth and guts.

The countryman was at home, and came at his time : but before he came the master of the boy came thither, and asking what was for supper, was answered, a dozen of capons and two dozen of larks. ‘And for whom is all this provision ?’ said the gentleman. ‘For your worship,’ said mine host. ‘How so,’ said the gentleman, ‘by whose order ?’ ‘By your servant’s,’ replied mine host ; and thereupon the boy being called, ‘Sirrah,’ said his master, ‘what orders did I give you about my supper ?’ ‘Sir,’ said the boy, ‘I believe there is a mistake, and so I told mine host. For I only bespeak a dozen of capons and a couple of larks ; and he said it was too little, and that he would dress two dozen of larks.’ The gentleman and his friend laughed at the boy’s mistake and excuse ; and mine host said that he thought two dozen of larks was little enough for one dozen of capons. ‘That is true,’ said the gentleman ; ‘but I

ordered the boy to bespeak only a couple of capons and a dozen of larks.' ' You see,' said mine host, ' it is not my mistake, and I did nothing but was reasonable.' ' Aye but,' said the gentleman, ' it is unreasonable to think that we two and the boy can eat so much as you have provided for us.' ' Not so unreasonable neither, as you think, Sir,' replied mine host. ' For I'll lay a good wager that I'll produce one man that can and will eat up all the capons himself.' ' How,' said the gentleman. ' I'll never believe that, and I'll lay twenty shillings of it, and venture my supper.' ' Done,' said mine host. ' Done,' said the gentleman. And so both their moneys were laid into the other gentleman's hand.

Thus was this wager concluded of and mine host went to his teeth and gut champion, who attended the sport. He told him the wager ; to that he shook his head and said it was a hard task, but he would strive to serve him. Supper being ready, it was ushered in by mine host, leading his champion by the hand ; who, after due reverence to the company, sits down ; and the meat being placed on the board, the wager was again recited ; and it was further agreed that the champion might have what drink he would call for. Thereupon he began to use his teeth, and the rest of the company their eyes, to behold the manner how he made so quick a dispatch of his victuals. I told you already how and in what manner he did eat ; but now being to do much, he took more time than ordinary. But in time, ten of the twelve were made invisible, being put into our gutmonger's Christmas cupboard, and the eleventh was on his trencher, and part of it sent down his belly, when mine host looked on him with a more than curious eye, and discovered somewhat of discontent, which caused him to cry out, ' Come friend ! bear up, and here's to you ! ' ' Thank you,' replied the eater ; and taking the drink from mine host, he whispering him in the ear said, ' You have lost, I can eat no more.' ' How,' said the gentleman, ' what says he ? ' ' Nothing,' said mine host, ' but that he is sure you have lost, for he can eat a dozen more.' ' How,' replied the gentleman, ' but by my faith he shall not, for I'll have this myself for my supper ' ; and thereupon he seized on the twelfth capon, and laying it on his trencher, cuts it in pieces, and gives to his friend. ' Nay then,' said mine host, ' I see you agree the wager to be mine.' ' Yes,' replied the gentleman, ' I had better do so than fill his belly and lose my own supper.' Thereupon the money was given to mine host, who now, merely by his quickness of wit in thinking, and confidence in speaking so contrary to the eater's saying, won the wager ; and, which was most, saving his own credit, and that of his champion, who clearly confessed that the wager was in great danger to be lost.

Thus did mine host get as much as he lost by the former wager, and

the gentleman was well pleased at the loss of his ; and all parties being contented, they went to bed and next day parted.

(And now, continued Mrs Dorothy, that my hand is in, I'll tell you one story more of the like nature, and so conclude with this eating discourse.)

It was not long ere some company came to the house, and in the company three women, who were good girls, absolute Bona Robas. They had a great desire to drink Rhenish wine, and therefore asked if we had any. Mine host told them yes, he had a runlet of eighteen gallons newly come in, and it was excellent good. The women said that would hardly serve one sitting. Said one of the gentlemen, surely it will. They said no, they would wager that they themselves could drink it off at one sitting. The gentleman told them that if they would, he would not only pay for it, but also give unto each of them forty shillings to buy a new petticoat. This they agreed to, nay, they said they would not rise from their seats ere it was done, provided they might have anchovies, and neat's-tongues and such like victuals to intermix. This was agreed on, and that they might the more conveniently do their business they had each of them an empty butter-firkin with the head knocked off, and so taking up their coats they laid their bare bums on the firkins. Thus they sat, and thus they drank, sometimes eating and other whiles talking, so that in four hours' time all the wine was drank off, and if they had occasion to evacuate they did that without trouble, sitting as they did on butter-firkins.

## CHAPTER X

*Mrs Dorothy discourses of the several cheats of drawers and tapsters inventing bad drink and small measure : the host carries two men before the justice, where he came off with the loss : he is outwitted by two guests, but is revenged on them by the boy's assistance*

THESE were the frolics we daily had at our house, which were commonly to the profit of mine host ; for whoever won or lost he went away with the profit and gain. Indeed his gain was very great both in his victuals and drink, for when wine was to be sold at eighteen pence the quart, we had two shillings or half a crown, and that we might not come within the compass of the law, to every bottle of wine a small plate of olives was carried up. Neither was this enough to have the price, but the wine was generally mixed and bad ; and that the guests

might as well be cheated in quantity as quality, it was commonly sold in bottles, where we many times had two shillings or half a crown for a bottle of wine that would not hold above a pint and a half.

For instance, I will relate one little fine cheat to that purpose. A company of gentlemen come to our house and called for wine, which they drank off but liked not, wherefore they called the drawer, and desiring another bottle, told him that there was two faults in the wine they had drank, the one that it was not so good as they expected, the other that the bottle was not full measure. They therefore desired him to mend both the quality and quantity in the next, since they intended him, and always gave the best price, half a crown a bottle. He promised an amendment as to both and so went down, and indeed was as good as his word, drawing the best wine in the cellar, and that in a bottle of the largest size. They thanked him, and for his encouragement to continue honest to them they gave him a shilling. He pocketed the money and left them ; they drank on and finding their wine good, called for more, which they had.

But mark the falseness and ingratitude of this rascally drawer ; he in short time first changed their wine and gave them worse, and not contented with that, likewise cheated them of their measure. He carried a bottle of wine and filled a glass out of it, when one of the gentlemen who was not yet so dim-sighted but he could see somewhat of the intended cheat, cried 'Hold, drawer, let me see that glass and bottle,' and thereupon poured the wine into the bottle which was indifferent full. But looking on the bottle, and seeing it was very small, he said, 'Surely this bottle does not hold a full quart,' 'Oh Lord ! Sir,' said the drawer, 'do you think I would wrong you ?' 'I do not know,' replied the gentleman, 'but I much distrust it.' 'You have no cause,' replied the drawer, 'for I am sure that bottle is full measure.' 'What will you wager of that ?' said the gentleman. 'Anything you will,' said the drawer ; 'but do you think I would put any tricks upon gentlemen I have so great respect for, no surely ?' 'But,' said the gentleman, 'I must and will be satisfied.' 'That you may quickly be,' replied the drawer, 'for I will fetch a new sealed quart pot and measure it.'

This was agreed upon, and in short time up comes the drawer with a quart pot in his hand. Being come to the table he takes the bottle and pours the wine out of that into the quart pot, which when looked upon was full as it ought to be. 'Now,' said one to the gentleman who complained, 'You have wronged the honest drawer and must give him satisfaction for the abuse.' 'Truly,' replied he, 'I was very much mistaken, and my mind still gives me that there is some cunning trick and cheat in this contrivance and that it is not as it appears to be.' 'Truly,'

replied the drawer, ‘ if you think I have done you any abuse you do me wrong, and besides the great respect I have for you who are my master’s best customers, I know if I should attempt to wrong you my master would be much troubled and would not keep a servant in his house that should do it.’ ‘ Well, for all this,’ replied the gentleman, ‘ I pray let me see the bottle and quart pot.’ The drawer delivered him the quart pot freely, but parted from the bottle with much unwillingness, but in fine the gentleman had them both when he takes the quart pot and out of that filled the bottle. Then he found the cheat, which was this ; there was more than half a pint of wine left in the quart pot. ‘ How now,’ said the gentleman, ‘ who is wronged now, where lies the cheat ? ’ The drawer seeing himself found out and fearing he should be beaten replied, ‘ I do not know,’ and so turned his back and left them.

Great was the admiration of the whole company of the management of this cheat, but much more at the impudence of the drawer. Now they all perceived that the drawer when he went down into the cellar to bring up a quart pot, brought wine in it (and that above half a pint), the acting of the thing itself was not so much as the manner that this knavish drawer should be so impudent as to stand in it, and justify it with language, when as if he had not been too confident, and so soon as he had put the wine into a quart pot had immediately gone away, he might have escaped undiscovered. But it was his fortune so to be found out, to the great admiration of the whole company, who, although they found themselves cheated, yet were hugely pleased with the manner, and made it their discourse in all taverns they came into for a long time after.

But I believe it was to as little purpose with others as with our folks, for when any such tricks or cheats have been told in our house, our people would only give them the hearing and seem to be astonished with the discourse, but be never a whit the better for it, but immediately upon the next opportunity do the same thing or as bad. This was their constant practice ; they would draw wine in glass bottles that were so thick at the bottom that when they were empty they were as heavy as if they were half full, and also battered pots that would not hold out measure, and sometimes would fill a pot not above three quarters full, and when the drawer brought it in, he would fill out a glass, and stare them in the face as jugglers do when they are about their Hocus Pocus sleight of hand tricks, and so carry it off. And out of pretence to civility he would fill the first glass but the end was quite different, it being only to deceive them and to hinder them from seeing the false measure that is brought them, which cannot be discovered when a glass or two is filled out.

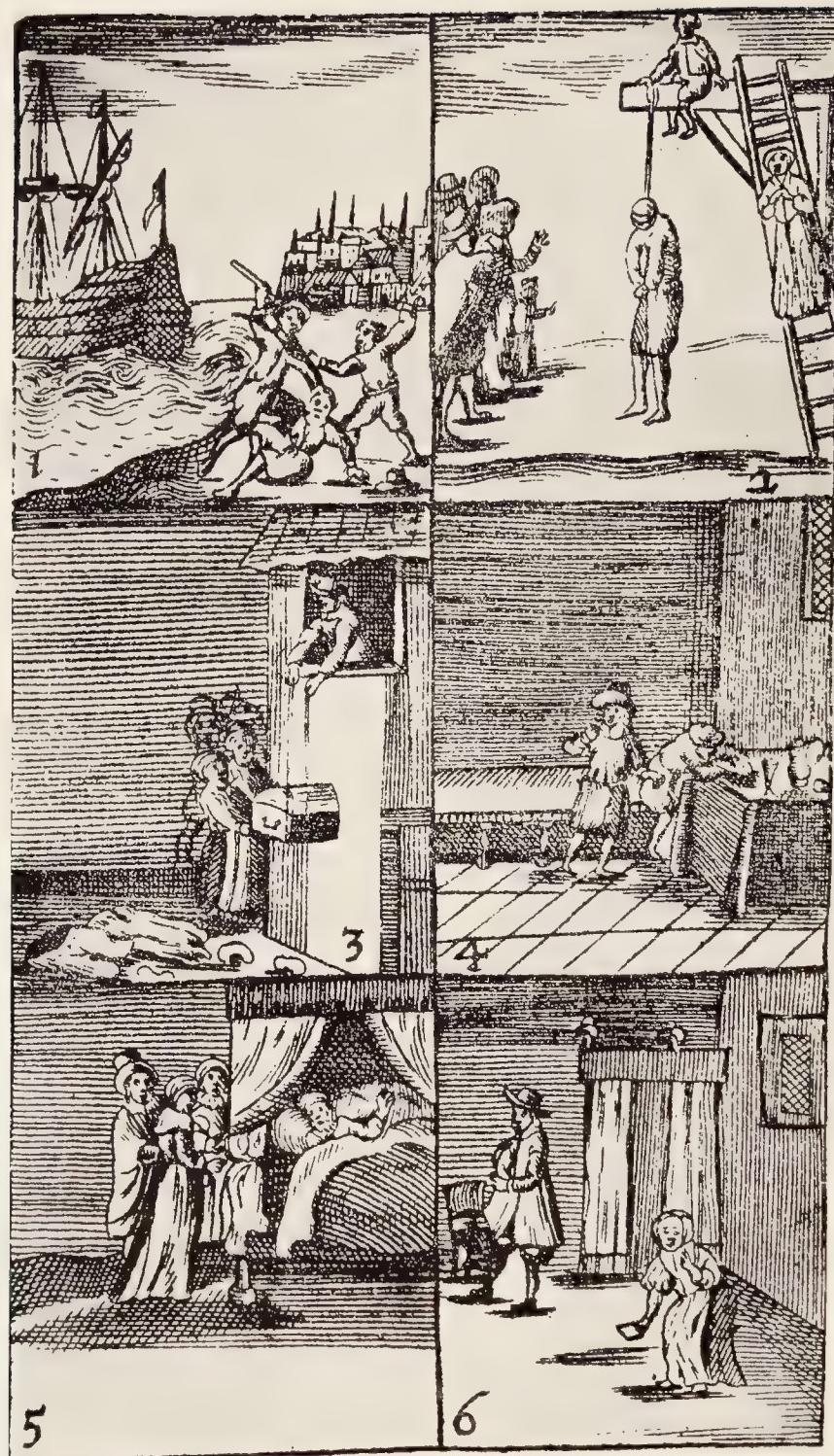
Mine host was finely caught one day with a pot not being filled.

Two old countrymen coming to our house in a morning called for a quart of wine ; the drawer believing they were to be choused, brought up a quart pot, but it was little more than half full. He intended they should have it raw, but it being a cold morning, they bade him roast it, that is put it to the fire and burn it. He was now at a loss in not filling out the first glass, but not knowing how to help it, he did set it down before the fire, and I suppose he intended to fill it up afterwards. But he forgetting that, and the old men being busy in discourse forgot to look to it, when on a sudden they looked, and the pot was melted almost half way down, which was as far as there was no wine in it. With that the maid seeing it called out to them, ‘ What, honest men, do you melt your pot ? ’ ‘ Not we,’ said they, ‘ it is the fire.’ ‘ But you are like to pay for it,’ replied the wench. ‘ That is, when we do,’ said they. At this mine host came up, the maid tells how that these two old men had been telling their Canterbury tales so long that the pot was melted. ‘ Then they must pay for it,’ said mine host, ‘ for it was given to their charge.’ Thereupon the drawer was called, who likewise averred that he gave them the pot with the wine into their charge and custody, and that therefore they ought to look after it, and since it was damaged to pay for it. They replied, they took no charge of it, neither did they touch it, but only ordered him to burn it well. Mine host said they should pay, and they said they would not, whereupon he threatened them with a justice’s warrant. They were somewhat unwilling to be troubled, and were content to pay for the wine and allow sixpence more for mending the pot. Mine host replying that would not do, for it could not be mended, and he must have a new one. They seeing him so unreasonable, were content the justice should decide the controversy. Wherefore before the justice they went, and mine host there made his complaint that those two men had melted his quart pot, and refused to pay for it. The justice perceiving where the matter lay, and that he told his tale wrong, desired the men to speak, who in plain terms told him they took no charge of the pot, but only desired the drawer to cause wine to be burnt, that he had accordingly set it down by the fire, and without their handling or touching it, the pot was melted. ‘ So,’ said the justice, ‘ and did neither of you drink of the wine ? ’ ‘ No, not one drop,’ replied the old men, ‘ and yet we offered to pay for the wine, and give sixpence towards mending the pot.’ ‘ This is more than you shall need to do,’ said the justice, and then he thus proceeded to mine host.

‘ Friend, with what confidence can you demand any money of these men that had nothing of you ? Since you would not do them justice, I will. I do hereby acquit them from paying anything for wine, because they never had any ; and for the melting the pot, how did they do it ?



PLATE XI



[face p. 545]

It was not they but your servant who drew the wine, who, had he filled the pot full of wine, the fire could not have melted it ; for I very well understand that the pot was melted no further than it was empty. And further,' continued the justice, ' this shall not serve your turn, for I shall fine you for not filling your pot. Your crime is very apparent and evident, and so shall your punishment be, and I order you, as a fine to pay down twenty shillings for your misdemeanour, or else I shall make your *Mittimus*, and send you to prison.' Thus was the case altered, and the tale was now of another hog ; for mine host who expected satisfaction was forced to give it, and that immediately or else go to prison.

This went against the hair, but necessity hath no law, and therefore down he paid the money, and came home heartily vexed, not so much for the money he had paid as for the disgrace he received ; for he was now become the town talk. But however, since he could not help the disgrace, he was forced to be contented with that ; but for his loss, he soon fetched it up either in false measures, over reckonings, or some such practices as I have told you.

And besides these extraordinary gains he made by drink, he had his ways to cheat in victuals. He would reckon for a dish of anchovies that stood him in tenpence or a shilling, two shillings or half a crown at the least ; and carry them in a large dish an inch asunder from one another. Westphalia ham of bacon he would cut so thin, and make such a large shew of a little meat that he would reckon two shillings for that which stood him in two groats ; nay, and sometimes be paid sixpence for fouling of linen to it. A neat's-tongue of two shillings, he would reckon four shillings, or four shillings sixpence for it. Nay though they were cheated of part of it, as I remember he was caught in the manner about one. A neat's-tongue being called for and carried in to the guests, first (as the manner is) it was slit down quite through the middle ; and not barely so, but mine hostess herself had gelded it, and cut off from each side a fine large slice, which she intended for some other gentlemen in the house, to draw down th' other bottle of wine. This neat's-tongue being carried to the guests, one of them complained of the cutting it, saying he had rather have had it whole ; ' for,' said he, ' there is less loss in cutting it in slices cross-ways than this.' ' Why,' said another, ' you may do so still,' and thereupon he took the tongue and clapped it together again, but it would not come close by above half an inch. They discovered the place, where it had been pared, to look wide like a mouth ; and perceiving the cheat, were resolved to try a little farther experiment, and therefore called in for mine host, who with a ' Sit you, merry gentlemen ' came in. ' Landlord,' said one, ' I pray, what do you reckon for this neat's-tongue ? ' ' Not above four shillings, or four

shillings sixpence,' said he. 'But that is too much,' replied the man, 'this is but a little one, and I think not a whole one.' 'How!' replied mine host, 'not a whole one! That were a good jest indeed; I say 'tis a whole one, and a large one too.' 'I'll wager a quart of sack,' said the gentleman, 'that you are mistaken.' 'Done,' said mine host. Whereupon the neat's-tongue was clapped together, and mine host quickly saw that he had lost. He began to flounce and fluster, saying that some of the company had done it; but leaving the room and going to his wife in the kitchin he soon found that he had lost indeed. The company being good guests to the house he was unwilling to displease them; wherefore he drew a quart of wine, went in and acknowledged his error, and paid for it, excusing the matter as well as he could, and they took all in good part.

Thus was he sometimes caught, and paid for it; but not once in twenty times but he caught his guests, and made them pay for it. They would not only cheat their guests, but their own servants' bellies; for except they had good trading, that the servants might feed on the reversion of their guests' dinners, they were like to go without, or at least have a poor one. She was very niggardly, and when they had salt fish, which was commonly once a week, she would allow them neither oil nor butter, but only mustard. But she was broken of that custom in this manner; after they had one day dined with fish, dressed as I tell you, downstairs went one servant, then another, and so one after another they all dropped away and went into the cellar; where when they were come, the drawer said, 'Now to our old custom, that is, since we have had no oil nor butter to our fish, we will soak it in sack, my friends, and that of the best, every one his half pint, and so away to our business.' Mine host having some business with some of the servants, and finding them all missing, went to the cellar door, and there he not only heard this proposition made by the drawer, but saw it also confirmed and executed. Whereupon he went to his wife, and commanded her for the future to allow his servants not only oil with their mustard to their salt fish, but butter and eggs, too, if they would have it, and so they had for the future.

I have known mine host sell and take money for one joint of meat twice, in this manner. When a feast hath been above stairs, joints of meat and fowls that have hardly been touched have been brought down and sold to guests below, as fresh brought from the fire, at a very good rate: indeed no opportunity hath been omitted, to gain money. There was a pretty passage happened about a couple of guests, that upon occasion lay there two or three nights together. Thus it was; two men came one night to lodge, and being not well in health, it having been

cold and rainy, they desired a good fire in their chamber, which they had without any supper or any drink, but a quart of burnt wine, and so they went to bed. The next day proving cold and rainy and their business not being very urgent, they continued there and kept their chamber, with little victuals and as little drink. However they kept a good fire, and mine host seeing they had little else but firing, was resolved he would get sufficiently by that. Therefore the next morning, when they called to know what was to pay, he reckoned them ten shillings for firing for two nights and one day. This demand they thought was very unreasonable, but they knew that they could not help themselves, for he would have what he demanded ; and besides, to say truth, firing was very scarce and dear in that country. The two travellers paid their shot, and intended to leave the house, but the weather proved so cold and stormy they could not ; wherefore they were forced to stay. But they resolved withal to be better husbands of their firing than they had been, but could not tell how ; till in the end, looking about the house, they saw a great old fashioned bedsted that lay useless in a hole. They not telling for what use, asked my landlord the price of it, who not dreaming of their purpose, in few words sold it to them for five shillings. When they had bought it, they hired a fellow for one shilling to cut it in pieces fit for firing ; and now being furnished with fuel, they resolved to keep a good fire which they did, and calling for mine host and a quart of wine, bad him welcome to their good husbandry ; for the wood they had bought of the bedsted was as much again as they had paid ten shillings for, wherefore they made a good fire, and sung old rose in the gun-room.

Mine host being thus beaten at his own weapons and his own goods by himself sold to his loss, was somewhat nettled, and discovered his anger to his servants. ‘Master,’ said the unhappy boy, ‘if you please I’ll be revenged of them.’ ‘Do, if you can,’ said the master, ‘not doing mischief.’ The boy having a commission, was not long ere he put it in execution ; for joining another servant in confederacy with him, they went that evening to wait on the two guests, when among other matters they talked of spirits and apparitions. Quoth the boy, ‘We are often troubled with them here, and especially in this chamber.’ ‘I am sorry for that,’ said one of our travellers, ‘for I am very fearful of any such things.’ And thus the boy possessed them with fear of that which he intended and executed. For about midnight he and his confederate took a calf out of the cow-house, and tying his four legs together, but so as he might not only stand, but go a little, they put him into our travellers’ chamber, and there waited the event. It was not long ere the calf began to pace it about the room, making an unusual noise ; and in this manner

he continued stamping till both our travellers were awake, who hearing the noise, were possessed with fear and astonishment, supposing it to be a spirit that was told them of. Thereupon they shrunk close into the bed for fear. The noise continuing, and no harm or danger coming to them, at length one of them consented to rise and light a candle to see what was the matter. A candle was found, and some remains of fire being still in the chimney, thither he went: and stooping down fell a blowing with his mouth to light the candle. The calf seeing a light went thitherwards, and espying somewhat that was pendulous between the traveller's legs, and taking it to be his mother cow's teat, thrust his chaps thitherwards, and seizing it in his mouth, fell full lustily to sucking. The traveller perceiving himself caught by the member, and not knowing by what, and being in fear of losing it, fell a-roaring very loud, to the great sorrow and grief of his bed-fellow and as great joy of our unhappy boy and his confederate.

## CHAPTER XI

*Six country blades steal a goose and two hens: by the contrivance of two of them and the host the other four pay soundly for them, and laugh at their companions: a Traveller by a mistake lies with another man's wife: a noise of fiddlers are forced to pay for their sauciness*

THE poor traveller who was thus used by the calf still continued his roaring out, and the calf being hungry did suck very hard, but to no purpose, our young crack-rope and his companion still listening and laughing. But in fine, the noise continuing, and they doubting that there was more than sport they entered the chamber, where they saw the calf close to the traveller, but could not tell what he did there. But the traveller still making a noise, they came near, and perceiving the calf's mistake they thrust somewhat into his mouth, and thereby disengaged him from the traveller's bauble. He still lay on the ground whilst they carried the calf out of the chamber, soon returning with a lighted candle to see what was the matter. The traveller was by that time somewhat come to himself, and feeling that he had lost nothing, was indifferently satisfied. They being now entered the chamber asked what was the matter, and wherefore he made so much noise. He now looking about the chamber, and seeing nothing but people with a light, whom he knew, could not well tell what answer to give; only he told them that the Devil or some wicked spirit had been there, and he had like to have been

mischieved by him, but that now he found himself well again. His fellow traveller likewise said that there had been some walking in the chamber, but what it was, and wherefore his companion roared out, he knew not. In fine, they who had done the mischief were thanked for their readiness to come and assist them ; and so with some persuasions our traveller went to bed again, where he lay till the next morning, although he slept not, so great was his fear of the foul fiend. But so soon as morning came they both arose, and though the weather still continued cold and rainy, yet they could not be persuaded to stay any longer in our inn, but paying their reckoning left it, and half their wood behind them. So that mine host was now no loser by this bargain, it being ready cleft to sell to the next cold guest that should arrive there.

The last passage happened in the winter time, a little before Christmas, which soon after coming, we had two or three notable accidents that befel in our inn. The first was this. Half a dozen of young country blades had been abroad a-fowling, or a-fooling rather, and among other purchase that they had they coming near a farmhouse where there was store of poultry. At two shots which they made, they killed two hens and a goose. This with the rest of their game they brought to our house to be dressed against the next day for dinner. They drank some bottles of wine when they brought them, and being merry, said one, ‘ We will to-morrow drink a health to the owner of the hens and geese.’ ‘ Well, that we will,’ said another, ‘ but I would not for forty shillings that he should know of it, for if he did, I doubt he would make us pay sauce. And truly I am yet somewhat fearful that we shall be discovered.’ ‘ So am I,’ said another, and so a third. ‘ Well, if we be found out we can pay for them, and my share shall be ready.’ This was their discourse, and so for that time they parted ; but it was not long ere two of the company returned, and calling for a bottle of wine fell heartily a-laughing. Says the one to the other, ‘ I am resolved it shall be so, and with the assistance of mine host we may carry the matter very closely.’ Thereupon mine host was called for ; he being come, they told him that they must have his assistance in a design, which he promised should not be wanting, and thereupon one of them thus began. ‘ Mine host, we have this day, as you know, been a-fowling, and part of what we brought in we plundered for, or in plain English, stole. Now, some of our company are very conscious of their guilt and are not only penitent, but fearful ; now it is our design to increase their fear and get some money out of them to make us merry. And thus we have contrived it. To-morrow when we are towards the latter end of our dinner I would have you to tell us that there is a country fellow who enquires for such persons as we are, and likewise that he was here at this day to enquire of us, and

that he talks of a warrant that he hath against us about some poultry his master lost, and that he suspected us to be guilty ; and withal you may add that he is resolved to have the Law against us, and that you have had much ado to persuade him to be patient till we had dined.' Mine host having heard the instructions, was no fool but soon understood them, and procured a country fellow to manage the business so well that they should be all startled, ' Only,' said he, ' you shall allow him half a crown for his labour, and the rest that he gets of you (for I know you intend a composition) shall be justly returned you.'

Thus was this affair agreed on, and accordingly the next day managed ; for the guests also came at the hour appointed, and merrily drank about till dinner was brought in ; which being come they fell to eating, and the goose being well nigh eaten, a glass of wine was called for to drink a health to the owner, and mine host himself was then called for up to make one in the frolic. He being come, and seeing whereabouts causes went, thought it now a fit time to begin, and therefore he thus bespeaks the company : ' Gentlemen, I understand your health and shall willingly drink it, but if I be not mistaken you will have but little cause to be so merry on this occasion.' ' Why ? What's the matter ? ' says one. ' What's the matter ? ' said another. ' I'll tell you,' replied mine host, ' but first let us drink ' ; whereupon up went his glass, and down gutter lane went the wine, and mine host being grave in his countenance and slow in his speech, they all, as amazed, stared either on him or one another, wondering what should be the meaning of mine host's speech. At length he spake, and acquainted them with the business just as he and two of the company had agreed on. Then having done, added farther, that he had endeavoured to underfeel the fellow that was below, but he found him very obstinate, and doubted very much that he would make no end but what the Law should. ' How ! ' said one, ' is your fooling come to this ? ' ' Oh Lord ! ' said another, ' we have brought our hogs to a fair market.' ' Well,' said a third, ' but what must we do in this case ? ' ' Truly,' said mine host, ' if I may advise you, I would have one of you go down to treat with the fellow and see what composition you can draw him to.' This was in the end thought to be the best way, and thereupon one went down with mine host. So soon as the countryman saw him (being well instructed in every thing) he cries out, ' Nay, I am sure I am in the right, for though the man hath changed his clothes, yet that won't serve his turn. I know you well Sir,' said he, ' by your hair and beard.' ' What do you know ? ' replied the guest. ' Why, I know,' said the countryman, ' that you are one of the six that stole my master's two hens and goose. I saw you well enough when you did it, and know you all well enough when I see you again. I followed you hither yesterday,

to see you housed and am able to swear before Mr Justice that you are the persons. And my master is resolved to prosecute you, for he hath lost as much poultry this winter as is worth five pound, and now we have found you, you shall pay for all.' 'How!' said the guest, 'surely you do not mean as you say. One body may be like another, and you may be mistaken; and besides, if it were so that we were the parties, you mean yet a great deal less than five pound, which I hope will serve the turn for two hens and a goose, which you say is all you lost.' 'Aye,' said the fellow, 'that is all indeed that we lost yesterday, but I tell you, five pound will not pay for all my master hath lost within this month, and my master and I both believe you had them all, or else you would not so readily have found the way into our yard; and therefore I say, and so my master says, that you shall pay for them.' 'Nay, friend,' said mine host, 'I pray let me persuade you to be more reasonable in your demands.' 'Reason me no reasons,' said the fellow, 'it was unreasonable for them to come and rob my master, and therefore I will not be reasonable; I am sure I shall lose my share of goose and other poultry this Christmas that I should have had, had not we been robbed.' 'Nay, but come,' said mine host, 'let me take up this matter.' 'I say you shall not,' replied the fellow. 'The justice shall know the matter and nobody else; but if they be your friends, if you will make an end and pay me the money, I'll be ruled by you.' Whereupon mine host took the fellow by the arm, and leading him into a drinking room, said, 'Come let you and I talk a little further of this matter, and in the meantime,' said he to the guest, 'go you up to your friends and confer with them about it.' 'How,' said the fellow, 'you mean to lead me out of the way while they get away from me.' 'No,' replied mine host, 'I'll pass my word for their appearance.' 'Nay, that matters not much,' quoth the fellow; 'for I have such a warrant in my pocket as will fetch them again in the Devil's name.' Having thus said, he and mine host went to drink a pot of ale together, and laugh a while.

In the meantime our guest went up to his companions to relate how things were like to go with the fellow, but he needed not tell them, for they being all concerned, had listened at the stair's head to what the fellow had said, and therefore knowing in what case they were, they all agreed to contribute to the fellow's satisfaction; but they thinking five pounds were too much, grumbled at the demand, but was resolved to give that rather than fail and have further trouble. One of the two confederates seeing how matters went, and though he was willing to put a trick upon his companions, yet thought five pounds was too great a sum to get by waggery, he therefore made a proposal that he would go down to the fellow and mine host and treat with them, and he would

warrant to get the business off for a great deal less. They were soon content with the proposition, whereupon down he went, and after some time spent with mine host and the countryman, he returned, saying, ‘Come, come friends, draw your money, for I have ended the controversy, and I hope to your content. We must be noblemen, a noble apiece, in all forty shillings, is the sum agreed upon to compound this business, and herein we are much engaged to mine host for his civility, who hath much persuaded the fellow, and indeed the fellow by his persuasions is brought to be so civil that I have promised him half a crown for himself.’ All the company were all well contented with this composition, and thereupon readily laid down their money, which one of our confederates pretended to carry down to the fellow, but he put it up in his own pocket, only giving him the half crown he had promised, and ordering half a dozen of beer more for managing the affair so handsomely.

And thus was this adventure ended, and in short time the company separated ; but the two confederates soon came back again, and shared stakes of the money, and there they laughed at the easiness and credulity of their companions, and mine host was as merry as they, and had as much cause, for if the proverb be true, Let them laugh that win, he was sure to win most and therefore might well laugh. For he made them pay saucily for the sauces to their goose, and in the confusion they were then in, it was no hard matter to misreckon them several bottles of wine. The two confederates who only managed this affair to make sport and not for gain, delivered all their profits, which was 26s. 8d., into mine host’s hands to be spent two or three days after, when they were to bring more company to laugh at this adventure ; and I remember they then came, and mine host knowing they came easily by their money, was resolved to put in for a share of it, and so he did, and had it. For they had but three dishes of fish, but he again made them pay for their sauce, reckoning fourteen shillings for that and dressing it, although the fish itself did cost but half so much ; these were his tricks.

But there was about that time such a trick played by a mistake, as I have seldom heard of. Several companies were in the house and lodged there, and it being long nights, much of that tedious time was spent in gaming, and higgledy piggedly one with another, all companies mixed in that pastime. But it growing late, those that were weary and sleepy dropped away to bed. Among the rest, one man who had a very handsome woman to his wife went to bed, and his lodging was in a chamber where there was another bed. The man being in bed, laid his wearing clothes, *viz.*, doublet, breeches and cloak upon it, and putting out the candle went to sleep. In short time after, another single man who was to lodge in the bed in the same chamber went up, and walking

about, a conceit came into his head that it was probable he might have a she-bedfellow, and in order thereto he thus carried on his design. He put off his own clothes and laid them very orderly on the bed where the man was asleep, first taking off those of his chamber-fellow's ; and when he had done, he very fairly spread them on the bed he was to lie in. Having done this, he went to bed and put out his candle, expecting the event, which happened to be so as he hoped and expected. For not long after, up came the woman, intending to go to bed to her husband, undressed herself, and seeing and well enough knowing her husband's clothes, believing that to be a sufficient sign of her husband's being there, not looking on the face which was purposely hid, she put out her candle and went to bed to the wrong man ; who although he pretended then to be asleep, yet he did her right before morning ; for she still supposing it was her husband, gave him free liberty to do what he would.

Her bed-fellow, though he had taken much pains and was weary, yet towards morning considering that if this matter were discovered he might have sour sauce to his sweet-meat, studied and contrived how to come off as well as he had come on. Therefore turning to his bed-fellow and kissing her, &c. as a farewell, he pretended to rise and make water, and went out of the bed. He soon found the way to his chamber-fellow's bedside, and there took off his clothes, dressed himself, and departed. The woman missing her bed-fellow, which she thought had been her husband, much wondered what was become of him, and lay and studied in great confusion. She knew not what to do or say, and she began to distrust that she had a wrong bed-fellow, especially when she considered with herself that her husband was not wont to be so kind. When she was partly sensible of the mistake, she could not tell how to think of a remedy ; if she should arise and go into the other bed she might chance to be mistaken again, and therefore in this confusion she knew not what to do. Whilst she was in these thoughts a maid with a candle appeared, who passing through the room gave her clear sight that her husband was in the other bed ; she therefore resolved now to rise, take her clothes, and go to bed to her husband. But he who had slept hard all night was now awakened with the noise of the maid passing through the chamber, and therefore he leaps out of the bed and felt for a chamber-pot. At length he found one ; having used it, and going to return to bed where he had lain, his wife took the opportunity to call him, saying, 'Sweetheart, whither go you ? You mistake your bed.' 'No sure,' said the man, 'where are you ?' 'Here,' she said. He hearing her voice soon found out where she was, but could not be persuaded that he had lain there all night. 'You shall

see that by and by,' replied she, 'when you can see your clothes on this bed.' 'If it be so, then you are in the right,' said he, and that he agreed so soon after day light appeared and he seeing his clothes on the bed, was satisfied. And thus was his business done, and he not knew it, and the woman in the morning enquiring for the man who had been her chamber-fellow, could not find him. She was earnest in her enquiry after him, and this raised some jealousy in me, but I was soon after resolved of all by the man himself, who came again to our house and told me. This was a fine Christmas frolic. I will add one more, and so have done with them.

The fiddlers of our town having had good trading this Christmas were grown proud and surly, and had abused some gentlemen, who told mine host of it. He, who was good at inventing mischief, soon contrived a way to be revenged of them, and in order thereunto, the next day a considerable dinner was bespoke, and the fiddlers were sent for to attend and play to them, which they did all dinner. The gentlemen having dined, the fiddlers had the remains for their dinner, and then again they fell a-tuning their instruments and played lustily, whilst the guests drank of their cups as roundly. At length they fell to dancing, and many country dances they had, spending the day in all manner of jovial and sprightly recreations. The night being come, and therefore a fit time to put their plot in execution, they again danced several rambling dances. Anon they all desired and agreed to dance the cushion dance, which they did, and in their humours rambled from one room to another all over the house, this music pacing it afore them, and now one dropped away, and anon another, till in the end all the guests were gone, and none were left but the fiddlers, who still played on expecting their company. Mine host seeing it was now time, came into them, and causing them to cease their playing, asked where are the guests. They replied they knew not. 'No,' said he, 'if you do not find them you are like to suffer; for if you have played away my guests, you shall pay their reckoning.' He was so peremptory in his demands that it was to no purpose to contradict it; and the reckoning, amounting to three pounds, he made the five fiddlers pay ten shillings a man, and told them he was a loser in abating them ten shillings of his reckoning. They were forced and could not help it, and therefore paid down their dust, and they who had not money enough were fain to leave their fiddles, and go home without, and end Christmas to the tune of *Lachrymæ*.

## CHAPTER XII

*Mrs Dorothy discourses of mine host's misfortunes ; as first how he was cheated of a silver bowl : secondly of a thirty pound reckoning ; and thirdly, was carried away prisoner and forced to pay fifty pound for his ransom*

THUS, continued Mrs. Dorothy, was this revenge managed by mine host ; and the guests who had the reckoning of thirty pound to pay, came the next day and paid it, and then appointed to come the next week and spend the fifty shillings mine host had gotten from the fiddlers, which they did accordingly. And thus did we finish our Christmas. And now I will alter the nature and quality of my discourse, and as I have told you of mine host's good fortune and ways to get money, so I will acquaint you with some of his misfortunes and how he lost money. For Fortune was the same thing to him as she hath been to me, and I think to all others ; we all have our several turns and changes, sometimes we are on the top and anon on the bottom of Fortune's Wheel. And as this is, so is the world, round and rolling and still in motion, and so are our fortunes various.

I have already told you of one of my host's misfortunes in the quart pot, and how he was forced to pay twenty shillings instead of satisfaction which he expected. It was not long before that, that he had a more sensible loss, for one morning in comes a countryman which calls for a flagon of beer, and desires a private room, 'for,' says he, 'I have company a-coming to me, and we have business.' The tapster accordingly shews him a room, and brings a flagon of beer, and with it a silver cup worth three pound. The countryman drank off his beer, and called for another flagon, and withal for mine host to bear him company. Mine host seeing him alone, sat and talked with him about state affairs till they were both weary and mine host was ready to leave him. 'Well,' said the countryman, 'I see my company will not come, and therefore I will not stay no longer' ; neither did he, but having drank up his beer he called to pay. 'A groat,' quoth the tapster. 'There 'tis,' said the countryman, laying it down, and so he went out of the room. The tapster stayed behind to bring away the flagon and silver cup, but though he found the flagon, yet the cup was not to be found ; wherefore he hastily runs out and cries, 'Stop the man !' The countryman was not in such haste but that he quickly stopped of himself ; he was not quite out of the door, and therefore he soon returned to the bar, where when he was come, he said, 'Well, what is the matter ? What would you

have?' 'The cup,' said the tapster, 'that I brought to you.' 'I left it in the room,' said the countryman. 'I cannot find it,' said the tapster. At this noise mine host appeared, who hearing what was the matter said, 'I am sure the cup was there even now, for I drank in it.' 'It is there still, for me,' said the countryman. 'Look, then, further,' said mine host. The tapster did so, but neither high nor low could he find this cup. 'Well then,' said mine host to the countryman, 'if it be gone you must have it, or know of the going of it, and therefore you shall pay for it.' 'Not I,' said the countryman, 'you see I have none of it. I have not been out of your house, nor nobody hath been with me, how then can I have it? You may search me.' Mine host caused him to be searched, but there was no cup to be found; however, mine host was resolved not to lose his cup so, and therefore he sends for a constable, and charges him with the countryman, and threatens him with the justice. All this would not do, and the countryman told him that threatened folks live long, and if he would go before a justice, he was ready to go with him.

Mine host was more and more perplexed, and seeing he could not have his cup, nor nothing confessed, before the justice they went. When they came there mine host made his complaint, and told the story as truly it was, and the countryman made the same answer there as he had done before to mine host. The justice was perplexed, not knowing how to do justice. Here was a cup lost, and the countryman did not deny but he had it; but gone it was; and although the countryman was pursued he did not fly, he had nobody with him, and therefore it could not be conveyed away by confederacy; and for his own part he had been, and was again searched, but none found about him, and he in all respects pleaded innocence. This, though considered and weighed in the balance of justice, he could not think that the countryman had it, and therefore to commit him would be injustice. He considered all he could, and inclined to favour the countryman, who was altogether a stranger, and he believed innocent, especially when he considered what a kind of person mine host, his accuser, was, of whose life and conversation he had both known and heard enough, and caused him to believe that it might be possible that all this might be a trick of mine host to cheat the countryman. Therefore he gave his judgment that he did not believe the evidence that was given that the countryman had the cup, and that he would not commit him unless mine host would lay and swear point blank felony to his charge, and of that he desired mine host to beware. Mine host seeing which way it was like to go said no more but that he left it to Mr Justice, who being of the opinion I told you of, discharged the countryman and advised mine host to let him hear

no more of these matters, and if he could not secure his plate, and know what company he delivered it to, then to keep it up. Mine host thanked the justice for his advice, and so departed ; the countryman going about his business, and he returning home, being heartily vexed at his loss, and the carriage of the whole affair, which was neither for his profit nor credit. But he was forced to sit down with the loss, being heartily vexed to think how he should lose the cup. He threw away some money in going to a cunning-man to know what was become of it, but all they could tell him was that he would hear of it again, and so he did shortly after ; though it was to his further cost and to little purpose.

He had some occasions at our county town, during the time of the assizes, and there seeing the prisoners brought to their trial, among others he espied the countryman whom he had charged with the silver cup. By enquiring what was his crime he was told it was for picking a pocket. ‘ Nay then,’ said mine host, ‘ I may chance to hear of my bowl again,’ and thereupon, when the trial was over, and the prisoners carried back to the gaol, he went and enquired for the countryman, to whose presence he was soon brought. ‘ Oh Lord, master !’ said he, ‘ how do you ? Who thought to have seen you here ?’ ‘ Nay,’ said mine host, ‘ who thought to have seen you here ? I believe you have not met with so good friends in this county as you did at our town of our justice ; but let that pass, come let us drink together.’ Whereupon a flagon of beer was called for, and some tobacco, which they very lovingly drank off, and smoked together. Which done, said mine host to the countryman : ‘ I would gladly be resolved in one point which (I question not) but you can do.’ ‘ I suppose you mean,’ said the countryman, ‘ about the old business of the silver cup you lost.’ ‘ Yes, truly,’ said mine host, ‘ and the losing of it doth not so much vex me as the manner how it was lost ; and therefore,’ continued he, ‘ if you will do me the kindness to give me satisfaction what became of it, I do protest I will acquit you, although you are directly guilty.’ ‘ No, this will not do,’ replied the countryman, ‘ there is somewhat else in the case.’ ‘ Well then,’ said mine host, ‘ if you will tell me, I will give you ten shillings to drink.’ ‘ Ready money does very well in a prison,’ said the countryman, ‘ and will prevail much ; but how shall I be assured you will not prosecute me, if I should chance to be concerned ?’ ‘ For that,’ replied mine host, ‘ I can give you no other warrant, but my oath, which I inviolably keep.’ ‘ Well, then,’ said the countryman, ‘ down with the merry griggs, let me handle the money, and I’ll be very true to you ; and as for your charging me with it, I fear you not.’

Mine host being big with expectation to know how this cleanly conveyance was wrought, soon laid down the ten shillings ; and then

the countryman thus proceeded. ‘ I must confess that I know which way your cup went, but when you charged me with it I had it not ; neither was it out of the room ; and I must tell you this, that if you had sought narrowly you might have found it, but it was not there long after. We who live by our wits must work by policy more then downright strength, and this cannot be done without confederates, and I had such in the management of this affair. For I left the cup fastened with soft wax under the middle of the board of the table where I drank, which place of the table, by reason it was covered with a cloth, as you may remember it was, it could not well be seen, therefore you and your servants missed it. You know that very willingly I went with you to the justice ; and whilst we were gone those friends and confederates of mine whom I had appointed, and knew the room and everything else, went into the house and into the same room, where they found the silver cup, and without the least suspicion went fairly off with it. At a place appointed we met, and there acquainted one another with our adventures, and what purchases we had made, we equally shared them between us.’

Mine host, at the hearing of this discourse, was mightily surprized, although fully satisfied ; ‘ but yet,’ said he, ‘ I would be resolved one question, which is this, how if we had found it where you had put it whilst you were there ? ’ ‘ Why, truly,’ replied the cheat (for now I may call him so), ‘ then you could have charged me with nothing, and I would have put it off with a jest, and if that would not have done, the most you could have done had been only to have kicked and beaten me, and those things we of our quality must venture. You know the old proverb, Nothing venture, nothing have, and Faint heart never won fair Lady ; and we have this other proverb to encourage us, that Fortune helps the bold ; as it doth commonly those of our quality, and she did me I thank her in that attempt.’ And there did this varlet descant upon his actions, to the great satisfaction of mine host, who finding there was no more to be had of him, left him and soon after the town, coming home and giving us an account of this adventure.

And this was another of his misfortunes, which was soon after followed by another worse than the last, and thus it was. A company of pretending gallants one evening arrived at our house, and there was in their company a young lad of about ten years of age, on whom they all waited, giving him respect equal to a person of honour, and their master. They were soon furnished with lodgings, the best in the house, where they bespake a plentiful supper, which was provided, dressed, and sent to them. Mine host enquiring what and who the young gentleman

was, whom he supposed was their master, they told him that he was the son of a French Marquess, giving him a name to that purpose, and that his father, their lord and master, would in few days be there, likewise that they being recommended to this house by a friend of his, who warranted them good usage, they were come thither and there they intended to stay till their lord came. Mine host was highly pleased with this recital, and he questioned not the truth of it, because the young gentleman could not or would not speak any thing but a little gibberish French. These guests stayed there a fortnight, eating and drinking in most plentiful manner ; and every day some or all of them did ride out, leaving only one person to wait on their lord, and they came home very honestly at night. They had now been fourteen days and lain at wrack and manger, they and their horses ; and their bill amounted to thirty pounds. Which being a round sum of money, he began to try if he could get any, and to that end spake to him that was chief person next to the young lord. But he was deaf of that ear, and told him that it would not be above two or three days ere he was sure their lord himself would come, and then he should not only be paid, but also rewarded for the care and respect he had shewed to his son. Mine host was satisfied with their reasons, and so went about his business ; and so did this blade about his ; for calling a consultation of his brethren, they resolved to be gone the next day, and give mine host the go-by for his reckoning.

Therefore they so ordered the matter that that night, whilst they were at supper, and mine host with them, in enters another man, a new face, and enquired if my young lord such a one and his attendants were there ? ‘ Yes,’ said the hostler, who took his horse ; and then calling the chamberlain, he was conducted into the room where the rest of his acquaintance were. He being entered the room, made his obeisance to his young master ; and then putting his hand into his pocket pulled out a letter, which he presented to him. Another who sat next him took from him, opened and read, telling mine host that the letter was from their lord, who promised to be there with them by the next day at noon. Glad did they seem to be, and so was mine host, who thought now he was near the receiving of his money. The company then told him that he must provide a plentiful dinner, and that they would all ride forth in the morning to meet their old master, only they would leave their young master behind to his care. To this mine host was content, and the next morning they arose early, mounted their horses, and away they went, leaving their lord in bed. Mine host provided dinner according to the directions, and noon came, but no lord or attendants. At length dinner was forced to be taken up, or spoiled ;

and then the young lord was enquired for, who was still in bed and could not ride, for they had taken his fine clothes with them. In fine, upon search, an old country suit was found, which now our young lord owned to be his, and could speak English, saying they were gone and carried away his fine clothes. Mine host hearing he could speak English, asked him several questions, which the boy answered readily enough, and by that he understood that they took him up in those clothes and other rare matters, if he would go with them, be ruled by them, and learn a few heard words. So in conclusion mine host found to his cost that they were a company of cheats, who came to do that to him he had done to others ; and though his loss was great, yet he was forced to sit down contented. As for the boy, he being absolutely innocent, he was only turned out of the doors to seek his fortune. Thus he had his bitter with the sweet, and to his sweet meat he had sour sauce ; and although his loss was considerable enough, yet soon after he had another of worser consequence, and thus it was.

You must note, that it was now in the time of Rebellion, and there was a small garrison of soldiers quartered in our town, of the Roundheads' party, and about ten miles off there was another garrison of Cavaliers. Now one day there came to our town two gentlemen very well mounted and armed, and they had a pass from a Roundhead colonel, our neighbour ; and coming to our town, and enquiring for the best inn, they were directed to our house, where they took up their quarters. They pretended themselves to be persons of quality, and therefore spent pretty handsomely at first, but in their stay there, which was about eight days, they had run five pounds on the score. Mine host desiring his money, they told him he should have it, money was coming to them, but if he had not the patience to stay until their money came, then (he knew) that they had two good horses in his stable, and he should, in lieu of his money, have which he pleased, at such a rate as any indifferent person should adjudge the best of them to be worth. Mine host seeing them answer him so fair was as kind as they, and told them that he did believe them to be gentlemen of quality, and that he scorned to undervalue them so much as to dismount them and as they came on horseback to depart on foot, but that he had rather wait a while longer for the money, which they said they stayed for. They kindly thanked him for his courtesy, and promised him to requite it ; and thereupon all persons rested well satisfied. But no money coming at the time they said they expected, he again asked them for money ; and indeed it was their desire that he should do so, or else the design they had in hand and intended to carry on could not be well executed.

Therefore, that they might bring their project to execution, they again offered him one of their horses. He had a great mind to one of them, having a customer that would give him a very good price ; he told them that since they were so willing he was so too, and that they might possibly have their horse again when their money came. ‘ It is all as one for that,’ replied the gentlemen, ‘ we had rather go without horses than you should be dissatisfied, and therefore choose which of the two you will have.’ ‘ They being both good,’ said he, ‘ I care not which of them.’ ‘ To that end, if you please, to-morrow we will all three ride out of the town a mile or so, and then you may conclude which you like best, and as for the price we will well enough agree upon that.’

To this mine host consented, and the next day they all three mounted their horses, and away they rode. But it was to the great sorrow of us all, for these gentlemen who had lain thus long in our house were Cavaliers, and belonged to the adjoining garrison, and when they had drawn mine host with them as far as they could willingly persuade him, and when he offered to return, they then drew, and with sword in one hand and pistol in the other, they came up to him and commanded him to stand, for he was their prisoner. He asked them for what, and would have disputed the case with them, but it was to no purpose ; they were deaf to all persuasions, and he living in a Roundhead garrison they concluded him to be one, and therefore he was their lawful prisoner, and as one they would guard him to their quarters. So they said, and so they did ; and taking his sword from him, they caused him to ride on apace till they brought him to their quarters. Before their commander they conducted him, who adjudged him to be a prisoner, and the next day resolved on his ransom, which he valued at a hundred pounds. The one half he ordered the gentlemen should have, and the other to be divided among the indigent soldiers. This was his doom ; and now my poor host was delivered into custody. He writ away to his wife to acquaint her with this doleful news ; she could not raise so much money, and therefore he was like to continue ; but in the end, by the assistance of some gentlemen who were guests to the house and Cavaliers, she got one half of the ransom to be abated, and so the fifty pounds being sent, he was delivered up and came home to cheer his wife and family.

## CHAPTER XIII

*At the execution of a felon several cheaters meet, and seeing a countryman draw a purse of money, resolve to cheat him of it, which they do first by a brass chain, and afterwards by drawing him in to bet at gaming : they were again cheated by mine host, and the principal cheat comically punished*

MISTRESS DOROTHY here putting a stop to her discourse, we thereby understood she had finished ; wherefore I thus discoursed her. ‘ Truly, now, I find that to be true of your host, which I have experimented in myself, and that we must meet with many rubs and misfortunes, but these were but trivial to him considering his great comings in by his extraordinary gain in trading.’ ‘ That’s true,’ replied Mrs Dorothy, ‘ but as he had considerable gain, so he had many ways to spend it, and many spenders, his wife and children being all as expensive as might be, and what was got over the Devil’s back was spent under the Devil’s belly. Therefore, though much money went through his hands in a year, yet it went through, and little stuck there or stayed with him, so that he was seldom master of any considerable sum of money. Therefore it went hard to raise this sum of money, and some of his plate was fain to march off to produce it ; but that being paid and he come home, we were all well enough satisfied, and he told his wife this was most certainly the fortune of war ; but he questioned not but in short time he would fetch it up again ; as indeed he did in using those several ways I have told you of. And now I hope,’ said she, ‘ I have told you enough to satisfy your curiosity.’ ‘ Truly,’ replied I, ‘ you have taken a great deal of pains, but if you have any more in your budget, out with them, for what you have hitherto related hath not only been pleasant but profitable, and very full of variety.’ ‘ Well,’ replied she, ‘ since you have it so, I will proceed a little further, and recount some passages as considerable as any you have hitherto heard.’

There was not long before this time a bloody murder committed, for an honest countryman that lived about six miles from us, one market day was driving his team of horses and cart laden with corn to our town to sell, and being come about half way, he was met by a lusty tatterdemallion rascal that was on foot, travelling on the road. He first asked the countryman to give him something, telling him he was a poor traveller and had been robbed. Quoth the countryman, ‘ Friend, I

have nothing to give you, for I have no money, being now going to market with this corn to make money of it.' The fellow seemed to rest contented with this answer, and thereupon walked on with the countryman ; but they had not gone far but the Devil entering into this fellow, persuaded him he might have a great prize, and therefore still walking on he at length seeing the road clear of passengers, and a convenient place for him to put his purpose in practice, with a lusty cudgel he had in his hand, struck the poor countryman over the head, that down he fell a sprawling, and not content therewith, drew him a little out of the road, and in most cruel manner cut his throat. Having this done, he seizes the fore-horse of the team and leads him also with the team and cart out of the road to a convenient place, where he stops ; and then drawing the body of the murdered countryman to a ditch-side, he there made a hole, and having stripped him of all his clothes, buried him ; and stripping himself of those rags he had on, and putting on the countryman's clothes, he buried his own with the countryman's body. Having thus done he led the team into the road again.

This was done one winter's morning early, before day, and so he had the conveniency to do all this without interruption ; and now with whip in hand, and habited like a countryman, he drives on to our town to market. He took up his standing at the usual place, and had the good fortune not to be questioned of anybody, but enquiring how the rates of corn went, he accordingly sold his at as good price as any. He not only made money of his corn, but hearing there was a horse-fair that day at a town but three miles off, and having dispatched betimes, he drove thither and soon had a customer for both horses and cart ; and there he bought him a saddle horse to ride on. Being thus fitted to his purpose, he was not long ere he met with a company of shirks and cheats, who intending to chouse him ; he was too crafty for them, enters himself into their society, and by degrees became a Knight of the Pad, an absolute highwayman. But the Devil who had set him to work was not long ere he paid him his wages, for he was pursued for a robbery he had committed, and so narrowly followed that he was forced to take the water. To cross a river he leaped in on horseback, but the horse was soon drowned, and he narrowly escaped to a little island in the river, where he was still in sight of his pursuers. They getting a boat came up to him ; he being armed attempted to discharge a pistol, but by reason the powder was wet it would not off, whereupon they coming nearer to him he drew his sword ; and though there were three in the boat, he kept them from landing. And being resolved to sell his life at a dear rate, he killed one of them outright and wounded another ; but now another boat with more help coming, he was in danger to be lost.

Wherefore, putting his sword in his mouth he again took the water, and swam away, and they after him ; but at length seeing it was in vain to resist he suffered himself to be taken, and bound, led away to the justice and thence to prison ; where he believing he must die, grew somewhat penitent and not only confessed the fact he was then accused for, but among other mischiefs he likewise acknowledged the murder and robbery I have told you off.

The assizes being come, and he tried and confessing, he was condemned to be hanged in chains at the place where he committed the murder. This being not above a mile from our town, at the day of execution it drew most of the people out of it to see the end of this wicked wretch, who did somewhat penitently, but his penitence and repentance did not work one jot upon others of his quality who were there present ; but as commonly one wedding-feast begets another wedding, so one execution does usually produce another ; and they who are spectators at one execution, in short time come to be executed themselves. Whether there were any persons at this execution that did soon after take his turn I know not, but I am sure there were present many cheats, and pickpockets, and such sort of people, for our town was that day pretty well thronged with them. Among other practices that was used, this was one.

Two or three cheaters going together saw a countryman who had a purse of money in his hand. They had observed him to draw it to pay for some gingerbread he bought on the way ; wherefore they closed with him, and endeavoured to nip his bung, pick his pocket ; but could not, for he knowing he was in a dangerous place and among as dangerous company, put his purse of money into his breeches, which being close at the knees, secured it from falling out, and besides, he was very fly in having anybody come too near him. Our practitioners in the art of thievery seeing this would not do, set their wits a-working further ; and having all their tools about them in readiness, taking a convenient time and place, one of them goes before and drops a letter ; another of his companions who had joined himself to our countryman seeing it lie fairly for the purpose, says to him, ‘ Look you, what is here ? ’ But although the countryman did stoop to take up the letter, yet the cheat was too nimble for him in that, and having it in his hand said, ‘ Here is somewhat else besides a letter.’ ‘ I cry half,’ said the countryman. ‘ Well,’ said the cheat, ‘ indeed you stooped as well as I, but I have it ; however I’ll be fair with you. But let us see what it is, and whether it is worth the dividing.’ Thereupon he breaks open the letter, and there sees a fair chain or neck-lace of gold. ‘ Good Fortune,’ says the cheater, ‘ if this be right gold.’ ‘ How shall we know that ? ’ said the countryman.

'Let us see what the letter says,' which being short and to the purpose spake thus :

Brother John, I have here sent you back this necklace of gold you sent me ; not for any dislike I have to it, but my wife is covetous and would have a bigger. This comes not to above seven pounds, and she would have one of ten pounds ; therefore I pray get it changed for one of that price, and send it by this bearer to your loving brother, *N. B.*

'Nay, then we have good luck,' said the cheater. 'But I hope,' said he to the countryman, 'you will not expect a full share, for you know I found it ; and besides, if we should divide it, I know not how to break it in pieces, but I doubt it would spoil it, therefore I had rather have my share in money.' 'Well,' said the countryman, 'I'll give you your share in money, provided I may have a full share.' 'That you shall,' said the cheater, 'and therefore I must have of you three pounds ten shillings, the price in all being as you see, seven pounds.' 'Aye, but,' said the countryman (thinking to be too cunning for the cheat) 'it may be worth seven pounds in money in all, fashion and all, but we must not value that but only the gold ; therefore I think three pounds in money is better than half the chain, and so much I'll give you if you will let me have it.' 'Well content,' said the cheat, 'but then you shall give me a pint of wine over and above.' To this the countryman also agreed, and to our town they came, and into our house, and there the cheat had the three pounds and the countryman the chain, believing he had that day risen with his a— upwards, because he had met with so good fortune.

They drank off their drink, and were going away, but the cheat not having yet done with him (he intended to get the rest of the money from him) offered him his pint of wine, which the countryman accepted of. But before they had drank it off, in comes another of the same tribe who asked whether such a man, naming one, were there. 'No,' said the bar-keeper. Our cheater (the countryman sitting near the cheat), asked of the enquirer, 'Did you not ask for such a man ?' 'Yes,' said the enquirer. 'Why,' said our cheater, 'I can tell you this news of him that it will not be long ere he comes hither, for I met him as I came in ; and he appointed me to come in here and stay for him.' 'Well, then I were best to stay,' said the enquirer ; 'but,' continued he, 'we were best to take a bigger room, for we cannot stir ourselves in this.' 'Agreed,' said the cheater ; so the reckoning was paid and they agreed to take a larger room, leaving word at the bar that if any enquiry were made for them there they should find them. They went into another room, and our countryman having done his business would be going. 'No,' said

the cheater, ‘ I pray stay and keep us company, it shall cost you nothing.’ ‘ Well, then,’ said the countryman, ‘ I am content to stay a little.’

They being now entered into their room, called for a quart of wine and drank it off. ‘ What shall we do to spend time?’ said the last cheater. ‘ I am weary of staying for this man, are you sure you are not mistaken?’ ‘ No,’ said the other. One of them then pretends to walk a turn in the room, and coming to the window, behind a cushion he pretends to find a pack of cards (which indeed he himself had laid there). ‘ Look you here,’ said he to the countryman and th’other, ‘ I have found some tools; now we may go to work and spend our time, if you will play.’ ‘ Not I,’ said the countryman, ‘ I’ll never play.’ ‘ Then I will,’ said the other cheat, ‘ but not for money.’ ‘ Why then,’ said the other, ‘ for sixpence to be spent and the game put.’ They being agreed, and my countryman being made overseer of the game, fell to playing, and the countryman’s first acquaintance had the better of it, winning twelve games to the other’s four. ‘ Come,’ said he, ‘ what shall we do with all this drink? We will play twopence wet and four-pence dry.’ To this the other agreed, and so they played, and at this low gaming the first cheat had in short time won of the second ten shillings in money. The second seemed to be angry, and therefore proposed to play for all money, hoping to making himself whole again. ‘ Nay,’ said the other, ‘ I shall not refuse your proposition, because I have won your money.’ Therefore to it they went, and the first cheater had still the same luck, and won ten shillings more. Then the other would play for twelve pence a game. ‘ No,’ said the first cheater, ‘ I am not willing to exceed sixpence a game. I will not alter what I have begun, lest I change luck, unless this honest countryman will go my halves.’ ‘ I have no mind to gaming,’ replied the countryman. ‘ You need not play,’ said the other, ‘ I’ll do that. You see my luck is good, venture a crown with me, you know both our luck has been, and I hope will continue good.’ ‘ Well, content,’ said the countryman, and so they proceeded.

Still our first cheat had good fortune, and he and the countryman won ten shillings a-piece more of the other, which made them merry; and the other was mad. He therefore told them he would win the horse, or lose the saddle, and venture all now; and drawing out about thirty shillings, said, ‘ Come take it all, win it and wear it’; and so they played. But they had now drawn the countryman in sufficiently, and he was flush; but it lasted not long thus ere he was taken down a button-hole lower, for the fortune changed, and all that he had won was lost, and forty shillings more. He was now angry, but to no purpose, for he did not discover their foul play; and he, in hopes of his good

fortune, ventured and lost the other forty shillings. Then he said he would go halves no longer, for he thought he would be merry and wise, and if he could not make a winning he would be sure to make a saving bargain ; which he reckoned he should do, because although he had lost four pounds in money and given the cheat three pounds for his share of the chain, that yet he should make seven pounds of the chain, and so be no loser. They seeing he would not play left off, and he that had won the money was content to give a collation, which was called for.

But our first cheat pretending much anger at his loss, was resolved to venture more ; and to playing again he went, and in short time he recovered much of his losses. This angered the countryman that he had not joined with him, and in the end, seeing his good luck continued, and that he won, he again went halves, but then it was not long that they thrived but the countryman was forced to draw his purse, and in the end lose all his money, which was near twenty pounds. He did not think his condition to be so bad as it was, because he believed he had a chain worth seven pounds in his pocket, and therefore he reckoned he had not lost all.

By this time several of the rest of the gang (having been abroad, employed on the same account cozening and cheating of others) now flocked all to our house, being the place appointed for their rendezvous. There they acquainted one another of their several gains and prizes, and then they fell a-drinking ; they drank about lustily for joy, and the countryman for anger ; and mine host was called up to make one in the company. He soon understood what kind of guests he had, and how they had cheated the poor countryman ; and therefore he was resolved to serve them in the same kind. He therefore put forward the affairs of drinking, and some being hungry called for victuals. He told them he would get them what they pleased, and they being determined to take up their quarters there for that night, a supper was bespoke for all the company, such as mine host in his discretion should think fit. He told them they should have it, and accordingly went down to provide supper. He soon returns and helps them to drink whilst supper was dressing. By this time they were all perfectly drunk ; he then commands up supper, and they fall to with a shoulder of mutton and two capons, eat and drink hard, and call for more. He tells them it is coming, but they now having sat still a while were all fallen asleep. He makes use of this opportunity, and brings up half a dozen empty foul dishes, or at leastwise full of bones of several fowls, as pigeons, partridges, pheasants, and all the remains of victuals that had been left in the house that day, and strews and places some on their several trenchers, and thus he leaves them.

Some of them sleeping, and sitting uneasily fell from their chairs and so awakened themselves ; and their companions being thoroughly awaked, they again fell to eating and drinking. Some turning over the bones that were brought said, ‘ How came these here ? I do not remember that I ate any such victuals.’ ‘ Nor I,’ said another. Whereupon mine host was called and the question was asked him. ‘ Why surely, gentlemen, you forget yourselves,’ said he, ‘ you have slept fair. I believe you will forget the collar of brawn you had, too, that cost me six shillings out of my pocket.’ ‘ How ! Brawn ?’ said one. ‘ Aye, brawn,’ said mine host, ‘ you had it, and are like to pay for it. You remember nothing anon, this is a fine drunken bout indeed.’ ‘ So it is,’ said one of the company; ‘ sure we have been in a dream ; but it matters not, mine host, you must and shall be paid. Give us the other dozen bottles, and bring a bill, that we may pay our reckoning.’ This order was obeyed and a bill brought, which in all came to seven pounds ; and I verily believe he misreckoned them for meat and drink, the one half, and told them he used them very kindly. They were bound to believe him, and therefore every man was called to pay their shares. My countryman shrunk behind, intending to escape, which one of the company seeing, called him forwards, and said, ‘ Come, we must tell noses, and every man pay alike.’ The countryman desired to be excused, and said he had no money ; which they knowing well enough, at length agreed to acquit him.

This done, they went to their several lodgings to bed, and it was time, for it was past midnight. They all slept better than the countryman, who could hardly sleep a wink for thinking of his misfortunes, and having such good luck in the morning it should prove so bad ere night. But morning being come, he and they all arose, and the countryman’s money being all spent, he knew it was to no purpose for him to stay there. Wherefore he resolved to go to the goldsmith’s in the town and sell or pawn his chain, that he might have some money to carry him home. Being come to the goldsmith’s he produced the chain, which although at the first sight he thought to be gold, yet upon trial he found it otherwise, and that it was but brass gilt. He tells the countryman the same, who at this heavy news was like to break his heart. The goldsmith seeing the countryman in such a melancholy dump, enquires of him how he came by it. He soon acquainted him with the manner and every circumstance ; the goldsmith as soon understood the cheat, and advises him to go to the justice and get a warrant for him that had thus cheated him. The countryman telling him that he had no money, nor friend, being a stranger, he himself went with him to the justice, who soon understanding the matter, granted his warrant. The goldsmith

procured a constable to go with him to our house, where the first cheater was apprehended and carried before the justice ; who upon examination explained the case, and finding the fellow guilty, ordered that he should be led to the whipping post and there be whipped, and then be sent on a horseback, with his face towards the horse tail, and so led out of the town. And withal, the justice sent away the constable to our house to apprehend and bring the rest of the gang before him ; but he came too late, for the birds were flown, doubting some such matter ; so that only the first cheater suffered the punishment aforesaid. But I remember he was so impudent that when he came by our house on horseback, with his face to the horse tail, ‘ Ah, ha ! ’ said one, ‘ what is the meaning of this ? ’ ‘ Nothing,’ said the cheater, ‘ but that this horse is given me, and I am resolved to ride this way to make good the proverb, that I may not look a gift horse in the mouth.’

## CHAPTER XIV

*Two shoemakers are cheated of a pair of boots, and mine host gets another pair of them : mine host and one of the shoemakers find out the cheater, who is apprehended and sent to prison, but is released by the judge for an enterprize of his companions, who acted wonderful feats by sleight of hand*

THUS was every one a gainer but the poor countryman, who was forced to march home by Weeping Cross, only with a brass chain worth eighteen pence, instead of above twenty pounds which he had brought out with him. Mine host gained indifferently well, but the cheaters more, being fully freighted. But as they got it easily so they spent it merrily, and then went to work for more ; though they divided the spoil equally between them, yet none had the punishment but the chain merchant, and I believe he had as many lashes on the back as there was links on the chain. He took his punishment very patiently, only when the blow came he would shrink up his shoulders, which a stander-by seeing, told him that did him more harm than good. ‘ It is no matter for that, friend,’ said the cheater, ‘ you may spare your instructions, for I shall not follow them ; and now I am to be whipped I will do as I list, and when you come to the same sport, and it is your turn to be whipped, you may behave yourself then as you please.’ Thus was he pleasantly roguish when he was in the midst of his punishment, and when he was on horseback he answered the people as roguishly as

I told you ; but being come to the town's end he was dismounted, and sent packing. Thus were we rid of one crew of cheats, but truly, if all the cheats of the town had been served as this was, mine host must also have marched off, who had he had his due, did as justly deserve it. But it is the little sort of knaves and rogues that are punished, the greater escaping scot free, as now mine host did. After this trick we had another that was altogether as pleasant, and before the finishing of it, there were some pleasant passages, and thus it was.

A gentleman cheater comes to our house, and stays there a day ; walks about the town to find some purchase, but lost his labour. He seeing there was no money to be had, was resolved to play at small game rather than stand out ; and somewhat, therefore, he would do, if it were but to bear his charges. He had observed that there were but two shoemakers in the town, one at the one end and the other at the other end. He saw they were well furnished with boots and he wanted a pair ; he therefore coming home to his quarters, sent our boy to one of the shoemakers to desire him to come to our house, to bring a pair of boots to a gentleman. The shoemaker, in hopes of a good customer, returns with the boy, and brings two or three pair. Our gentleman tries them on, and at last is pleased with one pair, only one of them was too little in the instep. 'For that,' said the shoemaker, 'it is a small fault, and I can remedy it in an hour's time by putting it on the last.' Our gentleman intending that so he should, asked what price. Eighteen shillings was demanded, but fifteen was the price agreed upon. 'Well,' said the gentleman, 'carry back the boot that is so defective and put it on the last ; let it stay on it two hours at least, and then come and bring it and take your money.' 'Very good,' said the shoemaker ; and so taking up the remainder of the boots he departed, not distrusting any thing, and not thinking any man who had two legs could much advantage himself with one single boot.

Our gentleman being now master of one boot was resolved to have another, and therefore he again calls the boy and desires him to go to the other shoemaker and wish him to come and bring a pair of boots ; 'for,' said he, 'the other shoemaker you brought could not fit me.' The boy believed him, not thinking of the transaction, it being done privately in his chamber. The boy went, and brings the other shoemaker with him, who likewise brought two or three pairs of boots ; our gentleman likewise tries them, and choosing that pair that was likest to the other he had, he likewise agreed with the shoemaker upon price ; but made the same exceptions with this last, as he had done with the former, advising him to put the boot on the last for one hour and a half, and at that time to come exactly and receive his money. Away went the

shoemaker with the rest of his boots, leaving the odd one behind, and no sooner was he gone but our gentleman draws on his new boots, and calling for a reckoning paid it, and his horse being bridled and saddled he mounted and away he rode.

At the time appointed both the shoemakers came, so justly together that they met at the gate each of them with a boot under his arm. They both asked for our gentleman, but hearing he was fled and gone, they both looked blank upon the matter. Mine host was present, and understanding the story laughed heartily at it ; they knew not whether they should be angry or pleased, but being both brothers of a trade and both served alike, they resolved to laugh too, though it were but with one side of their mouths ; and so they sat them down and drank together. One pot drew down another, and being of the gentle craft they were both good fellows, and at length a bottle of wine they called for. Mine host seeing them in a merry vain said, ‘ Gentlemen, I’ll make a proposition to you, since the gentleman hath made a pair of two odd boots do you so too and let these as the other two go together, and therefore flip up cross or pile, who shall have both.’ ‘ Aye but,’ said one, ‘ I am not willing to hazard my boot for nothing ; therefore thus I propose it. Let us have the other bottle of wine, and then let us flip cross or pile and take our chance ; and he that hath the fortune to have both the boots shall pay the reckoning.’ ‘ Agreed,’ said the other, and so they proceeded ; and he whose chance it was to have both the boots did not only agree to pay the reckoning but also called for another bottle of wine.

Mine host still kept them company, and helped them to laugh at the frolic, and now they were gotten into so merry a vein they resolved to club for the other bottle, which they likewise in short time drank off. Mine host having a design upon them for the boots, seeing them merry, said thus. ‘ Gentlemen, I made one proposition to you, even now and you agreed upon it ; I have another to make, which I question not but you will assent to. But in the first place, I pray tell me the just price of the boots.’ ‘ Truly,’ replied the master of them, ‘ I was to have fifteen shillings of the gentleman for them ; but they are really worth fourteen shillings.’ ‘ Well then,’ replied mine host, ‘ my reckoning comes to six shillings ; now if you please I’ll venture my reckoning, which is near half of what your boots are worth, against them, and flip up cross or pile whether I shall have the boots for my reckoning or nothing.’ ‘ We’ll make no dry bargain,’ said the third person, ‘ we’ll have some wine to boot, or no boots shall be ventured.’ ‘ Well,’ said mine host, ‘ then I will add another bottle of wine to the reckoning.’ Thus all parties being agreed, cross and pile being flipped up, mine host had his chance and the boots ; and thus he gained what the other lost, and

neither of the shoemakers could laugh at one another for their loss was equal.

And thus was this pair of liquored boots converted into liquor, and that drank up, and this was the end of the adventure of the boots for the present, but it was not quite finished, for mine host who again had some business at the assizes, went to the country town where it was kept, and there he met with one of the shoemakers, his neighbour. He had then the same boots on that he had in a manner gained by chance ; and therefore remembering the jest, they went in to drink at the next two-pot house. There they were jesting and laughing at the passage of the boots when on a sudden mine host looking out of the window called to the shoemaker, ‘ Look you here quickly, and I think I can shew you your boot merchant.’ The shoemaker looked out and saw him, for it was he indeed, with the very boots on his legs. He was walking by in company of others, who by their garb and mien did seem to be persons of quality. The shoemaker would have run out and seized on him, but mine host would not permit it, only advising him to follow him, and see him housed. The shoemaker followed mine host’s directions, and saw his quarters, and upon enquiry found that he was to continue there for some time ; wherefore he returned to mine host and acquainted him of his intelligence. They thereupon advised together what was most convenient to be done, and concluded that mine host should go into his company, and acquaint him that the shoemaker expected satisfaction for his boots, and it may be he is a gentleman of quality, and only did it in a frolic and will now pay well enough for it. ‘ But,’ said mine host, ‘ if I find him to be otherwise, we can soon have a warrant to apprehend him, and have him punished.’ This was reckoned to be sober and the best advice, and accordingly it was managed.

That evening mine host seeing him walking alone in the inn yard went and spake to him, telling him if he were not mistaken he thought he knew him. Our gentleman surveying mine host replied, certainly no, but however if he would go into a room, he would gladly drink with him. To this mine host consented ; they being come into a room, drank and smoked together. Mine host again asking him if he were not long since at our town ? ‘ Yes,’ said the gentleman. ‘ And I pray you, where did you lodge ? ’ ‘ At such an inn,’ replied the gentleman, naming ours. ‘ Why, then,’ replied mine host, ‘ I am not mistaken, and if you please to call to mind you may remember me to be the master of the house.’ ‘ Oh ! I cry you mercy,’ replied the gentleman. ‘ Now I know you ; I did partly remember you, but could not call to mind where I had seen you ; but I pray what affair has brought you hither ? ’ ‘ No great matter,’ replied mine host, ‘ only a little curiosity.’ ‘ That’s

'well,' said the gentleman. 'But,' said mine host, 'methinks your boots and mine look as if they were somewhat of kin together. I pray where did you buy them?' 'Why, that may well be,' replied our gentleman, 'for I bought them in your town.' 'But, sir, I pray be not angry,' said mine host, 'did you ever pay for them?' 'Why do you ask?' said the gentleman. 'Because,' said mine host, 'if you did, then you are slandered and abused.' 'And what if I did not pay for them?' said the gentleman. 'Why then,' said mine host, 'you are best to do it, for the men of whom you had them are both my neighbours.' 'Well, well,' said the gentleman, 'no more of this, for I paid for them as much as I will do.' Mine host seeing him so absolute, said no more to him of that matter, but drank off their drink, and clubbed for their reckoning, which being paid he again at parting said thus; 'Sir, it will be for your credit to pay for the boots. I know all the story, and if you will not pay now, one time or other you will be forced to it to your cost and trouble.' 'Do not you trouble your head with that,' replied the gentleman, 'let it alone till that day comes.' 'Take your own course,' said mine host. 'And you yours,' said the gentleman, and so they parted.

Mine host having had this huffing answer, made further enquiry what this person was, and found that he was no better than a cheat, and one that came thither for no other purpose. He therefore tells his neighbour the shoemaker of all passages, and advises him to get a warrant to apprehend him and carry him before the judge. He who was forward enough before, now went directly and made his complaint to the judge that evening, telling him all the circumstances of the matter. The judge asked him if he had enquired what quality he was of. He answered, yes, he was suspected to be no better than a pickpocket, or cut-purse. 'Well then,' replied the judge, 'bring him hither to morrow morning before I go to the court.' Our shoemaker did not fail in a tittle, but the next morning seized on him in his chamber and carried him immediately before the judge. When they came there, the shoemaker made his complaint, and mine host was there present, not only to justify it, but to produce the very fellows, which indeed were easily enough to be known to be so; and they so managed their evidence that the gentleman cheat had little or nothing to say for himself, and therefore he was committed to prison.

It happened at this time that the judge had a kinsman with him who was somewhat wild, and only rode about the progress with him to see fashions; and he had one scurvy humour, which was this; he had a good estate and was full of money; and therefore in a prodigal vapouring way he would carry a purse with near a hundred pieces of gold in it,

in his pocket, and this he would always carry about with him, and upon all occasions, though never so trivial he would be drawing his purse and shewing his gold. The judge his uncle, knowing it, had oft times chid him for it, telling him that one time or other he would have his pocket picked and lose it. He would not take any warning, but still replied he would warrant none could pick his pocket, so that his uncle, the judge, did wish many times that he might lose it, and so be broken of that foolish vainglorious humour. Our cheat being now in prison, his companions, who were all workmen in the same trade, were very much troubled at his loss, because he would have done them much service ; and to be so taken up for so trivial a matter as a pair of boots much vexed them, and they knew there was no recovering him without the judge's favour. They therefore resolved to put themselves in the best equipage they could and go to him ; accordingly that night they went, and told him they were humble petitioners to his honour for a poor friend of theirs whom his honour had commited about a pair of boots, and they hoped his honour would release him, because they very well knew he was wrongfully accused, being a gentleman by birth, and of a very good house, &c. To this the judge gave ear, and told them that he very well understood the quality of their friend ; and theirs also, 'but,' said he, 'for once I shall pass by this business upon one condition.' To this they replied any condition he pleased. He then being resolved what to do, commanded all his servants and attendants out of the room, and told them he well understood their qualities, and had occasion to make use of them in an affair, telling them that he had such a one, his kinsman, who carried a purse of money in his pocket. 'Now,' said he, 'I would have some of you to follow him and get it from him and bring it to me untouched, and then I promise not only to pardon you, but also to deliver your friend to you.' They hearing the judge's proposition stared one upon another, not knowing what answer to give ; wherefore, he again told them that this he expected from them, or else their friend should suffer. They thought fit to answer him with silence, and so departed. When they were gone they consulted together what was to be done, and believing there would be no great difficulty nor harm in the doing it, resolved to effect it accordingly. Therefore, the next morning they waited at the judge's door, and seeing his kinsman, they found means to perform their enterprize and got the purse of gold without any considerable difficulty ; and forthwith pretending business to the judge, they delivered it to him. He nodded them an answer, advising them to come to him in the evening ; they did so and he gave them a discharge for their friend. But that he might do equal justice, he commanded them to pay the shoemaker for the boots, and gave them a

piece of gold to drink ; they very thankfully received it and did accordingly.

The judge's kinsman being come out of the court had occasion for money, but seeking his purse found he had lost it. This perplexed him to the heart ; but although the loss was considerable, yet the vexation that his uncle must know it was more. He was exceeding melancholy and discontented, and his uncle enquired and sent for him, yet he would hardly come into his presence. His uncle knew well enough what disease he was sick of, but he asked him again and again what he ailed, and what was the matter. He still answered him with silence, turning away his head. Supper-time being come they sat down together, but the young man would not eat a bit. 'What will you eat ?' said his uncle. 'Nothing,' said he. 'Go fetch me a dish of partridges,' said the judge ; 'it is a dish I know you love.' The meat was brought, but the young man could eat nothing. 'You shall eat,' said his uncle, 'before you rise, and I will have a dish shall please you ; and therefore,' said he to the waiters, 'go bring up the dish I commanded should be last brought up.' They thereupon went down, and brought up a dish covered. 'Come,' said the old man, 'eat some of this.' 'I cannot,' said the kinsman. 'You must and shall,' said the uncle, 'and I pray uncover the dish and serve me some.' The young man seeing his uncle so importunate, and believing because the dish was covered that it might be a dish of stewed apples, resolved to uncover the dish and satisfy his uncle by eating a little of that. Wherefore, at his uncle's importunity he uncovered the dish ; when he beheld instead of stewed apples there was a better sort of fruit, it was his own purse of gold. He no sooner saw it, 'How,' said his uncle, 'I told you I would please you before you did rise from supper, and I think I have done so.' The young man smiling thanked him, and then reaching to the dish of partridges, he fell to lustily, and did eat as hearty a meal as ever. Thus did the recovery of his purse of gold recover his stomach, as indeed I think it would do any other's, it being to him and all others as good a sauce as a cordial.

And now although the young man was well enough pleased that he had recovered his purse, yet he was vexed that his uncle should thus discover his folly, and studied how he might be revenged on his uncle. He knew very well that his purse was taken from him by some cunning cheat, and that by his uncle's consent ; and it was not long ere, upon enquiry, he found out the manner and also the people who did it. He gave them therefore a piece to drink and told them that he would give them twenty pounds more if they would do him one piece of service ; they seeing there was money coming, promised him to do anything in

their power ; he then told them that it was indeed a high attempt, but he would pay them as largely, and save them harmless. This it was ; he would have them pick the pocket of the judge as he sat on the bench. They told him it was both difficult and dangerous. ‘ As for the difficulty,’ said he, ‘ I’ll make such means that one of you shall come near him, and for the danger, I will take of his anger, and pay you as I have said.’ To this they at length consented and the next day put in execution ; for when the judge was most busy examining witnesses, he that was the artist that was to perform this approaches the bench. The young man sitting next the judge, his uncle, beckons the pickpocket, and he comes up, and under pretence of whispering the young man in the ear, picked the old man’s pocket, and carried off the purse cleverly. When he had so done he descended, and stood among the other spectators. In short time after the causes were heard, and one man who had laid long in prison only for his fees, petitioned the judge to mitigate and lessen them that he might be able to pay them. ‘ Where’s the jailor ?’ said the judge. ‘ Here, my Lord,’ said the jailor. ‘ What fees do you demand of this poor man ?’ said the judge. ‘ Twenty shillings, my Lord, if it please you, and it is no more than what your Lordship ordered me at the lowest.’ ‘ Then,’ said my Lord, ‘ you must have so much ; I cannot help it ; I must not make laws one day and break them another, I had rather pay the money out of my own purse than do so.’ His kinsman who sat next him, thought this was a very good opportunity to speak, and therefore thus he said ; ‘ May it please your honour ; I had good fortune yesterday, as your Lordship knows, and therefore am resolved to do some charitable act, and I think this of releasing this poor prisoner who lies for his fees will be none of the least ; wherefore, whereas your Honour motions paying all this poor man’s fees, I make this offer, that if you please to pay one ten shillings, I will pay the other, that the poor man may be discharged.’ ‘ A very good motion,’ said the judge. The young man soon found the way to his purse, and pulled out an angel ; but the judge, although he searched both pockets, could find neither money nor purse. He was therefore much surprized, not knowing what to say nor think, but quickly recollecting himself, thus he spake, ‘ I am sure, my friends, when I came in hither I had a purse of money in my pocket, but now I cannot find it. He that hath taken it from me while I was here sitting was his craft’s-master, and very bold, but I question not but I shall find him ; I have so good skill in physiognomy that I know a knave by his looks, therefore I desire you all there below to look on me.’ Every one did so, awaiting what the judge would do, who by and by whispering to the justice that sat next him, at length arose, and said, ‘ Look you, Master Justice, if I am

not deceived, yonder fellow with the straw in his beard hath my purse.' All the people stared one upon another, and the cheat that had the purse being conscious of his guilt, doubting he was known to the judge and that he had a straw in his beard, lifted up his hand stroked it to wipe it away, supposing by that means to pass undiscovered. But that discovered him; for the judge who had a quick eye and expected that motion, saw and observed it, thereupon pointed to him, saying, 'That is he.' It was now too late to fly, for the jailor soon seized him, and upon search found the purse in his pocket. The purse was given to the judge, who told out ten shillings to the jailor for the poor man's fees, and ordered him to discharge him, and in his room to take away that bold delinquent that had picked his pocket. He did so, neither did his kinsman contradict him in the open court, but when he came home he told him all the management and desired a discharge for the prisoner; the judge, knowing that it was done but in jest, granted his discharge, and the kinsman sent that and the promised twenty pounds, and fees for discharge of the prisoner.

## CHAPTER XV

*The hostess's daughter being courted by an ignorant poetical lover, he brings a soldier with him who becoming intimately acquainted with Mistress Dorothy relates to her, how he, by pretending to be a cunning-man and raising a spirit, had furnished himself, his landlord and landlady with a plentiful supper, which had been provided at the cost of another*

THUS did these cheats make the best of a bad market, for being at the first obstructed in their designs by their companion's imprisonment, they were at a loss, and they got little money this bout but what the judge and his kinsman gave them; and the people who were present at this bold adventure of picking the judge's pocket on the bench were very curious of their own, and for the future had somewhat more than ordinary to talk of. But mine host, who knew more of the matter than ordinary, made rare sport with this story at his return, and the shoemaker who hath received satisfaction for the loss of his boot, having had money for the other by mine host's appointment sent for the other shoemaker, his fellow tradesman, and ordinary charges being deducted, gave him the one half. But mine host so ordered the matter, that as they began, so they ended in drink, and spent all they had received at our house, and thus ended the adventure of the boots.

Mistress Dorothy now stopping, and we thereby finding that she had concluded her discourse, we took the liberty of laughing and wondering at what she had told us, and therefore desired her to give herself the trouble to relate some more adventures to us. But she told us in plain terms that she had done, and that we were to expect no more from her. I hearing her so peremptory in her reply, told her that we had been very much engaged to her for the extraordinary pains she had taken in these several relations ; but yet I must need add this, that as yet she had not fully performed her promise, for she had promised to give us an account of all the family, whereas, if I am not mistaken, she had said little or nothing of two persons whom I supposed to be very considerable, and that was the son and daughter ; and therefore I made it my request to her that she would recollect herself, and relate to us somewhat of them.

Indeed they were a little active, said she, while they lived at home with their father and mother, but after they went abroad in the world they were very remarkable, and since their leaving their father and mother, and my leaving the house were at one and the same time, and one the same occasion, I shall now give you an account of it.

One young man and maid living in a house where so much roguery was acted must needs be well enough experienced to act their parts ; but they were so warily looked after by their mother that it was almost impossible to exercise their talent at home. The young man by reason of the danger of the war, and lest he should be taken prisoner and served as his father was, was enforced to keep home and ramble but little, but his sister less, not being permitted to go any way out of the town. And although many guests who came to our house saw her, and liked her marvellously well (for indeed she was handsome), and would have made love to her, yet her mother knowing the danger by her own experience, watched her too narrowly to permit it, and was resolved to use her best endeavour to preserve the jewel of her daughter's maidenhead until she should be lawfully married.

She being kept up so strictly had few suitors, but one in the town, who was a farmer's son had a month's mind to her, and having read the famous history of *Tom Thumb*, and from thence proceeding to *Fortunatus*, and then to the most admirable history of *Dorastus and Fawnia*, was infected with poetry and love both at once ; and absolutely believing that all he read was really true, did wish himself to be as fortunate as *Fortunatus* himself. And since he could not meet with that blind Lady *Fortune* to present him with such a purse, he did however resolve to be

as absolute a lover as Dorastus. And now nothing to that accomplishment being wanting but a mistress who should be his Fawnia, he found out our pretty mistress Peggy, my hostess's daughter (hers I may boldly call her, but mine host's I dare not, the case being doubtful, by what I have already related to you). A mistress being found for our swain, he made some addresses to her, and was permitted by the mother to more freedom than any, because the youth was not only indifferent handsome but rich, and mine hostess was pretty free that they should strike up a match together. I was desired to keep company with these lovers, but I had much ado to forbear laughing outright when I heard his courtship. All his language was stuff stolen out of the books he had read, and when he was answered by Mistress Peggy, or any question propounded by me to him in any ordinary or different dialect, he was as deaf as a bellfounder, and was not able to answer us.

I being resolved to make sport with him, told him that I thought he would do mainly well if he would apply his fancy to writing of poetry, and as an essay I advised him to write a letter to Mistress Peggy in verse. He thanked me for my advice, and desired my friendship and said that he would go immediately home and exercise himself in poetry ; and so he said, and so he did, for behold the next morning Mistress Peggy received a letter from him which we both read and laughed at, for it was so foolishly forced, conceited, and nonsensical that have I much ado to remember the words. But having often repeated them, I shall now relate them to you :

MADAM,

EVER till I saw thee my heart was still at rest,  
Little did I think one female could have pierc't  
Either heart or bowels, that on thee doth waste,  
So sad all faint and feeble grow within my breast ;  
Alas, it is pity that sorrow to me should come,  
For to tell you the truth as yet I am but very young,  
And to express myself I want a better tongue ;  
But I can truly and sadly say that only you  
Are she that hath brought me to grief and sorrow too  
Brave virtues that are in this lovely damsel found  
At the first sight gave my poor heart a desperate wound.  
You have my senses very much decay'd  
With love, that at one time they will be all dismayed  
Long of the tender love that to you I do bear,  
Even now I will make an end my only Dear.

Your true Lover,

L. M.

We all laughed heartily at this nonsensical stuff, and Mistress Peggy by my directions returned him this answer.

AMOROUS FRIEND,

'T IS much you should receive two infections at once, the one Love, the other Poetry, but it is not very strange since they commonly accompany one another, but I'll assure you 'tis dangerous, for you know the old proverb, that sad are the effects of *Love and Pease Porridge*; and besides Poetry is commonly attended with Poverty. But after a strict perusal of your poetic fancies, I find there is no great danger in your poetic infection, for unless you improve yourself mightily it will be a long time ere you be a complete poet, and since your poetry and love came together, it will be as long ere you be a complete Lover. Now, if you have still a mind to prosecute these two designs of Love and Poetry, I advise you to make use of some other more fit and sublime object, that may raise your fancy to a higher pitch of eloquence, or at leastwise sense, as you have been in verse. I return this answer to you in prose, and as you like this you may prosecute your designs of Love and Poetry with some other object, but I pray give no more trouble to

Your Friend,

M. S.

This, to the best of my remembrance, was the answer to our lover's poetical letter, and although what we writ might have been enough to have dashed the designs of any other, yet our lover came very confidently that evening, and thanked his mistress for receiving his letter, and answering it; telling her that he did acknowledge he had not as yet any great skill in poetry, but he had written his best, and intended and hoped in the next to mend it, and so he proceeded in his troublesome love-suit. Our cookmaid coming into the room where we were, and having seen the love letter, it being made no secret, told us that she had a love letter sent her not long since, which in her opinion was better than that. And we believing that there must be somewhat in it worth the seeing, commanded her to fetch it, and giving it into my hands, I read these words:

MADAM,

I HOPE the brains of your beauty being boiled in the kettle of kindness with the beef of bounty, may at length prove a dish for my diet, so that the marrow-bone of your maidenhead being cracked with the chopping-knife of my courage, may upon the trencher of Truth declare how I love you. Let not the minced meat of modesty baked in the oven of hatred in the crust of coyness cause my denial, lest the dagger of Death being drenched in the barrel of my blood may with the spiggot draw forth the liquor of my life.

Yours more than his own,

T. J.

This letter pleased me more than the former, and I told her that her sweetheart was ingenious and witty, for he had courted her in her own language, and made use of such words she understood, and that in my

opinion it was far better to do so than to be altogether so poetical as to make mocks of their mistresses by comparing their foreheads to alabaster, their eyes to diamonds, their lips to coral, and such kind of fantastical similes. Our lover was of my opinion, and was so taken with the cookmaid's letter that he desired to copy it, and so he did ; and while he was thus employed, I remembered that I had a paper of verses that would employ all his senses to understand, and it may be puzzle him ; and therefore fetched it, and he having copied the other lines, I shewed him these :

I saw a peacock with a fiery tail  
I saw a blazing star that dropped down hail  
I saw a cloud begirt with ivy round  
I saw a sturdy oak creep on the ground  
I saw a pismire swallow up a whale  
I saw a brackish sea brim full of ale  
I saw a venice-glass sixteen yards deep  
I saw a well full of men's tears that weep  
I saw men's eyes all on a flaming fire  
I saw a house big as the moon and higher  
I saw the sun all red even at midnight  
I saw the man that saw this dreadful sight.

' And most dreadful it was indeed,' said our lover, ' if it were true, but however,' continued he, ' the verses are very good and I pray let me have a copy of them.' Which I permitted him to take ; and he read them over, and over again without understanding the mystery ; but the more he read the more he seemed to wonder at the strangeness of the several sights, and said, ' Sure this is impossible,' ' Not at all,' said I, ' and if you will lay ten shillings to be spent, I will make it out to you before you go, that all that is there written is very true, and that I have seen it all myself.' ' I cannot believe it,' replied he, ' and I am content to lay the wager, provided Mistress Peggy may be the judge.' ' Content,' said I, and so the money was laid in her hands, and then I took up the paper and began to read thus : " I saw a peacock," and there I made a stop, and said, ' Do you believe that ? If you do not, I can shew you one in the yard.' ' Ay, but,' said he, ' the verse is " I saw a peacock with a fiery tail," and that is the wager.' ' No,' said I, ' you must stop when you have read " I saw a peacock," and then go on, " with a fiery tail I saw a blazing star" ; and I am sure that I have seen that too, for blazing stars have all fiery tails.' ' That is true,' replied he, ' but I did not mean to read it so.' ' Tis no matter how you meant,' said I, ' but what I read is true, and by virtue of that I suppose I shall win the wager.' But however I proceeded and read, ' That dropped down hail I saw a cloud ; Begirt

with ivy round I saw a sturdy oak ; Creep on the ground I saw a pismire ; Swallow up a whale I saw a brackish sea ; Brim full of ale I saw a venice glass.' And so I read on to the end of the verses, still making a full stop in the middle of the verse, where the sense required it ; thus making sense of the impossible nonsense.

By this time our lover saw he was likely to lose his wager, but however he cavilled at my thus reading it, and said I ought to stop only where the time ended. But all that he said signified nothing, for his mistress did me the justice to award me the wager, and accordingly gave me my money, and kept the other twenty shillings to be spent. Neither was the poetical lover much displeased, for he had a very high esteem of the lines he had, protesting he would not part with them for forty shillings, and he questioned not but he should win much money by wagers he would lay about them. And being thus satisfied he left us, promising the next night to return, and then expect a collation for the ten shillings he had lost.

So we were rid of our poetical lover till the time appointed ; which being come, he likewise came and brought with him a young man, a soldier that belonged to the garrison in our town. I knew the man by sight, for he was very remarkable, it being the general report that he was a cunning-man and could tell fortunes ; and our lover brought him to give his opinion whether he should have Mistress Peggy or not. We gave him the ordinary welcome ; he coming in company with our lover we were the more free with him, who demeaned himself so well that I had a more than ordinary respect for him, and told him he should be welcome at any other time. So our collation being ended we for that time parted ; but in short time after he came again, and being, as he said, much taken with my company, desired to take all opportunities of waiting on me. I seeing no harm in him, and finding that he was none of the pitiful sort of fellow, but that he was handsome, witty, and above all things that he wore money in his pocket, permitted him frequently to visit me, and it was not long ere I grew into such familiarity with him that I obliged him to shew me so much of his skill as to tell me my fortune. He was surprized at this proposition and made many excuses, but I grew to that height in my importunity that I wearied him. At length he told me that although all the town had been mistaken in him yet I should not, and that if I pleased he would undeceive me, and in short, he told me that it was a mistake to think that he was skilful either in astrology or magic, and although he had gained some money by pretending to be knowing in that mystery, yet it was no such matter. I supposing that he only said this to excuse himself, still importuned him in such manner that I brought him to this ; that provided I would promise him

secrecy, he would discover his whole secrets to me, and thereby make it absolutely appear that the town was mistaken. I being desirous of hearing novelties, engaged to perform all he desired, and thereupon he thus began :

Madam, in the discourse I shall make you, I shall be forced to discover not only my own secrets but also those of another, the most eminent of this town, and were it not to you, and only to you, I should not do it for any consideration whatsoever ; for it is the secrets of a woman of the best quality, and therefore you may be justly angry with me for so doing. But my respect, and indeed my love to you is so great that I shall not stop at any obstacles to perform anything you require. Withal, I pray do not think that since I am so easy to discover one woman's secrets, and that of such eminency and one to whom I am so much obliged, that I should or may at one time or another serve you in the like manner. No Madam, assure yourself of the contrary, for although the woman I am to speak of be so eminent, indifferently handsome and one to whom I am so much obliged, yet my acquaintance with her began after a strange manner, and it was a kind of necessity that first induced her to permit me the freedom I enjoy with her. Whereas, on the contrary, the respects I have for you are of another nature, for my inclination and affection induce me to pay you all manner of service, which I am confident will be very lasting.

It is not many months since I was first acquainted with this place. You know my quality is a soldier of fortune, and I may reasonably enough term myself so, being of late somewhat favoured by that blind and inconstant lady. Our commander-in-chief thinking it convenient to draw us out of the field where we had been all the last summer, and place us in garrison for the winter season, it fell to my lot, among other of my comrades, to be ordered to be quartered in this town ; where, when we came, we had our several billets delivered to us, and mine directed me to the house of the wealthiest mercer in your town, where I still quarter, and who you know is a person as eminent for estate as any in the town, I need not name him, you knowing where I quarter. It so fortuned that the night I came thither first to quarter he was out of the town, as he had been for some days past, and was to continue for two or three more. It was somewhat late when I knocked at the door, and therefore the maid-servant who heard me asked me what I would have. I answered that I was appointed in that house to take up my quarters. The maid soon called her mistress and acquainted her with the matter ; which she knowing, thus answered me, that she was a young new-married woman, that her husband was absent, that she had only one servant, and that

therefore she could not with any conveniency entertain any man in her house. I could not be satisfied with this answer, but replied that I was sorry I must be so troublesome, but withal that it was too late to seek any other lodging ; and that my comrades were all in their quarters, and therefore I must unavoidably lie in the street if she did not entertain me. Wherefore I prayed her to receive me into her house, and put me into any place she pleased, and I promised that I would be as little troublesome as possibly I could, and therefore I desired her not to deny that fairly and by entreaty which she knew I could command.

The young woman, although she was much troubled (believing that I might hinder a design she had in hand) yet knowing withal that what I said was true, and that I might command where I entreated, commanded her maid to open the door and shew me my lodging up in the garret. When I was entered the house I told her that I was to lodge there, so I desired I might sup with her, (not that I would command it, but that I would willingly pay for what I had), because it was late and I had not eaten anything all that day. She seemed angry at my proposal, telling me that I was mistaken if I took her house for an inn, and if I wanted a supper, want I must ; for I was like to have nothing there but my bare lodging. And indeed bare I might call it, for it was a most pitiful one ; however I was forced to make use of it and go supperless to bed. Being thus ready to die for hunger I had little mind to sleep, and therefore I only tumbled and tossed without so much as closing mine eyes together. After I had lain an hour in this manner, casting mine eyes about the chamber, I perceived some light which came through a chink or crevice in the floor ; and my curiosity inviting me to it, I leaped out of the bed, and laying my eye to the place, I might perceive under me a room very well furnished, wherein was a great fire, two spits of roasted fowls, the maid turning them, and the young woman, the mistress sitting in the arms of a young fellow, a lawyer, who to me appeared to be so by his gown. How ! said I to myself, is this the woman that in her husband's absence will not receive a man into her house ? Oh, the unconstancy and subtlety of women ! This I thought, but however I believed it was not as yet time to speak out ; but being very hungry, I beheld the spits with some anger, and devoured the fowls with my eyes.

I had the patience to see the supper dressed, though I was not to be a guest ; and though I could not taste, yet I could smell the victuals. I saw the table spread, the bottles of wine brought out, and the victuals placed on the table ; but just as they were going to sit down, one knocked at the door. This somewhat startled them, but their confusion was

greater when the maid asked who was at the door, and understood it was her master. They were all frightened and confounded, not knowing where to put the man or the victuals. They had but little time to consider ; there was but one little chamber adjoining where the maid lay, and under her bed at length they laid him, and the meat, drink, and all the appurtenances were placed in a closet in the chamber. This being done, and the woman sitting down by the fire, the master who was impatient with calling and knocking was let in, and coming up stairs, his wife rises from her seat, and cries out, ‘ Oh dear Husband ! Welcome home ! How glad am I to see you, especially in coming sooner than I expected.’ ‘ That is true,’ said the good man, ‘ I made haste and dispatched my business ; which being done, I took horse and made all possible speed to come home to you, and indeed, I have rid full speed all this day.’ ‘ And very welcome you are,’ said she. ‘ But how come you to have so great a fire ? ’ said the husband. ‘ Oh love,’ said the wife, ‘ I am troubled with the belly-ache, and I made this fire to warm trenchers and clothes to put to my belly to ease me. And truly I think that this pain hath taken me with vexing at a paltry business that happened this night ; for here came a soldier and said he must and would quarter here, and it hath so angered and grieved me to think that a man must lodge here in your absence, that I think truly it hath brought my pain.’

I hearing this, thought it would be convenient for me ere long to appear, and therefore put on my clothes ; but still I gave attention to the end of their discourse, which was thus continued. Said the husband, ‘ Well, let that pass ; but I pray let me have some supper, for I have made such haste to-day in travelling to come to you that I am almost dead with hunger ; wherefore I pray give me some victuals.’ ‘ Victuals,’ replied the woman, ‘ where do you think I should have it ? Do you think I make feasting in your absence ? Alas, my maid and I supped to night with each of us a roasted apple.’ ‘ I am sorry for that,’ replied the husband, ‘ and am very loth, if I could help it, to go to bed without a supper, but what cannot be cured, must be endured.’ I hearing this, and believing it to be very proper for my design, being already dressed, went downstairs and knocked at the door. Which opened, I entered, and saluting my landlord, prayed him to excuse me for disturbing his wife, who had indeed refused to entertain me till I had acquainted her with my orders, which, lest he should distrust any thing to the contrary, I then pulled out and shewed him, and told him that I hoped his wife could not complain of any incivility I had offered her. ‘ No truly,’ replied she. I having satisfied him in this, told him that I understood he had not supped no more than I, and therefore, if he pleased I

would give him and his lady a supper, for I had it in my power to accommodate them very plentifully. ‘How is that possible?’ replied my landlord, ‘since it is so late, and nothing is to be had in the town; and besides that it will be too late to dress any thing.’ I bid him take no care for that, but if he pleased he should be provided with victuals ready dressed provided he and his wife would both promise me secrecy. They told me that they would do so, but he wondered, and she seemed to do so too, at what I intended to do. Whereupon I told them I had a correspondency with spirits, who would furnish me with what I desired; and thereupon taking a piece of chalk, and making a circle I placed myself in it, made certain figures about it, and taking a staff in my hand, waved it about my head. Then I uttered many words which were only conceited fustian stuff which they understood not, nor I myself neither, and then proceeding I named a spirit and told him that he must quickly provide me a supper for myself, my landlord, and his lady. I seemed to listen, and then told them that my spirit was obedient, and nothing was wanting now but to know what they would have. I asked the question, but they answered, what I pleased. ‘Bring then,’ said I, ‘a boiled hen and bacon, a couple of roasted capons, a dozen of partridges, two dozen of larks, a pippin tart, with oranges and lemons, and fruit sufficient; also bring us two bottles of canary and two of claret.’ This was the victuals I had seen provided, and therefore this I called for. ‘And withal,’ said I, ‘I charge thee not to appear in any horrible shape, so as to frighten my landlord or landlady, but dispatch quickly and set all down in the closet of this chamber.’

Having thus finished my inclination and paused a little, ‘Now,’ said I, ‘open the door and there you shall see I am obeyed.’ The maid readily did as I commanded, and all was there in ample manner ready dressed, to the great astonishment of my landlord; but my landlady, though she seemed to be amazed, knew well enough that she was discovered, but as yet could not disapprove of what I had done. The meat being produced, the table was spread and the provision placed thereon, and now all things being in readiness, I desired my landlord and landlady to take their places. At my request they did so, but my landlord was mighty unwilling to eat until he see me eat and commend the victuals and sauce, and I importuning him to taste, he did so, and my landlady by his example consented to accompany us in the same employment. Having now done with one dish, and my landlord finding that to be good, by my example fell to another, and though he was somewhat cautious, yet he made a good meal. I am sure I did not spare, but fed like a farmer, and my landlady was not at all behind hand, she well enough knowing that though I told them it was dressed underground,

yet she could contradict me but she durst not. The maid had her part too, and all were well enough content, except the poor lawyer, who was both hungry and fearful lest, as I had discovered the meat, I would also discover the caterer. But I minded no such matter ; I thought as I had begun well so to end, and I would not be so discourteous to him to make him fare ill when by his means I had fared so well.

We not only eat lustily but drank off our wine cheerily, which was as good as ever tipped over tongue, and for us three there was enough. And now at last my landlord did own that the meat and sauce, bread and drink were all excellent good, and that if the spirits could command so good fare, they were more harmless and better company than he thought for. I told him my spirit was still in his house, and awaited my further commands, therefore I desired to know whether he would have ought else ere I discharged him ? He told me, No. ‘ Then,’ replied I, ‘ he shall descend ; but since he hath done us so good service, I will, if you please, let you see him.’ ‘ Oh, by no means, Sir,’ said my landlady, fearing I would discover her greatest secrets. ‘ Rest contented,’ replied I, ‘ for I am master of more discretion than to disoblige a lady ; assure yourself it shall be otherwise than you imagine.’ My landlord too was very fearful, but I assured him there should be no cause, and thereupon for the more easy management of what I intended, I ordered the servant-maid to open the street door, and all the other doors of the house, that the spirit might have the more freedom to depart, otherwise I told them he would raise a tempest ; ‘ and,’ continued I, ‘ he shall not appear in any horrid form but in the habit of one of your neighbours.’ Having told them this, I thus began : ‘ Oh thou Spirit, who hast been unexpectedly disturbed, but hast so plentifully catered for us, come forth for I now give thee leave to go whither thou pleasest.’ The lawyer, who was but in the next room, and who had heard all passages, was not so sottish as to neglect this opportunity, but pulling his hat over his face that he might go undiscovered, came forth of the room where he had been hid, and with a steady pace walked by us, going downstairs ; and so leaving the house, whilst my landlady in a trembling manner sat and beheld what had passed.

## CHAPTER XVI

*The soldier is in danger to be caught by his landlord in his landlady's chamber, but by her wit he escapeth : Mistress Dorothy relates that a parcel of padders having robbed a knight of four hundred pounds, two of them are taken, but the knight will not swear absolutely against them, because he might sue and get his money of the hundred where he was robbed : a crew of pickpockets wanting money, two of them pretend to be drunk and quarrel with the third, wherefore these two are put into the stocks, and getting company, the third had the opportunity of picking many pockets*

THE lawyer having thus passed by us, to the amazement of my landlord, he then looked on me with somewhat a distracted countenance. His wife seeing that, and doubting that he had or would discover the matter, to divert him from any questions or considerations pretended to be so mightily amazed and frighted that she fell into a swoon ; and then her husband, the maid, and I had enough to do to bring her again to herself. Neither could we do it so well but that her husband was forced to help the maid to carry and put her into her bed, where for that night I left them and went to my own. And now my belly being full it was not long ere I fell asleep. Awaking the next morning I began to consider what had passed, and wondered at my self how I had the confidence to manage an affair so difficult and dangerous, but when I considered what I had done I resolved to proceed, and as I knew the secrets of my landlady, to make some use of that knowledge, and out of her misfortunes to make myself a fortune. Therefore I recommended myself, remembering the old saying, *Audaces Fortuna juvat*, Fortune helps the bold ; and therefore I would try her favours, considering that she could do me no injuries. I could not be much lower than I was, and I was in great probability to rise higher by the prosecution of this adventure. I did not question but I should do well enough with my landlady, for I had not at all disengaged her in betraying her secrets, but rather managed them as well as she could wish or desire, and therefore she could not take me for a clown or fool, but rather think me worthy of her favour, and into her favour I was resolved to get, or venture all. She was young, and as you know indifferent handsome, her husband was old, and I believe wanting in what most pleases a woman, and therefore she had permitted the young lawyer to supply that defect ; and considering that I might as well as he pretend to her favour, for I was as young and (if I am not mistaken) as handsome, he had indeed

this advantage, of having more money than I, but I questioned not but she would well enough dispense with that, she being out of possibility of wanting any, but rather able to supply me. I had this advantage above him, that I was in the house, and likely for some time to continue there, and by that means I might make use of all opportunities.

Indeed it was not long ere I had one ; for I having spent good part of the morning in these cogitations, I could hear my landlord rise and go out of the house. Wherefore I also arose and made myself ready, and indeed I spruced myself up in the best manner I could. Being now ready I went downstairs, and met with the maidservant, who could not look on me without blushing. I gave her Good morrow, and asked her how her mistress did this morning. She replied, something better than I left her last night. ‘ Truly,’ replied I, ‘ I am sorry that she was so ill, but more especially to consider that I had been the occasion of it, but I would study how to make her amends, and at present I desire to make my excuses to her, if she would shew where she was.’ ‘ She is not yet stirring,’ said the maid. ‘ That matters not,’ said I, and thereupon we went to her bedside ; where when I was come, she seeing me turned away her face. To make short with my story, I spake to her, and that in such manner that she not only turned about but gave me thanks for the favours I had done in managing her secrets with so much discretion, and that she was and should be eternally obliged to me, and should study how to make me amends. I replied, amends was already made in the good opinion she had for me, desiring her to continue in it, and I should endeavour to serve her in all things to my power ; and since it was her misfortune to be disturbed by her husband’s unexpected return, and be disappointed in the enjoyment of her friend, that was a thing I could help. And, if she pleased to accept of me in his stead, I should give her the best satisfaction I could. She seemed to be angry at this proposal, but I proceeding and telling her that I was a gentleman born and bred, and it may be in all things equal, if not above her friend, she was content to let me kiss her ; and finding that I might without much difficulty proceed further, I sent the maid out for a morning’s draught, and in her absence persuaded her to accept of that from me which she should have had from her friend the lawyer, had not her husband disturbed them. I then pleased her so well that ever since she hath made no difficulty to let me enjoy her person, and be master of that as well as I was of her secrets ; and being thus possessed of her person, I not only commanded that but her purse, and have led the pleasantest life in the world.

This adventure, Madam was the occasion of my being accounted a cunning-man, for my landlord, though I had enjoined him secrecy, yet he did not absolutely keep it, but acquainted some of his familiar friends

with my knowledge, so that I was in short time pointed at as I passed along the street, and gazed at with the eyes of wonder. Nay, some of the neighbourhood courted me very earnestly to answer them several questions ; and being often importuned, I did give them such answers as might probably come to pass, which falling out accordingly I gained not only the reputation of a cunning-man, but my pockets were also indifferently well lined with half-crown pieces. Thus had I a handsome enjoyment of money and pleasure ; for I was free with my landlady, and very little suspected by her husband. But I was one time near being caught by him, and thus it was. He was not only well stricken in years, but by an accident some years past had lost one of his eyes, or else he would have espied us ; for one day he being abroad, and I being desirous to toy with my landlady, we in order thereto entered her chamber and lay down on her bed. We had not long been there but we heard a noise, and the maid-servant looking to see what was the matter, came hastily in to us and told us that her master was coming up stairs. She had hardly delivered this unpleasant message but he was come up stairs and was entering the chamber. But he was not so quick but his wife and I were as nimble, and were got upon our feet ; and she running to the door caught hold of her husband about the neck and cried out, ‘ Oh Lord, husband, how dearly welcome you are to me ! especially at this time, when I so longed to see you.’ ‘ For what cause,’ said my landlord. ‘ What is the meaning of this language ? ’ ‘ Oh, dear husband,’ replied she, ‘ I have been asleep on the bed, where I had the pleasantest dream that I have ever had in all my life. Nay,’ continued she, ‘ it is more than a dream, for it is a vision, and I hope a true one.’ ‘ Well, what is it,’ said he ? ‘ Why truly, husband,’ said she, ‘ methoughts you and I were walking along together in a pleasant field, and we met with a man that begged an alms of you, which you very liberally gave him, and he being glad of your liberality told you that he would recompence it by restoring you the sight of your other eye. Methoughts I was very joyful at this proposition, and desired him to do it, but you were doubtful of his performance, and therefore unwilling to let him meddle with you ; but he promising and assuring us that he would certainly cure you, I persuaded you to permit him to wash your eye with a certain water he had in a vial about him ; which he had no sooner done but methoughts you saw very well with your blind eye. At the sight of which I was so overjoyed that I awaked, and you then came up stairs. And now, sweetheart, I am so confident of the truth of my dream that I desire to experiment the same, and therefore I pray let me put my hand on your seeing eye for a trial.’ My landlady having done, her husband replied, ‘ Surely you have not been asleep as you say, but talk idly for want of sleep, or

else you would never make so foolish a proposition.' 'I know not,' replied she, 'but I must needs desire you to give me satisfaction in this particular, for I long to try it.' 'Well,' said he, 'that you may see how much a fool you are, I am content.' She having liberty, clapped her hand on his seeing eye, and I who waited that opportunity needed no further instructions what to do, but coming from behind the door where I had stood, with long strides and easy, went out of the chamber, and going down stairs left the house. She seeing me gone, and thereby her business being done, asked her husband if he saw anything. 'No,' said he, 'but if you will remove your hand I shall see a fool.' She did so, and told him that she was satisfied, but hoped it had been otherwise.

And thus we escaped this brunt, as we did many others. And now, Madam, I have been very free in relating to you the greatest secrets of my life, having so much confidence in your discretion that I shall run no hazard in your knowing it, but hope as I have been free with you, so you will be so generous as to acquaint me with your quality and condition, and permit me to serve you in all I can.

To this request, said Mrs Dorothy, I answered that indeed I was not of that country but another, and upon an urgent affair was some time since come from London, whither I have a desire to return. 'So have I,' said the soldier, 'and if you please to accept of my service, I shall gladly wait on you thither, for I have so much respect from my captain that I question not but he will not only give me leave to go, but also give me a pass to secure me thither.' I hearing him say so, told him that I would take such order in my affairs that I hoped in one month's time to be ready to be gone, and then I should be glad of his company. This was the discourse I held with the soldier, who was indeed very civil with me, spending his money freely as often as he came into my company. I being resolved to leave this place, took order to get into my hands what money I had, which I had lent out to sufficient persons in the town, which was in short time paid me.

But very strange accidents happened in our house before my departure, which made me hasten it, and which were thus. I have already told you that our house had been a receptacle for cheats and pick-pockets; who by degrees coming to be thieves and highwaymen, they still frequented it, and mine host, who seeing he gained money cared not much which way he came by it, made no great scruple of conscience to entertain them; who indeed were very good customers, and spent equal to the best guests we had. He might do that with them he might not with others, for they were bound to believe and pay all that he reckoned, although never so unreasonable, so that he had an equal share, if not

more, of all the prizes they made, some whereof were very considerable.

A knight of Yorkshire having occasion to travel our road was set upon and robbed by six of our guests. He had only himself, wife and daughter, coachman, and one horseman ; this was his company, but the prize was considerable, being four hundred pounds in money, besides watches, rings, and other jewels. Our crew of padders, although at first they were severe enough in searching, and stripping them of all their money and jewels, yet dealt civilly enough with them (if I may term thieves to be so) before they parted, for the knight seeing it was in vain to resist, and being too weak to do so, permitted them to take all from him ; but when they came to his lady and had taken her little money, and proceeded to take her rings from her fingers, he was troubled and told them that he hoped as they had found him civil to confess and deliver all he had to them, and which he said was very considerable, so he hoped they would not use any violence to his wife and daughter in taking their rings from them which were inconsiderable, and might happen to be prejudicial to them in discovering of them to the law. They, who knew he said right, not only desisted from proceeding against the ladies, but also gave him his watch and rings and all the odd money they had taken from him, contenting themselves only with the four hundred pounds. And giving him an oath that he nor none of his company should remove from that place for half an hour's time, that they might have leisure to escape, they left him. He was as good as his word and stayed out his time, and they with full speed rode to our town, and at our house took up their quarters.

They no sooner entered the house but they first delivered their money to the custody of mine host, and then called for a trunk wherein was their clothes, for they had always change of clothes there, so that in a quarter of an hour's time these six blades of fortune were so metamorphosed that they were not to be known. He who when he came in had a black periwig and gray clothes, now had a white periwig and black clothes, and by that and pulling off patches and such like dispositions, they were not to be known ; for if a Hue and Cry comes out wherein is named the number of the robbers, they cannot distinguish or describe them otherwise than by their clothes and horses ; and as for their habits they thus alter them, and their horses are either sent to grass, or locked up in a private stable, and their saddles and other accoutrements are conveyed away and locked up. Commonly if there be six or eight in a robbery, not above the half or three-quarters of them go to one house, but divide themselves into companies until the Hue and Cry shall be over, and then they meet and divide the booty. This is their common

practice when a robbery is done at any distance from London, but if it be done within twenty miles of that place, then away they all fly thither, and enter the city at several ends of the town, and to several quarters they disperse themselves. This I say is their custom.

The Hue and Cry came not to our town till the next day ; and by that time two of the six were gone, having taken their shares with them, and the Hue and Cry having passed about the town it came to our house, where the officers failed in their enquiry, for it nominated six, whereas our company was but four, and the description of the persons and their habits was so different from what our guests had, that there was no reason in the world to suspect them ; and as for their horses, they were not to be found, so that, I say, our guests all escaped, and for joy feasted and drank very highly. But in two days' time their joy was lessened ; for a trusty messenger came to them and brought sad news from the other two of their companions, which was that they were taken, apprehended, and upon examination found so guilty that they were sent to gaol. Our guests were very much surprized at the news, and upon examination of the particulars, thus they found it :

The knight who was robbed having stayed in the place the time he promised, that being over, he caused his coachman to drive on to the next town, where when he came, he sent for the town-officers and informed them of his loss, and withal told them that he must and did expect satisfaction from them and the rest of the inhabitants of that hundred, because he was robbed two hours before sun-set. They who heard him knew he said right, and that it must be so, unless they produced all or some of the felons, and had them tried and found guilty at Law ; wherefore the sum being considerable, and the case so evident and plain to be proved, they took an account of the knight of all particulars of the robbers in the best manner that he or his servants could direct, and having so done sent out a Hue and Cry, directing and charging the officers to use all possible diligence in the discovery of these felons. They missed of their purpose for that day, but the next it was the misfortune of those two of our guests who had left our house to come thither, and being now again upon the pad, were accoutr'd in their padding habit. Although they were but two, and the number in the Hue and Cry was six, yet their habits and horses were so remarkable that they were soon suspected, and the officers seized them quickly, haling them before the justice, whither, when they were come and examined, they could not answer so well but that they were shrewdly suspected. But to make the matter more clear, the knight and his servants who were still in the town were sent for, and then it was not long ere the matter was but too plain for our two

delinquents, especially when upon search of their portmantuas their share of the money was found. They stoutly denied the fact ; but notwithstanding all that could be said, they were sent to prison.

This news alarmed our guests and made them bethink themselves of what should be most necessary for their own preservation, and thereupon they thus resolved, that two of the four should go near the place where the knight was, and observe his motions, and according to that act their matters as should be convenient, and the other two resolved for the present to stay at our house. But this case which now at the beginning appeared to be very bad and sad for their two companions, in the end by the cunning management of the two agents came off much better than was expected, and indeed very well ; for they understanding that the knight was engaged by the justice to prosecute, and that the country would see that he should do so, whereby they might be discharged from payment of the money he was robbed of, they resolved by some trusty messenger to send to the knight ; and therefore they drew up a letter to this purpose :

THAT they were gentlemen of a good extraction, but the misfortunes of times and their own necessities, had put them upon a course of life far different from their inclinations ; which, although it was not justifiable by Law, yet they thought it not so unreasonable as the world did, and they had plenty of examples for their practice, the whole nation being now engaged into parties, who under fair and specious pretence made it their business to rob (which they termed *plunder*) one another, especially the harmless country, and that so often as they should come in their way. This, they said, was the precedent by which they walked, and by virtue of this commission (which they believe as authentic as some of theirs who levied great forces), they had taken up arms. Good fortune and this present mishap had caused them to meet, where, although he was dispossessed of his money, yet they were confident he had no very ill opinion of them in regard they had used him and the ladies in his company with all civility. This they hoped he would not forget, and for that consideration he would deal as civilly with their two companions, who had the misfortune to fall under the power of the law. This they thought was reason enough for them to expect all favour at his hands ; but there were also other reasons for him to do it, and that which they thought would be the most prevalent was that it was against his own interest to prosecute their companions ; for should he, at the approaching assizes, so absolutely charge them with the fact as to bring them within the compass of the law, and it may be take their lives from them, then he must expect no other satisfaction, but lose his money : whereas, on the contrary, if he and his servants spake doubtfully in their evidence against them, and they were not proved to be guilty, then he might by law recover his whole money of the country. This they hoped would be a prevalent reason with him to order the matter so as to let their companions escape, which they prayed and hoped he would do. But if (as they thought

against all reason) he should rigorously prosecute them, he was to remember that four of their companions were still left at liberty with swords in their hands, and his misfortune might again bring him under their power, when he might not expect so civil proceeding against him as he had the last time, but that they might revenge their companions, but they concluded they hoped he would not give them that occasion.

And so they concluded.

This letter was carefully conveyed to the knight, who having read and considered the contents, and finding their reasons to be good, and withal considering that if he should by his evidence cast these two men for their lives he was not sure of his own so long as they had companions, who though at first civil enough had swords in their hands, and might be revengeful and bloody-minded enough on that occasion ; neither, as they had urged, would it be for his interest, for he must then lose his money, or the greatest part. These reasons, I say, made him to manage the matter so as that upon trial they should be acquitted, and therefore he sent to the prison a confidant of his, to tell them that he would do so, charging them to deny the fact and stand upon their justification. And thus, the assizes coming, they were indicted, but the knight and his servants (who were directed and instructed by him) were all in one tale, and said that indeed he was robbed of four hundred pounds at such a place and time, by six men, two whereof were in such habits, or like such as the prisoners at the bar had, but that he could not for all the world swear or say that they were any of the persons. He saying no more than this, and by his example his servants saying no more or less and the prisoners pleading justification, they were in the end acquitted, had their money again delivered to them, and the knight now proceeding in his suit against the country, recovered his whole money of them. Thus our two prisoners with their two comrades who had attended the trial, came home to our house with great joy. And thus did thieves escape, and the honest country was punished, and this I have known is a trick that hath been used familiarly ; so that several countries have been almost undone with these kind of robberies.

Soon after this passage there happened one as pleasant, though not so roguish, and thus it was : A crew of divers, bung-nippers, or pick-pockets came to our house, and there being a fair in the town they brought home very good purchase, and spent their money very freely. But their trade did not continue so good as it began, and they in expenses were so profuse and prodigal that they had outrun the constable, spent more than they were able to pay. They were always used to pay their host well, and so they were resolved to do now, or set their wits on the tenters. Many projects they had, and many

essays they made, some of them going abroad by turns, and then returning and sending others ; but our town was but thinly peopled, and they could not raise any considerable purchase. Wherefore knowing that if they could get any number of people together they might then have the more convenient opportunity of getting a prize, they therefore thus laid their plot. Three of them went out, two whereof were to act the drunken man's part, and so they did very comically, for they, reeling along the streets, tumbled down several people who were in their way. The people believing them to be what they appeared, *viz.*, drunk, let them pass on without much interruption ; their sober companion seeing that nobody else would take them up, therefore was resolved to do it, and meeting them as by chance, they gave him the justle, which he not taking so patiently as the other had done, not only worded it with them, but they proceeded to blows, so that two being against one it was thought unequal.

And they having been abusive to others, a great company were assembled, and among them the constable, who seizing upon all three carried them before a justice, who hearing the matter, and finding by the testimony of the people who went with them that the two were wholly to blame, and believing them to be as drunk as they seemed to be, he therefore ordered that they should be set in the stocks for two hours, and the third be discharged. His order was obeyed and they were conducted to the stocks, where they behaved themselves so pleasantly in foolish discourse to the people that a very great number of people were about them. Their companion, who was at freedom, seeing his convenience, and being his arts-master in the mystery of diving, fished money out of pockets, so that in the two hours' time that they were in the stocks, he plied his work so well that he had gained near seven pounds. Being thus freighted, he came to our house, and it was not long ere his companions followed him ; when they finding so considerable a purchase, paid my landlord the reckoning and called for a new one, where they drank roundly, remembering all those by whom they fared the better. Then having done the business they came for, they paid their shot and marched off to the next town, to see if they could fare any better than they had done at ours.

And these, continued Mistress Dorothy, were the guests we now entertained, padders and pickpockets, who as they got their money easily, so they spent it as lightly, to the great profit of mine host, for he gained at least fifty pounds of the four hundred, and still put in for a share. But as the pitcher goes not so often to the water but it comes home broken at last, so in short time not only his guests but he himself was caught and brought to condign punishment.

## CHAPTER XVII

*The author relates a story how he and six other padders robbed a carrier of six hundred pounds, and that one of the company in consideration of an hundred pounds paid him by the country where the robbery was committed, owned the fact, and thereby saved the country (who were sued) from payment of the rest, and at length by their assistance gained his pardon : also how a young pickpocket is put on by an old one, to cut an old woman's purse whilst she is at prayers in a church-yard by a tombstone : the boy performs the exploit, but is discovered and shewed by the old pickpocket to the people, who coming to stare on the boy had their pockets picked by the old one and his companions : and also how an old paddler being in danger to be hanged for a robbery, a young one for fifty pounds took the fact upon himself, discharged the old one, and in the end came clearly off himself*

FINDING by Mistress Dorothy's pausing that she was somewhat weary of her large discourse, and being desirous to know the conclusion of her adventures, I desired her to refresh herself with a cup of wine which stood by us, and then we all three, *viz.*, Mistress Mary, Mistress Dorothy, and myself, having drank off a quart of the best, I thus bespake her. Truly, Mistress Dorothy, you have taken much pains in reciting these pleasant adventures that befel whilst you lived in the inn, and you must needs have very great experience by what you have related ; for although I was well acquainted with knaveries and rogueries enough whilst I lived in England, yet all your adventures are very new, being such whose like I have seldom heard ; and although I did follow the padding-trade, especially at that time when I had the good fortune to meet with and be acquainted with you, yet I seldom knew, nor indeed ever heard of the like escape that your six padders had. It was a neat and cleanly conveyance. But lest you should be tired with too long speaking, and that I might enable you the better to give us a full and exact account of the rest of your adventures, I will relate to you some of my former adventures, and especially one which was somewhat like that of your six padders, and thus it was :

A stout gang of us who were knights of the road were one time assembled together at an inn, from whence we understood a good round sum of money was to be carried, and we only waited the departure and motions of the pack-horses that we might put our project in execution. The sum was six hundred pounds, and we knew it was to be carried in a pack, but which pack and which horse was to carry it

we were ignorant of, and that we doubted would be a hindrance or at leastwise a trouble to our design ; for the carrier having such a charge of money was resolved to travel only by daylight, and not in the night-time, whereby if it should happen he were robbed, he might not bear the loss. And we knowing this, and doubting that he would keep in as much company as he could, we feared it would be troublesome and dangerous to rob him of that money unless we knew in what pack it was ; for it would take up much time to cut up and examine all the rest of the packs, which were near twenty in number. Wherefore one of our comrades made it his business to discover that matter ; but although he was watchful, yet the carrier and owners were as shy, so that he could not possibly attain to his desires. Wherefore he was resolved to feel the hostler, who upon a little acquaintance and a reward given him, and more promised if the project should take, engaged to give him a certain token how he should know the horse and pack. To that end he directed him to wait the next morning early when the pack-horses went out. Our companion did so, sitting in a drinking-room in the yard where he could see all passages. The horses being loaded went out one after another, the moneyed-horse in the middle ; when he came the hostler lifted up his hand and gave him a clap over the buttock, saying, ' Go thy ways, Dun, for thou wilt never be sold to thy worth.' This was enough to our companion to mark and know what he had to do ; so that the horses being all gone, and he having dispatched his drink, came up to us who attended him. And then he telling us that he knew how to execute our design, and that he had knowledge enough, we rested contented ; neither did we leave that inn till noon, although the carrier went out in the morning early, and this we did that we might not be suspected to have any design upon him ; but soon after we had dined we all mounted and away we rode.

It was not many hours before we overtook the carrier, or at least came near him, and then we sent one of the company to scour the road and discover in what condition the carrier was in, and as occasion served to come back to us and acquaint us. One hour before night he came to us, who were not far off, and told us that then was the opportunity, for the carrier had engaged company all the while before, but now the night coming on, and the company being to travel further than the carrier, they had newly left him, and he was alone, only with his man and two or three passengers. We being eight in number, quickly made up to the carrier, and one with sword drawn and pistol cocked seized on him, another on his man, and the rest of our companions on the rest of the passengers. He of our companions that knew the horse and

pack went to him, singled him out, cut his girths, ripped up the pack, and took forth the money, without meddling with any thing else. We, the rest of his companions, in the meantime had dismounted the carrier, his man, and the passengers, and having tied their hands, we left them to shift for themselves. And six of us taking each of us a hundred pounds, and the other two riding, one in the van, and the other in the rear, away we marched, but at that rate that in two hours we were got thirty miles from the place where the robbery was committed, and we had so crossed the country to prevent discovery that it was almost impossible to overtake or find us. We took up our quarters at an inn where we were very well acquainted, and for joy of our purchase wanted for nothing that money could produce us. And there we spent some time in all manner of delights, till being weary of the place, and some of the company having a desire to depart and separate, we accordingly did so; and one of our companions who had occasion to ride that way where we committed this robbery performed one of the boldest exploits that I have ever heard of, and thus it was.

He had an uncle who kept an inn in the town near to the place where this robbery was done, to whose house he came and was welcomed. He pretended he was a soldier, and was newly come from the garrison at Bristol, and with such kind of imaginary stories he discoursed his uncle, telling him the best news he could. His uncle likewise acquainted him with the news of the town, and as the chiefest told him that there had lately been a great robbery done, for a carrier was robbed of six hundred pound, and therefore it being done in the day time, that town must pay for it; 'And truly, cousin,' said he, 'our town hath been so mightily pestered with soldiers that we are very poor and not able, and my share comes to thirty pound of the money.' 'But,' said our companion, 'can you not meet with the thieves?' 'No' replied his uncle; 'we have offered a hundred pound to any that can discover them, but hitherto all hath been in vain.'

This was the host's discourse with his kinsman, who very well knew he was one of the number; and a conceit came into his head that it was possible that, as he had got almost a hundred pounds already by this robbery, so he might get another whole hundred pounds; and therefore being resolved what to do, he thus discovered himself to his uncle. 'It is now,' said he, 'three years since I left my father, and ever since that I have led a troublesome life, so that I am almost weary of it; and it is not long since that for a misdemeanour I had done in our garrison, I was condemned to be hanged; but I thank my stars I escaped it, and being so near death and escaping, I soon after came acquainted with a cunning-man, who telling me my fortune told

me that I had lately escaped a danger (which I very well knew) and withal added that I should run into many other dangers, and should escape them ; and that he was certain I was not born to be hanged. Now, therefore, uncle,' said he, ' I will once again tempt my fate, and being assured that I shall not be hanged, I care not, if I may be ensured the hundred pounds you spake of, if I take upon me and own the robbery. I think it will be no difficult matter to do, for, as I remember, one of the gentlemen padders who did thatfeat was habited and mounted just as I am.' His uncle having heard his discourse, stared at him and asked him if he were mad ? ' No,' replied he, ' but if you will warrant me the money I'll undertake the matter.' His uncle seeing him thus resolved, began to consider a little more seriously of the matter, and told his kinsman that if he would do the one, he would not only ensure him of the other, but also endeavour his pardon. Thereupon he sent for some of the neighbours whom he might trust ; and told them that there was a wild young man his kinsman, who would save them five hundred pounds, and told them the manner how. They were well enough satisfied with the proposition, and not only promised him the money which was agreed on should be presently put into any friend's hand, but also that they would undertake his pardon, or at leastwise a reprieve that he might sue out his pardon.

This being agreed upon, they next proceeded in their discourse how this affair was to be managed, and after several propositions made, it was concluded that as he came into the town, so he should go out, and the next day should reenter the town when the officers who should be then appointed to search for suspicious persons should seize on him. He should at first deny the fact, but upon examination should so vary and waver in his discourse that he should give just cause of suspicion. They having agreed on this and several other particulars, and the money being deposited in a young maiden's hand, who was his uncle's daughter, he took horse and privately left the town. The next day the officers of the town being charged to keep strict watch and search all suspicious places, they did so ; and as they had been a little way out of the town, and were returning, our adventurer overtook them. ' Who rides here ? ' says one. ' Sure that man is clothed just as the carrier described one of the padders were ? ' He hearing them say this made some stand, and offered to turn his back. They therefore imagining that he might be suspected, asked of him what he was, and came near to encompass him. He still withdrawing drew his pistol and fired at them ; they then staring on each other, and seeing that none of their company was killed or wounded, were encouraged to make up to him. Although he drew his sword, yet they being armed adventured upon

him, and seizing on him, pulled him from his horse back. He then asked them what was the matter, and what they would have. They told him that he was a highwayman, and that they were very certain of, or else why did he shoot at them ; and were glad they had caught him, he should pay for all the trouble he had put the town to. Some railed at him in this manner, whilst others disarmed him and bound his hands together, and then they led him away to the town, where with great noise they carried him before their justice of the peace. He strictly examined him and absolutely charged him with the former robbery, advising him to confess and inform against his companions, and then he told him he would endeavour to get him a pardon. Our adventurer gave him the hearing of all, but denied all knowledge of the robbery, but so faintly and with such faltering and uncertainties that the justice committed him to prison.

A few days after the carrier came that way, and he was conducted to the thief, where after a light sight and discourse with him, he and his servant remembered him, and the owner of the money was sent for, who was also carried before the justice ; and there he, the carrier and his servant were all bound to prosecute the felon, which was much in the vexation of the owner of the money, who expected the next assizes to have a trial against the town, and to recover his money of them, whereas now he saw he was like to lose that and only have an indictment against the felon, wheras if he should find him guilty, it would be a little satisfaction for such a sum of money as he had lost.

As he expected, and as the plot was laid, so it fell out ; for the assizes being come, an indictment was brought in against our delinquent, and although he bustled to defend himself, yet he was found guilty. Then he made an ingenuous confession to the judge of the manner of the robbery, only concealing as much as he thought convenient, alleging that indeed he was guilty, but it was his first act, but he was drawn in by chance being overtaken on the way by the robbers, he being coming to the town to visit his uncle. Therefore he prayed mercy of the court. The judge told him that if he would discover his companions somewhat might be done, but not else. He replied, that truly he was not in their company above eight-and-forty hours in all, and therefore knew not of their haunts, but if his honour would spare his life he would, if ever he met them, cause them to be apprehended. To this the judge made no answer, so that our adventurer's uncle presented a petition to the judge in behalf of his kinsman, and the other chief men of the town pretending for his uncle's sake to do so assisted him in it, and they drew the petition so pitifully that the judge, at their importunity, granted him reprieve for the present, leaving him to sue

out his pardon as fast as he could. Thus all parties were content except the owner of the money, who went away with a flea in his ear. And our adventurer so plied his business, wanting for neither money nor friends, that in short time he gained his pardon, and was set free. I will add this further of our companion, that after this he turned honest man, for by virtue of the money he had gained in this robbery, and what was given him, he first set up an ale-house, and soon after an inn, and hath borne all offices in the parish.

And this story, said I, Mistress Dorothy, somewhat resembles yours, for your thieves cheated the county, who paid the knight what he had lost, and here on the contrary, the county outwitted the party robbed, and saved their purses ; and truly I have known several of these transactions, and sometimes the guilty escape, and the innocent are punished. And now, continued I, Mistress Dorothy, you see I am acquainted with these kind of stories and as I have already related one of a padder, which do somewhat equal yours, I will now also tell you another of a pickpocket, which shall be much like yours of that nature ; and thus it was.

A crew of blades of that profession came to a country town on a market day, and finding there was little good to be done without some occasion to draw the people together more than ordinary, they therefore went to an alehouse to consult on what was necessary to be done. After several debates held, it was concluded as follows, that whereas they had lately taken up a boy of about ten years of age, who was very desirous of learning their mystery, and whereas they had instructed him sufficiently in the theory thereof, that it was now time to put him in practice, and therefore the gravest man in the company was to walk out with him, shew him what he was to do and help him if he stood in need thereof, and the rest of the society were to be at hand to do as occasion should offer. This being agreed upon, the old fellow took the boy by the hand and led him through the market, but there was no probability of a prize ; and the boy having promised to do much, the old man sought out for somewhat that might be worthy his undertaking. So going out of the market they entered the churchyard and there they saw an old woman with a great pouch of money by her side, kneeling by a tombstone and doing her devotions. Our old fellow seeing this, said to the boy, ‘ Sirrah, you see that old woman with the pouch ? ’ ‘ Yes Sir,’ replies the boy. ‘ Go thither,’ said he, ‘ and bring away her purse and money.’ The boy was not at all daunted at the boldness of the undertaking, but went up to the woman, and so soon as he came near her, he likewise fell on his knees, and fell a-mumbling as if he were also at his devotions. The old woman seeing him so devout,

permitted him to continue by her, but he putting down one of his hands, by virtue of a knife and horn-thimble cut off her purse.

The old man stood not far off and saw his carriage, which was so cunningly contrived that he could not forbear laughing at it, but bethinking him of a further design, he was resolved to discover the boy, whereupon stopping some passengers that were going by, he said to them, ‘I pray, friends, behold yonder boy how devout he is, do you not think he will be a good one in time that is so religiously given already?’ ‘Yes surely,’ said the people. ‘Oh the cunningness of the young rogue!’ said the old fellow, ‘how much you are all mistaken, for I have stood and seen that young rogue cut the old woman’s purse.’ Thereupon he went to his young practitioner in roguery and took him by the hand, causing him to arise, and bringing him to the people, shewed them the purse he had thus purchased. The old woman was not so intent at her devotions but casting her eyes aside likewise saw a purse in the boy’s hand. Missing her own she soon knew that to be it, wherefore she and all the people came nearer the boy, who stood still as a stock and said nothing to them. And all the people, not only they that went by, but also at their report most of the people in the market, came thither to see this young rogue, admiring at the boldness of the fact. But they had been better to have stayed away and minded their own affairs, for our old rogue seeing his opportunity, and that now there was a great many people together, he fell a-diving into their pockets and got good pillage, and his companions, who were not far off, at the noise came in to the sport, and all laid about them so lustily that there were few who escaped without their pockets being picked. Only the old woman had her purse again, but in exchange of that our old rogue and his companions had twenty others better fraught with money; in fine, they being weary with looking on the boy, and the pickpockets thinking they had done sufficiently for that time, the old fellow came to the boy and told him that as he had first of all discovered him, so he should go along with him. The boy, who had learned obedience to his superiors, consented, and so they marched off, and went a little way out of the town to an alehouse, where they divided the plunder of the field, which amounted to above twenty pounds.

And thus having told my tale, I said to Mistress Dorothy that I thought this was somewhat like her discourse of the pickpockets. She told me she must needs confess it, and that both my tales exceeded hers, and therefore she desired me to remit her promise of proceeding any further in her discourse; ‘for,’ said she, ‘I shall be able to acquaint you with nothing but what you know already.’ As for that, said I, I must hear the conclusion of your story, but since you seem to approve

of what I have told you, I shall proceed a little further, and relate a story to you somewhat like my first, and thus it was :

A highwayman who had used the trade for a long time, was at length caught, and the evidence was so clear against him that he was likely to be cast, and then he was sure to go to pot, for he had been singed on the fist already, and the judge who was to try him was very severe on that account. Wherefore he was very melancholy, and much perplexed, and all the friends he had could not comfort him. However, he was one day drinking with some friends in the jail, and telling them the sadness of his condition, and several ways were propounded for his safety. They told him that it would be best to compound the fact with the prosecutor. ‘I have offered that,’ said the felon, ‘and though I did not take above twenty pounds from the party, yet I have offered him fifty pound for composition, if he will forbear prosecution ; but he will not hear of any thing but the law, and will make no end but what that shall, and if it comes to that, then I am certain sorrow will be my sops.’ ‘How,’ said one that was present, ‘will he not take fifty pounds for twenty ? Sure he wants no money, for if he knew the want of it so much as I do, he would not make so slight of fifty pounds ; but I pray,’ continued he, ‘what is the reason he is so outrageous against you ? What is the cause of his violent proceeding ?’ ‘Truly,’ replied the thief, ‘it was my misfortune to be one of those two that met with him one night, and he having twenty pounds and a watch about him we eased him of them. My companion escaped, but I was seized the next night on suspicion, and having besides my share of the twenty pounds the watch about me, which we had likewise taken from him, it was, as he said, a clear testimony and evidence of the fact. He earnestly enquired for the ring which my companion had for his share ; and because I cannot help him to the ring he is thus obstinate.’ ‘Well then, I see,’ said the other, ‘you have confessed the fact, and therefore there is no hope of saving you.’ ‘Truly,’ replied the paddler, ‘I never yet confessed it to any one that I think will do me any prejudice, but much less to him ; but instead of confessing I have always stoutly denied it, alleging that I bought the watch that evening of one in whose company I was.’ ‘Nay then,’ replied the other, ‘your case is not so desperate as I thought it ; how say you now ; are you willing to be as good as your word, and give the fifty pounds you speak of to be discharged of this matter ?’ ‘Yes, with all my heart,’ said the paddler. ‘Well then,’ said the other, ‘if you will deposit the money into another man’s hands that I may be sure of it when you are discharged I will undertake you shall be acquitted.’ ‘Content,’ said the other, ‘but I pray acquaint me with the manner how you will manage this affair.’ Our undertaker replied that he had

considered of what was to be done, and was resolved so he might be sure of the money, to venture his own neck to save the other's, and that he would take upon him the fact, and thereby discharge him.

The padder was content to part with his money, but withal he desired to have some clear demonstration how he intended to manage the business ; to which our undertaker replied, ' it must be your care not to be tried till the last day of the assizes, and then still deny the fact very stoutly, continuing your allegation that you did buy the watch of a stranger, but one whom you would know if you again should see him. Then I must borrow your clothes, and the periwig you wore when you committed the fact, and then I purpose at that time not to be far from you. When I see a convenient time I will appear, and the manner shall be thus : I will attempt to pick a man's pocket, but I will do it so unworkmanlike that if he be not a very dolt he shall discover me. I being discovered must be brought before the judge for the fact, and when you see me there you shall cry out as amazed and surprized, that I am the very man of whom you bought the watch, and you shall then see that although I deny it a little at first, yet I will at last confess myself guilty, and so you shall be discharged. This,' said our undertaker, ' is my proposition, and now if you can contrive it better, do, and I will follow your directions.'

The padder and all his friends were hugely well satisfied and pleased with the undertaker's discourse, and could not find any fault in any particular, wherefore their agreement was quickly perfected, and the fifty pounds were delivered into the custody of one whom they both knew and entrusted, to be kept by him until the padder should be discharged. Several persons then present asked of the undertaker how he intended to come off himself ? ' As for that,' replied he, ' I have it in my head, and I will venture that, and keep it safe enough too I hope.' This business being thus agreed on they parted, and the undertaker had the clothes and periwig of the padder delivered to him ; and the padder did put himself into a habit quite different from that.

Thus affairs stood when the assizes began, which lasted two days, only the first day was past, and our padder had by his endeavours kept himself from being called ; the second day was come and forenoon past, when in the afternoon this cause was to be heard. The judge's servants were some of them gone out of the town to make provision for their master at another town, whither he was that night to follow, so that there was a necessity for his removal. About three of the clock this prisoner was brought to the bar, his indictment was read, which was for robbing the countryman of 20*l.* in money, and a silver watch, and a gold ring. To this the prisoner pleaded not guilty and so put

himself upon his trial, according to the ordinary form. Then was the countryman called, who did allege that the prisoner at the bar was the party who, with another companion, did rob him as aforesaid. The prisoner denied the fact, and desired the judge to ask his accuser what habit he was then in. To this the countryman replied that indeed his habit and hair were then different from what he now had, but that was an easy thing to alter, but he was sure he was the man, for he had his very watch in his pocket. To this the prisoner replied as formerly, that he bought it of a person who, indeed, was habited as the countryman had described.

He was come to this part of his trial when a noise was heard in the court of crying out ‘A pickpocket ! A pickpocket !’ and soon after our undertaker was haled into court. The judge seeing him, said, ‘Sirrah, how durst you be so bold ? I shall talk with you by and by, set him by at present.’ The prisoner at the bar seeing it was now a fit time, cried out, ‘O my lord ! I pray let him stay here now, for, indeed, my lord, that is the very person of whom I bought the watch, and whose just fate hath brought him hither at this time, that my innocence may be cleared ; therefore I beseech you, my lord, let him be examined, and I question not but you will soon find my innocence.’ The judge hearing the exclamations of the prisoner, and supposing there might be somewhat in the case, and withal being desirous to execute justice, caused the undertaker to be brought to the bar, and then he thus began. ‘Now, you who are the prisoner at the bar, and upon your trial, what do you say to, or charge this man with ?’ ‘My lord,’ replied the paddler, ‘I say and allege that this person who stands here by me is the very person of whom I bought the watch, and I gave him fifty shillings for it, let him deny it if he can, and, my lord, I further say that I suppose he is the person who committed the robbery, for he is habited just as this countryman described one of them to be.’ ‘What say you to this ?’ said my lord to the countryman. ‘Truly, my lord,’ said he, ‘I am somewhat at a stand, for indeed one of those who robbed me was habited as this fellow is,’ pointing to the undertaker, ‘but I finding my watch in the custody of this other did verily believe and was very confident that it was he that robbed me, but I must leave all to your lordship and the jury.’ ‘Now, you Sir,’ said my lord to the undertaker, ‘what say you for yourself ? Did you sell a watch to this man here ?’ ‘My lord,’ replied he, ‘I have never a watch.’ ‘No, I know that now,’ said my lord, ‘but did you not sell a watch to this man ?’ My lord,’ said the undertaker, ‘I am an honest man.’ ‘That’s a sign of your honesty, when you pick a pocket in my presence.’ ‘My lord, it is a mistake,’ replied the fellow. ‘I believe,’ said my lord, ‘we shall not be

mistaken in you by and by.' Having thus said the watch itself was produced, and shewed to the undertaker ; and he was asked if he knew it. ' Yes, my lord,' said he, ' I had such a watch as this.' ' And where had you it ? ' ' I know not,' said the undertaker. At this the paddler cried out, ' O, my lord, he hath said enough to discharge me and accuse himself, for he owns he had the watch, and I am sure I bought it of him. Therefore, good my lord, do me justice : acquit me, and punish him.' ' All in due time,' said my lord, ' we must not condemn him before he be lawfully indicted, but I think he hath confessed enough against himself, and therefore he shall be committed ; and since I cannot stay now any longer he shall be indicted the next assizes. Till then he must lie by it and have time to repent.' ' But I pray, my lord,' said the paddler, ' let me be discharged.' ' I cannot discharge you,' replied my lord, ' now you are upon your trial, except the jury find you not guilty.' ' I put myself upon them,' said the paddler, whereupon the jury only asking the undertaker some questions which he doubtfully answered, the jury gave their verdict, Not guilty, and thus was the paddler discharged. But he was bound to come in evidence the next assizes against the undertaker, and so was the countryman.

But he had been better to have taken fifty pounds than thus to have troubled himself about the ring, for in the end he lost all, and no hanging was in the case ; for when the next assizes came, and our undertaker was indicted, the tale was now of another hog. He denied all knowledge of the watch, and as he had owned any thing before, he now again denied it, bringing witnesses to prove where he was at that hour, and all the time of the robbery, and saying he told them it was a mistake the last time, that he was then only surprized. Indeed he spake so well and to the purpose, that he was acquitted of the robbery and only whipped a little for picking the pocket ; and so he marched off with fifty pounds ; and the paddler who did not appear at the assizes as witness against him, let the recognizance go against him, leaving the law to find him where they could catch him.

## CHAPTER XVIII

*Mistress Mary relates a notable story of a country gentleman's cheating a goldsmith ; another much more remarkable of a gentleman's boy, by assistance of his master, who put a notable trick on a goldsmith : afterwards going for France, he is notoriously robbed by way of retaliation : the manner how, with his accompanying a seeming gallant to a feast who steals a piece of plate*

HAVING now finished my discourse, I desired Mistress Dorothy to proceed in hers, and put an end to her adventures ; to which she replied that since I was so well acquainted with these passages, and could recount things so various and wittily pleasant, which far exceeded anything she could say, she desired to be excused from any further recital. I told her I must needs, however, hear what she could further say, for all she had hitherto said was various from what I had related to her. Mistress Mary likewise joined with me in this request, telling her that she must needs proceed in her narrative, for she longed to hear what was the end of the host and hostess, and how she left them and came to London, and what else had happened to her till the first of their acquaintance.

'Truly,' replied Mistress Dorothy, 'I shall give you satisfaction to all these particulars ; but methinks you were but short in your narrative and might have enlarged ; and since you did, as I believe, omit many passages of your life that were considerable, I pray let us hear some of them from you.' 'I must confess,' said Mistress Mary, 'that in the recital I made you of my actions I only recounted to you those things which did pertain to my own story, as thinking it impertinent to relate any others ; but if I had thought it pleasant, I could likewise have told you of some such robberies and cheats as some of my acquaintance were engaged in.' 'It is not too late to do it now,' said I to her ; 'and seeing Mistress Dorothy is not yet pleased to continue her story, I pray you therefore to let us know some of your experience in this nature.' 'I shall not deny your request,' replied Mistress Mary, and therefore after some little pause to recollect her self of what she had to say ; she thus began.

I must confess that I had several of my customers whilst I lived publicly at London, who although they come to me full, returned empty ; and then necessity put them upon unlawful courses, and when they could not live of themselves, then they lived by shirking upon others.

This was their first step, and when this would not do, and they began to be angry and discontented that they could not wear money in their pockets, they then fell to gaming, and all the cheats of that mystery were put in practice. When that course left them, the next was to pick pockets, steal cloaks, and a hundred such kind of shirking tricks, till from one degree to another they came to the high pad, and from thence to the gaol, and so to the gibbet. Many, I say, of my acquaintance did run through all these courses, and beginning, as they say, with a pin, proceeded to a point, and so to a bigger thing, till the rope held them ; but I always made it my business to leave them off when they began these courses. Among others that came to me I had a country gentleman, who designing to deal honestly with a shop-keeper, had occasion to outwit him, who intended to cheat the countryman. The country gentleman, when he came to me, had his pockets well lined with half-crown pieces, but he loving his pleasure I made him pay for it so considerably that his pocket was well near emptied. He had twenty pieces of gold and several rings, part of which I designed to be mistress of ; but he was too wise and wary to part from any such precious commodities.

But an urgent occasion happening, and money being wanting, he was resolved to sell a diamond ring that he had, which was worth fifty pounds ; wherefore he, keeping a servant, took him along to Lombard Street. When he came there, he pitched upon a goldsmith's shop where he intended to sell it ; he therefore drew off his ring, and asked the goldsmith what it was worth. The goldsmith looking on him, and then on the ring, did hope to make this ring his own for a small matter ; and seeing our countryman in a plain country habit, did believe that he had little skill in diamonds, and that this came accidentally to his possession, and that he might purchase it very easily. Wherefore being doubtful what to answer as to price, he told the countryman that the worth of it was uncertain, for he could not directly tell whether it was right, or counterfeit. 'As for that,' said the countryman, 'I believe it is right, and dare warrant it, and indeed I intend to sell it, and therefore would know what you will give me for it.' 'Truly,' replied the goldsmith, 'I believe it may be worth ten pounds.' 'Yes, and more money,' said the countryman. 'Not much more,' said the goldsmith, 'for look you here,' said he, 'here is a ring which I will warrant is much better than yours, and I will also warrant it to be a right good diamond, and I will sell it you for twenty pounds.' This the goldsmith said, supposing that the countryman who came to sell had no skill, inclination, nor money to buy ; but the countryman believing that the goldsmith only said thus, thinking to draw him on to part from his own ring the more

easily, and by that means cheat him, resolved if he could, to be too wise for the goldsmith. Wherefore taking both the rings into his hands, as to compare them together, he thus said : ‘ I am sure mine is a right diamond.’ ‘ And so is mine,’ replied the goldsmith. ‘ And,’ said the countryman, ‘ shall I have it for twenty pounds ? ’ ‘ Yes,’ replied the goldsmith ; ‘ but,’ said he, ‘ I suppose you come to sell, and not to buy ; and since you shall see I will be a good customer, I will give you fifteen pounds for yours.’ ‘ Nay,’ replied the countryman, ‘ since I have had my choice to buy or sell, I will never refuse a good pennyworth, as I think this is. Therefore Master Goldsmith, I will keep my own and give you money for yours.’ ‘ Where is it ? ’ said the goldsmith hastily, endeavouring then to seize on his ring. ‘ Hold a blow there,’ said the countryman, ‘ here’s your money, but the ring I will keep.’

The goldsmith seeing himself caught, flustered and flounced like a madman, and the countryman pulling out a little purse, told down twenty pieces of gold, and said, ‘ Here, shop-keeper, here’s your money ; but I hope you will allow me eighteen pence a-piece in exchange for my gold.’ ‘ Tell not me of exchange, but give me my ring,’ said the goldsmith. ‘ It is mine,’ said the countryman, ‘ for I have bought it and paid for it, and have witness of my bargain.’ All this would not serve the goldsmith’s turn, but he cursed and swore that the countryman came to cheat him, and his ring he would have. At the noise several people came about his shop, but he was so perplexed that he could not tell his tale, and the country gentleman could. At length a constable came, and although the goldsmith knew not to what purpose, yet before a justice he would go. The countryman was content, and therefore together they went. When they came there, the goldsmith, who was the plaintiff, began his tale and said that the countryman had taken a diamond ring from him worth one hundred pounds and would give him but twenty pounds for it. ‘ Have a care what you say,’ replied the countryman ; ‘ for if you charge me with taking a ring from you, I suppose that is stealing ; and if you say so, I shall vex you farther than I have done,’ and then he told the justice the whole story as I have related, which was then a very plain case, and for proof of the matter, the country gentleman’s man was witness.

The goldsmith hearing this, alleged that he believed the country gentleman and his man were both impostors and cheats. To this the countryman replied as before, that he were best have a care he did not make his case worse, and bring an old house on his head by slandering of him, for it was well known that he was a gentleman of three hundred pounds *per annum*, and lived at a place he named but twenty miles from London ; and that he being desirous to sell a ring, came to his

shop to that purpose, but he would have cheated him ; but it proved he only made a rod for his own breech, and what he intended to him, was fallen upon himself. Thus did the country gentleman make good his discourse, and the justice seeing there was no injustice done, dismissed them, but ordered that his neighbour the goldsmith should have the twenty pieces of gold for twenty pounds, though they were worth more in exchange ; and this was all the satisfaction he had.

The country gentleman went to a citizen, an acquaintance of his, to whom he delivered the ring he had so purchased, desiring him to sell it for him, which he did ; for being known to be a citizen, the goldsmith that bought it offered him at the first word ninety-five pounds for it, and in the end gave him forty shillings more ; with which money he returned to the countryman, and he giving him the forty shillings for his pains, returned with the rest to me, relating all the matter as it had passed. I was as much pleased as he, because I questioned not but I should partake with him, and so I did ; for he gave me ten pound to buy me a gown ; and thus was our goldsmith well enough served. And it was not long after, before another goldsmith had a considerable loss, and thus it was.

Amongst the other customers that came to me, there was a gentleman, a blade of fortune, who although he was of a good family, yet being a younger brother had but little besides his wits to live upon. But as he was a gentleman, so he kept himself in a garb according to his quality, and had a foot-boy in a livery to attend him. This boy was a notable young rogue, and had assisted his master in many an exploit, and was privy to most of his secrets. This young man coming to visit me, and we falling into discourses of wit, I related to him the adventure of the country gentleman with the goldsmith. He was much pleased with the relation, and told me the goldsmith was well enough served, and that above all trades, he had a greater pique or anger against them than any ; ‘for,’ said he, ‘it grieves me to the heart to walk through Cheapside or Lombard Street with little or no money in my pocket, and see so much jingling of money in their shops, and so great a quantity of Jacobusses and other gold, either lying in their glass cases, or telling on the counters ; and methinks when I see it my fingers itch to be handling of some of them. But I believe if a gentleman should starve they would not part from any without very good security. But,’ said he, ‘I have now thought upon a way how to get some of them without much hazard.’

I being desirous to know, he told me thus. ‘My boy and I will walk along ; and Sirrah,’ said he to the boy, ‘when I make a small stop, do you go into the goldsmith’s shop where you shall see them telling of money ; and laying your hand upon a heap, catch up a handful. But

so soon as you have taken it up, let it fall down again and leave it where you had it, and come after me and leave the rest to my management.' The boy promised to do as he was directed. 'But,' said I, 'what advantage can you make by your boy's handling of money and leaving it behind him?' 'As for that,' said he, 'I question not before I have done I shall make a good business of it,' and thereupon he left me, and went immediately to put this his project in execution. He returned that evening and told me all was well yet, and it would be better in time. I desired to know his meaning, whereupon he told me that according to his appointment the boy went into the goldsmith's shop, took up a handful of money, laid it all down again and ran away to him; that he was no sooner come to him but the goldsmith's servants were at his heels; that he looking about and seeing them, asked what the matter was. They replied, his boy had stolen some money. He answered he knew it was false; they said it was true, and he should go back with them to their master. The boy was content, and so was the master; when coming to the shop, the goldsmith himself said that that boy, if he were his, had robbed him. The boy and his master both denied it and they fell to hot words, 'so that the goldsmith called me,' said the gentleman, "Shirking Fellow," and that he would have me sent to Newgate for robbing him; for if the boy did it, it was by my appointment. I told him that he did abuse me, and that in conclusion must, and should pay for it; but first I desired to know with what sum they charged the boy. They said they knew not, but that he had taken money from a heap which they were telling, which heap was a hundred pounds.

'Hearing them say thus, I told them I would stay the telling of it, and then they might judge who had the abuse. They were content with it, and accordingly went to telling. Half an hour had dispatched that matter, and then they found that they had all their money right to a farthing. The goldsmith seeing this asked my pardon for the affront. "For," said he, "it is a mistake." I answered that he must pay for his prating, and that I was a person of that quality that would not put up the affront, and that he must hear further from me. He seeing me so hot was as choleric as I, and so we parted, and thus far I have proceeded.' 'But all this while,' said I, 'I do not see where is your gain.' 'That is to come,' said he. So it was, and did come in, and that considerably too; for the next day he caused the goldsmith to be arrested in an action of defamation, and the serjeant who arrested him being well feed by the gentleman, told the goldsmith that he were best to compound the matter, for the gentleman was a person of quality, and would not put it up, but make him pay soundly for it, if he proceeded any further. The goldsmith being desirous of quiet harkened to his counsel, and agreed to give 10*l.*;

but that would not be taken. Twenty pounds was given to the gentleman, and so the business was made up for the present.

Our gentleman, who had some of the goldsmith's money, was resolved to have more, or venture hard for it ; wherefore having again given instructions to his boy what do, he made several journeys to the goldsmith's, walking by his door to watch an opportunity. At length he found one ; for seeing the servants telling a considerable quantity of gold, he gave the sign to his boy, who went in and clapping his hand on the heap, took up and brought away a full handful, and coming to his master gave it him. Neither did the boy make such haste out of the shop but that he could hear a stranger who was in the shop receiving money say to the apprentice, ' Why do you not stop the boy ? ' ' No,' said the apprentice, ' I do not mean to ; I know him well enough, my master paid sauce lately for stopping him.' So they continued telling their money, which I am sure did not fall out so right as formerly ; for that evening the master and boy both came to my lodging, and not only told me how they had sped, but I saw the effects of their enterprize. This young rogue had brought off with him between forty and fifty brave yellow pieces. We all three rejoiced at our good fortune, for I was concerned, having five pieces of it given to me. I then told the gentleman that he had run a very great hazard, and that I did not think he had practised these tricks. ' No, truly,' replied he, ' this is the first I ever did in England, but I have been abroad in France and other countries, where I was acquainted with rare ingenious fellows at these tricks, and they had notable inventions to get money ; and sometimes I would put in as a party with them, and from them it was that I learned this confidence.' I then desired him to relate to me some of his practices in those countries ; he soon granted my request, and began as followeth.

I had not been long in Paris but I had some tricks put upon me. The first was this : I endeavoured to appear brave, made a rich suit and cloak, and with this strutted about the streets to shew myself, hoping and expecting that some French madam or other would fall in love with me. But instead of that, some of these gentlemen divers fell in love with my cloak, and were resolved to have it. Wherefore they watched me one evening and as it growing late I was going home to my quarters, passing through a blind lane, where was nothing but back doors of gentlemen's stables. Three fellows seized on me, one dives into my pockets, whence he fished out all the little money I had about me, which amounted to above thirty shillings English, another draws his knife and cuts the neck button of my cloak, and the third takes off my hat. I had not lost all my spirits, so that I told them they did very uncivilly by me

to take away my hat and leave me to walk without one. They began to swear at me and forced me to entreat for my hat, and withal considering that the loss of my cloak would spoil my suit, I told them that I hoped, as they were gentlemen, so they would hear reason, and offered if they would put any price upon the cloak I would redeem it. They thinking money would do them more good than the cloak, told me that if I would give them five pounds, I should have it. The cloak stood me in ten pounds, and therefore I was resolved to give them five pounds, therefore I desired them to name the place and time when I should meet them with the money ; they answered me, the next evening about that time and in a place there adjoining in the street. But they told me that if I thought by that appointment to bring any with me to catch them, that then they would mischief me. I promised them that I would not, and so we departed, but withal they were so civil as to give me my hat along with me.

I went home to my lodging, and though I was vexed at my misfortune, yet I was forced to rest with patience till the next evening when putting the promised money in my pocket, I went at the time to the place appointed. I had not stayed there long but I heard the noise of a coach, and on a sudden two men came out at the boot, and seizing on me muffled me in one of their cloaks and put me into the coach. This done, the coachman did drive on apace, and I was in but bad taking to think what a case I was in, and did verily believe that those fellows who had the last night taken my money and cloak from me, had now a design upon my life, and therefore were come themselves, or had sent some of their companions to rob and kill me. I had not continued long in these thoughts but the coach stopped, and I was taken out of it, and being carried into a courtyard, was unmuffled, and led into a great hall, where I was met by those three who had the night before discloaked me. They told me I was welcome, and that what had been done to me that evening was only to prevent their being outwitted and discovered by me, and withal, as I was a stranger, to treat and entertain me amongst them. I hearing that it was no worse plucked up my spirits and answered them that I was resolved to be in everything as good as my word, and therefore came alone to the place appointed, and had brought my money with me. They then led me through the hall into an adjoining wardrobe which was full of cloaks, gowns, hats, swords, and all such kind of habiliments, and among the rest I saw my cloak, wherefore I told out the money and took my cloak, put it on, and went into the hall amongst them. There I was welcomed by several of the gang and they had women amongst them, who all looked on me with a cheerful countenance, and treated me very civilly.

They all desired of me that if I intended their friendship and my own safety, I must not take any notice of them before any company, or if I met them abroad. I promised to perform this injunction, and so we went to supper, after that to dancing, and spent three or four hours in very pleasant manner ; and then several of them departing I thought it was time for me to do so too, but I believed it would be convenient to ask leave before I went. Wherefore I told those whom I best knew, that I was amind, if they pleased, to go home. They told me that I might do so, but it must be in the same manner as I came. I consented to it, and two of them going into the coach with me, hid my face for a short space, and then let me see. But I quickly perceived that I had gone through several by-lanes and passages, and at length came to the place where I had been taken up, and there they set me down, and the coachman whirling about left me in a moment. I therefore went the ready way home to my lodging, where I went to bed and consulted with myself about this adventure, not having known or heard of the like.

It was not many days before I was engaged in another which was as strange as the former. Although I was in a strange country, yet I had some acquaintance whom I visited sometimes. One day being solitary a-walking, I met with one of these of my acquaintance ; he saluted me very courteously, and told me he supposed I was minded to break off the friendship we had lately contracted because I had been so great a stranger at his house. I replied that I intended to give him a visit. ‘I pray then, Sir,’ said he, ‘let it be to morrow. The sooner the better, for I have a great desire to converse with you ; and Sir,’ said he, ‘if you have any friend bring him with you, and for your sake he shall be as welcome as yourself.’ I replied, it was very likely that I should wait upon him, and thus we parted. I remember since that about the time I met this friend I was overtaken by a gentle fellow, who had followed me like my shadow, and during the time of this converse he waited as I did, and now I being parted from my friend, and having walked a little faster than before, I had dropped my gentleman who sauntered behind.

The next day about the time that mortals whet their knives on thresholds, and shoe-soles, I prepared to go to dinner to my friends, and again by the way I was accosted by this gentle fellow, who had the day before followed me, and now he did so again. When I came to my friend’s house and entered there, he did so too, and with as much confidence as if he had been of great acquaintancce with the inviter. He sat down among other guests that were there ; dinner was soon after brought in, and there being several guests, much victuals, and much variety was served at the table. My strange gentleman did eat as heartily

and talk as boldly as any there, and I thought him to be one of the inviter's acquaintance, and he supposed he was my friend which I had brought with me. But he proved to be very no good friend to the man of the house, for waiting his opportunity he went to the cupboard's head, which stood in a convenient place, and clapping a piece of plate worth ten pounds under his cloak, he walked off *incognito*. I soon after missed him, and my friend missed my friend as he told me, but it was not much longer ere the plate was missing, and although private search was made, yet it was not found. Our friend being gone, the inviter missing none of the guests but him, asked me for him ; but when I told him he was no friend nor acquaintance of mine, he soon knew which way his plate went. Thus he, thinking him to be my friend, and I thinking him to be his, this fellow had the conveniency of doing this injury. But I soon understood that it was a usual matter to play such pranks and that more considerable, and that withal a very bold confidence, unusual with other nations, and upon second thoughts I remember I had seen this fellow among those who had my cloak ; but it was too late now to remember it, and it had been unsafe then to have taken any notice of him, remembering the charge had been given me.

## CHAPTER XIX

*Two notorious rogues robbed a church by the help of two friars' habits : afterwards they robbed a merchant of silks, plate, &c. : by a notable stratagem they laid for the purpose in an inn next adjacent, they ransacked a linen-draper's shop in the night, by conveying a boy into it being enclosed within a supposed bail of goods, who proved the key to let them in to perfect their design : by counterfeiting a gentleman's key they stole from him six hundred crowns, and murdering him flayed his face that he might not be known, but were notwithstanding by a miraculous providence discovered and executed, who being penitent at their death, confessed many notorious villainies : a notable trick a gentleman puts upon a pickpocket*

THUS (continued Mistress Mary) did this gentleman finish his two stories of the cloak, and the piece of plate. I told him I wondered at the boldness of those Frenchmen, and that they exceeded our countrymen in confidence. 'Yes,' said he, 'if you knew so much as I, you would have reason to say so, for it is a usual thing for them to seize gentlemen if they can light upon them in any convenient place, and carry them some miles out of the town, and make them pay money for a ransom ;

neither dare they contradict it lest worse befal them, and they are bloodily minded, for if they cannot get money, they will do any murder.

Not far from Paris, continued he, two of these rogues had been hunting for prey, and because they could not meet with any purchase, they were resolved, rather than fail, to commit some murder. The next that met them were two friars ; these having no money to redeem their lives were dispatched into the other world, and having so done, they stripped them, and put on their friars' weeds. Being thus habited they marched further into the country ; and coming late to a country town, went to the parson's house, who entertained them. As they came in late, so they went out early, pretending necessary occasions, and the parson not being up nor willing to rise so soon, they desired the key of the church (which was adjoining to the house) that they might go to it to do their devotions before they went. The key was accordingly delivered, and they went in ; but instead of saying their prayers, they made a prey of what they met with, the silver chalices, and all the ornaments of the church they took with them, and so went on their way to do more mischief.

But not having the conveniency to execute their designs in the habit they were in, they therefore went to the place where they had hid their own, and there putting them on, they marched to Paris, where they walked about the city to espy what mischief might be done. Being now both weary, hungry, and thirsty, they went into a drinking-house, which being full of guests below, they were conducted up one pair of stairs, and there they had both victuals and drink such as they desired. When their bellies were full, their eyes did wander about the room to see if they might espy anything to make a purchase of ; but although they could see nothing in that room, yet they could discern that in the house opposite to them there was much rich goods, fine silks, and satins. Their fingers itched to be handling of them, but at present they knew not how. However, resolving that they would attempt it, but not finding any means how at present to do it, they therefore were resolved to try if they could take up their quarters at the house they were drinking in, and then they did not question but they should in short time find out some means to execute their design. Having taken this resolution, they therefore called for more drink, and their landlord's company ; and being frolic and expensive, that they might be accounted good guests, they asked of the landlord whether they might not have a lodging there. He believing it would be to his profit, told them they might, but they must lodge one pair of stairs higher. They were well enough content with that, and therefore drank on till it was night, and then to bed they went, and laid their plot how to rob this merchant's house.

This they did few days after. They went out and purchased ropes, and a pulley, and seeing a large chest to be sold at second-hand, they likewise bought that, and putting in their ropes and pulley, and a great quantity of rags and stones, and such like trash, that it might seem heavy, they caused it to be carried to their lodging. Their host seeing so large a chest and so heavy, did believe that his guests were rich, and that a considerable quantity of treasure was therein enclosed, and therefore gave them a greater respect than formerly. They, every day when they went out, carried out part of the rubbish which they had bestowed in the chest, so that in short time it was empty, or at least, nothing but the ropes and pulley was in it. They only now waited for a convenient opportunity to execute their design, which they considered must be done when both the houses, as well that where they lodged as the merchant's house they intended to rob, were empty ; and no day was so likely to leave them so as a Sunday. Wherefore, that they might have the better pretence for staying at home, they both pretended some indisposition in their bodies, for which, they said, they thought it convenient to take physic.

They had been so good guests to the house that the host was willing to accommodate them in anything ; however, when he and his family went to church, they locked the street-door. No sooner was that house clear but they were resolved to attempt the other, and knowing that the master and mistress, and most, if not all the family, was likewise gone out, they were resolved to kill the rest, if they found any single person that should oppose them. They intended to make their way into the house by going down the chimney, and therefore they had provided ropes and a pulley, and there was no great difficulty to get to the house-top, for they ascended to the garret of their landlord's house, got out of the window to the top of that, and the other house joining to that to the street side, they soon got to the chimney they intended to descend. The house where they lodged, and this merchant's house were joined together in the front, but backwards there was an alley of about six foot wide that separated them, and across this alley it was that they first saw the room wherein the silks were placed. They being gotten to the chimney's top, laid a piece of timber across, and fastening their pulley to that, and putting their rope in the pulley, the one who was to descend the chimney took hold of one end of the rope ; and his companion holding another part of the rope, by degrees he was let down into the room he desired. It was two pair of stairs below the garret, and in regard the silk might be soiled and spoiled if they were drawn up the chimney, they did not take that course but a more easy one, for he that was on the house-top, went into their lodging the same way he came up, and going down into the chamber that was even with and opposite to

that where his companion was, he opened a casement ; and his companion doing the like, they could without much difficulty reach to one another. So in short time the richest, and best of the merchant's silk was conveyed into their quarters.

Our thieves seeing they had gained this prize with so little danger and difficulty, were resolved to get more if they could ; and therefore he that was in the house ransacked it all over, and finding a considerable quantity of plate and money, he likewise conveyed it to his companion. And now having done all this, he went into the shop, intending to leave the street door open, that the merchant, when he came home, might suppose that the thieves who had robbed him did come in that way. But the street-door was double locked, and therefore it could not be opened ; wherefore he undid the bolts of one of the shop windows, and leaving it loosely open, he went up again. And telling his companion what he had done, and that there was no more to be done, he ordered him to go to the house-top, and as he had assisted in letting him down the chimney, so to help to draw him up, which the other did accordingly.

There was one scruple came into their minds, that although the shop-window was opened, and the merchant might reasonably enough imagine that the thieves who had robbed him had come in that way, yet they were very sensible that with descending and ascending the chimney they had thrown down much soot, which might cause a suspicion that they who robbed the house might come in that way, and so they might be discovered. Wherefore to prevent all such suspicion as much as they could, they tumbled down two or three brick-bats that lay on the top of the chimney, which might be supposed to be blown down by the wind ; and having thus done they retired to their quarters, disposing all their silks, money, and plate unto their chest. And that there might be the less suspicion of them, the landlord soon returning, one of them pretending to be very ill, and the other very diligent in attending his companion. Their landlord furnished them with strong waters, and such other cordials as were at hand ; and the merchant coming home found his shop-window open, and his house robbed. It being so apparent, as he thought, that the robbers came in or went out at the shop windows ; he had no suspicion of any other contrivance ; all that he could do was to have all suspicious places searched. His neighbour's house escaped, being too near home to be suspected. The host only thinking he had escaped a danger being so near, and telling them that it was not good to leave a house empty, and although all his folks went with him to church, yet he had left two honest guests in his house, and besides they were locked in fast enough.

Thus was this robbery committed, and they who were guilty went

away unsuspected. The next day they conveyed part of their purchase away to a place where they hid all their prizes, and by degrees getting the most part away, they continued not long in those quarters, but made another remove. These fellows were notable cunning rascals, and had so many ways to bring in purchases that they gathered much goods together, but covetous of more still attempted further projects, till in the end they were caught and deservedly punished.

The next project they had, said the gentleman, was this. They had a boy who oftentimes served and assisted them in their undertaking, and he was now very useful; for one day intending to steal, they pretended to buy some linen cloth; and a conceit coming into their heads, they did buy some considerable quantity. They left it at the draper's where they bought it, paying a small matter of money in part at present, promising to come the next day and fetch it away, and pay the rest of the money. The next day they came and brought a porter with them, loaden with a bail made up, as they said, of woollen cloth, which they said they had bought, intending to send that and what they had bought of him into the country. The carrier was gone before they came, and therefore they could not send away either till the next day, when, they said, another carrier was to go to the place they intended to send to. Therefore they desired the shop-keeper to let them leave that bail of cloth in his shop till the next day, when they intended to fetch them both.

They having been customers to the shop, he did not refuse them so small a courtesy, but permitted them to set it in a convenient place in the shop. But his entertaining of that bail of cloth was almost as fatal to him as the Trojan's entertainment of the wooden horse; for at midnight, when the draper was asleep, these rogues were wakeful, and having conveyed this roguish boy I told you of into this bail, which they pretended was cloth, he taking out his knife cut his way through; so that he came out the bail, and not finding the key of the shop door, he opened the shop windows and did let in his two masters, who waited there for that purpose. They being within the shop were not idle, but having seen by daylight where the finest cloth was placed they now removed it, and breaking open a desk wherein they had observed the draper did put his money, there they found four hundred French crowns. Taking that money, and as much of the finest cloth as they could carry, they marched off; neither did the boy stay behind, but leaving an empty bail covered with canvas, and stuffed round about with cotton, he also loading himself, went with his masters the same way he had let them in, and so they carried this purchase to the rest. The next morning the draper and his servants were soon sensible of the robbery, and seeing the hole cut in

the bail, they quickly discovered the manner how. But it was such a novelty as had not been heard of, and he was forced to rest himself contented with his loss, for notwithstanding all his endeavours, he could not for the present hear of his customers, who indeed were safe enough in their quarters.

These rogues, who now had money enough, put themselves in a gentle habit, and kept company with the best, but still they waited to do all the mischief they could. To that end they ingratiated themselves into the company of country gentlemen, such as were best acquainted with the customs and humours of the town. Many they met with, and few escaped them but that they either got them into play, cheated them, or picked their pockets or made some other prize of them. Among others they met with a young country gentleman who had been unfortunate enough already ; for he having had a quarrel about a mistress, and fighting with his rival, had the fortune, or misfortune rather, to kill him. Divine vengeance seldom misses to pursue and overtake those who are guilty of murder ; and although these kind of murders, which are the most excusable, being as they term them, fairly done, pass rather for pieces of gallantry than otherwise. Yet some great misfortune always attends them, as I have observed by several precedents, but more especially by this gentleman's misfortunes ; for no sooner had he made his enemy to fall in the place where they had fought, but he was forced to fly away for his own safety, doubting else he might fall into the hands of justice. He therefore with all speed retired to a place, six miles from where he had fought, to a friend's house, and not thinking himself safe, being there provided with money enough for a long journey, he travelled on towards Paris, being a place whose large circuit and number of inhabitants might hide him from all pursuers.

In his way thither he was met by thieves, who attempted to rob him, but they being but two and he valiant enough, as he thought to oppose them, drew and defended himself. He here likewise had the fortune to cause one of them to drop down by him, which the other seeing, fled, but not so far but that he soon returned with three more in his company. The gentleman seeing this, and doubting that now he should not only be robbed of what he had, but also believing that they would kill him to revenge their fellow ; he therefore takes one purse of money and threw it into a hedge near him, hoping that if he did escape, he might have that for a reserve. By this time the thieves were come up to him, and all drew upon him. He (knowing that odds did overcome Hercules and might do him) told them that if it were his money they wanted, he would deliver it to them. Although they

were very angry for the loss of their companion, yet it being money that they came for, they accepted of that ; he giving them another purse of money which he had about him. But in regard they had suffered so great a loss as the death of one of their companions, they stripped, and tied our young gentleman, and taking away their companion with them, they departed.

He lay not long there but was untied and relieved by some passengers, who furnished him with an old coat ; and he taking up his purse of money, where he had laid it, went along with them to the next town. There he furnished himself with clothes, and so travelled on towards Paris. But before he came thither he was again met with by thieves, who then robbed him of all his money ; so that when he came into the city he was in a sad condition, being a stranger, moneyless, and friendless. However, these last thieves being so civil as to leave him his clothes, he took a lodging in a convenient place of the town, and sent away to his friends, acquainting them with his misfortunes, and desiring them to send him more money. Although it was a great way he had to send, yet in a little time he received an answer according to his expectations ; and although till then he was forced to run on the score, and keep house, yet now he honestly paid his host ; and putting himself in a very good garb, he now went abroad and light into the company of our two thievish rogues who dealt roguishly with him. For perceiving him to be a stranger, they took him up and became his companions ; and that they might be able to do him the more mischief, they so far ingratiated themselves into his company as to take a lodging where he lay.

Finding that he was pretty well furnished with money, they tried several ways to get it from him. They tempted him to gaming, but he was not guilty of that hazardous vanity, and would not play ; he carried but little money in his pocket, but he left the rest in his trunk which was also locked up in his chamber, and the landlord of the house being an honest man, was very careful of it. However they were resolved to be masters of it by one means or other ; but they delayed it a while longer by an occasion that fell out. He had written for more money, intending to pass from France into the Low Countries ; and thereupon a letter came one day to his hands, which acquainted him that within fourteen days he might receive six hundred crowns of a merchant in Paris, to whom a bill of exchange was directed. This letter he dropped by accident, and one of these rogues met with and read it, but knowing that it would advantage him nothing to keep it, he soon gave it to the owner. He acquainted his companion with the news, and how he did believe that the gentleman would, when he received that money, bring

it home to his lodging, wherefore they would stay until that time and then would rob him of it all. This resolution they both continued in, and that he might not distrust them in any particular, they kept him company very much, seldom permitting him to be in any other company. They also carried him abroad with them to several of their friends, who treated him very well for their sakes. In the mean time, they being often with him in his chamber, one of them took the key out of his chamber door, and making an impression of it upon wax, put it in there again ; his companion keeping our gentleman company in the mean time.

The fourteen days being come, he went and received his money, and bringing it home locked it up in his trunk. And now being furnished with money, he was resolved to fit himself with clothes, and proceed on his intended journey. But he was prevented, as I shall tell you ; for these two rogues having now got the key of the chamber door, and having tried it, were resolved to delay no longer but catch the birds before they were flown, as they would be in few days, if they did not prevent it. For this cause they invited him one evening to go out with them to supper ; he distrusting nothing went with them, where was better cheer than company, for all the entertainers were as very rogues as these two. However they treated him very civilly, and after supper fell to drinking. He being desirous to return to his lodging, requested his companions to be going ; but they knowing it was yet too early to execute their design, desired him to stay longer, and so long as he had their companies, they told him he would be safe enough. He seeing them resolved to stay, was content, and so they drank on till about eleven of the clock at night ; and then, he not being willing to stay longer, they agreed to go with him. And to the end they might not be stopped by any watch, they agreed to go a back way, which was somewhat about. This, they pretended, was the reason of their going that way, but it was, indeed, that those who were his entertainers, and who were to assist them in their enterprize might by going the nearest way, meet them ; which accordingly they did, for at the place appointed by all but our gentleman, they met, and pretending themselves drunk, jostled one another so that their swords were soon drawn, and they assaulted one another. Our gentleman seeing that those who met them were but four, and he and his company were three, did not question but he might have the better on it, or at least defend himself ; and therefore being perfectly valiant, he so prosecuted one of the two who assaulted him that he laid him at his feet. The rest thinking that those two who assaulted him would have performed their enterprize well enough had hitherto only played with one another, in clashing of their

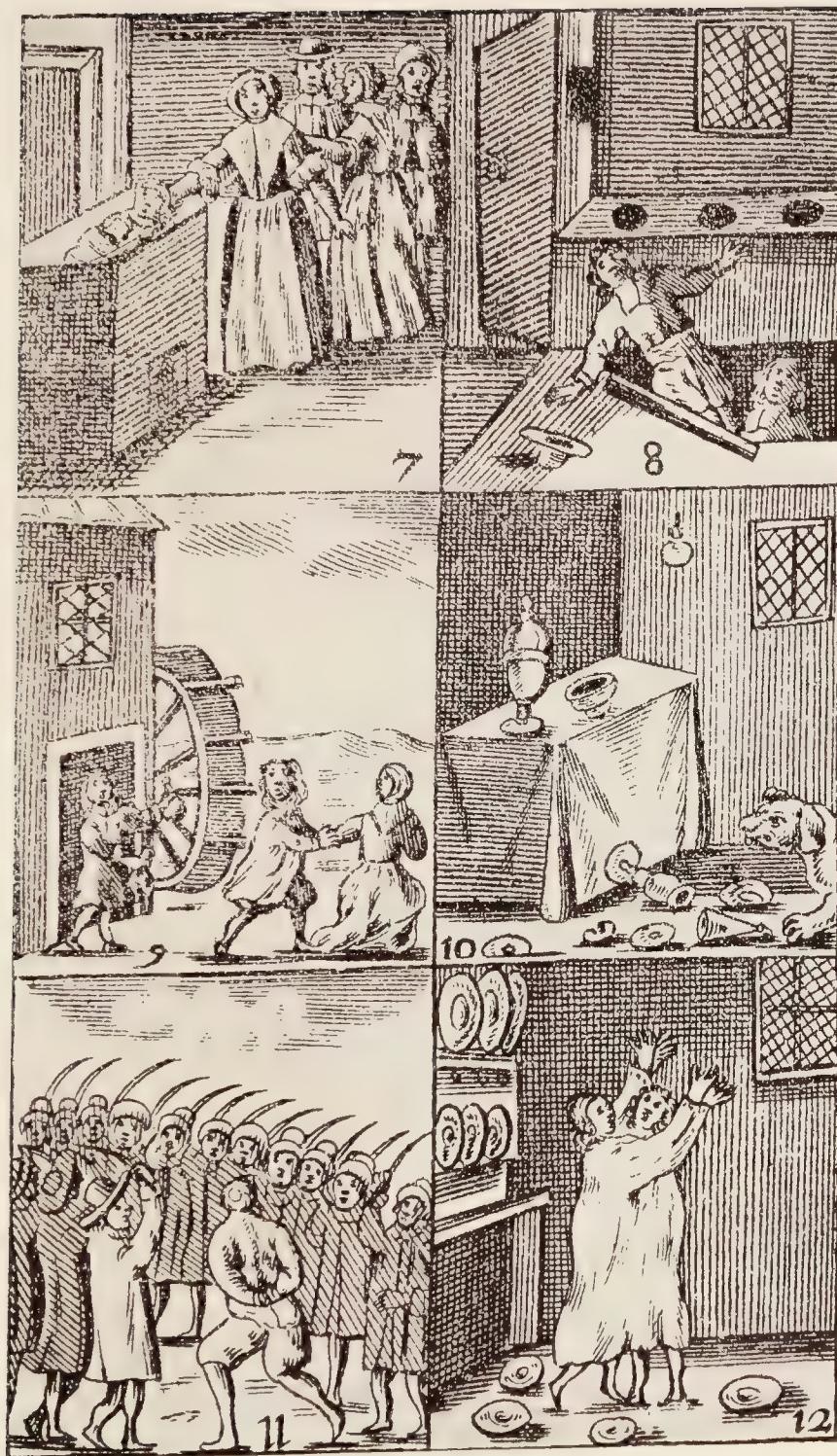
swords, but now seeing one of their companions fall, and doubting more mischief, they all four, as well those whom he thought were his friends as those whom he knew to be his assailants, left their jest and fell all upon him in earnest, and he being thus over-matched, was soon killed.

The rogues who were left alive, seeing him, and one of the companions dead, knew not what resolution to take ; but after a short consultation, they resolved to carry off their dead companion and leave the other there. But the two who were his companions, fearing he might be known before they had finished their project, and they might be prevented, therefore drew their knives and like bloody butchers flayed all the skin from the poor gentleman's face ; and so taking the key of his trunk out of his pocket, and all his letters, that they might leave nothing about him to cause him to be known, they and their companions parted. The two rogues went home to their lodging ; where when they were let in, they were asked where the gentleman their companion was. They replied they left him after they went out ; and this answer served for the present. They then went into their own chamber, but soon after with their false key they got into his, and opening his trunk they took out all his money, and locked it up in a trunk in their own chamber ; and this being done, they went to bed.

The next morning they went out and carried the money with them to the place where all their other treasure lay ; returning again, they intended to get away all their other things that were of any value, in the trunk ; purposing to be gone, and leave that behind them, for they knew it would cause suspicion if they removed trunk and all, so suddenly. In their removal of their money, they had carelessly left their counterfeit key of the gentleman's chamber door in their chamber window, wherefore the landlord coming in there, and seeing a key which, although it was new, yet he believed he had seen it, or one like it, he therefore comparing some other keys with that, found that it was like the key of the gentleman's chamber door. He therefore tried it, and found that it would open it as well as the other. He was in some kind of amaze to think of this, and the gentleman not coming home, he began to suspect that all was not well.

About noon he went in again into the gentleman's chamber, and knowing that he had lately received a considerable sum of money, which he believed he had put in his trunk, he therefore lifted up the trunk in his hand to poize it, and feel if it were heavy ; but it was light enough, they having already taken out all the money. He having set it down again saw lying by it a pocket-handkerchief, which, he being now grown curious, diligently looked for the marks of it, which he

PLATE XII





found not to be marked with the two letters of the gentleman's name, but two others, which were the name of one of the others. These things raised further scruples in his mind, wherefore he was resolved to observe his two guests with a more curious eye ; and one of them soon after returning, he watched him and saw that he went to his trunk and made up a bundle which he carried out. No sooner was he gone out but he heard the report which had gone about the town all that day ; that a gentleman in such a place was barbarously murdered, and was so much a stranger that nobody knew him. The landlord hearing this, his heart leaped and he was in a very great perplexity, so that he could hardly stand on his legs.

So soon as he was come to himself he took a neighbour with him, and went to the place where the gentleman lay murdered. It was to no purpose to think to know him by his face, for that was quite disfigured ; his skin being flayed off ; but although his clothes were bloody, yet he could by them know that it was his guest, who lay there murdered. He then told his neighbour what were his thoughts, and withal that he believed he knew the murderers, and thereupon having acquainted him with all his doubts of his two other guests, he and his neighbour both were of the opinion that they had hand in this murder, and therefore they hasted home to see what might be further discovered. Just as they came in, one of the two went out with a bundle under his arm, which the landlord seeing, he caused one to follow him, and diligently to observe all he did. He that was sent was so careful that he soon after returned, and told him that certainly there was some matter of great consequence between his two guests and three others, who were dividing and telling of moneys, and he heard one of the two say that now all was well, for he had brought off everything, and intended to go no more. ‘Where are they ?’ said the landlord. ‘They are at such a house,’ (naming it) said the messenger. ‘But I followed your guest to another place first, where he left the parcel he carried out, and waiting some time, he came out of that house, which was a private house, and went to the other, which was a victualling-house. I following him thither, was permitted to go in there, as he did, to drink ; he went to his companions, and I took a room next adjoining, where I heard,’ said he, ‘what I have told you, and several other discourses, which makes me think that these persons have lately been upon some design ; but what, I cannot at present imagine.’

‘But I can,’ replied the landlord, ‘I doubt not but what I have imagined is true ; wherefore neighbours,’ said he, ‘what is best to be done ? I pray advise me.’ They told him the best advice they could give him was to go to the magistrate and acquaint him with what had

happened ; he did so, and they at his request went with him. Being come before the magistrate, the landlord told him that not long since a gentleman came to his house to lodge, and soon after him two more, who being well acquainted together, 'went out,' said he, 'to supper. The two returned home, but it was somewhat late, and the third not coming home, raised in me some suspicion, which hath fallen out too true ; for,' said he, 'the poor gentleman is barbarously murdered, and lies in such a place. I have been to see him, but, although I cannot know him by his face, for they have flayed off the skin, yet I believe it is he by his clothes ; and,' continued he, 'I very much suspect my other two guests are guilty of the murder, for I have found a false key of the gentleman's chamber door in their chamber.' And so he proceeded in telling the justice all the particular observations he and the person he had sent had made. The justice was of their opinion that these two men had murdered the third ; and therefore sending for officers and a guard, sent immediately to the place where they were all together, and securing them, they were brought before him.

He examined them severally, and so finding them in several tales, he gathered so much from their examinations and confessions that he found them guilty ; and then being informed that one of them had left a parcel at a private house, he caused that place to be searched, and there was found a great deal of wealth and goods. There was the merchant's silks ; the draper's cloth ; the chalices and other church utensils, and the two friars' weeds, and much other goods, commodities, and disguises ; all which was seized on, and the report of this murder and the other particulars running about the city, it came to the ears of the merchant and draper and many others who had been lately robbed ; and they coming, knew and owned their goods.

Our rogues who were now fast enough for committing any more rouqueries, and seeing that they were discovered (for they were told of all things that had happened) now saw it was to no purpose to deny those several facts that would be too plainly proved against them ; wherefore they confessed all this that I have told you of, and several murders they had committed, among others that of the two poor friars, and robbing the church, wherefore the parson, and the churchwardens of that parish hearing of this confession came to Paris ; and the felons executed, they and the merchant and draper and all others whom they had robbed of anything had their goods returned them. And thus, said the gentleman, was the end of these wretches ; and I came to be thus particularly acquainted with this story because when I was at Paris I lodged at the same house where they had done, and my landlord acquainted me with all these particulars.

The gentleman having finished his discourse, said Mistress Mary, I told him that these two were cruel, and bloody-minded thieves, and that I did not care for hearing any such stories, for that I was much troubled, and methought sensibly concerned in his relation. He replied that indeed this was bloody and horrible, but that it was usual to have such murders committed in Paris, and that very frequently ; and continued he, both thieves and pickpockets are far more cruel and bold than in England. Although I have given you examples of both, yet I could tell you many more, and enlarge very much upon this subject, for it is usual for pickpockets there to perform their work in an extraordinary manner, for they are furnished with arms, and hands made with wax or wood ; and by virtue of these they will frequently and without suspicion pick pockets in the church ; for they will hold two hands with a true arm and a false one, that is an arm of wax or wood up, and in their hands they will hold a book and seem to be busily employed in turning over leaves at their devotions, whereas the third arm and hand is picking of pockets ; and people standing by, nay, the parson himself whose pocket is picked, will have very little cause to suspect him that does it.

Also if they get a man out of the way, and are minded to rob him, they will put a piece of iron or brass into his mouth, like unto a pear, which they call a choke-pear ; and that properly enough ; for the party who hath it in his mouth, endeavouring to get it out cannot, for there being a spring within it which forceth it open, it is impossible to get it out without a key to it, which they have. Therefore they who put this choke-pear into the mouths of any after they are first robbed of what they have about them, they are told, if they intend to be rid of that pear they must go and fetch more money, which they must bring to a place they appoint, or else they are like to chew upon the pear without any other victuals, which is like to be hard diet to them. But, continued he, I shall tell you one of these wax or wooden-handed fellows, and so conclude.

A gentleman having had his pocket several times picked of money and watches, was much troubled and resolved if possible to find out and catch one pickpocket that should pay for all. Wherefore he advises with a smith, an ingenious fellow of that quality, to make him a band of iron or steel, with some prickles about the side of his pocket, and a spring towards the bottom, which when it should be touched, would cause the band of iron or steel at the top to close together, so that if a pickpocket should come there, it would catch and hold him fast by the hand. This he had made to his desire, and then he went to the next assembly, which was at a trial of causes. It was not long ere his project

took ; he heard his engine discharge, and the fowl was caught. He knew which pocket it was, and therefore looked on that side. One stood with hat off, and both his hands were upon his hat, which were held up as high as his face ; he therefore wondering whose hand he had caught, and seeing the man in that posture, doubted that his engine had deceived him, and had given false fire, but putting his hand towards his pocket he found a hand there, which was in vain struggling to get out. Wherefore that he might know who this hand belonged to, he got out of the press of people, and the man who held his hat in that posture went with him. When they were gone a little to the one side, the poor fellow cried out ; ‘ I pray, Sir, let me have my hand.’ ‘ How ! ’ replied the gentleman, ‘ I see you have two already, and therefore if you have a third, you may well spare me that to guard my pocket for the future.’ The fellow saw that he was caught, and therefore replied to the gentleman ; ‘ Truly Sir, it is but a trial of skill, a new invention, and I hope you will not be angry with a piece of ingenuity ; but if you are, rather than fail, if you please to let me go and not discover me, I’ll give you any satisfaction.’ ‘ What security shall I have for that ? ’ said the gentleman. ‘ All that I can give,’ said the diver ; and thereupon he drew out a purse of money from his own pocket, which it is like had another owner but lately ; but now it helped to make his composition, for the gentleman and pickpocket going to the tavern they clapped up an agreement ; he not only receiving satisfaction for what he had formerly lost, but also discovered to him the nature, use, and quality of a wooden hand.

## CHAPTER XX

*Mistress Mary continues the story of the young gentleman : relates how a cheat (with two more) pretending to be a countryman, performed a very profitable but most comical exploit on a shopkeeper : she is interrupted by the arrival of her comrades ; Meriton Latroon enters into a pleasant dialogue with her : his Indian wife falls in love with Mistress Mary and Mistress Dorothy, disguised in man’s apparel : and a pleasant adventure there upon*

**T**HUS (said Mistress Mary) did the gentleman discourse of the French manner of thieving and cheating, which was after a more confident and bold manner than that of our countrymen ; and their manner of picking pockets was, I told him, a great novelty. He replied

that he could relate many such tricks that were done at his being there ; two more whereof, continued he, I will tell you, and so conclude.

Three cheats intending a piece of roguery, had apparelled themselves like countrymen ; and two sauntering in the street, one of the other went into a shopkeeper, who they saw was alone in his shop, and tells him that he was a countryman, and had borne all offices in the parish where he lived, and was now churchwarden, and that he was come to town to lay out a little money for the use of the parish ; but more especially to buy a cope for the parson. ‘ And,’ said he, ‘ I would buy a good one though it cost me more money.’ The shopkeeper thereupon fetched several and shewed him. He turned many of them over, but still desired to see better ; at length one was brought which he seemed to like. ‘ But,’ said he to the shopkeeper, ‘ I doubt it is too short.’ ‘ No,’ said the shopkeeper, ‘ it is long enough in all conscience,’ and thereupon measured it upon the countryman, who said, ‘ I cannot tell by this measuring whether it be long enough or no ; but our parson is a man much about your pitch, and therefore I pray do you put it on, and I shall be better satisfied.’ The shopkeeper to satisfy his customer did so ; and our cheating churchwarden did assist, and help him to put it on. But in doing it he clapped his hand into the shopkeeper’s pocket and drew from thence a purse of money. The shopkeeper perceived it and caught hold of his customer, but he slipping out of his hand, shewed him a fair pair of heels, and the shopkeeper without putting off the cope followed him.

In the meantime the other two of our cheat’s companions acted their parts, for the one went into the shop, and taking the next bundle of goods that came to hand went away, and the third doubting that if the shopkeeper kept his pace he might overtake his companion whom he pursued, having placed himself in the way on purpose, catches hold on the shopkeeper and says, ‘ O Lord, Master Doctor ! what makes you thus distracted as to run in the streets in this unseemly manner ? ’ The shopkeeper told him that he was mistaken, he was no parson, and that he was in pursuit of a fellow that robbed him. By this time our cheat who was pursued had turned a corner of a street and was out of sight ; and the neighbours coming out to see what was the matter, persuaded the shopkeeper to go home again and put off that garment, and then go look for the cheater. He did so, but there he found that he had a second loss, which made him more angry than before, especially when he considered that he was without all remedy, not being able to discover who they were that had shewn him this cleanly conveyance.

Another time, said the gentleman, a couple of these bold rogues

understanding that a gentleman was newly come from travel ; and having enquired into and been acquainted with many particulars in his journey, were resolved to get money out of him. Therefore waiting a time and place convenient, and seeing him walking with another gentleman, one of these bold rogues thus accosts him ; ‘ Sir, your very humble servant, I am very joyful to see you after your return ; although you have travelled several countries since I saw you last, yet you are not one jot altered.’ ‘ But you are,’ replied briskly the gentleman, ‘ if ever I saw you before, for to the best of my remembrance this is the first time.’ ‘ I shall bring you,’ replied the confident, ‘ to be of another mind when I tell you that my name is Mounsieur Brisac, and that you and I travelled many a mile together, and were very merry at such and such places (naming them) ; I hope Sir,’ continued he, ‘ that you do remember that we stayed three days at such a place, and then departed, having very bad way and a tedious journey to such a place (still naming the places) and there we met with such and such gentlemen, who continued in our companies a fortnight, all the while we stayed there ; and we came to such and such a place.’ ‘ All this,’ replied the gentleman, ‘ and all those persons I very well remember ; but indeed Mounsieur Brisac, if your name be so, I do not at all remember you. But since you give me so good an account of my journey I must needs believe you to be acquainted with me in those parts ; and since you are so, I pray how doth Mounsieur Langone ? ’ ‘ Very well,’ replied our cheat, ‘ he intends to be here in short time, and then I will bring him to you that we may renew our acquaintance.’ ‘ I shall be glad of the opportunity,’ replied the gentleman, ‘ and so good Mounsieur Brisac,’ said he, ‘ till then I shall be your humble servant.’ ‘ Yours Sir,’ replied the cheat ; ‘ but I pray, Sir, do you now remember me ? ’ ‘ Yes, yes,’ replied the gentleman. ‘ Then I hope,’ replied the cheat, ‘ you will also remember that I did you a small courtesy in the time of our acquaintance.’ ‘ What was it ? ’ said the gentleman, ‘ that I may acknowledge it ; and thank you.’ ‘ No great matter, Sir,’ said the cheat, ‘ it was but a friendly office, we ought to do so for one another at such a distance.’ ‘ I do not understand you,’ said the gentleman. ‘ You are very forgetful,’ said the cheat, ‘ but I hope that as now you remember me, so you will remember to pay me that little money you borrowed of me at such a place.’ ‘ I know nothing of it,’ replied the gentleman. ‘ I lent it to you,’ replied the cheat, ‘ by the same token that your horse was taken lame in one leg, and you were forced to leave him behind you, and take another.’ ‘ Truly,’ replied the gentleman, ‘ the token is good, but I do not remember the other matter.’ ‘ But I hope you will,’ replied the cheat, ‘ and pay me for your credit sake

before it comes to the hearing of our fellow-travellers.' 'How much do you say it was,' replied the gentleman. 'But twenty crowns, a small sum, and soon paid. I know you are not without so much money about you, and if you please to pay it me now, it will do me as great a kindness in receiving it now, as it did you when I lent it.' 'Well,' replied the gent., 'if it be so, when Mounsieur Langone returns I will pay you, which you say will be in short time.' 'I hope, Sir,' replied the cheat, 'you will not injure me so much as to put me to stay so long, when you promised me to pay it at our next meeting; and besides, Sir, it will not be for your credit to let him or any of our fellow-travellers know that you boggle at the payment of such a driblet as twenty crowns.' And thus did he importune the gentleman for payment, by telling him that he had now acknowledged it before witness, and that if he would not quietly pay, he would compel him to it; so that the gentleman to purchase his quiet gave him what he demanded, lest, as he said, he should shame him.

Whilst Mistress Mary was busied in the recital of what was afore delivered, and intending to have proceeded in the same discourse, she was interrupted by the return of the captain, drugster, and scrivener, and Gregory; and her looks and colour discovered to the captain that she had played the extravagant in the use of that liberty and freedom which he freely gave her, and could not contain himself from expressing some resentments thereof. Addressing his discourse to me in a fearing manner, 'Come, Master Meriton Latroon,' said he, 'I shall know you better by degrees, and do fear I shall find you too much guilty of the humour of the Turks and Italians, who unnaturally delight in the society of young men. They are pretty smock-faced lads, how do you like them, Sir. If you could procure a change of their sex, would not either of them serve for fine play-fellows?'

'I think,' said I, 'they are best as they are, without any change. Nay, with your pardon, good captain, I know it an undeniable truth, which your own frequent experience doth, or must acknowledge, their unsuitable habits, I confess at first muffled up, or quite darkened all former knowledge of them; but you must excuse them if they did unmask themselves to be known to one they once preferred before their own safeties and reputations. Your sweet William was once my little wanton Mally, whom with many more, I first beguiled by hiring myself in woman's apparel, as a servant-maid in a boarding school. This other, whom you call George, was a country girl whose beauty and good feature disarmed me in the road, as I went on the pad, and although I had never seen her till then, I was so passionately in love

with her that I never rested till I had obtained my desires on her, which effected, I ungratefully left her.'

'This,' said the captain, 'is a thing I was wholly ignorant of till now, although from our friend Gregory I have been informed of the most remarkable passages of your life, such wonderful and unheard of transactions in one man's life that in his relation I thought him reading to me some legend of incredibilities.'

I replied that I had reserved this secret with some others, to be discovered as occasion should serve, and that in time, nothing should be hid from him. 'And now, Sir,' said I, 'you nor the rest of your friends must not entertain a jealousy that I participate and share with them in your mistress's affections. To be plain if your belief of that raise in you any anger or revenge, you will discover thereby your folly most egregiously; for can you expect a constancy from such who know they cannot live but by being inconstant? They are like such who are upon a trading voyage, it is not one port but a great many that makes up their market. Neither are they like some merchants who particularly trade to one place, as to Guinea, Hambrough, &c. They are generally trucking or vending their commodities through the universe. Mal,' said I, 'you must not be angry that I thus plainly and boldly disclose the naked truth.' 'Say on, Sir,' said she. 'I shall exercise my patience in hearing your raillery, but I pray tell me when you are out of breath, that I may inform you of the infirmities and frailties that belong to your more noble sex, and spare not ours; you will not be so unjust to deny me that liberty you take yourself.' 'A match,' quoth I, 'and therefore I shall proceed.

'When you were but fourteen, you began like a nut to grow brown at bottom, which you know will then drop or fall of itself, or I might more properly compare you to forward summer fruit, which proves mellow in the nonage of the spring, but rots by too soon falling, when more solid fruit shall deny the nipping frosts of an approaching winter. There is a Queen-apple, and a Bitter-sweet so called; you resemble the one in the lovely colour, the other in the distasteful gusto: but since I speak of fruit, the most common resemblance is a medlar, which is never good till rotten; such are you, never finer dressed than in your winding sheet. Several of your sex when married are but a parcel of crab trees, walled in at a great charge. As for thy part, thou art like a honeycomb with a bee in it, which infallibly stings him that tastes thereof. To be short, ye have fair tongues and false hearts; fine faces, but foul consciences; pride prompts ye to all manner of prodigality, and lust leads ye to that looseness which ruinates thousands in the destruction of yourselves. To conclude, I could love thee, but that thou art female, and

would never have married, but that I thought it best expedient to bring me to repentance.'

'Now Sir,' said she, 'I believe it is my time to speak, for I find by your straining, you are very needy. You have but little water left by the sucking of your pump. I see where your plot lies clearly; by undervaluing me and our sex you would put our friends out of conceit with us and others, that you might make a monopoly of our sex. Be advised Sir, your patent will not be worth the procuring, if we are so variable and wavering as you would falsely make the world believe; you have marshalled up a fair company of metaphors, that your wit might flutter in our disparagement. Our sailing from port to port to advance our profit is not so discommendable as you would have it, since it is rather our misfortune to meet with such bankrupts, broken merchants, who have neither stock nor credit to barter with us for our wares. Surely your wit is mightily improved (since your poor poetry you writ to my friend Doll, which she related to me was almost all the reward she had for her lost virginity) it skipped so nimbly from pole to pole, from sea to land, to fetch a lean starveling of a conceit, and that was the comparing of us to ripe nuts, or nuts brown at bottom as you well know. For all we are slip-shelled were it not for truanting wags, who rushing into our thickets shake us down. We might hang long enough, not like your crack-ropes: and for your likening us to fruit soon ripe, and as soon rotten, I dare confidently aver that we might remain a long time on the tree did not such unhappy boys as you are throw stones at us. Lastly, you say our sweets are accompanied with stings; I know not what you mean, but I am sure you stung this gentlewoman and myself in that manner that the swelling lasted nine months, and by a midwife was at last delivered of our pain. To conclude, with what force can you condemn us for inconstancy, when every new face you see shall change your affection, variety shall be as so many winds to blow your amorous pretences to more points than are contained within a compass? When you have had, after a long siege, the town you sat down before surrendered, you fall a-plundering instantly, and it may be, after this, ungratefully set the garrison on fire; if not, at leastwise curse the time and money you spent in your conquest, throwing it off as a thing not worth the managing and keeping.'

'No more, dear Mall,' said I, 'No more, what hitherto I have expressed was but a trial of thy wit, which since I find so pregnant, thy better parts, thy mind, I will endeavour to enjoy hereafter.'

All the company was greatly pleased with our drollery, 'And now,' said I, 'Gentlemen, without trifling the time away too much, since we know one the others' past lives, and present intentions; let us enter into a serious consultation how we may advantage each others' interest here,

in order elsewhere. Although you, Sir' (speaking to the captain) 'have been in these parts twice or thrice before, yet I question not but the knowledge I have of this country will prove as serviceable to our design as any others that have been here a longer time besides the advantage of my projections.' The captain, with all the rest, readily consented to be advised with me in everything, as giving me the priority in all manner of roguery. 'Gentlemen,' said I, 'the love I bear my own country (although all countries, indeed, should not be such strangers to us as not to make them absolutely our own, when necessity compels us thereunto) I say, having a longing desire to see Europe, and return for England, having now gotten something considerable for a future maintenance, I shall make it my whole business to take up what commodities I can on trust, and with what I have, and myself, I resolve to accompany you homewards. And that I may be the better welcome among you, I will be assistant to you in the buying your commodities, and procuring you a credit withal.'

These proposals commanded both their thanks and embraces, and to work we went immediately. But before I proceed to tell you how, and in what manner we enriched ourselves by cheating and deceiving the country, I must give you an account that my she-black devil, my wife, had a month's mind to no less than a brace of white Josephs, I mean my two girls in man's apparel. I confess the temptation was great enough to have deluded any other woman of more Christian principles. When I heard of it, I thought I should have died by the excess of laughter; and that I might have the more sport, I ordered my two females not to discountenance her amorous desires. I have heretofore informed you that she was, for feature and stature, as handsome, and as proper as most Europeans, and had a natural genius her sex is not ordinarily endued withal. In the time of my living with her, I had taken considerable pains to teach her English of which she hath a competent understanding and utterance. Seeing me go very genteel and gallant, she deserted her own country fashion and thought herself obliged to be clothed in mine; which I condescended to, not so much to please my eye, as to sport my fancy, for they became her as well as a hat and feather, sword and belt, with a red-coat, would become a Jackanapes riding before the bears.

We had not many Englishwomen among us, however she imitated every one of them in something or other, so that she seemed when dressed to have borrowed of at least twenty women, and those habiliments looked as if they had been thrown on her with a pitchfork. She being extremely smitten in love with these two handsome young men, as she thought them, began now to be less careless in her dress; but what

disorders she endeavoured to rectify and amend, she made a thousand times worse. She consulted her glass, and imagining her face was not naturally fair enough, that is, not black (for blackness is esteemed by them as beauty, and tawniness the contrary) I say to correct that natural defect by art, she got some lamp black, or something like it, by which paint she resolved to be devilish fair.

I wondered to see my pretty sweeting's face all of a sudden so strangely changed, but I concerning myself but little with her, never demanded how it came ; but according to my usual custom went to bed, and not long after my wife followed me. I had drank very excessively that day, but which means I slept profoundly and was not sensible what her petulance prompted her to when I was asleep ; but certain I am, she did so all bekiss me, and so rubbed the black paint off her face upon mine, that none could tell which was the blacker of the two in the morning when I arose.

I got not out of bed till an hour after all the rest of the people in the house were up, and staying somewhat longer above than I usually did she came up into the chamber. And perceiving my face to be black she was at a stand, not knowing what to say, or do. But at length she concluded (as she confessed afterwards) that her god was angry with her for loving any other white besides her husband, and therefore had taken away his white face and had given him a black one in the room. She retired down with much more reverence than usual, and was so amazed, that she spake not a word to any below.

The captain and his friends, with several of my own acquaintance, were attending my coming down, who seeing my face thus discoloured, knew me not, yet knew my voice and clothes, and though I bid them good morrow, they returned me not the like civility, but instead thereof, asked me whether I was not an impudent fellow to counterfeit another voice and wear his clothes ? ' Gentlemen,' said I, ' are ye all mad, or have ye eyes that ye dare own ? I am the man I was the last night I am very certain.' ' You may have the same body,' said the captain, ' but the foul fiend stole away thy head last night for being drunk, and left his own in its room.' Hereupon a looking-glass was fetched, and put it into my hands ; but I no sooner saw my face in it, but it dropped out of my hands, breaking all in pieces, and with the amazement of this sudden alteration, I was just ready to expire. Now did all my former rogueries come fresh into my memory, believing that they, with what I was now about to act, had rode post to the Devil to inform him what I was ; that he was come to fetch me away alive, and that he had lent me this hellish face that I might be the fitter for his company in his journey homeward.

The company seeing me stand so like a changeling, could not forbear laughing till they held their sides. At length one of them came, and with a wet cloth rubbing my face, restored it me again. I could not imagine who should serve me this trick, or how it should be done ; but at last recollecting my thoughts, I remembered that my wife seemed to me to be more than usually black. Whereupon I called her to me, and with the same cloth I made her blackness vanish too. She perceiving I was inflamed with rage and fury fell upon her knees, and begging my pardon, she told me every circumstance of what she had done and designed, concealing her real contrivance, that she had painted her face in that manner to increase my love, she said, and that in kissing me and laying her face to mine (not imagining the black would come off), she had thus discoloured my face, and would never do so again. I was so far from being angry with her that I could not forbear laughing heartily, which renewed the like in my friends ; however I charged her never to make herself fairer than she was again, and if I found her pride extend that way, I would divest her and reduce her to the clout ; it being all the clothes the Indians wear, an insignificant fore covering. This troubled her more than if I should have gashed her flesh and filled the wound with salt, a punishment frequently used among them. Notwithstanding the ill-success of her first project, yet she was resolved to prosecute her love, but which she loved best she could not tell, if there had been an half dozen more, she had room enough in her breast to entertain them, and had affection to have scattered plentifully among them all.

## CHAPTER XXI

*Latroon's wife prosecutes her love ; the manner of her extravagant horse-courtship ; inviting them to a bowl of punch, she forced them to the squeak, is discovered in her amours by her husband and would have poisoned herself to escape his anger : Latroon brings his new comrades into the acquaintance of the Banian, whom by feasting him aboard and ashore, they make their friend in their knavish design*

**M**Y wife was none of those puling, whining lovers, who not obtaining their desires, exclaim against the injustice of Heaven in not granting their wishes, and growing sullen to make amend for their blasphemy, hang themselves, or cut their own throats. She had a certain way of courtship peculiar to herself, and a kind of horse-play in her kissing, which was so strong and eager that you must have a special care she did

not beat some of your teeth down your throat. Her embraces were as soft as a bear's, I think fully as strong ; she hath made me sometimes in a merry humour, cry ' Oh ' : and therefore I cannot see how these striplings will escape with life should they be encircled in her arms.

What kind of rhetoric she used to persuade them with I am not yet acquainted, but I understand she boarded them both at once and put them to the squeak without uttering a word, and had not they fled for it, she had ransacked their carcasses to have tried their manhood. This made them ever after shun being alone with her, which made her so mad that when she hath seen them in company, if by any means she could come at them, she would have pinched them by the arms, or elsewhere, her fingers being as bad as a pair of pincers. She was ignorant of the way of winning them by presents, or the subtle insinuation of fine words varnished with love and service ; she was downright with them, if they would not love her she would see whether she could make them ; but that not doing, she was resolved to try whether drunkenness would operate anything upon them. Whilst I and my new associates were gone abroad to hasten our purposes of marching off together, she had prepared a bowl of punch, with other excellent liquors, not omitting several dishes of sweetmeats. She strained herself at that time to the utmost to express her civility and kindness, drinking often to them till at last she perceived that the strength of those several liquors they drank had elevated them. Then did she, in as good English as she was mistress of, tell them that she loved them, and they must love her, that she had never seen such pretty white men before. With that she caught one of them about the neck ; the other fearing they should be now discovered, endeavoured to assist her comrade, and struggled to disengage her hands from about her neck ; but she being too strong, would not disengage her hold, but by main strength brought them both down to the ground together with her.

Just as my business calling me home, I entered the room, wherein I found my spouse at *Tantum Scantum* with the two supposed young men, tumbling all together promiscuously. I knew they could not if they would, and would not if they could make me a cuckold, therefore I had no cause to be angry with any but my Christian infidel, and yet I had but little reason to be so with her, considering the brutishness of her nature, and barbarousness of her education. However, so sensible she was of the injury she designed to do me, that taking a dagger out of her pocket, which she mightily delighted to carry always about her, she would have stabbed herself, had I not prevented her by forcing it out of her hands. I saw nothing but destruction and distraction in her eyes, and therefore watched her narrowly that she would not mischief herself,

or any else. She seeing that seemed better composed, and stepping aside, drawing a small box out of her pocket, which she always made her *Vade mecum*, and was filled with the rankest poison, she conveyed some of it into a cup and offered to drink to me, which she would have done had I not dashed it out of her hand. She seeing me so careful of her preservation, imagined I had no evil will against her. She fell upon her knees again, and begged of me that I would kill her, for she deserved it, or take for my satisfaction as many wives as I pleased into the house, and she would not be offended at it in the least. I told her I would have no more wives than she, and that I would forgive her this time, so she would never do the like again.

She now trebled her diligence at home, whilst I exercised my wit abroad. Among the Banians I invited one of the principal of them home to a treat, a man of vast sway and great credit in the country; and having acquainted my new correspondents, or fellow conspirators, of the time of our meeting, I ordered them to appear as splendidly as they could, according to the custom of the country; and to be noble in their expenses. All which they performed so well that they gained a great esteem with the Banian.

Moreover I informed him privately that the captain (though an interloper) was resolved not to be behind hand in the lading his ship homeward, with the best factor in the company, having gold enough for that purpose; and that those young men that accompanied him to the Indies were the sons of English lords, that had brought with them great store of gold to see this country, and lay it out in the commodities thereof. He hearkened to me with much attention, and having always had a very good opinion for me, believed what I said to be no less than truth, and therefore desired me that I would persuade them that he might negotiate their affairs for them. This was the thing I desired, which I should have offered him, had he not so happily prevented me by his own voluntary motion; and to encourage his willingness therein, I whispered the captain in the ear aside, informing him that the Banian was fully wrought upon, and that now he had not need to fear fraught at half credit, as I shall manage the matter. I desired him to invite him abroad to morrow and what friends he should think to bring along with him, which accordingly he did.

After that we had been sufficiently merry together in my house, and though he was somewhat elderly, yet he was a very comely old man, and had wit and heat enough in him to play the Good-fellow. We had so liberally entertained him (and had so fitted every thing to his humour, I knowing his humour to a hair) that on his going away, he acknowledged infinite satisfaction in that he had received, promising for these civilities

his utmost service and assistance. The captain stopped him in his further acknowledgments, by assuring him they were nothing to what he and the company intended for him, desiring him that he would favour them with his company abroad the next day. The Banian gratefully accepted the proffer, for he was a person that loved dearly his belly, and therefore the more willing and ready to accept our English treatment, which he knew was no niggardly one. But had he known what a stale purgation he should have had after all his feasting, he would have sooner swallowed a Pagod than one single morsel.

About noon I found the Banian at his own house, and telling him that he was expected abroad, he made himself ready to go with me. In our way thither we met with some of his most intimate friends, and some of mine. Those which I thought would further our design I singled out, and took them along with us. The captain had made ample provision for us, and understanding from me that the Banian was obliged to abstain from some sort of meat, he had to be sure provided none thereof. Having feasted with all the jollity imaginable, firing several pieces of ordnance according to command ; ‘Now, Sir,’ said the captain, ‘that you might know we come not into your company empty-handed, or that we will take up any of your goods and commodities without paying you for them according to contract, I will shew you something which shall be a secret to every body else,’ so unlocking a chest, he shewed them a great quantity of his own gold, and his undertakers. ‘If this be not enough, see there of this friend of mine fifteen hundred pieces, and of that man’s there five hundred, with a thousand more if occasion should serve.’

This made the Banian and his friends admire to see so great a quantity of gold, however he seemed to take but little notice, only saying, ‘You have a great deal of money, Sir, and we have a great deal of valuable commodities, which you shall not want, but trust them to my procurement for you, and you shall not fail in your expectation.’ He spake English good enough to let us understand that he would be our servant to do our business, and the merchant too, to credit us if we so pleased. What goods we took of him at first we paid him ready money before delivered, and by degrees caused him to send some aboard, and paid him three or four days after. And to the intent we might not be in the least suspected for any knavery, I advised the scrivener, drugster and Gregory (their hanger-on) to give out they intended to stay in the country some considerable while ; that what goods they bought, they would send for England, when the captain should return thither. And to confirm the truth of this report, they built them an house, befitting the entertainment of them, and the securing what goods they should

procure by way of merchandize. Servants I procured them, such as I thought would be for their turn, both male and female, but if they intended to have their victuals well dressed, they must not expect the cookery from them ; however they resolved to try the ability of their new servants, who handled the matter so scurvily, that when it was brought to table there was not one but was of a different opinion in giving a name for what was brought before them, not knowing whether it was boiled, baked, broiled, or roasted ; for the looks thereof seemed to have a touch of them all. So that it was concluded by all that the proverb was never better verified than now ; God sends meat, and the Devil sends cooks ; and so any stranger would have taken them, they being of his own smoky complexion. Wherefore to avoid these foul inconveniences of sluttish feeding, it was agreed on, that Mall (alias William) Doll (alias George) notwithstanding their breeches, should officiate as cooks, their friends should be caterers, and their menials scullions.

## CHAPTER XXII

*Latroon in order to his returning to Europe gets a great deal of goods, most on credit : he suspects his wife of some villainous design, discovers her wicked inclination, and hints at the common cause of cuckoldry : she under pretence of loving visit poisoned one of the supposed young men, and had like to have dispatched the other, and afterwards kills her self : her assistant in this murder was found not far distant from Bantam torn to pieces by wild beasts, three days after the fact*

**I**N this equipage our friends were in, whilst the captain and myself were daily bringing in grist to the mill. The Banian, according to his promise, with speedy sedulity procured us whatever we desired, and to encourage his industry had daily (almost) encouragements for his quick dispatch. Our business now ran on wheels, neither did the pleasures of our new housekeepers slacken in their career ; they had everything which the country afforded, and more, for they had two such matchless European girls, which all India could not parallel, whose lustre was the brighter by reason of those dark and dusky foils which were always near them.

But damned be that cursed instrument that totally eclipsed the light of those two wandering stars, which must ne'er shine more in our hemisphere. Who would have thought a wife, after so much penitence and submission (being obsequious beyond imitation) should renew her

revenge, and prosecute it to death. It is true, she found me remiss in the cooling of her amorous heats, but that from the first I used her to, that she might not expect it, when I came, as a duty, but as a courtesy, or a very signal favour, by reason hereof she was void of frequent expectation ; had she been as white, and as lovely fair as any of my own countrywomen, I would have served her in the like manner ; if I intended to make my wife absolutely my own.

For in my time I have observed at least an hundred examples of this nature ; women whom I am confident might have ran the race of their lives in the way of modesty and honesty, had they not been chafed or over heated at first by the ostentatious humour of their hot-brained bridegroom, striving to outdo himself that he might purchase the esteem of being a lusty man excelling others in strength and vigour ; but when the wife shall find the satisfaction of her desires discontinued, she will be apt to think her husband was too prodigal at first, and so became Nature's spendthrift, and now thinks of no other thing than how she shall be supplied by others. Others, again, are like some childish appetites, who feeding on some excellent dish they never tasted of before, and being exceeding pleasant, eat beyond measure, thinking themselves never to be satisfied, so getting a surfeit, ever after loathe what they loved, the very sight thereof will even nauseate their stomachs. I say by stinting my wife after this manner, she could not suspect that by rambling abroad I disappointed her expectations at home, since custom made her believe me indifferently honest. But her revenge was grounded on the basis of equity, for since she was so far from being jealous that she allowed me to make use of others, she judged I could not in reason disallow her the enjoyment of one or so, especially of my own complexion.

The removal of these two young men (as she supposed, and in that belief courted them to her embraces) she verily believed was occasioned by me, and designed that she might have no converse with them. Whilst they were in sight of her, she pleased herself in viewing them, but being deprived of that hourly happiness, she had not so much prudence as to conceal the resentment of her loss, and the injury was done her by me, but expressed (in her manner) to my very face things that carried with them suspicions of a dangerous consequence.

For the prevention thereof, I seemingly shewed much kindness unto her, giving her a many good words, and granting her with all leave to visit those two young men, with this proviso, she would not wrong me ; and all this was to pacify for the present, till I was ready to go from the implacableness of her revengeful spirit, which is an inmate properly not only in her, but in all the Indians her country people. She seemed hereat to be very well satisfied, but so impatient she was to have a review

of them, that she went from me immediately to them. At the sight of them she represented her joy in so many antic shapes and forms that all which were present burst out into a great fit of laughter, which she construed in favour of herself, supposing from hence they were overjoyed to see her; and what made her believe it the more, was their welcoming her to their new house in the best manner they could, drinking to her so often (in the best liquors they had) till she was half seas over. The heat of the Persian wine she drank gave fire to the old train, which should kindle the magazine of love, which lay covert in the pit of her hellish lust; and now breaking like a hand granado, the pieces of the shell could not fly faster than her arms did about their necks, there was no warding them, so that they were forced to submit to the cruelty of her over-powerful affection. But when she insisted upon the complement thereof, they bade her then desist, for they were resolved never to wrong her husband in that nature, and threatened her that if she would not be civil, they would acquaint him therewith. Hearing them menace her after that fashion, she retreated and sat down at a distance, and seemed somewhat pensive; but having spoke some few words to a black that passed by her in the Indian tongue (which I would have understood had I been by) to which there was a sudden reply; she seemed to throw off her melancholy and re-assume her jolly attempt, telling them that the next day she would come again, if they would make as much of her as they had done then. They told her they would.

I visiting them that evening, they acquainted me how welcome they had made my wife for my sake, how she had renewed her love, and how preposterously she had managed it; in recital thereof we had good sport over a bowl of punch. To avoid the dangers of going home late I bade them goodnight. In the morning early, coming down, I found one of their female slaves close in discourse with my wife, who seeing me vanished. I suspecting nothing, went to the Banian about my business, and that day we had so much business to do that it was near night before I could visit our friends, to acquaint them what progress I had made therein, and how near it was brought to consummation. But I had no sooner entered the doors but my ears were entertained with the doleful groans of my two disguised Amazons, who lay upon a mat on the ground, foaming at mouth, with the scrivener and drugster, and Gregory attending them, offering their utmost assistance, which was to little purpose, since they were ignorant of what they ailed. As soon as I saw them, I knew they were poisoned, having seen several in the like condition (a common practice among them upon the least suspicion of an injury designed, or an offence already received) but knew not what remedy to apply; and whilst I was in consultation with myself what was

best to do, I saw Mall's teeth drop out of her head, and Gregory going to raise her head, the skin and hair with it came off in his hands like a periwig, so did the hair of the other. So strong was the poison administered that Mall died in less than half an hour after the reception thereof ; but Dorothy escaped ever to a miracle.

This sad accident had like to have converted the house into a Bedlam, for the three young men which had attended them in this disaster were so strongly distracted at the sight of what had happened that I thought the Devil had just then by a re-entry took possession of them, or that they had taken the same potion of poison, which was very near as bad. Believing it would work as subtly and as nimbly on them as it had already done, (*Principiis obsta*) I ran with might and main for some salad-oil, a jar whereof I brought in the twinkling of an eye, 'Drink, drink,' said I, to them all, 'quickly, quickly, one after the other, as fast as you can.' Which they did, not knowing any reason therefore, but that I commanded then. Having even gorged themselves with it, and being not able to drink any more, I poured it down their throats till I had almost choked them, or rather drowned them therein, they cried out to me, for the love of God to forbear, or I should kill them, judging me to be mad indeed.

As they were evacuating what they had too plentifully received, the captain whom I had left with the Banian to follow after me, came in, who asking me what was the matter I told him particularly. He could not but shew something of trouble, but having been acquainted with all sorts of losses and miseries from his cradle, in a manner, by traversing to and fro the universe, he bore this with a patience agreeable to his courage and manhood. And now our friends having disembogued the oil that was within them, shewed all the appearances of perfect health. Now seeing them in a condition to return an answer to what questions I should propound to them, I asked what strangers they had entertained at home to day? They replied, none. 'But,' said Gregory, 'let us first see whether a certain she-devil of ours be within, and then I shall tell you what I have observed.' Upon this we searched for her, but could not find her. It seems the same black I found in the morning discoursing with my wife, having done this execrable murder by the instigation of my other devil at home, was fled, as more plainly by and by will appear. Said Gregory, 'Not full an hour since, whilst we were at the farther end of the house busied about our wares, Mistress Mary and Mistress Dorothy commanded some wine to be brought them, which was accordingly done by this female we now miss, and brought in a middling coco-nut bowl. They were just drinking the third time round, as we came in. "Nay, now," said Mall, "my little merry Grig, here's to the mistress of thy

affections," speaking to me, and drinking heartily. I looking into the bowl to see how much was left, this black dashed the bowl out of my hand, and because there was but little in it, I judged it only to be an effect of her rude petulance, and so did the rest, taking no further notice. Presently our two friends grew extraordinary ill and though we were three to two yet they would have found work for as many more had not death thus bound one of them hand and foot, and the other seemingly dead for the present.' 'I will lay my life,' said I, 'I know where there is another of the conspirators,' so taking the captain with me only, we made all the haste we could to my own house ; and found by the extraordinary number of people therein, that something more than ordinary was the matter. And so there was, for my wife with her beloved dagger, had with one home stab made a hole through her heart, wide enough for half a score lives to go out abreast without jostling one the other.

I was not troubled to see her thus weltering in her own blood, but that she had not lived to be punished suitable to the crime she committed, if any punishment could be invented. The president of Bantam hearing of this horrid murder sent for me, to whom I gave an ample relation as I could by information or otherwise, who seemed very much concerned, and immediately dispatched several in the search of the coadjutrix to the murderer. About three days afterwards they found (some ten miles distant from Bantam) a female carcass, torn all to pieces, the limbs thereof were gnawed in that manner that there was little flesh upon the bones, only the head was untouched ; and some of the company that had seen her before would have sworn it was the same, and therefore it was agreed upon to carry it to the president, which they did, and ordered to be fastened on a long pole, for a future terror to such like malefactors, especially the natives.

### CHAPTER XXIII

*Latroon and his comrades about to leave Bantam and go to Surat, having done lading their vessel, shew some tricks to prevent suspicion of marching off : he sets sail from thence and meets with an enemy : an account of a most desperate and horrible fight with him : he gives you an exact account or journal of that voyage from Bantam to Surat*

HAVING buried our dead, we resolved upon a general council to see what we had done, and what we had left undone. We found that half our ready money was disbursed, and that we had above half as much goods upon credit as our whole sum amounted to ; and now

resolving to make a final and speedy dispatch of all, I got all my estate aboard, not leaving any thing valuable behind me, excepting only what was in the house for the accommodation of my guests, having an happy opportunity of conveying my own goods with the captain's, and others that were concerned with us, the scrivener and the rest did the like.

That very day that we intended to set sail, we were all merry at my house with the Banian, and promising that the next day we would pay him what was in arrears, and also lay out five hundred pieces more ready money. He seemed highly pleased. Leaving him, we shewed ourselves through the whole factory with much gallantry. The reason that we did not take in our whole loading in this port was the great number of Dutch vessels which lately came into the road, and more daily expected, which we knew would not only obstruct our credit, but raise the commedities of that place. We were fain to scuffle hard among our countrymen for what we had already, there being at that time at anchor in the harbour several ships. And having ready money pretty store we resolved to take in the rest at Surat, which place would secure us well enough, and what we had deceitfully got.

Having spent most part of the day in shewing ourselves in the town, about three of the clock in the afternoon, it being the fourteenth day of July, we got aboard, as if we intended to feast it ; for there was none of the whole factory, or our Banian especially, would think us so indiscreet to set sail with half our freight. That was my policy, and being unsuspected upon that account we might with the greater facility and security march off. Getting all our anchors aboard in a trice, we loosed our sails, away we steered between the main and Paulo Pan jan, all the next day till six in the evening. Being then athwart the South Salt Hill, we steered south-west and by west, and west and by south ; but from that hill we steered west south-west, having the wind for the most part at east south-east with much rain, which afflicted me grievously, for my fears of some pursuing us would not let me quit the decks till I thought we were out of all danger in being followed.

The sixteenth of this month, at noon, we espied Hippins Island eastward ten leagues off, having steered all night west south-west. Latitude about 6 degrees 38 and longitude from South Salt Hill 6 degrees 44 west, the wind at south-east with the help of a current for twenty-four hours. From the sixteenth to the twenty-ninth of this month, we had the winds between the south-east, and east north-east, with most intolerable rains at noon, being in latitude 11 degrees 59 south, and longitude 20 degrees 35 west, the variation about 12 degrees 35 westerly ; we sailed this month on several courses, four hundred ninety-six miles.

Mistress Dorothy being indifferently well recovered, though a bad

spectacle to look on by reason of the skin of her body all coming off with her nails, such was the malignity of the venom ; I say, speaking as well as she could, desired me to write some lines on her dearly beloved dead comrade, knowing that my fancy did ever incline to measure lines, and so to please myself, more than to give her satisfaction, I composed these verses.

On the death of his Indian wife, and his old Wench

Start not my *Muse*, what paradox is this,  
 That the same cause works both my woe and bliss ?  
 Here lies my bliss, a more than brutish wife,  
 By her own butch'ring hands bereft of life.  
 My woe lies here, my murder'd joy, Alas !  
 What *wicked hand* durst bring this *ill* to pass ?  
*Hell's consistory* sat within that breast,  
 Which sent my *love* to her eternal rest.  
 How happy had I been, had the *blest powers*,  
 Enlarg'd her *minutes*, and have made them *hours*.  
 Turn'd these short hours into long days, that I  
 Might dread *death's* approach, when she should die.  
 But she is gone past all recall ; and we  
 Can only weep and sigh her elegy.  
 Though we don't mourn she can no *mourners* lack,  
 Each *Nature* is at her sad death in *black*,  
 Methinks they're hoarse with crying, and their votes  
 (Being sad, and doleful) do befit their *coats*.  
 The *clouds* dropped tears ; the *airy choir* (which flies  
 Over our heads) do sing her *obsequies*.  
 Shall we be dumb, whilst birds do use their art ?  
 No let's in sorrow bear with them a part,  
 When that y've done for *Mall*, bereft of life,  
 Rejoice with me, dead, dead's my wicked Wife.

August the ninth, steering northerly forty-two leagues, we found *per observationem* the ship to run but thirty-seven leagues, which is five leagues less by reason of the current which sets us the southwards latitude at 6 degrees 24 longitude 36 degrees 58 west from the Salt Hill. This afternoon we were in the latitude of the Changus, to the westwards of them, not seeing any sign of danger, the variation is good help if heedfully observed, finding about 22 degrees when you are in 7 or 8 degrees of southerly latitude, a northerly course will go clear of all danger. The twelfth of this month we crossed Equator, steering north, north-east, latitude 10 degrees, seconds 85 digits southerly longitude 36 degrees 51 digits west, the wind at south and by west, the variation 19 degrees, seconds 35 digits west.

The twenty-fifth of August we lay a try with main course, and mizzen, our drift north 9 leagues, the wind at south-west, a fresh gale. One of our men taking our main top-sail, cried out 'A sail, A sail.' In a quarter of an hour by the help of my prospective, I could discern her to be an enemy of considerable force, about some forty-four pieces of ordnance. She made towards us with all the speed she could, and we too shorted our way, bore up to her with all the sail we could make, so that we fetched up one the other quickly. Although we had but thirty-six guns (eight less than she carried) and having fewer men withal we feared her not, but run up board and board with her before we fired a gun, and then we poured in a whole broad-side into her, whilst we peppered them above with whole volleys of small shot. They returned us the like kindness, which killed us four outright, besides what were wounded. Our captain behaved himself very manfully, and so bestirred himself in the fight, shewing so clear a courage as would have animated a very coward to fight. As for my own part the mere observation of his magnanimous behaviour infused into me more valour than I thought myself capable to contain, or able to make use of. My landwater soldiers, the scrivener and his two companions, by the captain's example and my encouraging, looked Death as boldly and as daringly in the face, as if they had intended to look him out of countenance, though at first no shot, either great or small went whistling by them but what made them dap their heads, as if that would secure them. That bullet which injures man never tattles in his ear the ensuing danger ; that bullet that whistles in the air, proclaims your crown as safe from cracking as is the goose after she hath passed through the barn door stooping lest her lofty head should knock the top thereof.

There was not any in the ship exempted from service, every man as he was quartered not budging, but doing the utmost he could to offend his enemy. A brave young stout fellow whom I shall never forget standing by me and my Bantam comrades a shot came and took away his leg with that fury that it rebounded from the side. Falling, he seemed not a wit daunted, but called out aloud, 'Courage, Captain, I warrant you victory, if you will but send down this foot and leg of mine to the gunner, and let him send it to them instead of shot, and I shall laugh to see how it will kick the arses of those insolent rogues.' Gregory standing by and seeing what had passed, though something scared, yet would not discover any fright, and to hide it the better, commended the brave resolution of the man. And as he was laughing at the oddness of his conceit, poor fellow, a shot came and took away one side of his face, so he died immediately. Now it may be said, he could laugh at him but with half a mouth. This last unhappy bout so scared the little valour

which was in the scrivener that he instantly quitted his station, and disordered more men in this way to his supposed safety, the hold, than twenty troopers could have done in the midst of a foot company. A little afterwards the drugster attempted to do the like ; some of the men in the waist, seeing him upon his flight (just as I was moving on the same design) cried out, ' Knock him down, knock down that cowardly fellow with a handspike.' Thinking they had meant me, being on the motion, I endeavoured to prove the contrary by giving him a sore pelt over the noddle with my musket which laid him a sleep on the deck. I was highly commended by our captain for so doing, telling me that two such fellows among a thousand men, nay an army of ten times the number, might by their fear occasion their total overthrow.

The drugster recovering got to his quarters, and thinking it better to die fighting than to be killed for being afraid to die, to work he went with a blunderbuss, and fired it so often that he durst not charge it again till it was cooler. My musket was in the like condition. By this time the enemy began to stand away from us, but we were resolved to keep her company, and make her pay for the trouble and cost she had put us to. We perceived she had much ado to keep herself above water, so that we were not long before we came to bear again upon her, which we did so efficaciously that by a lucky shot penetrating her powder room she blew up. We being so near her, I verily thought she would have blown us into the air too, as she did her own men, part of which fell down into our ship as if you would have scattered faggot sticks off a house top. We had not above six men in all killed, and about nine wounded, none mortally, which were immediately committed into the hands of an excellent chirurgeon we had aboard, who took such a special care of them that before we came to Surat, they were all perfectly cured.

Our ship received some damage which was rectified by our carpenters as well as they could for the present, and sailed forward in our voyage. The next day we were forced to lie a-try again, which we did the thirtieth day, the wind at south-west allowing each days drift. The one-and-thirtieth we shortened sail all but our sprit-sail, top-sail, because of falling too soon with the coast of India. This month we ran eight hundred fifty two leagues on several courses.

From the first to the fourth of September we stood away only with a sprit-sail top-sail the course and distances, &c., observed having a fair wind westerly ; but the next we steered east and by north, with sprit-sail and fore- topsail. The fifth from twelve to six (*per compass*) east five leagues, having at four of the clock had ground sixty-four fathom oozy sand ; then set more sail and stood in north, north-west till six in the morning. Our depth in running the course of seven leagues was

fifty-five, sixty and sixty-four fathom, in latitude about 20 degrees, seconds 42 and longitude 30 degrees, seconds, 3 digits west. On the sixth day we steered east and by north till four in the afternoon, at which time we saw land. It was low and sandy banks, with some trees, and a white tower or church which may be seen four or five leagues off.

This place was judged by those men of ours that had sailed often this way to be fourteen leagues to the westward of Diu. This evening we took a small boat not far off Poramena, bound to Chichauho near Caule. They had only three horses in her, having nothing in her worth making prize; we dismissed them the next day without taking aught from them. The seventh and eight days we stood off and on, expecting to meet with some junks. On the ninth we met with a junk of Gogo, coming from Mare Rubram, or the Red Sea, richly laden; which we took, imagining we now were made forever. But the commander soon dashed all our joys by producing a pass from the president of Surat, upon sight hereof our captain durst not detain her. I was on board her and having seen some part of her cargo, I judged by that the richness of the rest, and therefore persuaded the captain to make her prize though she had a hundred president passes; but he would not yield, knowing better the danger than I did, and so dismissed her, to my great sorrow.

On the tenth we took a junk belonging to the King of Succatore, bound, as they said, to Surat (the Devil was in our captain to believe a word they said if ought might be gotten by them), and had aboard of her little that was considerable, saving six horses, and baste to make ropes withal, wherefore he dismissed her.

On the eleventh we anchored in twenty fathom three leagues off the shore, to give notice if any junks should pass by in the night. They stood to the westwards; and met a junk coming from the Red Sea. But this cowardly hulk seeing our boat, supposed her to be a scout from some man-of-war not far off, ran and sheltered herself under a fort some fourteen leagues to the westward of Diu Head. This junk had some Europeans aboard her, which plied their small shot so that our boat was forced to leave her; and coming aboard us was sent out again better provided with men and arms to lie as they had done before, to meet with the said junk. But in the night came six sail of frigates instead of her and anchored by them. Our desperate, daring, less than little Fan Fan, would not leave them (knowing who they were) till she had spit that little venom that was in her and then retired, this so alarmed us that we got all sails loose; and weighing up our anchor the cable broke, so our anchor was lost. We stood in and having spent some shot on the frigates notwithstanding there was such inequality in the number, they stood away for the shore and left us. However we would not let them

pass so, but being some seven leagues from Diu Head, in the night we stood in again amongst the frigates. But there being little wind and a light night, they crept under the shore. From the twelfth to the seventeenth we plied to and again, standing off in the day, and in again at night, seeing these frigates every day, but could not come at them ; they lay there to give the junks notice of us as we supposed.

The eighteenth we made up to the land of Saint John's, fourteen or fifteen leagues off, near which we took a boat that came from Danda ja-vapore, bound for a place near Diu. Out of this boat we only took two Mesticos and a boy, and so dismissed her ; anchoring at eighteen fathom oozy (being high water and little wind) in latitude 19 degrees, 48 digits, about nine leagues of shore, Valentines Pike, east and by south, *per compass*.

The two-and-twentieth we saw a junk and gave chase to her. Fetching her up we found her to be a great junk of Surat, bound for Acheen with merchandize, having a pass from the president and council. Therefore we meddled not with them, but in the afternoon came to an anchor in two-and-twenty fathom, about thirty leagues off shore. The weather was gusty with much rain, but never did I hear such peals of thunder, nor see such great and continued flashes of lightning. At four in the evening the next day we anchored at eighteen fathom within six leagues of Damon, the wind at north north east, and variable, with such terrible claps of thunder and lightning that my friends, the scrivener and drugster would have freely parted with all they had to have been at the bottom of a Cornish tin mine. They envied now poor Gregory's condition, accounting his misery a great happiness, for since the element of water had received him into the womb of her protection, the element of fire might as soon give him a new soul as to detriment his body, theirs being now minutely exposed to the mercy of its uncontrollable fury.

On the twenty-fifth evening we anchored in ten fathom reddish clay, the Pagod east, north-east, *per compass*, and the trees of old Swalley, north, north-east, about three leagues off. The next day the wind being at north, north-west, we turned up and anchored in ten fathom, the Toddy trees east and by north, *per compass*.

Lastly, having laid one buoy on the tongue of the sand and another on the point of the main, we came over the bar. The least water is four fathom and half at half flood, so we ran in till the southern Toddy tree bore south and by east *per compass*, and there anchored in eight fathom water. This month we sailed not above one hundred and seven leagues.

## CHAPTER XXIV

*Latroon and his friends arrive in Swalley Road : they go ashore at Surat, are entertained with other captains of ships lately come to an anchor, by the president : he discovers an old mistress of his and his old fellow servant, waiting on a captain in a disguising habit ; he renews his acquaintance with her ; she tells him what befell her after his unworthy shipping her to Virginia, and the cause of her coming for India<sup>to</sup> : she enters into a league with Latroon to cheat her pretended master, which she did ; the manner how : they sail together from Surat homeward*

THE next day after our coming to an anchor in Swalley Road, there came in to us six sail of Dutch ships from Nova Batavia ; and two days after came in four English ships more into the same port. One of the captains meeting with a fleet of frigates entering in at the river's mouth, was boarded by them and unhappily blown up, himself and others of his company escaped, but were miserably burnt with powder. The ship drove into Swalley over the bar and was towed on shore by our boats and barges, but all in a manner consumed by the fire. There was a Dutch ship fought with the frigates this while, which sunk three of them ; and in the fight there was three more surprized, the first by the Charles barge, the next by our long-boat, which we doubly manned, and the last by the Dutch. They were but of little value, being laden with Paddee, Beech-leaves and other trifles.

Now did our captain command the skiffs to be manned, and taking me, the scrivener, drugster, with some of the ship, we went ashore, and presented ourselves to the president, who welcomed us in the best manner he could. And to speak the truth, his entertainment was magnificent. Whilst we were frankly drinking healths to our friends in England, there came into us (who came ashore that morning) the captains of the other three ships, with their chief officers, as also a great many Dutch commanders and their attendants. We used to say the more the merrier, and so found it, for the president as he was a very generous man, so he was prudent, and therefore by his noble deportment towards us was resolved to oblige us both.

We, on the other side, strove to out-vie each other in gallantry of spirit, and in this manner we continued feasting three days, swimming in an ocean of liquor.

In this time of our jollity I minded especially a young man that waited on one of the captains. He had a very sweet countenance, but

his complexion was very much sun-burnt by travelling. I did verily believe I had seen the face before, and therefore very much eyed it, which he perceiving fixed his eyes as often on me, for I never cast my eye that way where he stood waiting, but I found him still looking towards me.

My heart renewed private intelligence what he was, but my reason could not so much as guess from whence it came; for by the extraordinary motion thereof beating strokes on my breast as nimbly as a drummer a travale on his drum-head. I looked on him as one I knew, neither was I alone thus, for at that distance I could perceive that the sight of me did put him into a strange confusion.

As I was contriving how to have some private conference with him, his master commanded him to take some of the boat's crew and go aboard and fetch him something which he wanted. He had no sooner received the command, but casting his eyes on me he endeavoured to tell me by them he had an eager desire to speak with me.

He going out, I withdrew from the company, desiring their excuse for a while and followed him. But coming near him he trembled so he could hardly move a foot forward. Seeing him in that agony, I asked him what ailed him, bade him not be afraid, that I came not after him to mischief him, or injure him in the least. 'I believe,' said he, 'you intend me no harm now, but it would have been well if you had never done me any.' 'How!' replied I, 'it is impossible I should be so cruel as injure a face so innocently harmless as thine appears.' 'Yes, Sir, you have,' said he, 'and were it not for something within me I have no name for, I would be revenged on thy very soul for the abuse thou hast done me. I have now no longer time left to discourse you, but to-morrow meet me under the southern Toddy trees, and there I shall not fail to let you understand the miseries of —,' and there he dropped his tears so fast that he could hardly see his way before him. I was so amazed at what I had seen and heard that there I stood as a thing immovable, speechless, and almost sensless. Staying somewhat too long, the captain came out to look me, and found me in this posture staring up into the sky. 'What's the matter, man?' said he, 'what wonders dost thou see there, thou dost so gaze? I tell thee man,' said he, 'this is no proper time nor place to take an observation, we are now at land.' But he knew not what observation I had taken, if he had he would have spoiled the instrument if he could.

Recollecting myself, 'Your pardon, good Sir,' said I. 'I protest you drink too smartly within, so that I was forced to come out to suck in some little airy refreshment.' 'This shall not excuse you,' quoth he, 'therefore come along with me.' Coming in he told the whole company

in what a ridiculous posture he found me, and did so romance upon it that he made them all laugh. ‘One while,’ said he, ‘he was telling the clouds he saw, pleasing himself with the several monstrous shapes they bore, though I could not see one in all our hemisphere. Then he turned his ear up to the firmament, as if he were hearkening to the sweet harmony of the spheres, and in my conscience, if I had not prevented him, I had seen him madly dance by himself without one stroke of music. After this he turned his eyes upwards again, and fixing them there awhile, the nine heavens or firmaments were so transparent to his sight, that looking through them, he recounted their particular names to himself in order as they were posited.’ He would have proceeded but that the company would not let him. For my own part he might have talked till doomsday without any interruption from me, my thoughts being wholly employed in searching out the meaning of what the young man lately spake to me.

I observed after his return, he could not or would not look once towards me as long as I stayed. That night we parted, some staying ashore, others going aboard; but I, knowing what business I had to do the next morning, lay all night with one of the factors, a true toper, and one that I had been formerly merry with in London. I got up early and went to the place appointed, where I stayed not long ere I saw him whom I expected advancing towards me. I arose to meet him, so walking together we chose a place where we sat down, which was both convenient and secret for our purpose. As I was about to speak he prevented it, by calling me base, faithless, perjured man. I starting up, laid my hand on my sword. ‘Nay hold, Sir,’ said he, ‘think not to expiate your offence by murdering the person against whom they were committed.’ So pulling off his periwig he discovered some short red hair. ‘Do you know this colour,’ said he, ‘which once you told me you loved beyond any other? Here is the same dimple in the chin, and mole on the lip, and the same skin (stripping open his doublet) which you have unreasonably praised for its excelling whiteness. These were the flatteries you used to delude a poor credulous maiden, whom you not only shamed but ruined. You cannot forget your matchless treachery in seducing me aboard a Virginia ship, in whom I was carried thither and sold, you hoping by that villainy to have been for ever rid of me and mine.’

I now saw who she was, my fellow servant when I was an apprentice, and knowing what she said to be a truth, I asked her forgiveness, acknowledging all my unworthiness to her, and protested if she durst trust me once more I would make her amends for all. At which she smiled (for she ever loved me too well to be angry with me). I taking hold of this

advantage did so press her to a forgiveness that she could not deny me. Having sealed it with a thousand kisses ; ‘ and now dear Jane,’ said I, ‘ I have a longing desire to know how you spent your time in Virginia, and how you came hither with this captain.’ ‘ That I shall do briefly,’ she replied :

When I saw that you had so cruelly trapanned me, and that all your love was nothing but a deluding pretence to enjoy what you could, and be shut of me afterwards, as I saw you had done, I attempted to fling myself into the sea. But being prevented in that, I betook myself to my cabin where for grief I lay the whole voyage, so desperately ill that none had any hopes of my life, my child dying as I suppose for want of those that should carefully look after it. Arriving at Virginia, and anchoring at Potomack River, several planters came aboard of us, and made a quick riddance of all the passengers but myself, none offering a pipe of tobacco for me, for I was grown so weak I could not stand, and so lean that I was a mere skinful of bones. The master seeing me in this condition, and judging I could not live two days to an end, commanded me to be carried ashore to die. A planter’s wife that was very ancient, seeing me lie in that miserable and deplorable manner, took pity on me, and took me home to her house, where she proved so good a nurse to me that every day I did sensibly amend. Being well, there was a great contest between the husband of this good old woman, and the master whose servant I should be. A suit was commenced, and upon trial the master was cast, he putting me ashore as useless to him, acquitted himself of all future trouble with me. I being clear from him, my good patron and patroness discharged me in open court for having anything to say to me, for what necessaries they had provided for me during my sickness.

Being now a free woman I had a hundred good matches offered me, all which I refused. There were some of the great ones too courted me for their lust (for I had now recovered my complexion, and my eyes had shaken off that dullness which had clogged the swiftness of their motion) but all these temptations prevailed not ; the memory of you had too large a power over my heart than to yield to any one else. But length of time began by degrees to extenuate that esteem I had of you, so that I did not behave myself so reservedly as formerly I had, but assumed a great deal of freedom. One day my master (as I now call him) coming to the house where I was (for his ship then rode in the river not far off us) took so great a liking to me at first sight that as he hath confessed since, he was never at quiet but when in my society. So that in a little time he had so won upon my affections that my carriage towards him sufficiently demonstrated how dearly I loved him. To conclude, he

made a perfect conquest of me, and as the earnest of a perpetual tie, he fully enjoyed me, and promised marriage if I would go with him as soon as he came to Weymouth in the west of England, where stood his habitation.

I greedily swallowed all his persuasions (although one would have thought me more wary, having been so notoriously cheated by you before), and the time coming when he would set sail, I marched down to his ship with as many as would have completed a regiment which followed me, looking upon me as the most absolute mirror of chastity which ever arrived in those parts. Joyful I was to return to my native country, and as glad was my overcomer in that he had obtained so pretty a play-fellow to pass away his time in his passage homewards. In seven weeks we came upon the coast of England, and was by the stress of weather put into Plymouth Sound, where we rode with much difficulty between the island and the land. The third day after our anchoring there, the wind ceasing though the weather was somewhat hazy, he went ashore, and taking none with him but myself, coxswain and his crew. I wondered what he meant by it. My fond hopes prompted me to believe that here he would perform the promise he made me at Virginia, but I found myself deceived ; for he dismissed the boat after he had filled their skins full of wine, and commanded them to wait upon him in the morning.

There being now none left but he and I together ; ‘ Dearest,’ said he, ‘ be not troubled at what I shall tell you, and it shall be never the worse for you. I have a wife and children at Weymouth, although to gain my ends of you I pretended to have none. She is the most jealous woman in the world, and well she may, for she knows there is no woman in creation much more deformed than herself. Wherefore this I would have you to do that I may continue your company ; you shall change your feminine habit for what is masculine, under which disguise you shall pass as a young man I have met with abroad, which for fancy’s sake I have chosen to be my companion in my travels.’

I thought I should have sunk into the earth to hear him make this new confident proposition to me after so many vows and promises to make me his wife ; but gathering courage, I started out of his hand and would have gone downstairs ; but pulling me back, ‘ what,’ said I, ‘ are all my expectations come to this ? Must I be only your wandering whore at last ? Have I left so many wealthy matches at Potomack for this ? No, I am in mine own country, in a place where I am not known, and I will wash and scour for a livelihood rather than submit so basely after so many worthy proffers.’ Notwithstanding a thousand resolutions I had to leave him, yet such was the subtlety of man’s sly insinuation that

he made me unsay all that I had said in less than half an hour ; and I agreed to everything he would have me do. Leaving me at the tavern he went immediately and bought a suit (which he guessed would fit me) with hat, shoes, stockings, and whatever was requisite to clothe a young man fashionably, and brought them to me upon trial ; they exactly fitted me.

Now because we would not give any cause of suspicion to the people of the house where we were in changing my habit, it was concluded on between us to walk out of the town somewhere. He being well acquainted with all the places about the town, made choice of Catdown, where in the cleft of an hollow rock I unchased, throwing my proper habit into the sea ; and although it was somewhat immodest, I was forced to beg his help in my new metamorphosis. He had procured me a very *a la mode* periwig, but before that would fit me he must play the barber himself, which he did by cutting my hair off close to my head. Being now clad with everything requisite from top to toe, we made towards the town again, where entering the former house we were in, we drank and were very merry, having a noise of music. Having supped one bed served us without suspicion ; in the morning came the boat for us with the doctor in her, who asked my master very seriously for the gentlewoman. He replied she had kindred and friends in this place and that she resolved to stay with them a while. Then he enquired what that young man was ; ‘O,’ said he, ‘he is of my former acquaintance, who having little to depend on here, is resolved to see the world abroad with me.’ Coming aboard our master need not make a repetition of what he had already said, the doctor did it for him. Now did we set sail steering for Weymouth which we did reach in a little time.

I was entertained in his house with much civility from his wife, and the servants observing what respect their master shewed me, paid me the like. There was seldom a day wherein he had me not to a tavern, sometimes with company, but most commonly alone, and this life I led for fourteen months. At the expiration of which my master being employed by some merchants in a voyage to East India, took me along with him by which means we have the wonderful hap to see one another again.

My Jinny having ended her discourse, I endeavoured to endear myself unto her with all the outward demonstrations I could devise or imagine, protesting for the future I would never violate my faith to her, that she and I would run our fortune, live together, and she dying I would voluntarily do so too, to accompany her to the other world.

Fearing lest I should detain her too long, and give her master any

cause of suspicion, I dispatched her away, and soon after went aboard our own ship. But before I went I appointed her to meet me there two days after. The captain, myself, and all that were concerned, went roundly about our business, for since he had gone beyond the bounds of his commission, he was resolved not to return home with her, but convert ship and goods to his own use. This in secret he acquainted me with, as knowing my ingenuous roguiship would be very helpful and assistant to him in all his enterprizes ; and that I might oblige him to me in an absolute bond of friendship, I seemed to make him my cabinet counsel in all my affairs, and did really inform him of the truth of the last adventure, knowing I could not carry on my design without his privity and help.

He did much wonder to hear me tell him that I had here also discovered another of my wenches in man's apparel ; but his wonder turned into rejoicing when I told him how this wench should enrich our stock by robbing her pretended master of his gold and what else he had valuable, and could hardly rest to think how I would effect my design. 'Fear not,' said I, 'his gold is all our own ; therefore let us lay out our own as fast as we can, in the commodities of this place.' The Dutch thought we had the devil and all of money, to see our goods come tumbling in upon us so fast ; so that with what goods we took in at Bantam, and what we received here, our ship wanted but little of her full freight.

The time was come wherein I was to have another mess of discourse with my Jinny, who was punctual to her time, and there before me at the place appointed. And after some few amorous ceremonies I seriously told her that it was my intent never to part with her during life. She answered that it was her desire, and that she would run any hazard to bear me company. 'Well,' said I, 'make yourself ready to go along with us, for we are resolved to set sail within these two days.' 'That I shall,' she said, 'and know that I will not come with empty hands ; my love shall neither be burthensome to you nor expensive.' 'How, prithee, how ?' said I. 'Why thus : my pretended master, as I have told you loves me dearly, expressing it in whatever way I desire, and to let me see how great a trust he dares impose upon me, and what confidence he hath of my fidelity, I have the key of his chest wherein is contained 800 jacobusses, besides a box of rough diamonds with other stones of price : all of which, or as much as I can carry off handsomely, will I bring to thee. So much efficacy hath my first lover over me that I could be content to undo all the rest to raise thee.' I told her the notion was very suitable to our present affair, and that it was the best and easiest course I could propound for our happy living hereafter, and that when

she saw any white thing hanging in our shroud she should then fall to her work, which should be the token of our being all ready ; which she could easily do at any time, for the captain being almost continually ashore and she with him, it was but waiting for the boat (upon the sign given) which at her command would carry her aboard and bring her with the least word ashore. Moreover that having got the prize, she should presently make down to the Toddy trees, over against which we lay at anchor, and upon the signal of a handkerchief, we would send our boat instantly ashore to receive her. All which according to instruction was exactly performed, the captain whom she requited in this manner for all his love being at that time dead drunk by an invitation of the factors of Surat.

Having got my double treasure aboard, and what lading we desired, our hold shut up, our anchors weighed, and our canvas spread, away we sailed over the bar, with an hundred shot after us, for our countrymen as well as Hollanders concluded there must be some damned inexpressible treachery in this our sudden sailing, neither giving notice some days before, or fairly taking our leaves by firing of guns according to custom ; besides they knew we had not taken in our full lading. Let them fire their hearts out we valued them not, in derision we fired a gun at stern, and so stood to the southwards.

I knew very well this female confident of mine would effectually do the business we had plotted together, and so to divert myself and make sport with the captain of the discovery of my rival, I wrote some few lines and nailed them on a Toddy tree on the shore directed to the said captain, which I knew would be discovered by some or other, and carried to him. The verses were as follow :

#### Noble Captain.

'Twas a close plot y' faith, but 'twould not hide  
 From me your *wench*, which should have been my *bride* ;  
 You chang'd her garb, but could not change her face ;  
 Nor change her heart, where once I had a place  
 Ne'er thence to be remov'd. Although she show'd  
 Some love to you, the debt to me she owed.  
*Love* was a stranger to her till I came.  
 Whom seeing loved, and loving lost her fame.  
 Sated with her delights I basely prov'd  
 Th' ingrate that loath'd what I should still have lov'd.  
 I turn'd her off, well might she then perplex  
 Herself, and curse th' *inconstance* of our *Sex*.  
 To be reveng'd, with me she did confer,  
 To do her *right* on those that *wronged* her.

I was the first, but me she did forgive,  
Because as one, we must together live.  
You were the next, whose crimes are manifold,  
Yet have sued out your pardon with your *gold* :  
Your subtle wheedlings cheated her belief,  
And would have filch'd her heart to play the *thief*.  
You stole into her secrets, so that she  
May at *love's bar* charge you with *felony*.  
For this purloining, stealing hearts away,  
And being caught you now shall soundly pay.  
She vows to me, she'll spare you not a bit,  
But keep entire the *purchase* of her *Wit*.  
What *Protestations*, and what *Oaths* you made,  
Were broke by you as soon as they were said.  
Your great pretences and your bouncing Stories ;  
The idle flashings of your fancy'd glories ;  
All which she minds not, since she hath requir'd  
A Treasure which so long we both desir'd.

Now we are now almost quits (against your will)  
This is the *sum* that must discharge our *bill* :  
*Imprimis* so much ; lying by her side,  
And breaking promise, made her not your *bride*.  
*Item* for changing *petticoats* for *hose*,  
And doing something, which I won't disclose.  
*Item* for making such a pretty toy,  
Your *wanton Mistress*, and your *cabin-boy* ;  
Whom Morning, Noon, and sometimes very late,  
Fail'd not to make your constant *Trickry-mate*.  
Thus stands th' Account, and now we're even just,  
Discharging you of what we did entrust,  
If not quite broke, for some new *credit* look,  
You ne'er shall enter more into our *book*.

I shall not trouble you with the particulars of an exact journal of our voyage from Surat till we came to Venice, to which port we were bound, but only give you some light touches by the way.

The last day of April we crossed the Equator, and the first of May made a new way by judgment, and by observation our way was four leagues to the southwards, having a rolling sea out of the southern board. The fourth of June in the morning we saw the Island of Mauritius and a little after three or four small islands appeared also. We stood in betwixt Mauritius and these islands, and when we were thwart the point of rocks which lie on Mauritius side, we edged off towards the island, giving that point and breach a good berth. Our depth was twenty, and two-and-twenty fathom hard ground, and being within one mile of the

westermost rock, we had twenty-four fathom. The wind being at south-east, we left into the shore about a mile distant from it we anchored that night.

Here we rode near ten days, refreshing ourselves with what the island afforded, as goats, hogs, and fresh fish good store. It is reported here are many fish rank poison, we did eat all sorts, as Mullets, Lantarasks, Whiskers, Rockfish and Garfish, and many others, but found no harm by feeding on them. We set sail hence and about 28 leagues distance from Mauritius, we passed by an island called the Moschachenas, near which we sprung a leak, that each hour we pumped above two hundred and fifty strokes. It being gusty weather and a great sea out of the *south-east*, but by our carpenters it was happily stopped, although it was under the next timber abaft the well near the keel, which by rummaging the hold they found it so to be.

The next place we anchored at was the Island of Johanna; here we had much lightning and thunder, the wind having been out of the sea in the day, and off shore in the night. This place affordeth very good flesh, great quantity of fish and fowl; we had a bullock for ten long red cornelion heads; we had also excellent oranges and lemons. The people are very loving and friendly, having two governors or captains among them, the one called Androm Pela, and the other Masse Core. They desired of us no other money for aught we bought than those red heads. Sailing from hence we sprung our main top-mast, which our carpenters taking down fished it and got it up again the same day. On the third of September, in latitude 16. d. 33 the wind at south-east, we saw the Island of St. Helena, to the westward of the chapel thereof we anchored a mile distant. The captain caused the skiff to be hoisted out and so my Jinny, the scrivener, drugster, and doctor &c. we landed at Lemon Valley. Here with some guns we carried with us we killed hogs and goats, otherwise it is hard to take them, running at the sight of us up inaccessible craggy rocks. In ranging through the isle, our men found divers oranges and lemon trees but no fruit thereon; the Dutch having been there as we suppose, had gathered them, as appeared by their names on certain stones and trees. We caught here Mackerel, Breams and Borettoes good store.



Date Due

DEC - 3 1976  
FEB 01 1994  
JAN 25 1994  
FEB 11 1998  
FEB 11 1998

PR 3506 .H97 E5 1928b  
Head, Richard, 1637?-1686  
The English rogue:

010101 000

0 1999 0009522 5  
TRENT UNIVERSITY

PR3506 .H97E5 1928b  
Head, Richard  
The English rogue: described  
in the life of Meriton Latroon.

DATE

ICELD 10/2010

257129

